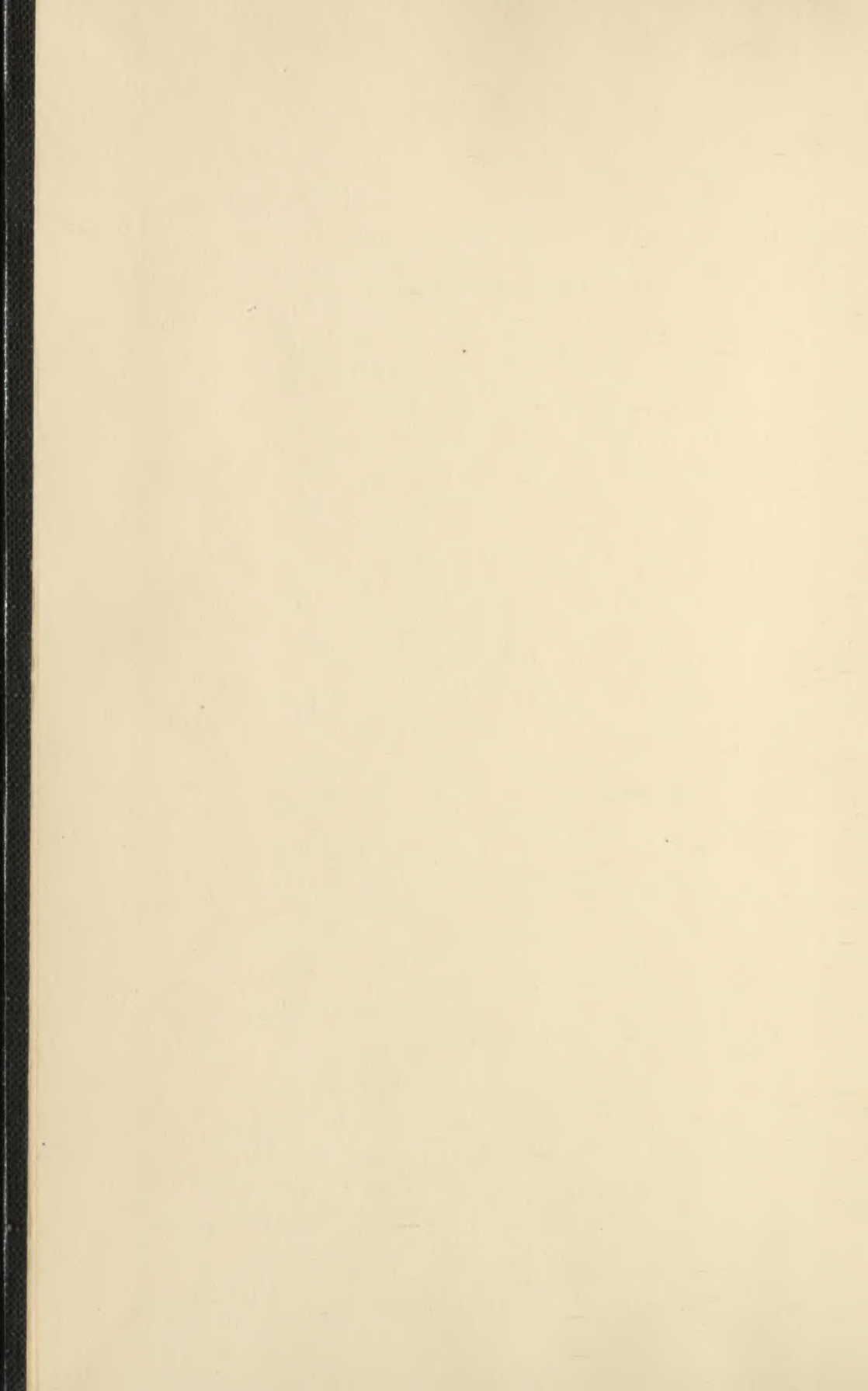


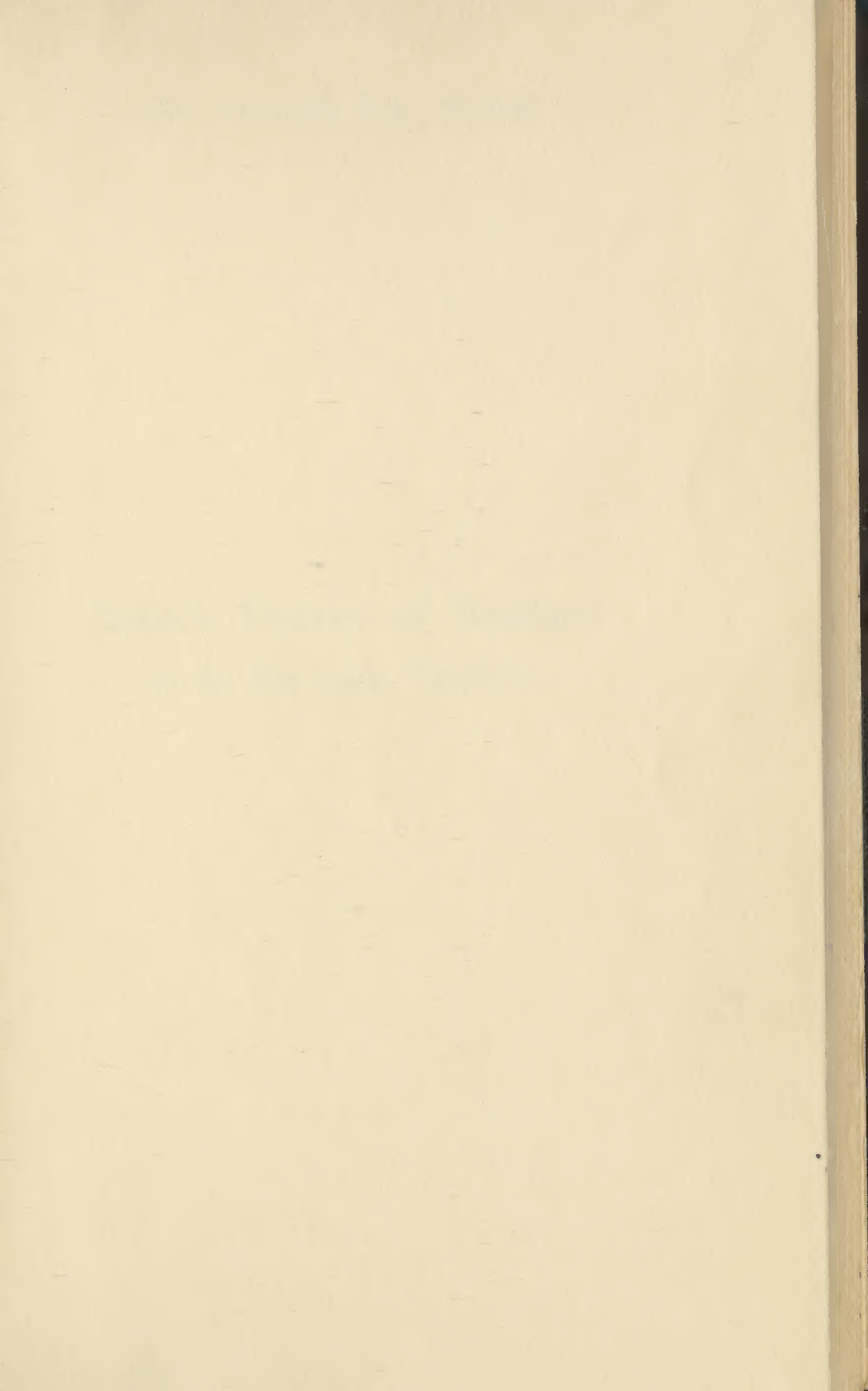


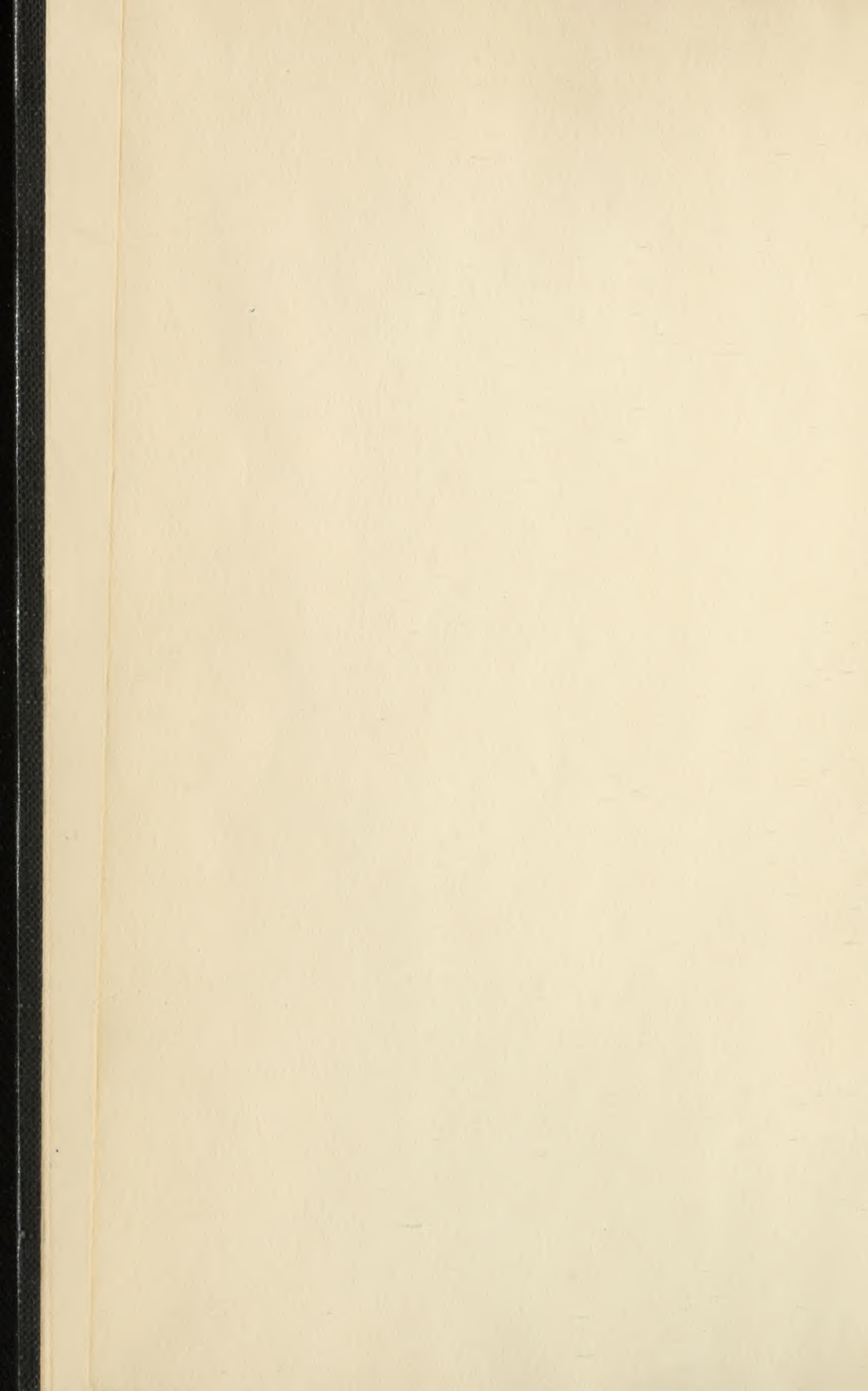
~~Ref. 54.~~

SCS. STES3. 17









The Scottish Text Society

Boece's History of Scotland

in the Mar Lodge Translation

THE HISTORY OF SCOTLAND

FROM THE EARLIEST TO THE PRESENT

BY HENRY MORISON



The Mar Lodge Translation  
OF THE  
History of Scotland

By Hector Boece

EDITED BY

GEORGE WATSON, M.A.

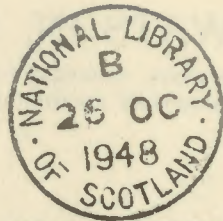
FORMERLY ASSISTANT PROFESSOR, UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO  
AND SOMETIME ASSISTANT EDITOR, O.E.D.

VOL. I.

Printed for the Society by  
WILLIAM BLACKWOOD & SONS LTD.  
EDINBURGH AND LONDON

1946

The MacLellan Translation  
of the  
History of Scotland  
by James MacLellan



PRINTED IN GREAT BRITAIN  
ALL RIGHTS RESERVED

# CONTENTS OF VOL. I.

---

	PAGE
EDITOR'S PREFACE . . . . .	vii
FACSIMILE OF TITLE-PAGE . . . . .	I
THE PROHEME APON THE COSMOGRAPHE . . . . .	3
ANE CAIS BREIF . . . . .	14
THE TABLE AND CHEPTOURIS . . . . .	17
THE PROHEME OF THE HISTORY . . . . .	27
LIBER PRIMUS . . . . .	35
LIBER SECUNDUS . . . . .	73
LIBER TERCIUS . . . . .	127
LIBER QUARTUS . . . . .	188
LIBER QUINTUS . . . . .	257
LIBER SEXTUS . . . . .	299
LIBER SEPTIMUS . . . . .	369
SIDE-NOTES IN A LATER HAND . . . . .	419



## PREFACE.

---

THIS version of Boece's 'History of the Scottish Nation' has been distinguished as the Mar Lodge Translation for the especial reason that the manuscript was found some years ago in the Skene Library at Mar Lodge, Braemar, Aberdeenshire, by the late Rev. Thomas Miller, F.S.A.Scot. By means of an article on "A Notable Manuscript" contained in that library, which he contributed to the 'Juridical Review' for 1928 (vol. xl., pp. 361-369), that industrious researcher brought this important early translation to public notice.

While the fuller history of the manuscript remains for later treatment, it may be stated here that the volume was sold by authority of the late Princess Royal to the well-known American banker and philanthropist, Mr J. Pierpont Morgan, who in May 1929 donated it to the Pierpont Morgan Library, New York City. The loan of the precious folio has been generously made to enable this edition to be produced by the Society; and to that end the manuscript—placed on deposit in the Lyon Office—has been transcribed by Miss I. B. Hutchen, Edinburgh.

At the Society's invitation, the Rev. Thomas Miller undertook the editing of the work, and this he took up with zeal. But engaged as he was with other tasks, he found it advisable—and indeed necessary—to enlist co-operative aid. Several patriot helpers, either individually or (as occasion offered) in conclave with him, compared various books of the translation with the Latin original, re-punctuated this portion of the vernacular text, and on folio sheets made very many

running notes on words and matters seeming to warrant investigation with a view to editorial mention. Doubtless because this mass of material was not digested by him and prepared for the press, these sheets (apart from a solitary specimen leaf) have not been available to the present editor, and thus a large amount of industrious work has gone for nought.

Born at the Myres in St Ninian's Parish seventy-six years ago, Mr Miller attended Edinburgh University, went to Nova Scotia as a missionary for two and a half years, returned to complete his law course at the University, and crossed again to Canada, where he became a minister in New Brunswick. To his dear Scotland he returned just before the first World War, by the end of which he was appointed to St Helen's Church, High Bonnybridge, then a small station, which he worked up to important Church status. After a tragic collapse followed by a week's illness, Mr Miller—esteemed and indeed revered—died at Falkirk Royal Infirmary on 13th December 1942. Illustrated by his portrait, an appreciative obituary notice of this assiduous antiquary appeared in the 'Falkirk Herald' six days later.

Invited by the Council of the Society in 1943 to undertake the production of this work, the present editor duly continued the task and prepared the greater bulk of the transcription for the press. The proof-reading raised editorial difficulties and revealed the need to collate the proofs with the manuscript in very numerous suspected passages, and in July 1944 a crowded period of two weeks was allocated to this essential work. To Sir Francis Grant, K.C.V.O., Lord Lyon, I desire to record my appreciative thanks for the facilities accorded to me at the Lyon Office during the prosecution of that and a subsequent collation, a task rendered additionally pleasant and progressive by the courtesy of various members of the Lyon Court.

This work is a pretty full and fairly close (but not quite exact) translation of the 'History' produced by Hector Boece at Paris in 1527, and was rendered only a few years after the publication of that famous work. Though written mainly in

a bold, clear hand, the manuscript has presented many problems of decipherment. For generous help in overcoming these difficulties and in other matters involving special knowledge, I record grateful thanks to Mr Henry M. Paton and Mr C. T. McInnes of the Historical Department, H.M. Register House, Edinburgh.

From the foregoing it should be obvious that the editorial style for Volume I. had already been established before the present editor undertook the work. Thus the earlier editor is responsible for the frequent initial Ff, representing MS. ff (a scribal feature which is now normally replaced by F), the expansion of “&” to “and,” and also the punctuation, (. . .) where usually (. . .) should have sufficed. As a war-time economy these peculiarities of “copy-editing” have been allowed to remain in this volume.

While editorial clarifications and other remarks have been reserved for the final volume, a very few footnotes have been given, especially where these seemed opportune or more immediately necessary.

On the outer margin hereof the relevant folio numbers of the Mar Lodge Translation have been given in Arabic figures. The roman numerals in the same margin (*e.g.*, Fo. LX.) refer to the corresponding folios of the first edition of Boece (1527), and the line numbers in the inner margin continue in detail the correlation of this translation with the folio lining of that famous publication. This work of correlation—carefully completed (for Vol. I.) by Mr Francis Mackay of Larbert, Stirlingshire—should prove of considerable help to scholars. The folio numbering of the Mar Lodge MS. has been made on it (in pencil) in recent times.

Pending fuller treatment, it may suffice to state that this manuscript early lost its beginning and end, and that in the last year of Charles II. an effort was made to supply the loss from the 1541 edition of Bellenden’s version, as is evidenced by pp. 1, 3-13, 27-34 of this volume, which represent transcripts from that early production.

Originally the manuscript probably contained at the beginning a translation of Boece’s ‘Description of Scotland,’ and

it is conceivable that this section became detached, and may have been preserved somewhere as a unity. Should this be so, it is further hoped that the fragment bears the name of the translator (he was apparently a cleric of the diocese of Dunkeld), and thus—if retrieved—may clear up a perplexing mystery as to his identity.

The "caifß breif" (pp. 14-16) represents part of Boece's introductory matter (folios *xxb-xxib*).

To the proof-readers of the publishers due acknowledgment must be made of their careful interpretation of the edited "copy."

GEORGE WATSON.

OXFORD, *June* 1945.



THE  
*Et Libris antiquis Myles Scotica*  
History and Croniklis  
*L. Myles*  
OF  
SCOTLAND  
*Et Manuscriptis Roberti Myles Scotica*

Compilit and newly correkit Be the  
Reverend & Noble Clerk *L. Myles*  
**HECTOR**  
**BOECE**. Channon of Aberdene

Translatit. lastly be Maister John Bellenden  
Archidene of Murray and Channon  
of Rob At the Command  
of

THE RIGHT HIE, EXCELLENT, and. NOBLE  
**PRINCE JAMES THE V.**  
of that Name. **KING** of **SCOTS**

wrsen at Edinburgh June. the. 29  
Year of **GOD**  
1685

This is the principal Manuscript of antiquary MSS.



# The Proheme apou the COSMOGRAPHE.

M.L.T. 16

Quhen sylvit<sup>1</sup> Diana, full of bemis bricht,  
Fra dirk eclips was past this othir nicht,  
And in the Crab, her proper mansion, gane,  
Artophilax<sup>2</sup> contending at his micht  
In the gret eist, to set his visage richt ;  
I mene ye ledar of the Charle-wane ;  
Abone our heid was the Ursis twaine :  
Quhen sterris small obscure in our sicht,  
And Lucifer left twinkland him allane :

The frostie nicht *with* her prolixit houris  
Her mantill quhit spred on ye tender flouris,  
Quhen ardent Laubour has addressit me :  
“ Translait ye story of our progenitouris,  
Their gret manheid, high wisdome and honouris,  
Quhen we may cleir (as in a mirrou) se  
The furious end sometyne of tyrranny ;  
Sometyne ye glore of prudent governouris ;  
Ilk stait apprisit in thair faculte.”

My wery spreit, desyreing to repress  
My emptive pen of fruteles besynes,  
Awalkit furth to take the recent ayre,  
Quhen Priapus, *with* stormy weid oppress,  
Requestit me in his maist tendernes  
To rest ane quhile amid his gardingis bare.  
Bot I no maner couth my mind prepare  
To set aside unpleasand hevines,  
On this and that contemplating solitare.

<sup>1</sup> Sic for *sylvir*.

<sup>2</sup> Sic for *Artophilax*.

M.L.T. 2

And fyrst occurrit to my remembring  
 How that I was in service *with* ye king ;  
 Put to his grace in yeiris tenderest,  
 Clerk of his comptis, yocht I was inding  
 With hert and hand, and evry othir thing  
 That nicht him pleis in any <sup>1</sup> maner best ;  
 Quhill hie invy me from his service kest  
 Be thaim that had ye court in governing,  
 As bird but plumes heryit of ye nest.

Our lyfe, our giding and our aventuris,  
 Dependis from thir hevinly creaturis  
 Apearandly be sum necessite.  
 For yocht ane man wald set his besy curis  
 So far as laboure and [his] <sup>2</sup> wisdom furis,  
 To flee hard chance of infortunite ;  
 yocht he eschew it *with* difficulte,  
 The cursit weird yet ithandleie enduris,  
 Given to him first in his nativite.

Of erdly state bewailing thus ye chance,  
 Of fortune good I had no esperance.  
 So lang I svomit in hir seis deip,  
 That sad avysing *with* hir thoctfull lance  
 Couth find na port to anker hir firmance ;  
 Quhill Morpheus, ye d[r]ery god of sleip,  
 For very reuth did on my curis weip,  
 And set his sleuth and deidly countenance  
 With snorand vanis throw my body creip.

Me thoct I wes into ane pleasand meid,  
 Quhair Flora maid ye tender blewmys spreid,  
 Throw kindly dew and humoris nutrative ;  
 Quhen golden Titan *with* his flamis reid  
 Above ye seis raisit up his heid ;  
 Diffounding doun his heit restorative  
 To evry frute yat nature made on live,  
 Quhilk was afore into ye winter deid,  
 For stormys cald and frostis penitrive.

<sup>1</sup> Sic ; ed. 1541 *ony*.<sup>2</sup> So ed. 1541 and Bann. MS.

Ane silver fountain sprang of water cleir  
 Into yat place quhair I aprochit neir,  
 Quhair I did sone espy ane felloun reird  
 Of courtly gallantis, in thair best maneir  
 Rejosyng thame, in season of the yeir,  
 As it had been of Mayis day ye feird.  
 Thair gudly havings maid me nocht affeird.  
 With thaym I saw ane crounit King appeir  
 With tender dounis riseing on his beird.

Thir courtly gallandis, settand yair intentis  
 To sing and play on diverse instrumentis,  
 According to this princis appetite ;  
 Tuo pleasand ladies come pleasand<sup>1</sup> over ye bentis,  
 Thair costlie clethin schew yair mighty rentis.  
 Quhat hert nicht wis thay wantet nocht ane myt ; M.L.T. 2b  
 The rubies schone apone thair fingaris quhit :  
 And finally, I knew be thair consentis,  
 This ane, Virtew ; that othir, hecht Delite.

Thir goddesses, arrayit in this wyse  
 As reverence and honoure list devise,  
 Afore this prince fell doun apone yair kneis ;  
 Syne dressit thaym into yair best avise  
 (So far as wisdom in thair power lyes)  
 To doe ye thing that nicht him best appeis  
 Quhare he rejosit in his hevinly gleis,  
 And hym desyrit, for his high empyris,  
 Ane of thaym two unto his lady cheis.

And first, Delite unto this prince said thus :  
 “ Maist valzeant knicht, in dedis amorous,  
 And lustiest that ever nature wrocht,  
 Quhilk in ye flower of youth mellifluus,  
 With notis sueit and sang melodious,  
 Awalkis here amang ye flouris soft,  
 Thou has no game bot in thy mercy<sup>2</sup> thocht.  
 My heavenly bless is so delicius,  
 All welth in erd, bot it, avalis nocht.

<sup>1</sup> Sic ; ed. 1541 *pransand*.

<sup>2</sup> Sic ; ed. 1541 *mery*.

"yocht thou had France and Italie also,  
 Spain, Ingland, Pole, *with* othir realmes mo,  
 yocht thou micht regne in stait maist glorious,  
 Thy pissant kingdome is nought worth ane stro  
 Gif it unto thy pleseir be ane fo,  
 Or trouble thy mind with curis dolorus.  
 Thair is na thing may be so odious  
 To man, as leif in misery and wo,  
 Defraudand God of nature genius.

" Dress ye, thairfore, *with* all thy besy cure,  
 That thou, in ioy and pleseir, may indure  
 Be sycht of thir four bodyis elementar :  
 Tuo hevvy and gross, and tuo ar lycht and pure.  
 Their elements, be wirking of nature,  
 Douth change in othir. And yocht [thay] be richt far  
 Fra othir severit, with qualities contrar,  
 Of thaym are made all levand creture,  
 And finally in thaym resolvit ar.

" The fyre, in air ; ye air in water cleir ;  
 In erd, ye water turnis without weir :  
 The erd in water turnis ovir again :  
 So furth in ordour na thing consumes heir.  
 Ane man new born beginnis to appeir  
 In othir figure then afore was tane ;  
 Quhen he is deid the mater dois remane,  
 yocht it resolve into some new maneir ;  
 Nothing is new ; nocht bot the form is gane.

M.L.T. 3

" Thus is nothing in erd but fugitive,  
 Passand and cumand, be spreiding successive.  
 And as ane beist, so is ane man consave  
 Of seed infuse in memberis genitive ;  
 And furth his tyme in pleseir dois ovir drive  
 (As chance him ledis) quhill he be laid in grave.  
 Therefore thy hevyn and pleseir now ressave  
 Quhill thou art heir into this present live ;  
 For eftir deith thou shall na pleseir have.

“ The rose, ye lillyis, and ye violet,  
 Unpullit, sone are [with] ye wynd ovirset,  
 And fallis doun but ony fruit I wis.  
 Thairfore I say, sen that no thing may let,  
 Bot thy bricht hew mon be *with* zeiris fret,  
 (For evry thing but for ane season is)  
 Thou may nocht have ane more excellent blis  
 Then ly all nicht into myn armys plet,  
 To hals and brais *with* many lustie kiss,

“ And have my tender body be thy side,  
 So proper, fet, quhilk nature has provide  
 With evry pleseir that thou may divine,  
 Ay quhill my tender zeiris be ovir slide.  
 Then, gif it pleis that I thy brydall gyde,  
 Thou mon alway fra agit men decline ;  
 Syne dress thy hart, thy curage and ingyne,  
 To suffer nane into thy hous abide,  
 Bot gif thay will unto thy lust inclyne.

“ Gif thou desyris in ye seis fleit  
 Of hevynly blis, than me thy lady treit ;  
 For, it is said be clerkis of renoun,  
 Their is na pleiseir in this eird so gret  
 As quhen ane luffar dois his lady meit  
 To quicken his lyfe of mony deidly swon.  
 As hiest pleseir bot comparison,  
 I shall ye gyf, into thy yeiris sweet,  
 Ane lustie halk *with* many plumys broun ;

“ Quhilk sal be found so ioyous and pleasant  
 Gif thou unto hir mercy<sup>1</sup> flychtis hant,  
 Of evry bles that may in erd appeir,  
 As hart wyll think, thou shall no plenty want,  
 Quhill zeiris suift with quhelis properant,  
 Consume thy strenth and all thy bewte cleir.”  
 And quhen Delyte had said on this maneir,  
 As rage of youthheid thocht maist relevant,  
 Than Virtew said as ye shall eftir heir :

<sup>1</sup> Sic ; ed. 1541 *mery* ; Bann MS. *mirry*.

M.L.T. 3b

“ My landis braid, with mony plentuous schyre,  
 Shall give thy Hienes (gif thou list desyre)  
 Triumphant glore, hie honour, fame devyne,  
 With sic pissance, that thaym no furius ire,  
 Nor werand age, nor flame of birnand fyre,  
 Nor bitter deith, may bring unto rewyne ;  
 Bot thou mon first insuffer mekill pyne,  
 Abone thy self that thou may have empyre :  
 Than sall thy fame and honour have na fyne.

“ My realm is set amang my foes all,  
 Quhilkis has with me ane weir continuall,  
 And evir still dois on my bordour lye ;  
 And yocht thay may no wayis me ovir thrall,  
 Thay lye in wait, gif ony chance may fall  
 Of me sometyme to get ye victory.  
 Thus is my lyfe ane ithand chevalry ;  
 Laubour me holds strang as any wall,  
 And nothing breakis me but slogardy.

“ Na fortoun may againis me availl,  
 yocht scho *with* cludy stormis me assaill.  
 I break ye streme of sharp adversite.  
 In weddir louin and maist tempestius haill,  
 But ony dreid, I beir ane equall saill,  
 My schip so strang that I may nevir de.  
 Wit, reason, manheid, governis me so high,  
 No influence nor sterris may prevaill  
 To regne on me with infortunite.

“ The rage of youtheid may nocht dantit be  
 Bot gret distress and scharp adversite ;  
 As be this reason is experience.  
 The fynest gold or silver that we se,  
 May nocht be wrocht to our utilite  
 But flamis kene and bitter violence.  
 The more distress, ye more intelligence.  
 Quhay salis lang in hie prosperite  
 Are sone overset be stormy violence.



“ This fragill lyfe (as moment indureing)  
 But dout, sall the and evry peple bring  
 To sicker blis, or than eternall wo.  
 Gif thou be honest laubour dois ane thing,  
 Thy panefull laubour sall vanes but tarying,  
 Howbeit thy honest werkis do nocht so ;  
 Gif thou be lust dois ony thing also,  
 The shamefull deid, without dissevering,  
 Remanis ay, quhen pleseir is ago.

“ As caruell tycht, fast tending throw ye see,  
 Levys na prent amang ye wallis hie ;  
 As birdis swift, with mony besy plume,  
 Persis ye air, and wait nocht quhare they flee ;  
 Siclik our lyfe without activite  
 Giffis na fruit, houbeit ane shado blume.  
 Quha dois thair lyfe into this erd consume  
 Without virtew, thair fame and memory  
 Shall vanis soner then ye riky fume.

M.L.T. 4

“ As water purges and makis bodyis fair,  
 As fyre be nature ascends into ye aire  
 And purifies *with* heitis vehement,  
 As floure dois smell, as frute is nurisare,  
 As precious balme revertis thingis sare  
 And makes thaym of rot impatient,  
 As spice maist sueit, as ros maist redolent,  
 As stern of day, be moving circulare,  
 Chasis ye nycht with bemis resplendent,

“ Siclike my werk perfytis evry wycht  
 In fervent luf of maist excellent lycht,  
 And makes man in to this erd but peir,  
 And dois ye saul fra all coruptioun dycht  
 With odour dulce, and makis it more brycht  
 Then Diane full, or yet Apollo cleir ;  
 Syne rasis it unto the highest speir,  
 Imortally to shyne in Godis sycht  
 As chosin spous and creature most deir.

“ This othir wenche *yat* clepit is Delite,  
 Involvis man be sensuall appetite  
 In evry kind of vice and misery,  
 Becaus na witt nor reason is perfyte  
 Quhare she is gyde, bot skaithis infinite,  
 With doloure, schame and urgent poverté.  
 For she was get of frothis of *ye* see,  
 Quhilk signifies hir pleseir vennomit  
 Is medlit ay with scharp adversite.

“ Duke Hanniball (as mony authoris wrait)  
 Throw Spanze come, be mony passage strait,  
 To Italie in furour bellicall,  
 Brake doun *ye* wallis, and *ye* montanis slait,  
 And to his army maid ane oppin gait,  
 And victoryes had on *ye* Romanis all.  
 At Capua, be pleseir sensuall,  
 This Duke was maid so soft and deligait  
 That with his foes he was sone ovir thrall.

M.L.T. 4b

“ Of feirs Achill the weirly dedis sprang  
 In Troy and Grece quhill he in virtew rang :  
 How lust him slew, it is but reuth to heir.  
 Siclik the Trojanis, with thair knichtis strang,  
 The valzeant Greikis fra thair roumes dang ;  
 Victoriouslie exercit mony yeir.  
 That nicht they went to thair lust and pleseir,  
 The fatall hors did throw thair wallis fang,  
 Quhais prignant sidis were full of men of weir.

“ Sardanapall, *ye* prince effeminat,  
 Fra knichtlie dedis wes degenerat ;  
 Tuinand *ye* thredis of *ye* purpur lyne  
 With fingaris soft amang *ye* ladies sat,  
 And with his lust couth nocht be satiat,  
 Quhill of his fois come *ye* bitter dynt.  
 Quhat nobylmen and ladies has bene tynt  
 Quhen thay *with* lust[i]s were intoxicat,  
 To schaw at lenth my tongue suld nevir stint.

“ Thairfore Camell, ye vailzeant chevalier,  
 Quhen he ye Gallis had dantit be his weir,  
 Of heritable landis wald have na recompence.  
 For gif his bairnis and his friendis deir  
 Were virtewis, they couth nocht fail ilk yeir  
 To have enough be Romane providence :  
 Gif they were givin to vice and insolence,  
 It was nocht neidfull for to conques geir,  
 To be occasioun of thair incontinece.

“ Some nobylmen (as poetis list declare)  
 Were deifeit : sum goddis of ye air,  
 Sum of ye hevin ; as Eolus, Vulcan,  
 Saturn, Mercury, Apollo, Iupitare,  
 Mars, Hercules, and othir men preclare,  
 That glore immortall in thair livis wan.  
 Quhy were thair peple callit goddis than ?  
 Because they had ane virtew singular,  
 Excellent, high abone ingyne of man.

“ And otheris are in reik sulphurius :  
 As Ixion, and wery Sisiphus,  
 Eumenides, ye furies richt odibill,  
 The proud giandis, and thirstie Tantalus,  
 With huglie drink, and fude most vennomous,  
 Quhare flamis bald and mirknes ar sensibil.  
 Quhy ar thir folk in panis so terribill ?  
 Because they were but schrewis vicius  
 Into thair lyfe, with dedis most horribill.

“ And yocht no frute wer eftir consequent  
 Of mortall lyfe, but for this warld present  
 Ilk man to have allenarly respect,  
 Yet virtew suld fra vice be different,  
 As quik fra deid, as rich fra indigent :  
 That ane, to glore and honour ay direct ;  
 This othir, saul and body to neclect ;  
 That ane, of reason most intelligent ;  
 This othir, of beistis following the affect.

☞ “ For he that nold aganis his lust[is] strive,  
 But leiffis as beist of knowledge sensitive,  
 Eildis rycht fast, and deith hym sone ovirhalis.  
 Tharfore ye mule is of ane langar live  
 Than stonit hors ; also ye barrant wive  
 Aperis young quhen that ye bruidie fallis.  
 We se also, quhen nature nocht prevalis,  
 The pane and dolour are sa pungitive  
 No medicine the patient avalis.

“ Sen thou has hard baith our intentis thus,  
 Cheis of us two, the maist delitius.  
 First, to sustene ane scharp adversite,  
 Danting ye rage of youtheid furius,  
 An[d] syne posseid triumphe innumerus,  
 With lang empyre and hie felicite :  
 Or half, ane moment, sensualite  
 Of fuliche zouth in lyfe voluptuous,  
 And all thy dayis full of miserie.”

Be then, Phebus his fiery cart did wry  
 Fra south to west, declinand besaly  
 To dip his steidis in ye oceane ;  
 Quhen he began ovirsile his visage dry  
 With vapouris thick, and cludis full of sky,  
 And Notus brim, ye wind meridiane,  
 With wingis dunk and pennis full of rane,  
 Awaknit me ; that I might nocht espy  
 Quhilk of thaym two was to his lady tane.

But sone I knew they wer ye goddesses  
 That come in sleip to valzeant Hercules,  
 Quhen he was young and free of evry lore  
 To lust or honour, poverté or riches ;  
 Quhen he contempnit lust and idlenes,  
 That he in vertew micht his lyfe decore ;  
 And werkis did of maist excellent glore.  
 The more increasit his panefull besines,  
 His high triumphe and loving was ye more.

Then throw this morall eruditioun,  
Quhilk come, as said is, in my visioun,  
I took purpose, or I furthir went,  
To wryte the story of this regioun,  
With dedis of mony illuster campioun.  
And yocht ye pane apperis vehement,  
To make ye story to ye redaris more patent,  
I will begin at ye descriptioun  
Of Albion, in maner subsequent.

M.L.T. 5b

FINIS.

M.L.T. 6

Ane caifß breif, quhat nacions has successive  
broukit yat parte of Britan callit Ingland, be  
Maister Hectour Boece compendiosly collectit.

**B**ecaus it is difficill to know clerelie the historyis of Scotland for *contynuale* menciou of ye state of Ingland, sen yat realme was nocht euer be the native inhabitantis occupyit, bot be succession of tyme has sufferit diuerß chancis and variance, I think fructifull and necessare (to satisfye ye redaris) to collect breiffie and schaw all nacions to quham the domynyon and senegeorie of Britan (now Ingland), be variance of fortune, fra Brute, yareof first begynnare, to King Hary for ye *present* regnyng, has bene subiectit. Britouns, taking yare name fra Brute, (be quhais convoyance fra Grece to this ile thay war brocht in the 3ere eftir creacioun of ye warld *iiij<sup>m</sup> xxj* 3eris), kept fermelie princelie estate in ane parte of Albion, to the space of *j<sup>m</sup>j<sup>e</sup>xvj* 3eris; in quhilk tyme, assalezit be weris of Iulius Cesare, Romane chiftane, and subiectit, yai payit tribute certane 3eris. Thareeftir Britan redactit in forme of ane province. It had native kingis of yat ilk nacion brouking onelie the name of kingis, and all goverment be ye Romane lieutenantis was ministerit, to ye 3ere of oure Redempcion *iiij<sup>e</sup> xxxvj*: in quhilk tyme Britouns, subiectit be ye armys of Scottis and Pichtis, and na litill parte of the kinrik fra yame bereft, payit to thame tribute *xxx<sup>tj</sup>* 3eris: as we hald fermelie be autorite and testifying of ye Dekin Paull, Bede, Savellicus and diuerß vtheris historiographouris, ancient and recent. Britouns, hantit afore to ye Romane plesouris and delitis, wery of ye felloun inhumanite of Scottis and Pichtis, aganis yame brocht in supple Constantyne, son of Androene, king of Armorik, now Litill Britannye. Constantin, cuming with strang ordinance, abiecting yare 3ok of thirlage, restorit ye realme of Britan in 3e 3ere fra ye birth of Criste *iiij<sup>e</sup> lxxv*. He regnit and eftir him his son Constance, syne Vortigerne, successive till vthir nocht abone *xxij* 3eris. Than be new invasioun of Scottis and Pichtis almaist subdewit to ye first thirlage, be wayis of Vortigerne king, fra Saxouns thay implorit helpe.

M.L.T. 66

Twelf ȝeris ȝareeftir following Vortigerne, be supple of Saxouns, resistit to the iniuris of Scottis and Pichtis. Nochttheles Saxouns faleȝeing in lawte, vnder chiftanis Hengest and Orß, bredir, to extreme myscheif Britan was brocht; ffor Vortigerne be ȝe men quham he brocht to supple him aganis the violence of vtheris (eftir grete parte of his liegis slane), was takin and with all his pepill exilit to Walis, ane parte of his kinrik, and bot of sobir boundis. Saxouns create Hengest king, and occupyit ȝe residew of Britan, and fra him the regioun England, and the pepill war namyt Inglisß. Nocht ȝit war Britouns herethrow aluterlie ouresett, ffor be variabill fortune, quhil the tyme of Arthure, thay faucht contrare Inglis. Be his deceiße his liffe and kinrik atanis tuke end, becaus Britouns fuleȝete in pussance, to Saxons thareeftir referrit ȝe domynioun. Eftir Arthure deceissing in ȝe v<sup>c</sup> xliȝ ȝeris, quhil ȝe j<sup>m</sup> xvȝ ȝere Inglis josit Britan; first to ane king obeysant, syne in vij kinrikis devidit, and finalie redactit and brocht agane to ane onelie kinrik, having almaist ȝe samyn boundis and marchis as for the present. Oftymes England thareeftir subdewit be invasioun of Danys, had five kingis of the Danys blude—Sweno, Herald his son, Canwte, Herald namyt Harefute, and last of all Hardycanwte. Hardy-canwteoure prouderly regnyng abone ȝe Inglis, quhilk nocht sufferit langare to be in *seruitute* thirllit, quhen ane nycht all ȝe noblis of Danys war slane throw all the realme of England, seing sic myschefe to him self appere, he put violent handis in his awne persoun. Swa ȝai gaif the crowne to Edwerd, son of Edward,<sup>1</sup> quhilk last before the cuming of Danys rang in England. Nochttheles Edwerd sone thareeftir deceissing, and for the singulare sanctitude of his life callit Sanct Edwerd, Inglisßmen fering ȝat Danys be displesure of the kinrik loist afore suld of newe inuaid ȝame with armys, thay crownit Herald, son to Godwy, Inglis man, dochter son of king Ca[n]wte, Dane, and of the crowne ciferit Edgare, nevo of Sanct Edwerd, broder of Sanct Margaret, eftirwart quene of Scottis: ffor ȝai supponit, gif ȝe crowne in ony parte war restorit to Danys, ȝai mycht in tyme cuming be in tranquillite

<sup>1</sup> Sic, apparently for *Alfred*; but L. has *Eldredus*.

kingis  
cit  
ng  
s  
ritis  
lawis.

c. 7

and eifß. Bot Herald, involuyt in vnbridillit lustis and plesouris, wikkittlie cawsit his lownys abuse and defoule his iust spouß, dochter to Williame, bastard of Northmandie; quharefore be him *with* iust batell persewit, of liffe and kinrik at anis he was dispulezit, in ye fifty 3ere eftir Danis first invadit ye Inglis kinrik, and of the Virginis birth j<sup>m</sup> lxxvj.

Williame, bastard, broukand ye soueranite in Ingland and the senezeorie of Danys in Ingland deletit, causit Northmanis growe in ane ferme nacioun with Inglis, and be callit all ane realme in tyme cuming. The posterite of yis Williame, bastard, *with* grete gloure perseveris in the impire of Ingland to yis day, Henry ye viii of yat name iosing ye crowne quhen this werk wes compilit: his lawde and honoure for mony douchty actis sall with grete commendacion be ye posterite be writtin.



Followis the Table and Cheptouris of all  
Bukis in this Volume contenit.

M.L.T. 8

	PAGE
How ye nacioun of Scottis fra Grekis and Egipcianis first descendit, and Gathelus with his lady Scota fled fra Egipt to Portugale, and fra yin to Spanze . . . . . Capit° j	35
How Gathelus beldit ye cete of Brigance now Compostall; how Gathelus oursett Spanzeardis in batell, and of ye marbill throne; how Hiber and Hemek subdewit Ireland . . . . . Capit° ij	37
How Hiber returnit to Spanze, and efter deceiþ of his fader, tuk rewle of ye cuntre, and how Symon Brek brocht ye fatale marbill chiare in Ireland . . . . . Capit° iij°	41
How fra Ireland Scottis reparit to ye Ilis; how Rothesay first inhabit Argile; and how Pichtis come in Albion, and be marriage maid affinite with Scottis . . . . . Capit° iiij°	46
How Pichtis and Britouns conspirit for distrucioun of Scottis, and how Fferguþ come fra Ireland in suple of Scottis and was chosin king . . . . . Capit° v°	50
How King Fferguþ, passing to batell, tuk ye red lyon to his armys; how tresoun of Britouns was to Scottis and Pichtis reuelit, and how efter diuerþ desceptacions pai concurrit be new pece contrare Britouns . . . . . Ca° vj	55
How King Coile of Britouns brocht his armys in Scotland, quhaire he was slane; how Scottis to Britouns grantit pece, and how Scottis maid to King Fferguþ ye aith of fidelite of new . . . . . Ca° vij°	61
How King Fferguþ to his nobillis maid his proposicioun, and how he distribute amang game the regions of his kinrik . . . . . Capit° viij°	66
How King Fferguþ beildit ye castell of Berigone; how he passit in Ireland, and in his returne at Craige Fergus deceissit . . . . . Capit° ix°	71
Heir endis the First Buk	
How Sembache and Ffranchta to ye pepill maid proposicouns twiching ye successioun of King Fferguþ . . . . . Ca° j	73
How Scottis princis suld efterwart succede, and how Ffeirchare tuk ye crowne, and renewit the lyige with Pichtis . . . . . Capit° ij	77

	How Fferleig, first son of Ffergus, conspirit contrar King Ffeirchare, and how in favoure of him ye king offerit to leif ye crowne . . . . . Capit° iij	79
	How Mayine was crownite, and how he institut the iustice air, templis and sacrifice to his goddis, with vthir divyne ceremonis . . . . . Capit° iiij	82
	Off the regne of Dornadill, and how hunting lawis war institute; how Nothat was crownit; of his mysgiding and slauch[t]er; how Fferquhard desiring to reuenge ye samyn be Dovale was chassit to ye Ilis; and how he inducit ye clannys to his purpos . . . . . Capit° v°	84
	How Fferquhard invadit Dowale be batell, and of yare slauchter; how ye King of Pichtis was slane, King Rewther takin, and how Britouns expellit Pichtis to Orknay . . . . . Ca° vj	90
M.L.T. 9	How Britouns, eftir yai had forayit all Pichtland, vincust Scottis in batell; how King Reuthare was asseigit; of his eschaip and passing to Ireland, and how Scottis be Britouns war banyst . . . . . Capit° vij°	92
	Ruther, heir returnit fra Ireland, conquest his kinrik, of new vincust Britouns; to him Rewtha succedit and in ye realme maid polecye . . . . . Capit° viij°	94
	Heir come ye oratouris of Ptolome in Scotland; Reutha, denudit him of ye crown in fauoure of Thereus, quhilk for his mysgiding was banist, and efter gouernment of Conane, Iosina was maid souerane . . . . . Capit° ix°	98
	How ye Spanze prestis inducit Scottis to adoracioun of ane god; how Ffynnance was crownit; of his vertuouß giding; how Drwidis in ye Ile of Mon had prymare seit, and of ye vicis of King Durst . . . . . Capit° x°	101
	How ye clannys countrere King Durst conspirit; of his dissymulit crudilite and slachter of his nobillis, and how he was slane; how ye crowne was gewin to Evene, and how he fra his liegis resaut ye aith of fidelite . . . . . Capit° xj°	106
	How Evene with Pichtis barganit contrare Britouns; of his deceiß; how ye airis of Durst be Gillus war slane; how Gillus invadit ye crowne and slew ye hereturis; of his tyranny and how he was chaissit to Ireland . . . . . Ca° xij°	111
	How Evene was crownit; how Cadall persewit Gillus in Ireland, and of his slauchter; how on ye sey Cadal was trowblit at his returne . . . . . Ca° xiiij°	118
	How Evene allyat with ye king of Pichtis; how he expellit lymmaris; of ye deceiß of Balus, king of Orknay; how he foundit Innerlochte and Innernes; how to Cadall he erectit ane ymage, and how he deceissit . . . . . Ca° xiiij°	123
M.L.T. 9b	How Evene fundit Innerlochte and Innerneß; how to Cadall he erectit ane ymage; how he instructit Edar quhilk was to succed, and of [his] deceiß . . . . . Ca° xv°	125

## Ffollowis the Thrid Buk

How King Eder regnit in tranquillite and pece; how he dantit ye insolence of Brede the Insulane, and his complicis	Ca° j°	127
How, at desire of Cassibilane, King of Britouns, King Eder send power fra Scotland in his supple contrare Iulius Cesare and ye Romane armye . . . . .	Ca° ij°	128
How Cesare be Albanis was rebutit, and how he returnit with his armye to France . . . . .	Ca° iij°	132
How Britouns refusit supple offerit be King Eder to resist Iulius Cesare, and how to Romanis pai war mad tributaris	Ca° iiij°	134
How ye legacion of Cesare send to King Eder was refusit; how he derectit ye secund legacioun mar scharp; how pairto was ansuerit; how he left purpois to dant Scottis and Pichtis and returnit to Ffrance . . . . .	Ca° v°	136
Off diuersite in opinions twiching ye expedicioun of Cesare; of his tempill, and deceiþ of King Eder . . . . .	Ca° vj°	140
How Evene, sone to Eder, was crownit; of his mysgiding and corruptit lawis; off ye Romane legacioun send to Metellane quhilk to him succedit; and how during his regne the Son of God was incarnate . . . . .	Ca° vij°	143
How to Metellane succedit Caratake; how Gwider, king of Britouns, conspirit contrare Romanis; and how be ye Emp[r]ioure Claudius, Aulus P[lan]ctius and his colleig Sensius war directit to repres ye samyn . . . . .	Ca° viij°	147
How fra Britan war ambassiatouris directit to Scotland for supple; of þair proposicioun; of þar ansuer and deviþ of ye king	Ca° ix°	149
How fra Briton oratouris war directit to solist the inhabitantis of Gallia to conspire, and how Guiderius of Britan was com- pellit to fecht, and was slane . . . . .	Ca° x°	153
How ye Emprioure Claudius and Vespasiane come in Britan; how Britouns to him war randerit, and of ye clemence of Vespasiane	Ca° xj°	155
How Claudius past apoun Orknay; of <i>commoditeis</i> of ye cuntre, and how having ye king captive, he tryumphit on ye Orknayis	Ca° xij°	158
How Arvirag repudiat his quene, and spousit ane Romane lady; how Walis and vthir schiris contrare him conspirit, and war vincust . . . . .	Ca° xiiij°	160
How ye nobillis of Walis and vthir schiris <i>condesendit</i> to refere ye goumerment of ye were to Caratake, King of Scotland, and how he acceptit ye samyn . . . . .	Ca° xiiij°	162
How Caratake of Scotland convenit with þir naciouns foresadis, and efter he had distribute ye armye vnder capitanis, straik ye batall contrar Romanis . . . . .	Ca° xv°	164
How Planctius be ambassiatouris desirit redres fra Caratake; of his rponce . . . . .	Ca° xvj°	166

	Vespasiane returnit in Britan; quhom ye kingis of Scottis, Pichtis and Britons invadit be batell, and war discumfist Ca° xvij°	169
	How efter Arvirag of Britan become randerit, he was sufferit regne as of before; how lawis and auctoriteis fra Britouns war removit and Romane ritis inducit . . . . . Ca° xviiij°	172
	How Vespasiane wan ye cete of Camelodune; how Caratak persewit Romanis be batell, and be Planctius was vincust; how he was spulzeit of his tressouris, and how be Caratake ye offeris of Vespas[ia]n war refusit . . . . . Ca° xix°	174
M.L.T. 10b	Efter departing of Vespasiane, Caratake invadit Romanis be batell and was vincust; Planctius decessit, and Ostorius, ye new legat, was in his place send in Britan . . . . . Ca° xx°	178
	Off the fortunat gestis of Ostorius; of his crudelite; how Caratake be him was oureset, taikin and send presoner to Rome; of his returne and deceiB . . . . . Ca° xxj°	181

## Ffollowis the Ferd Buk

	How to Corbrede was gewin ye crowne; how Pichtis contrare Romanis conspirit, and [of] deceiB of Ostorius . . . . . Ca° xxij°	188
	How Aulus Didius come in Britane; how contrare him barganit Scottis and Pichtis, and to quhat fyne come ye bargane Ca° ij°	191
	How Cesius Nasica and ye king of Scottis and Pichtis appoyntit pece, and of ye articulis and condicionis yairof . . . . . Ca° iij°	194
	How ye legat Verannus come in Britane; of his felony and deceiB; to him succedit Paulinus Suetonius, quhilc subiectit ye Ile of Mon; how efter his departing to Ffrance Pichtis rebellit, and of mysfortoun of Romanis . . . . . Capit° iiij°	197
	How Voada, quene of Briton, requirit supple fra King Corbrede; how he requirit redreB of hir iniuris at Catus, legat; of his contumeloiB responB, and how Scottis and Pichtis invadit Romanis . . . . . Ca° v°	200
	How ye Moravis come [in] Scotland and passit with Scottis to batell contrare Romanis; how be force of Voada, quene, and supple of Scottis and Pichtis, Romanis war discumfist Ca° vj°	203
M.L.T. 11	How efter returne of Suetonius, Voada invadit Romanis be batell of new; how ye Romanis war wictouris; of ye dede of Voada; how King Corbrede to ye Moravis assignit habitacioun, and of his deceB . . . . . Ca° vij°	206
	How Dardan resaut ye crowne; of his mysgiding and slauchter Ca° viij°	209
	Off incidentis concernyng the Romanis estait in Britan vnder Suetonius, Trebellius and Vectius; of ye coronacioun of Corbrede Gald; how Petilius invadit his boundis; how Corbrede recunterit him be batell and was vincust . . . . . Ca° ix°	212

How Voadicia, inuading Romanis be nycht, slew of yaim gret nowmer; how scho brynt Epicat <sup>1</sup> on ye morne; how scho was finalie takin and slane . . . . .	Ca° x°	217
Off ye deceiþ of Petilius; how Iulius Frontinus to him succedit; how he perswadit Pichtis to concure with him contrare Scottis; of yair responß; how be licht iuperdeis he molestit Scottis; how twichit with infermite he was had to Italie, and how Iulius Agricola come in Britain . . . . .	Ca° xj°	219
How Agricola vincust ye king of Pichtis and subiect ye Ile of Mon; how efter he had chaissit the king of Pichtis of newe, he resaut Fyffe to fidelite of Romanis . . . . .	Ca° xij°	222
How Karanath, king of Pichtis, inflammyt Galdus of Scotland contrare Romanis; of diuerß actis done be Agricola, and how ye Romane nawin was brocht in Argathele, and how he past oure Clide . . . . .	Ca° xiiij°	225
How Agricola had ye Romanis armye in Argathele; how ye king of Pichtis in his viage contrar Romanis was slane; how Garnarde was crownit, and how Scottis and Pichtis invadit Romanis . . . . .	Ca° xiiij°	228
How Agricola placit his army apoun Tay besid Dunkeld; how Usippus come in Scotland; of supple brocht be Gildo; how ye Romane navin in Pichtland Firth was afflictit . . . . .	Ca° xv°	232
How Agricola sett ane brige apoun Tay; how Galdus, cheif of ye Albian armye, gaif him batell; how ye Romane navin about ye Ile of Albion was convoyit, and how Agricola to Rome departit; ane exhortacion of Iulius Agricola (writtin be Cornelius Tacitus) to his cumpany . . . . .	Ca° xvj°	236
How ye Romane Empire in Albion, be discord of chiftanis, was afflyctit, <sup>2</sup> and how yair armye fynalie was discumfest and expellit Scotland, and how Galdus deceissit <sup>3</sup> . . . . .	Ca° xvij°	245
How Romanis be Marius, king of Britons, war refusit of supple; how thridly yai war vincust, and how King Gald deceissit . . . . .	Ca° xviiij°	247

M.L.T. 11b

## Ffollowis the Ffyfte Buke

Liber  
Quintus.

Off the coronacioun of Lugthake; of his vicis and cruell slauchter; how efter him succedit Mogall; of his vertewis; how he was provokit be Romanis to weris, and how with funerale pompe he honorit <sup>4</sup> ye figure of King Galde . . . . .	Ca° j°	257
How King Mogall with ye king of Pichtis strak ane feld contrare Romanis, and war victorius . . . . .	Ca° ii°	261
How ye Emprioure Adriane come in Britan, and extendit ane dike betuix ye west and este seyis; of ye tyranny and vicis of King Mogall; of his slauchter and vthir incidentis . . . . .	Ca° iiij°	266
How his son Conare succedit; of his mysgiding; how he was private of his crown and incarcerate; how Argade was maid gouernoure; how for his mysgiding he was accusit, and þar efter vertuouslie gouernit ye kinrik . . . . .	Ca° iiij°	271

<sup>1</sup> Sic for *Epiac*.<sup>2</sup> Sic.<sup>3</sup> Sic (though in next ch.).<sup>4</sup> MS. *honorit*.

- How Ethod was crownit, and Argade maid lieutenant of Scotland ;  
 how he recunterit Romanis in batell, and quhat avantage he  
 had ; how Victoryne, the Romane legat, was dischargit and  
 to him succedit Calphurnius ; how he invadit Scotland and  
 reparit ye gret dike ; how efter diuerß iupartiyis Calphurnius  
 departit to Rome ; how Trebellius succedit legat, and of his  
 dissimylacioun . . . . . Ca° v° 275
- M.L.T. 12 How Scottis and Pichtis be batell supprisit Trebellius ; how ye  
 comonis of Britan contrare Romanis conspirt, and war vincust ;  
 how Trebellius was remouit and Pertinax maid legate ; of ye  
 humanite and valzeandnes of Pertinax ; how he was coactit  
 to accept ye impir . . . . . Ca° vj° 280
- How to dant ye mociou of Insulanic, Argade with ane army was  
 directit ; how he was slane, and [to] quhat poynt of mysere  
 Insulanic was brocht ; how King Ethod institut lawis of  
 hunting ; how be ane menstrall he was slane . . . . . Ca° vij° 283
- How, efter Ethod was betrasit, Satrahell tuk ye crown ; of his  
 mysgiding and slauchter ; how Donald to him succedit ; of  
 his vertewis goumernt ; how at request of Ffulgence, Donald  
 of Scotland suppleyit him contrar Romanis . . . . . Ca° viii° 286
- How ye Empriour Seuere come in Britan and persewit Ffulgence ;  
 how Ffulgence at ye Emprioure requirit pece and was refusit ;  
 how Ffulgence with his supple of Scottis and Pichtis was  
 vincust, and chaissit fleand to Scotland, and how ye Emprioure  
 Seuere deceissit . . . . . Ca° ix° 289
- How, efter deceiß of ye Emp[r]iour Seuere, betuix histwa sonnys  
 the empire was deuidit, and how with ye Romane armye paj  
 departit to Rome, and how Authone be ambitioun of ye  
 hale empire slew his broder ; how King Donald and nobillis  
 of Scotland resaut ye faitht of Crist, and how Donald began  
 ye first cunze of money in yis realme . . . . . Ca° x° 294

## Ffollowis ye Sext Buk

- How Athirco was crownit and of his verteuoß begynnyng ; finalie  
 of his mysgidit liff and slauchter . . . . . Ca° j° 299
- How Natholok be tyra[nny] regnit ; how he persew[it] ye blude  
 royal ; and how [be] ane Morave he was s[lane]<sup>1</sup> . . . . . Ca° ii° 302
- How Findak was creat king, and of his humane condicions ;  
 how he dantit ye Insulans ; how be tresoun of his broder  
 Carance and Donald Insulane he was slane ; how his broder  
 Donald tuk ye crowne, and be Donald Insulane was oure sett  
 and woundit in batell, quhairthrow he deceissit, and of vthir  
 incidentis . . . . . Ca° iij° 307
- How Donald Insulane vsurpit ye crowne, and coactit ye nobillis  
 consent pairto ; of his tyranny and crudelite ; how be Crath[ ]int  
 he was slane ; how to Crathlynt ye crown was gewin, and of his  
 humanite towart ye king of Pichtis . . . . . Ca° iiij° 313

<sup>1</sup> Owing to margin-trimming, restored letters are lacking in the MS.

- How betuix Scottis and Pichtis for ane hund raiß debait, and of athir iniuris done to vthir, with fellony and slauchter Ca° v° 316 M.L.T. 12b
- How Carance dispulzeit Romanis of Britan; how be ambassiatouris he exponit to King Craithlinth his desiris; how yai appoyntit ane meting, and how Carance recouncillit ye kingis of Scottis and Pichtis . . . . . Ca° vj° 319
- How Carance slew Bassiane, Romane legate, in batell and tuke yecrowne of Britan; how be Aleclegate, Carance was betrassit; how Alete rebelling contrar ye emprioure vsurpit ye realme of Britane; of his slauchter; of crudilite of Diocleciane contrare Cristianus; of his deceiß; how Constance Emprioure come in Britan, and contracting mariage with ye douchter of Coele, quhilk had inuadit ye crowne, sufferit him regnne, and how gret Constantyne emprioure was borne . . . . . Ca° vij° 324
- How Constance Emprioure, returnit to Britan, and intending to inuad Scottis and Pichtis, deceissit; how King Crachlint foundit ye Bischoprik of Soderenß (now Ilis); how he deceissit and gaif ye crowne to Ffincormak, his cousing; how Herculeus legate, be Octavius was discumfist; how, be Trahere legate, Octavius was chasit to Scotland, and how Trahere thairefter be King Ffincormak and Octavius was chassit fra Britan . . . . . Ca° viij° 329
- How Octavius decretit yat Scottis and Pichtis suld be expellit ye boundis of Britan assignit to yame be Carance; how his folkis send to inhabit yai rowmys war slane be Scottis; how Octavius was chassit to Denmark; how ye legate Trahere was murdrist; how Octavius was thredlie restorit to his realme, and how fynalie he was tributare to Romanis; how Ffincormak deceissit, and of diuerß erroris in ye counsall of Nicea condampnit . . . . . Ca° ix° 335
- How among the brether sonnys of Crachlint was questioun of ye crowne; how Romak and Angusiane contendit for ye samyn; how efter Angusiane was vincust he fleid to ye Ilis; how Romak was maid king; of his tyrannye and slauchter, and how Angusiane returnit and resautit ye crowne . . . . . Ca° x° 338
- How Britans rebellit contrare Romanis, and restorit Octavius of new to ye crowne; how ye lagat Maximus come in Britan and dantit yair insolence; how Angusiane, king of Scottis, be Nectane, king of Pichtis, was molestit with weris; how Nectane refusit appoyntment of pece and was vincust, bot persewering in weris gaif batell contrar king Angusiane, quhair athir princis was slane . . . . . Ca° xj° 342 M.L.T. 13
- How Ffethelmak in thrid zere of his regnne, efter he had invadit Pichtis and slane yair king, was murdrist on ye nicht, and ye Abbot Rewile brocht ye relikis of Sanctandro in Fyffe; how King Hereguste causit of his palace ane kirk be dedicat in honoure of ye apostill, and of his devocioun to ye said relikis and of vthir incidentis . . . . . Capit° xij° 346

- How Ewgenius was maid king, and how Maximus, Romane  
legat, to haue Scottis finalie deletit, confedert with Pichtis ;  
how, nocht withstanding the clement ansuer of King Eugenius,  
he invadit him with weris ; how Eugenius with ye Scottis armye  
at ye flude of Cre, was discumfist, and how ye legat having  
Galloway conquest, returnit to Britan, and how yair efter  
Scottis apoune ye landis of Pichtis vsit felony . Ca° xiiij° 351
- How Maximus movit his expedicioun in Scotland of new ; how  
King Eugenius assembling his armye maid to yame ane vehe-  
ment vrason, and how finalie yai straik ye bargane, quhaire  
ye king with maist parte of his nobillis and pepill war slane  
Ca° xiiiij° 355
- Off ye humanite of Maximus towart ye kingis brodere and vthir  
captiuis ; how he causit ye king princelie be beryit ; of crudelite  
of Pichtis towart Scottis, and how yai couth nocht be satisfiyt  
quhill Scottis war expellit Albion ; how to ye Quene Cartandis  
he assignit ane lifing in Galloway, and how ye dewote  
persouns yat war exilit, foundit ane Abbay in Comkill  
Ca° xv° 361
- M.L.T. 13b How ye Insulans intending to recouer ye realme, inuadit Argathele,  
and be Pichtis war slane ; how be solistacioun of Scottis ye  
Hibernienß brocht ane armye in Pichtland, quhare yai war  
discumfist and slane, and how finalie Hibernienß band pece  
with Romanis . . . . . Ca° xvj° 365

## Followis ye vii Buke

- Off ye humanite and liberalite of Maximus, quhar throw ye armye  
consentit he suld vsurpe ye Empire ; how he broukit ye  
monarchie of Albion ; how he slew ye Empriour Gratiane ;  
how Maximus be ye Empriour Theodoß was assegit and slane ;  
how Octavius inuadit ye crown of Britan, and was persewit  
be Romanis, and be quhat condicions he appoyntit pece  
Ca° j 369
- How ye legatis Victoryne and Marcius be strat lawis suppressit  
Pichtis ; how King Hergust for melancolie slew him self ;  
how Romanis send ye new king of Pichtis boundin to Rome ;  
how Pichtis war coactit to extend ane wall betuix Abircorne  
and Dumbritane, and how Pichtis regretit ye dessait movit  
contrar Scottis . . . . . Ca° ij° 373
- How Ffergus ye Secund was productit of ye successioun of Ethod,  
broder to king Eugenius ; how he was at ye taikin of Rome ;  
how yairfra he brocht ane schryne replete with bukis to Colm-  
kill, and of quhat materè yai bukis apperandlie tretis ; of  
vthire incidentis, and of singular lawde of Sanctis Augustine  
and Iherome . . . . . Ca° iii 376



- How Pichtis oppressit be Romanis, solistit Fferguß to cum in Albion ; of ye ded of Marcius and Graciane, Romane legatis ; how Constanttynne new legate rebellit *contrar* ye emprioure, and how be Constance he was slane ; how fra all partis Scottis convenit to Fferguß *cumin* to Albion ; how he confiderit with Pichtis ; how he was crownit ; how he reconterit Victorine in sair battell, and of ye Hieland Pichtis . . . . . Ca° iiij° 381
- How ye werkmen, deput be Victoryne to compleit ye dike, war slane be Scottis ; of *commendacioun* and lynage of Grahame ; how Fferguß with his barons consultit apoun ye weris, how Victoryne rebellit *contrare* ye empriour ; nochtwithstanding be Heraclayne he was comprehendit and slane ; how Placidus was creat legate and discumfist be King Fferguß, and how he confederit with ye Scottis and Pichtis . . . . . Ca° v° 386
- How King Fferguß, having pece, institut new namez of diuerß regions ; how he was gewin to polacye and foundit ane abbay in Colmkill, quhair princis suld be beryit ; how efter deceiß of Placidus, the legate Castius be King Ffergus in battell was slane, and how Dioneth was chosin king Ca° vj° 390
- How ye legate Etius send Maxymyane in Britan ; how King Fferguß ye king of Pichtis, and Dioneth of Walis, past in his meting ; of ye proposicioun maid be King Fferguß to his armye ; how Maxymyane triumphit in batell quhaire King Fferguß and ye king of Pichtis war slane ; how Dioneth fled to Walis ; of ye crudilite of Maxymyane efter ye victorie ; and how bezond ye gret wall he debarrit Scottis and Pichtis . . . . . Ca° vij° 394
- How Maxymyane, tending to rebell, gaif pece to Britan and maryit Othila, heretare thairofe ; how Vrsula avowit religioun ; how Eugenius was crownit, and how he transferrit his faderis banys to Colmkill ; how Maximiane tuke ye purpure ; how he conquest Armorik and slew ye inhabitantis ; how fra name of ye new pepell quhom he brocht fra Britan he causit Armorik be callit Britançe, and how Vrsula with hir virginis at Colane war slane . . . . . Ca° viij° 398
- How King Eugenius and Durst of Pichtis, knawing ye departing of Romans fra Britan, contractit power to conquest ye samyn ; of ye harrang mad be Eugenius to ye cumpany ; how efter Britans war ourthrowin be Scottis and Pichtis yai war relewit be ye legate Gallio, and how he completit ye gret vall and departit . . . . . Ca° ix° 402
- How ye king of Scottis and Pichtis inflammyt yar folkis to invade Britons ; how yai sloppit ye strang dik and conquest all ye boundis to ye ryver of Tyne ; how Britouns requiring ye chiftane Etius with supplie war refusit ; how Conane persuadit Britons to desire pece and yarfor was slane ; how Gramys Dike was distroyit ; how ye Wall of Adriane was subuertit, and how ye boundis betuix ye ryuers of Tyne and Humber be Scottis and Pichtis war laid waist . . . . . Ca° x° 406

M.L.T. 14

M.L.T. 14b

- How the Britan ambassiatoures, directit to Scottis fore pece, war  
 refusit ; off ye epistill writtin be Britouns to Etius, and of his  
 defferring ansuere ; how Britouns preparit for batell ; off ye  
 strang ordinan[c]e of Scottis and Pichtis, and how yai discumfist  
 Britonis . . . . . Ca° xj° 411
- How finalie Scottis to Pichtis grantit pece ; of ye condicions and  
 artikillis thaireof, and how yai thirllit Britouns to zeir lie  
 tribut ; of diuerß haly men liffand for ye tyme, and of ye  
 bischopis Paladye, Serf and Ternane ; of vthir incidintis, and  
 of Ffyne Makcoull . . . . . Ca° xij° 415

The Proheme of  
THE  
HISTORY

M.L.T. 29

 The Translatour sayis to his Buke :

**T**how marciall Buke, pas to the nobyll prince,  
King James ye Fyft, my Soverane maist preclare,  
And gif sometyme thou gettis audience,  
In humyll wyse unto his grace declare  
My walkrife nichtis and my labour sare,  
Quhilk ithandly has for his pleseir take,  
Quhill golden Titan with his birmand chare  
Has past all signis in the Zodiak,

Quhill besy Ceres with her pleuch and harrois  
Has fild her graingis full of evry corne,  
And stormy Chiron *with* his bow and arrois  
Hes all ye cloudis of ye hevynnys schorne,  
And schyll Triton, *with* his windy horne,  
Ovir whelmit all ye flowand oceane,  
And Phebus turnit under Capricorne  
The samin greis quhare I first began.

Sen thou art drawin so compendius  
Fra flowand Latyne into vulgar prose,  
Schaw now quhat princis bene maist vicius,  
And quhay has bene of chevelry ye rose ;

Quhay did thair kingrik in maist honour joyis  
 And *with* thair blood our liberties has coft,  
 Regarding nocht to de amang thair foes,  
 So that they nicht in memory be brocht.

Schaw be quhat danger and difficill wayis  
 Our antecessoris at thair utter nichtis  
 Has brocht this realme *with* honour to our dayis,  
 Ay fechtand for thair liberties and richtis  
 With Romanis, Danis, Inglishmen and Pichtis,  
 As curtas redaris may throw thy proces ken,  
 Thairfore thou ganis for na catyve wichtis,  
 Allennarly but unto nobyll men.

And to sic personis as covettis for to heir  
 The valzeand dedis of our progenitouris,  
 And how this countre baith in peace and weir  
 Bene governit unto thir present houris,  
 How forcy cheiftanis in mony bludy stouris  
 (As now is blawin be my vulgar pen)  
 Maist valzeantly wan landis and honouris,  
 And for thair virtew callit nobyll men ;

M.L.T. 29b

For nobylnes sometyme the loving is  
 That cumis be merit is of *our* eldaris gone,  
 As Arystotyll writis in his Rhetorikis,  
 Amang nobillis, quhay castin thaym repone,  
 Mon dres thair lyfe and dedis one be one  
 To make thaym worthy to have memore,  
 For honour to thair prince or nation,  
 To be in glore to thair posterite.

Ane othir kind there is of nobylnes,  
 That cumis be infusion naturall,  
 And makes ane man sa full of gentylnes,  
 Sa curtes, pleasand and sa liberall,  
 That evry man dois him ane nobyll call :  
 The lyon is so nobyll (as men tellis),

He cannot rage aganis ye beistis small,  
Bot on them quhilkis his majeste rebellis.

The awfull churle is of ane othir strynd,  
Thought he be born to vilest servitude ;  
Thair may no gentrice sink into his mynd  
To help his friend or nichtbour *with* his gude :  
The bludy wolf is of ye samin stude ;  
He feiris gret beistis and ragis on ye small,  
And leiffis in slauchter, tyranny and blud,  
But ony mercy quhare he may ovirthrall.

This man is born ane nobyll, thou will say,  
And given to sleuth and lust immoderat ;  
All that his eldaris wan, he puttis away,  
And fra pair virtew is degenerat.  
The more his eldaris fame is elevat,  
The more pair lyfe to honour to approach,  
Thair fame and lovyng ay interminat,  
The more is ay unto his vice reproach.

Amang ye oist of Greikis as we heard,  
Two knicht[i]s war—Achilles and Terseté,  
That ane maist valzeand, this othir maist coward ;  
Better is to be (sayis Iuvenall ye poet <sup>1</sup>)  
Tersetis son, havand Achilles sprete,  
With manly force his purpos to fulfill,  
Than to be lord of evry land and strete,  
And syne maist cowart cumyn of Achill.

Man, callit ay maist nobyl creture,  
Becaus his lyfe maist reason dois assay,  
Ay <sup>2</sup> sekand honour with his besy cure,  
And is na noble when honour is away.  
Tharfore he is maist nobyll, man thou say,  
Of all estates under reverence,  
That valiantly doth close the latter day  
Of native country deand in defence.

M.L.T. 30

<sup>1</sup> Edd. 1541 and S.T.S. *poete*. <sup>2</sup> MS. *By*; edd. 1541 and S.T.S. *Ay*.

The glore of armies and of forcy dedis,  
 Quhen they are worthy to be memoriall,  
 Na les be wit than manheid ay proceids,  
 As Plinius wrait in Story Naturall.  
 Ane herd of hertis is more strong at all,  
 Havand ane lyon againis ye houndis soure,  
 Then herd of lyonis arrayit in battell,  
 Havand ane hert to be thair governour

Quhen fers Achilles was be Paris slane,  
 Amang ye Grekis began ane subtile plede,  
 Quhay was maist nobyll and prudent capitane  
 Into his place and armour to succede ;  
 Quhay couth them best in evry danger lede,  
 And saif thair honour as he did afore.  
 The valzeant Ajax wan not for his manheid,  
 Quhen wise Ulisses bure away ye glore.

Manhede but prudence is ane fury blind,  
 And bringis ane man to shame and indegence ;  
 Prudence but manheid comes oft behind,  
 Howbeit it have na les intelligence  
 Of thingis to come, than gone be sapience.  
 Therefore quhen wit and manheid doth concur,  
 High honour rises with magnificence,  
 For glore to noblis is ane groundin spur.

Sen thow contenis moe valzeand men and wise,  
 Then evir was red in ony book but dout,  
 Gif ony churle or velane the despise,  
 Bid hence him harlot, he is not of this rout.  
 For heir ar kingis and mony nobyls stout,  
 And nane of thaym pertenant to his clan :  
 Thou art so full of nobylnes, per tout,  
 I wald nane red the, bot ane nobylman.

Thus to all noblis sen thou art dedicat,  
 Schaw breifly how, be my gret diligence,

Ilk story be the self is separat,  
 To make thaym bousome to thine audience.  
 Schrink nocht therfore, bot byde at thy sentence,  
 Sen thou art armit *with* invincible treuth ;  
 Of gentyll redaris take benevolence,  
 And cure of otheris, na envy nor reuth.

M.L.T. 306

Pas now to licht, *with* all thy sentence hie,  
 Groundit but feid or assentation  
 In naturall and morall philosophie,  
 With mony grave and prignant orison  
 Made to ye reders erudition  
 Be the renounit Hector Boetius,  
 Supportit oft *with* Scoticronicon,  
 To make thy mater more sententius.

Bring nobyll dedis of mony yeiris gone  
 Als fresche and recent to our memory  
 As thay wer bot into our dayis done,  
 That nobyll men may have baith laud and glorie  
 For thair excellent brut of victory ;  
 And zit, becaus my tyme has bene so schort,  
 I think, quhen I have oportunitie,  
 To ring thair bell into ane othir sort.

Leir kingis to hait all pepyl vitius,  
 And na sic personis in thair hous ressave,  
 And suffer na servantis avaritius  
 Ovir scharp exactionis on thair subdittis craif ;  
 That not <sup>1</sup> be done *without* thair honour saif,  
 Sekand na conques be unlefull wanis.  
 Schaw mony reasons how na king micht haif  
 His barronis hertis and thair gair <sup>2</sup> atanis.

Schaw how the kingis life and governance  
 The murroure of levyng to his pepyll bene,  
 For as he luffis, be his ordinance,  
 The same maneris are *with* his pepyll sene ;

<sup>1</sup> Bann. MS. *nocht*.<sup>2</sup> Ed. 1541 and Bann. MS. *geir*.

And thairfore kingis has na oppin rene  
 To use all pleseiris, as thaym likis best :  
 The hear honour and office thay sustene,  
 Their vice is ay ye hear manifest.

Schaw now quhat kind of soundis musicall  
 Is maist semand to valzeand chevaleris ;  
 As thoundran blast of trumpat bellicall  
 The spretis of men to hardy courage steris ;  
 So singing, fyddling and pyping not effeiris  
 For men of honour nor of hye estate,  
 Becaus it spoutis suet venome in thair eris,  
 ☞ And makis thair myndis [a] effeminat.

M.L.T. 31

Be mony reasonis of gret experience,  
 Schaw how na thing into this erd may be  
 So gud, so precious, as ane virtuus prince,  
 Quhilk is so needfull to this realm, that we  
 But him has nocht but deith and poverté.  
 Schaw hou na gard nor armour may defend  
 Unhappy lyfe, and cursit tyrrane,  
 (Gif thay continue) but mischievous end.

Persuade all kingis (gif thay have ony sycht  
 To lang empyre or honour singular)  
 To conques favour and luf of evry wicht,  
 And evry wrangis in thair realme repare ;  
 For quhen thair subdittis are oppressit sare,  
 And finds na iustice in thair actionis,  
 Then rises nois and rumour populare,  
 And drawis ye nobyllis in syndry factionis.

Schaw quhat punition, be reason of iustice,  
 Effeiris to th[a]y unhappy creaturis  
 That nurisis kingis in corrupt vice,  
 And schaw quhat trouble, *quhat* vengeance and iniuris,  
 Continewally into this realm enduris,  
 Quhen men obscure and avaritius



Has of þe king þe gyding in thair curis,  
And makis þe noblis to him odius.

Schaw how gret baronis for þair evill obeisance,  
Aganis þair prince makand rebellion,  
Dejeckit bene fra thair high governance,  
And brocht to finall exterminion.  
Schaw how na hous of gret dominion,  
Na men of riches nor excellent micht,  
May lang continue in this region,  
Becaus þe pepyll may not suffer hycht.

Schaw how of kirkis þe superflew rent  
Is ennyme to gud religion,  
And makis priestis more sleuthfull than fervent  
In pietuus werkis and devotion,  
And not allennarly perdition,  
Of comonweill be bullis sumptuus,  
But to evil prelatis gret occasion  
To rage in lust and lyfe most vitius.

Schaw how young knichtis suld be men of weir, M.L.T. 31b  
With hardie sprete at evry jeopardie,  
Like as thair eldaris bene sa mony yeir,  
Ay to defend thair realm and liberte,  
That thay, not be thair sleuth and cowartre,  
The fame and honour of thair eldaris tyne.  
Appryse ilk state into thair awin degre,  
Ay as thay leif in morall discipline.

Schaw furth ilk king quhile thow come to þe prince  
That regnis now in gret felicite,  
Quhais ancient blud, be high preeminence,  
Decorit is in maist excellent gre  
(Without compare) of hie nobilite,  
With gifts moe of nature to him givin  
(Gif any abusit in his youtheid be)  
Then evir was givin to nobyll under hevyn.

Thocht thou pass furth (as bird implume) to licht,  
His gratius eris [to] my werk implore,  
Quhare he may se, as in ane myrroure bricht,  
So notable storyis baith of vice and glore,  
Quhilk nevir wes sene into his tongue afore,  
Quhairthrow he may be prudent governing  
Als weill his honour as his realm decore,  
And be ane virtuus and ane noble king.

Finis.

Here eftir followis The History and  
Croniklis of Scotland.

[Liber Primus.]

How the nacioun of Scottis fra Grekis and Egipcianis M.L.T. 33  
 first descendit, and Gathelus with his lady Scota  
 fled fra Egipt to Portugale, and fra thyne to Spanze.

Capitulo i

**E**fter the maner and consuetude of *vper* naciouns Fo. I.  
 the pepill of Scotland, desiring to schaw how yare  
 origine was ancient and of ald, affeirmys yame  
 to be the successioun of Egipcianis and Grekis, ffor (as  
 be writaris of the actis of Scotland is rememberit) Cecrops, Scottis  
 origine fra  
 Egiptianis  
 and  
 Greikis  
 quhilk first beildit the ciete of Athenis in Grece, had ane son  
 10 namyt Gathele (vtheris haldis he was son to Argus Neolus,  
 first king of Argivis) quhilk, following oure mekill the rage of  
 youth, movit grete troubill throw the landis of Macedo and  
 Achaie. Quharefore, be his fader and freyndis oftymes reprevit,  
 and nocht suffering yare seuerite, bot contracting power of  
 young gallandis (quhilkis for siclike crymes couth nocht suffir  
 to be dantit be men of autorite), fleing his awne cuntre, went  
 to Egipt. In yis tyme, Pharao, skurge of the pepill of Israell,  
 in Egipt regnit. His son, following the cryme of his fader  
 (and mare obstinate), be wraik of Almychty God in ye Rede  
 Se eftirwart with ane copioß army was drownit. This king  
 gladelie resaut Gathelus, and to him was his *cummyng*  
 20 thankfull, becauß he thocht his supple necessare contrare  
 Ethiopis, quhilk suddanely with power had invadit his landis  
 of Egipt, spulezeing gude townys and landis quhill yai come  
 to the cietie of Memphis (now Care), principal and cheif ciete  
 of Egipt for the tyme. Herethrow King Pharao had sene the  
 miserabill rewyne of his kinrik gif the mater be convoying  
 of Moyses had nocht bene dressit: to quham (as writis Iose-  
 phus) the armye of Pharao was gevin to be rewillit. Ffor

Gathele  
 fleing to  
 Egipt, be  
 Pharo  
 king  
 thairof  
 wes  
 glaidlie  
 ressaut

NOTE.—*Side-notes in a later hand are printed as an Appendix.*

Fo. I. fortifyit be ye power of Gathele he endit the hevy and trubloß  
 were contrare Ethiopes be ane licht bargane, and ouresett  
 game sua yat be forß he wan yare principall and regale  
 ciete, situate within the ile callit Meroes. Eftir yis happy  
 fyne of batell Gathele to Egipt returnit, and becaus he was  
 strenthy in persoun and of hie curage he conquest the favoure 30  
 of ye courte and yareeftir of ye king. Bot 3it yis honorabil  
 victorie was in cauß of mare detractioun and invy yan of  
 glore towart Moyses movit be Egiptianis, quhilk naturalie  
 hatit all ye blude of Israell. Ffor, eftir his returne, quhen of  
 diuerß crymes before ye king he was accusit, knawing his  
 dede was devisit, be fleing he providit the safite of his life.  
 And Gathele for his grete actis be favoure of all the pepill  
 was made chiftane to ye king's armye. Nocht lang eftir  
 becaus he was of nobill maneris, of prudent and wise ingine  
 and of ye blude royall descendit, King Pharao copulate to him  
 his dochter Scota in mariage. He tuke syne Thebes fra the 40  
 nacioun of Israell and gaif it to Gathele his gude son. Hereof  
 reiosit war the Grekis, seing yare chiftane sa weill cherist; yai  
 belevit him to be sa hie in consate of ye king, yat sum tyme  
 in Egipt yai mycht haue habitacioun and landis. Eftir certane  
 3eris this Pharao (callit Amonophus) deceissit and his son,  
 Bochoris Pharao, resaving be his fader the crowne, be mare  
 hevy oppression yan his fader subdewit and thirllit ye pepill  
 of Israell. Ffra *seruitute* yai had nane esperance of redemp-  
 cioun unto ye tyme yat Moyses, fra Trogloditid (quhare he  
 was exulit) returnyng to Egipt, schew to ye king the command  
 and charge of Almychty God, to haue ye pepill of Hebrewe  
 fra sic vile *seruitute* redemyt. Thareftir was the king be  
 felloun plagis strikkin, becaus ye legacion of Moyses and chargis  
 of Almichty God war be ye king and his barouns takin in con-  
 tempcion and hething. Ffor fere trymblyt Egiptianis and (as ye 50  
 pepill has in custume in manifest perrell) yai socht yare goddis  
*with* refuge, be quham was ansuerit yat Egipt be mare scharp  
 plagis 3it, was to be afflictit. Be thir *present* plagis and responsß  
 of goddis, Gathelus was affrayit and devisit to leif ye land of  
 Egipt, and seik new habitacioun, erare to expone him self to  
 extreme dangeris yan to remane apoun ye manifest vengeance

M.L.T. 33b  
 Gathelo  
 with his  
 powor  
 fortifieth  
 ye Egip-  
 tianis  
 contrair  
 Ethiopes  
 and  
 vincusit  
 game and  
 wan yair  
 principall  
 and  
 regale  
 citie  
 callit  
 Meroes,  
 yareftir  
 returnit  
 to Egipt

Gathele  
 copulat in  
 mariage  
 with Scota  
 dochter to  
 King  
 Pharo and  
 tuik  
 Thebes fra  
 ye nacioun  
 of Israel  
 and gaif  
 it to  
 Gathele

Moses  
 declaring  
 to ye  
 king of  
 Egipt ye  
 command  
 of Al-  
 mychty  
 God to  
 haue ye  
 Hebrewis  
 redemit  
 fra vile  
 seruitute

M.L.T. 34  
 Gathelus  
 with his  
 vyf and  
 childrene

of Almychtj God. Sua schortlie ypareeftir, preparing all necessaris for ye saill, *with* wyfe, childer and ane multitude contractit haistelie of Grekis and Egipcianis, fering ye plaig to cum, fra ye mouth of Nyle he salit, eftir begynnyng of ye  
 60 warld iij<sup>m</sup> vj<sup>c</sup> xliij yeris. Eftir mony dangeris and perrellis, saling be ye sey Mediterrane, at ye land of Numyde he arrivit, quhare ye inhabitantis stopping him to tak land, he salit to that parte of Spanze quhilk is namyt (bot eftir mony yeris) Portugale. Sum haldis ye sammyn, takin fra Gathele, the name was callit Portugale, and eftir certane yeris callit Lusitania, and now the terme ane litill being corruptit, it is returnit to the first name of Portugale. Bot quha may afferme ane thing sua ancient and ald, to be of verite? At yis porte *with* his folkis he tuke land; and becaus of lang trubill and catching apoun ye sevin seyis, be mony dangeris quhilkis *with* difficulte he evadit, na viueris for sustentacion of him and his  
 70 folkis war left, in ye cuntre he socht victualis and bestiall for refresching of his folkis. The inhabitantis gretely agast, *with* wapynnys and harnes, dissolute *without* ordour, drew fra all partis to stop ye pray and gaif ye bargane, quhare ye strangearis had victory. Herethrow yai increscit in curage, having ferme beleif yat in sum stabill habitacion yare peregrinacion suld be endit. Sua ye Hiberis (now callit Spanzeartis) promitting kyndenens, band *with* yame amyte and frendschip in tyme cuming, and for beilding of ane newe ciete assignit ane place. Nocht lang eftir, ye fundacion of yis ciete was laid apoun ye bank of ye river of Mynd, callit for ye tyme Brachara, bot Barsale for ye present.

Fo. I.

affrayit  
 be ye  
 plage  
 devisit  
 to laif  
 ye land  
 of Egipt

Gathelus  
*with* his  
 company  
 arryvit in  
 Portugale

Gathelus  
 and his  
 company  
 gettis  
 victorie  
 ouer ye  
 inhabi-  
 tantis of  
 Portugale

Gathelus  
 and ye  
 Span-  
 zeartis  
 yan callit  
 Hiberis  
 band  
 freindschip  
*with*  
 yperis

How Gathelus beildit ye ciete of Brigance, now Compostell; how Gathele ourset Spanzeartis in batel and of ye *mer*bil throne; how Hyber and Hemek subdewit Ireland. Cap<sup>o</sup> ij

**O**f this licence grantit repenting, ye inhabitantis fering yat yis bannyst pepill (fra quhat region yai knew nocht, nor of quhat blude yai war descendit) suld beside yame increß and

M.L.T. 34b

Fo. II. habound in ryches, be supple of ye cuntreis adiacent contract- 80

The  
Span-  
zeartis  
addressit  
yame for  
batel  
aganis  
Gathele

ing power, yai addressit for batell. And first war send the  
3ong gallandis anarmyt, to stop ye werk and bigging of ye ciete,  
quham apoun hastelie ye remanent followit. Gathele nocht  
mysknawand ye instant bargane mycht nocht be delayit,  
arrayit his folkis and went in yare meting be bargane to end  
ye mater ; exhorting his men to schaw yame manly and robust  
for yare awne life and glore : thay suld of victorie haue ferme  
belief, becaus yai war victouris and had ado bot with rurall  
men vincust afore, and in practik of were na thing exercit.

The  
Span-  
zeartis  
appointit  
and schew  
landis  
on ye  
north syde  
of Spanze  
that  
Gathele  
with his  
cumpany  
nicht  
dwell in

The Spanze chiftanis wounding the manhede of yai strangearis  
quhilk be sa grete hardyment in vncouth regioun made yame  
for batell, ferit gif in yat iournay yai had bene vincust, thay  
suld on force be randerit to inemyis and suld prepare to yame  
self perpetual *seruitute*, and desirit to *commoun with* Gathele 10

and schew him landis liand on the north coist of Spanze (now  
yat parte is namyt Galace) bezond ye Spanze seyis quhare  
war bot few inhabitantis ; and yai knewe be ane ald pro-  
phecye, yat ane strange nacioun sum tyme suld plennys ye  
*sammyn*. To yai partis yai prayit him pass with his folkis in  
pece, and leif yare landis in rest but troubill, thareapoun be  
ane grete aith promitting to supple him with power gif ony  
vthir nacioun wald move were in his contrare. Sua Gathele  
binding with yame societe, said he wald at ye appoyntment  
stand. Thareeftir quhen sacrefice to his goddis was made (as  
was ye maner) with al his folkis to ye north partis of Spanze  
he departit, quhare with ye inhabitantis appoynting pece, he  
beildit ye ciete namyt Brigance, eftirwart having Nouium  
(and now Compestell) to name. In yat ciete vsing princely 20

Gathele  
beildit  
ye ceitie  
namit  
Brigance

authorite to his pepill (contractit of diuers nacions) he gaif  
lawis sua yat at anys, baith with lawis and mwnicioun of strang  
wallis, he garnist his new ciete. And to ye effect that nocht  
allanerly suld yai leif togiddir vnder ane law, bot semblabill  
yai suld be all of ane name, fra his lady Scota, he callit all his  
pepill Scottis. Ffra thyne grew this pepill and mervellusly  
multiplijt and increscit to ane ferme nacioun. Apon Scota,  
Gathele begat twa sonnys, Hyber and Hemek. And zit the  
Spanzeartis of the prosper successioun of yir strangearis, na

M.L.T. 35  
Fra the  
name of  
Scota ye  
pepill  
war callit  
Scottis  
Hyber and  
Hemek ye  
sonnis of  
Gathele

thing applesit, thinking to yame nocht commodioß yat the Scottis name suld sua increß, be batell sone yareeftir invadit Gathele, intending to haue yai stranegearis finalie distroyit. In begynnyng of yis were Gathele brocht his power to ye  
 30 feild, quhare certane tyme doutsum indurit the fecht. Ffinalie Scottis having victorie, nowdir of ye partyis departit plesandlie fra bargane, becauß ye maist valezeand chiftanis of ayer army war loist. Nocht yeles the strangearis had avantage, and at ye last, necessare pece on ather partie was made. Of pece thir war ye condiciouns—that eftir yis day nane of yame suld molest vtheris with wer: apoun yare propir lawis suld ye Scottis liff like as did ye Spanzeartis apoun yare awne, and suld hald still ye boundis quhilk before ye batell yai occupijt, and invaid nane vtheris. Quhareapoun followit yat ye pepill multiplying, diuerß eftir vtheris war send (bot eftir certane zeris) in Ireland to manure and lauboure ye cuntre. Quhen fra thyne furth, betuix yir twa naciouns was rest and pece. Gathele, sitting in his merbill throne, in Brigance (quhilk he institute to be of Scottis ye principale sete) to the pepill made actis and lawis. This merbill was in maner of ane  
 40 chyare, and yai belevit it had werde, yat quhare euer it war fundin, it suld signifye yat Scottis yare aucht to regnne. Sua come in consuetude, yat eftir it was caryit fra Spaneje to Ireland and fra Ireland to yat parte of Albioun quhilk now is namyt Scotland, kingis of Scotland (sitting in ye said marbill) war crownit vnto ye tyme of King Robert ye First of Scotland. Apon ye stane eftir mony zeris (as schewis in the self) was this superscripcioun gravin:

*Ni fallat fatum Scoti quocunque locatum  
 Inuenient lapidem regnar e tenentur ibidem.*

Quhilk in oure langage is to say:

“Quhare euer yis stane be found or quhare it stand,  
 Gif weredis kepe, Scottis aucht to brouk yat land.”

Bot quhare fra we haue maid degressioun, lat ws returne. How beit Gathele knew weill ye landis of Bregance mycht

Fo. II.

Span-  
zeartis  
makis  
weris  
aganis  
the ScottisScottis  
obtenis ye  
aduantage  
in battelPeax  
betuix the  
Span-  
zeartis  
and ScottisThe  
marbill  
throne or  
chear

M.L.T. 35b

The super-  
scription  
of the  
marbell

Fo. II. nocht contene ye multitude of his pepill, zit thinking he wald nocht brek ye band, tuk purpoiß to defend erare than delate the boundis of his regnne, and be counsell of wyse, prudent men, send to spy gif, within ye oceane, was ony place con- 50 uenient to transfer his pepill. The fame was for ye tyme, that ane ile was on ye coist of Spaneȝe, at the north, inhabit be wyld pepill, liffand but policye or lawis, and of yir war bot fewe. Gathele knawing this be exploratouris, *commandit* yat all the schippis quhilks he had in Brigance, suld to the nerrest porte be brocht: in quhilks quhen his son Hemeke, with ane parte of his pepill—men of were and marynaris—war enterit, and victualis war providit, he made Hyber admirall of ye navyn, chargeing yai suld drefs yair cours to ye ile now callit Ireland. Sua eftir he had gevin the signe quhen yai suld departe, thay weyit ankeris and mad sale. And the naving, finding fare wynde, the fyfte day eftir thare departing, at the bay callit Dandale in Ireland arrivit, quhare with all yare folkis yai tuke land; syne in the hillis beside, lugeit 60 yare armye. The wylde pepill quhilk inhabit ye ile (at yare first *cuming* affrayit and agast), drivand before yame yare bestiall, hid yame prively in covis. Thareeftir exploratouris send to vesy quhat kynde of pepill duelt within the ile, and quhat rytis yai vsit, be aventure happynnyt amang the inhabi- tantis quhare yai fled. Haistely that undantit pepill, dis- M.L.T. 36 solute and at the stragill, invadit ye exploratouris, of quham yai slew sum parte, vtheris yai tuke and had to ye campe. Quhen Hyber be certane signis and takynnys knewe (ffor *with* thame couth yai haue na comwnicacioun of langage) that yis pepill vsit, in place of mete, bot mylk, herbis and vthir sic thingis as ye ground naturalie *producit*, *commandit* (eftir yai war subiect) yai suld be salf. Syne vesying ye ile, the inhabi- tantis having of his clemence experience quhare he approchit, come in his meting and offerit to him yare persouns and gudis; ande be vsing amang yame na leß beneuolence, resaving yame plesingly, devisit yat with his awne pepill yai suld con- 70 verß, and suld increß and growe in ane ferme nacioun; and to thame made chiftane his broder Hemeke, chargeing yai suld obtemper to his *command*.

Gathele  
directit  
his tuo  
sonnis  
Hiber and  
Hemek  
with yair  
cumpany  
to Irland

Hiber  
returnis  
to Spane  
and left  
his brother  
Hemek  
chiftane  
in Irland



How Iber returnit to Spanze, and eftir deceifs of his fader, tuke reule of ye cuntre, and how Symon Brek brocht the fatale marbill chiare in Ireland. Fo. II.

## Cap° iij°

In this sort all thingis dressit to gude poynt, and eftir sacrifice conforme to the pagane rite was made, Iber leiffing behind him Hemeke with wyfe, chylder and gretest parte of pepill, with stark power returnit to Spanze, quhare at his first arriving, becaus be deceifs of Gathele his fader ye autorite to him pertenit, the pepill commandit he suld tak ye crowne. And he, mekill mare active and cruell than his fader, of his boundis extendit ye marchis, assegeit and wan strang townys adiacent, contynualie having zong men and gallandis in reddines to vse yare vassalage as ye tyme requirit at ony haisty iupartē, to expell inemys his rowmys. In schorte tyme he increscit sa mekill be land, that to the nychtboure pepill, 80 baith was he awfull, and in thay partis had conquest excellent lawde, gif necessite had nocht drawin the inhabitantis to seik him with pece. Syne eftir ane band was made, the pussance of Scottis prosperit sa weill in Spaneze, that ye twa naciouns (bot eftir certane tymes) grewe in ane ferme pepill. Ffra thyne furth was betuix yir naciouns na divisioun, bot mariage with vtheris and myxtioun of kyn and blude, quhareapoun amang thame followit sa grete favoure and benevolence, yat, forzetting ald iniuris, euery ane baith at hame and on feild wald defend his nychtboure na les than his fader or carnal broder fra inemys. Thareeftir fra Iber descendit lang successioun of his nevois regnand abone the Spanzeartis; amangis thame war maist illustir Metellius, Hermone, Ptoleme, Hybert and Symon Brek; of yir in the naraccouns following (as the

Gathele  
being  
deceissit  
Hiber  
his sone  
succeedoth  
to ye  
crowne

M.L.T. 36b  
Fo. III.

The tua  
nacionis  
of Scottis  
and Span-  
zeartis  
grewe in  
ane ferme  
popill but  
divisioun  
amang  
thame

Succes-  
sioun of  
Hiber,  
regent  
abone  
Span-  
zeartis  
lang tyme

Fo. III. mater askis) salbe rememberit. Quhill in Spaneȝe thir premisß 10  
 war done, Hemeke president of ȝe ile (of quham latelie is  
 rehersit), thinking ȝat of ȝe thankis resaut be his broder he  
 suld nocht be ingrate, in begynnynge of his dominacioun causit  
 the ile be callit Ibernica, eftir the name of his brodir Iber, sa  
 that to ȝe posterite his name suld be mare honorabill. Twa  
 pepill inhabit ȝe Ile—Scottis and the vthir wylde pepill. Sum  
 writis ȝat ȝis pepill quhilk Iber fand in the ile war generit  
 be gyantis, men of large and huge stature. Bot of ȝis mater  
 the verite amang the authouris is to be socht. Be mervellus  
 equite Hemek governit thir twa naciouns, having grete con-  
 sideracioun baith of tyme and caussis as ȝai occurit, beleiffing  
 na thing mare ganand to mak twa naciouns to be incorporate  
 in ane pepill: nochttheles ȝat thay suld be baith of ane 20  
 mynde, he mycht nocht bring to purpoisß, ffor eftir Hemeke  
 was deceisist amang ȝame raiß debate. Scottis desirit of ȝair  
 nacioun ane chiftane, and ȝe first inhabitantis refusit to haue  
 ane strangeare to ȝare prince. Ffinalie athir of ȝare awne  
 nacioun create ane chiftane. Ffollowit hereapoun cruell were  
 and batell, quhilk nocht without destructioun of ȝe tane pepill  
 (as apperit) couth be fynyt, sa mekill war ȝare myndis gevin  
 on baith partyis to desire of domynacioun and autorite.  
 Sare and bludy in ȝe begynnynge was ȝis were, bot ȝare pus-  
 sance ȝarethrow was sa brokin ȝat the partyis on nede behufit  
 agre and tak pece. Bot ȝit eftir proceß of tyme quhen ȝare  
 strenthis increscit, be persute of batell ather wrocht on uthir  
 grete myscheif. In ȝis sorte mony ȝeris, now in pece now in  
 were, thay duelt togidder. Scottis at the last to Metellius  
 in Spaneȝe direct ambassiatouris (for ȝe tyme apoun the Iber  
 Scottis regnyng) quhilk to ȝe king suld schaw thair complante, 30  
 and suld requiræ supplæ in ȝe instant batell, to be strikkin agane  
 ȝe ald blude, and suld schaw how ȝat pepill was dispitfull

Hemeke  
 causit ȝe ile  
 now callit  
 Irland be  
 callit  
 Hibernica  
 eftir ȝe name  
 of his brodir  
 Iber

Eftir deceiß  
 of Hemeke  
 divisioun  
 raiß betuix ȝe  
 Scottis and ȝe  
 first inhabi-  
 tantis of  
 Irland

M.L.T. 37  
 Twa chiftanis  
 in Irland, ȝe  
 ane of ȝame  
 of Scottis and  
 ȝe vȝer of ȝe  
 first inhabi-  
 tantis ȝair of  
 And ȝai haid  
 greit weris

Scottis  
 directit am-  
 bassadouris  
 to Spayne to  
 Metellius quha  
 regnit abone  
 the Iber  
 Scottis for ȝe  
 tyme to send  
 support to  
 Irland

and cruell and mycht nocht suffir abone yame ane strangeare to regnne; nowthir suffering marrois nor superiouris without yare fynale distructioun; Scottis suld neuer in Ireland be peciabil, quharethrow gif in haisty maner yai war nocht mett, all Scottis nacioun suld amang yame haue ane trublouß life and myschevouß end. To Metell, the cuming of ambassiatouris was mare thankfull that fra his freyndlie pepill thay wer send and desirit na thing bot *commoun* weill. Quharefore, nocht refusing yare postulacioun, thinking it pertemit na less to ye lawde of Spanzeartis yan ye weill of Scottis, gif he mycht deliuer his freyndis fra molestacioun of yare felloun vndantit nyctbouris, with ane power of gudelic men he send in Ireland  
 40 his thre sonnys, Hermon, Ptholome and Hybert, quhare, nocht without hard fechting, putting ye ald inhabitantis to discumfitoure and making the Scottis peciable, Ptho[lo]me and Hybert remanit to governe the pepill, and to mak vther polecye in the cuntre of newe, thare eldest broder Hermon returnyng to Spanze. Ffra thyne mony zeris the pepill had prosperite, the domynacion being transferrit in ony persoun quham ye pepill wald cheiß, and yarewith war strenthis and cieteis beildit. Ceremonis and lawis (as yat tyme sufferit) to instruct the pepill in gude maneris and dyvyne service in yare maner, was institute, baith public and private; preistis for sacrifice and offering of incensß in ye auld sorte of Egipcianis war create, and sua to ye pepill grewe baith substance and strenth. Bot as ye courß is of manly estate, prosper fortoun  
 50 oftymes to men generis wikkit inclinacioun, that gif yai haue na were of nyctbouris at hame amang yameself, mare cruelly yan ony wylde beistis yai invaid vtheris. Twa divisions at anys war movit, amang quhilks was contentacioun quha suld governe the cuntre. And ye mater was nocht fer fra appering skaith, quhen ane noble man namyt Thanay, of all ye pepill

Fo. III.

The auld inhabitantis of Ireland mycht nocht suffer ane stranger to regnne abone yame

Metellius send his thre sonnys Hermone, Ptholome and Hybert with ane greit army to Irland quha disconfiting ye auld inhabitantis

maid ye Scottis peciable Ptholome and Hybert remanit in Ireland to governe ye pepill

M.L.T. 37b

Thair eldest brother returnit to Spane

Prosperitie in Irland mony zeris and domination in ony persoun transferit, strenthis and citeis biggit

Ceremonis and lawis

Preistis eftir ye auld sort of Egipcianis

Twa diuisionis raiß anent ye governing of ye cuntrie

Fo. III. of Brigance nixt ye king maist honorabill, quhilk latelie fra  
 Spanze was in ambassadrie *cummyn* to Ireland to applawde  
 to ye felicite of his freyndlie nacioun, amang thame of na litill  
 authorite and aganis nowthir of thame having displesoure,  
 convenyng thame to *commonyng*, persuadit, that all debatis  
 vsit in chesing of thare prince, and slauchter sum tyme following  
*pareapoun*, suld in tyme *cuming* be eschewit : thay suld name  
 ane king quhilk with his airis suld haue the superiorite of  
 ye realme ; to his will *yai* suld be obedient : princelie name was 60  
 honorabill, the realme was ane plesand thing and fare, nor in  
 yis warld was na thing bettir than the authorite and goverment  
 of ane man quhilk wer of vertewe. At thir wourdis sa grete  
 desire sterit ye mynde of ye pepill to haue ane king, that for-  
 getting all contencioun, thay *commandit* Thanay suld at his  
 plesoure name ane king, and quha be him war chosin, suld in  
 tyme *cuming* brouk ye kinrik. Than said he : " I knaw weill  
 yat gif ane king of ane of thir twa faccionis suld be create, to  
 nowthir of the partyis it will be thankfull. In Spaneze is ane  
 nobill man, Symon Brech, excellent in iustice and equite, of  
 ye blude royall descendit, expert in zoure lawis and consue-  
 tudis, and to him and zow is bot ane origine of kyn and blude.  
 Doutles he is productit of Metellius, quhais sons sum tyme  
 ouresetting zoure inemyis, restorit zoure boundis to better  
 state quhen ze war at waik and febill poynt, and in thir rowmes  
 with yare folkis remanit. Grete parte of zow as zit is of ye 70  
 pepill of Metellius, to thir partis brocht fra Spanze as to  
 lauboure and manure the ground. And I think mekill for  
 zoure proffitt that be all zoure consentis ze suld send for yis  
 man of zoure awne blude, maist ganand to governe ye com-  
 moun weill, becaufß for certane displesouris (parte secrete and  
 parte manifest) to name ony of zow to be king is nocht ex-  
 pedient." The pepill hering ye name of Symon (quhilk for  
 ye tyme was amang yame in reuerence) with glade continence  
 and voce, be singulare votis, declarit him yair king. Ffolowit  
 grete ioye amang ye pepill, sayand yat day was happy and  
 ewroß yat ye name of Symon was rehersit. Sone war ambas-  
 siattouris to Spanze direct to Symon, schewin how, be consent  
 of ye pepill, ye crowne of Ireland to him was offerit. Quhilk

Tanay  
 ane am-  
 bassadour  
 frome  
 Spane  
 desyrit ye  
 pepill to  
 chuiß  
 ane king

M.L.T. 38  
 The pepill  
 aggre to  
 haue ane  
 king,  
 quhome  
 yai desyre  
 Thanay  
 to chuisse  
 to yame  
 Thanay  
 namit  
 Symone  
 Brek to be  
 king

The pepill  
 declair  
 Symon  
 Brek to be  
 yair king

Ambassa-  
 douris send  
 to Spane  
 for Symone  
 Brek

80 Symon vndirstanding, to ye pepill be ambassiattouris maid grete thankis; syne preparit ane navyn of schippis, and having gude weddir and fare wynd, he arrivit in Ireland, quhare honorably and *with* hartelie favoure he was resauit and in ye fatall marbill placit, quhilk fra Spanze he had brocht to testify yat his regne suld be stabillit in Ireland. Be als mekill solempnite and pompe as the tyme sufferit, he was be the pepill salust king. Ffirst of all vtheris, Symon regnit abone the Scottis in Ireland, and the tyme quhen his regne began was fra the begynnyng of ye warld *iiij<sup>m</sup> v<sup>c</sup> iiij<sup>z</sup>* 3eris, and fra the general flude of Noy *ij<sup>m</sup> ij<sup>c</sup> viij<sup>z</sup>*, and fra the

10 first beilding of Rome *lx 3eris*, and eftir Brute had gottin princelie honour in Albioun *iiij<sup>c</sup> lxxij*, before Criste incarnate *vj<sup>c</sup> xcv 3eris*. This Symon Brek be mervellus equite gidit ye realme and, maist be counsale and avise of Thanay, of quhome latelie is rememberit, quhilk be discrecioun, beneuolence and prudence weill knowing to ye pepill, wiselye behaving him towart his prince, Symon within schort tyme was resauit to sic familiarite and tendernes, yat als weill in public counsell as private, and in consultacioun of materis maist grave, first of all vtheris he was namyt. Attoure to this Thanay was be the king gevin the landis and boundis liand on ye south parte of Ireland, situate betuix the hede land callit sum tyme the Haly Promontour and the ryver of Birß, be inhabitantis now

20 callit Dowdaill, quhare with his folkis following him fra Spanze, he suld haue domynacion and remane, thir landis takand to name Brigance, and the inhabitantis callit Brigantinis fra the ciete of Spanze quhare yare first origine began. Of ye blude of yis pepill (bot eftir certane 3eris) descendit maist valezeand men of were quhilk tranoynting in Albion with Ffergus first king of Albioun Scottis, duelt in the landis of Brigance, sa namyt fra ye pepill (now yai call it Gallo-way) *nocht* fer distant fra the realme of Britane, to Romanis and Britouns maist cruel and *cummyrsum*, as in place convenient salbe schewin. Of thir writis Claudius Ptholome of Alexandria and Cornelius Tacitus, of grete erudicioun in writing ye *actis* of Romanis; bot to Symon Brek lat ws now returne.

Fo. III.  
Fo. IIII.  
Symone  
Brek come  
to Irland  
and wes  
crownit in  
ye fatall  
marbill

M.L.T. 38b  
chear yat  
he brocht  
fra Spayne

Symone  
wes ye first  
yat regnit  
abone ye  
Scottis in  
Irland

The tyme  
of his coro-  
nacioun  
Symone  
gydit the  
cuntray be  
counsale of  
Thanay

The king  
gaif landis  
to Thanay  
quhilk  
wes callit  
Brigance

Fo. IIII.  
M.L.T. 39

How fra Ireland Scottis reparit to the Ilis; how  
Rothesay first inhabit Argile, and how Pichtis come  
in Albion and be mariage made affinite with Scottis.

Cap° iiij°

The suc-  
cessioun  
of Symone  
Brek befoir  
ony come  
out of  
Ireland to  
inhabit ye  
Ilis of  
Albione

The tyme  
of ye first  
cuming of  
Scottis out  
of Ireland  
to Albion

Euery clan  
creat to  
game ane  
capitane

M.L.T. 39b

Gif ony  
man mane-  
swor[e]  
ye name

Fourty ȝeris in tranquillite Symon gidit ye realme. Eftir him 30  
Ffanduf regnit quhilk generit Ethion and Ethion Glacus; Glacus begat Noctasill and Noctasill begat Rothesay quhilk send certane folkis to inhabit the Hebridis (sua namys oure appreuit authoris the ilis in ye west of Albion, takand ye name fra Iber) and ye ile quhare he first inhabit fra his name he gart be callit Rothesay. Nocht lang tyme eftir, his fader deceissing and he returnyng to Ireland, be consent of all ye pepill he was create king, in ye ȝere eftir Scottis war first fra Ireland brocht in Albion, eftir begynnynge of ye regne of Symon j<sup>c</sup> xvj, fra the origine of ye world iiij<sup>m</sup> vj<sup>c</sup> xvij ȝeris. Scottis ȝareeftir to the ilis *with* ȝare store and bestiall made 40 oftymes repare, (for in sic thingis stude ye substance of men for ye tyme) becaus ȝai fand in ȝai partis the grund weill plennyst *with* naturall girfs and commodioß pasture to ȝare catall. Sua increscit ȝir new inhabitantis quhilk be the ald rite of ye nacioun devidit in clannys, made polecye in diuers ilis ȝareeftir, and at ye last ȝai plennyst the west partis of Albion and ȝame in speciall quhilk towart the north ar situate. And ye first ile quhare ȝai made habitacion ȝai namyt Argathele (as in oure croniclis is writtin) fra ye first begynnare and fader of ye nacion, bot now ye cuntre men callit ȝat land Ergyle. And to provide ȝat without chiftanis and lawis ȝai suld nocht lede ȝare life, euery clan create to ȝame ane principale (quhilk ȝir dayis we call ane capitane or cheif) to quhais command baith in pece and were thay suld obey, and oppone thame to 50 all kynde of perrell at his plesure. And to euery clan was ye name of ȝare capitane in sic reuerence, ȝat gif ony mane-swore ye samyn ȝai suld be punyst in the ilk sorte as ȝai had tane the name of goddis in vane, and suld incall ye samyn as ane thing quhilk was haly and in quham war sum spirit of God, quhen in ony dangere ȝai war constitute. To ȝis pepill

lang tyme was þis rite in vse. Sua without were of ony vthir  
nacioun þai increscit and multiplyit mony þeris. It is writtin  
þat þæræftir nocht lang tyme, come ane nacioun, vagabund  
and errant, fra þat parte of Grete Almanþe callit now Denmark  
(bot sum tyme namyt the nerrest Cithia) seking placis quhare  
þai mycht haue duelling, and eftir fra þe coistis of Ffrance  
and Britan þai war expellit be inhabitantis, arrivit in Ireland,  
quharefra be persuasion of þe cuntre men quhilk euer war  
impacient to be accompanyit *with* strangearis, þai salit to  
60 the ile of Albion. Vtheris haldis þai arrivit first in Orknay  
and þare made parte of plennyssing; syne oursaling þe narø  
firthis, fra thyne come in Cornane (now Cathenes); fra thyne  
to Rosß, Murray, Mernys and Anguß (vthir namys broukit  
þir regiouns for þe tyme): at þe last þai come to þe boundis  
now callit Fiffe and Lowthian, expelling þarefra þe hirdis of  
Britouns quhilkis bot seildin come in þai partis and þare made  
habitacion, like as þe ald antiquiteis of þe pepill schawis.  
þit in þir dayis the cuntre men gaif þame to name Pictis,  
quhilk may be interpret, payntit, owder becaus of the plesand  
forme of þare persouns, or fra þe variant coloure of þare  
clething, or erare fra Pichtis of Agathirß, fra quham þare  
origine first began. Ffor verificacioun hereof þai allege þat  
Orknay is namyt the ald kinrik of Pichtis, and þe strate and  
narø sey deviding Cathnes fra Orknay is for þe ilk cauß þit  
70 callit Pich[t]land Firth. Vtheris writis þat þis nacioun was bot  
remanis of þe Hunnys, quhilkis being expellit Fflandris, come  
to seik new setis in Britane, quhare eftir þat þare King Humber  
was loist, þai fled to evade the myscheif and plaig inflictit be  
Locryne and Camber, sonnys of Brute, first begynnare of þe  
Britane regne. This opinioun war plesand sua þe compting  
and reknyng of þe date wald suffir. Vtheris affermys þat  
þe nacioun was of þe cuntre of Sarmathia (now Poil) quhilk is  
of þe region of Sithia beside the river of Danube and war  
callit Agathirß, and als was namyt Pictis in Latyn, als mekill  
as payntit in Inglis, becaus to paynt þare visagis þai war in  
vse. And departing sum tyme fra Agathirß eftir lang incertane  
travell, made throw Sarmathia and Germanye, at þe  
last in Scithia nerrest þai devisit þare habitacioun, quharefra

Fo. IIII.  
of þair  
capita[ne],  
suld be  
puneist  
þairfor  
as gif he  
haid tane  
þe name  
of þair  
goddis in  
vayne

The  
cuming of  
þe Pichtis  
in Albion

M.L.T. 40

- Fo. III. departing, eftir mony 3eris yai come in Albion as before is remembrit. Off thir pepill makis mencioung Vergill, Claudiane, Mela, Eutropius, the Dekin Paull and vtheris mare recent, 80
- Fo. V. as Vadiane and Sabellicus, to quham consentis Cornelius Tacitus in ye Life of Agricola, quhare he affermys Scottis to haue origine fra Spane3e and Pichtis fra Germanye. Nocht-yeles of quhat origine this pepill was native and quhat boundis of Albioun yai inhabit or quhare yai first stabillit yare setis, it is weill knawin yai war honest and plesand men, gevin to polecye, robust and strenthy in weris and mony lang 3eris had habitacioun in Albioun. Bot ye variance in this mater is maid be the ald mencioung of authouris, as is *commonlie* vsit in sic cais3. Now lat ye stile returne quharefra in vthir materis was runnyng. The 3ere quhen Pichtis come in Albion was eftir ye warld begynnyng *iiij<sup>m</sup> viij<sup>c</sup> lxvij*. Als sone as yis nacioun to yai partis was brocht thay biggit mwnicions and strenthis, plennyst the maneland towart ye sey, create 10 ane king of yare awne, and be lawis and honest ritis garnist ye pepill. Quhen in thir doingis and siclike yai war occupyit certane 3eris, becau3 for default of wemen yat multitude apperingly abone ye age of ane man mycht nocht endure, and nowyir had yai at hame beleif of successioun, nor with vthir naciouns yai had na mariage: consulting apoun the cais3, be devise of men amang yame maist prudent, to Scotland yai send ambassiatouris quhilk suld requyre yame with affinite and societe to be maid *with* the new pepill, and attoure suld say that ye new *cuming* of yat nacioun suld nocht be contemptit; becau3 howbeit baith ye land and the sey evading al dangeris yai now occupyit certane landis unlauborit be inhabitantis afore, 3it yai had sickir beleif (sua the goddis to yame wald be propiciant) that be industrie and vertewe yai suld be like vthir naciouns yare nychtbouris, baith in pece and were, and yareapoun suld folow (sua to yare iuste petitions thay wald consent) yat athir nacioun, be freyndlie 20 supple of vtheris, growing mare forcyed and strang, suld mare eselie debate yame with all weris, gif fra ony partyis trubill war movit, and be mare strenth and audacite suld, contrare inemyis, move were as ye cais3 requirit. Strangelie first Scottis

M.L.T. 40b

The  
Pichtis  
send to  
Scottis  
desyrand  
to haif  
affinitie



herd yis postulacioun, thinking lichtlynes yat with ane nacioun vagabund, exilit and bot of aventure happynnyt in thay partis, yai suld myxt yare blude in mariage; and at the last convenyng ane counsale, allegiand, that the pussance of Scottis was zit inressand and nocht cuming to sic strenth yat yai mycht be to Britouns compare, to quham ye nacioun of Scottis fra yare first hanting in Albion was odiofs, and be sic societe and allya yare pussance mycht be augmentit, yat yai mycht with lefs difficulte dant ye force of inemyis; in yis sentence yai convenit yat with Pichtis mariage suld be maid; Scottis virginis and damysellis to yame suld be gevin be thir condiciouns, yat athir pepill suld brouk still the samyn boundis yai occupijt for ye tyme, and baith in rowmys and 30 name suld be seperate and dividit, and gif inemyis invadit, suld concur with yare armye to defend yare libertie; ony inemye moving were contrare athir of thir pepill, suld be repute commoun inemye to yame baith; quhen ye crowne of Pichtis war in questioun or doute, the nerrest yareto descending of ye famell suld be chosin. Quhen be baith naciouns thir condiciouns war apprevit, folowit mixtioun of blude—Scottis virginis to Pichtis in matrymonye being ionit. To Britounis yis affinite was suspect, fering gif yir twa naciouns war be sic tendirnes of blude copulate, yai suld increfs and be of ane opinioun and suld prosper bettir yan to yame and yare posterite mycht be expedient. Herethrow yai war kyndillit to procure distructioun of athir nacioun. Sua be policie yai 40 devisit to drefs the mater and nocht planely be were, and to inflamb Pichtis aganis Scottis, to raifs sedicioun and vndertaik the were vnder coloure yat sic thing was for ye weill of Pichtis, sua yat quhen yis ane nacioun be batell war oursett, this vthir falezeing in pussance, mycht more eselie be ourethrawin. Thre zeriis was yis mater delayit, tending baith yat this policie suld be secrete and als yat procesf of tyme suld wirk sum occasioun of were. In the present tyme yis new affinite maid ye pepill to habound in substance and in tendirnes, be proximate and nerenes of blude. In lauboring of ye grund, bigging of castellis and strenthis Pichtis war exercit. In sic thingis yai put yair esperance to defend and augment ye

Fo. V.

The  
Scottis  
consent  
to mak  
mareagis  
with ye  
Pichtis

M.L.T. 41

The  
Britoun  
nocht  
content of  
ye affinitie  
betuix  
Scottis and  
Pichtis,  
be polecie  
devysit to  
inflame  
Pichtis  
aganis  
Scottis

Pichtis  
exerci-  
sion in  
lauboring  
ye grund,  
bigging  
of castellis

Fo. V. felicite of ye *commoun* weill. To halking and hunting Scottis  
 The  
 Scottis  
 wer gevin  
 to halking,  
 hunting  
 and to  
 pasture  
 pair stoir,  
 vsing bow  
 and schaf  
 and licht  
 harnes

war gevin, and to pasture yare store, in quhilkis stude yare riches, vsing bow and scheif, licht harnes, habergeouns, sum of irne, sum of leddir, *commonly* callit nactouns; be plane batell and nane vthir wayis, yai put yare haill beleif to defend yare liberte and native kinrik.

M.L.T. 41b

How Pichtis and Britouns conspirit for destruccioun of Scottis, and how Ffergus come fra Ireland in supple of Scottis and was chosin king.

Ca° v°

Be Britouns war ambassiatouris to Pichtis directit quhilk 50  
 suld say thay amervellit nocht litill yat yai preferrit erare to be in societe with Scottis than Britouns, quhilkis was ane nacion sa flurissing in riches and in sa grete glore in reule and ordoure of were, yat nocht alanerly now was the fame of yare grete name magnifyit in landis of Albioun, bot sic like was it divulgate bezound the rowme seyis baith throw Gallia and Germanye: yare realme was opulent and riche, the ground was plentuoß and habounding in all kynde of metellis and vre, and als of fructis *accommodate* for the vse of man, quhilkis baith in pece and were to yare freyndis and confederatis mycht be richt proffitable: Scottis was ane pepill, vndantit, of beistlie maneris, nowthir gevin to meiknes nor humanitie, confiding mare in audacite yan strenth, duelling amang certane montanis barrane and almaist be intemperan[c]e of ye are desert and intractabill, and bot full of tyrannye, but ciuilite or gud maneris, in slauchter of men and wylde beistis having maist plesoure: attoure yai suld say it was prophecie 60  
 in Britane yat without Pichtis wisely providit yare awne weill, be desate of Scottis yai suld euery ane be distroyit: quharefore yai suld require yame to bynd societe with Britouns and invade Scottis be were, quharethrow owthir yai suld expell yame Albioun or ellis suld do mekill bettir, to bring yame to fynale rewyne, becaus yai being extermynate, Pichtis suld be deliuerit fra all iniuris and fere of inemyis, and in quyet and

eifß suld haue large and ampill rowmys in Albioun : to per-  
 furnis thir weris supple of Britouns suld nocht faleze. Be Fo. V.  
M.L.T. 42  
 Pichtis was mare plesandlie herde this message becauß yai  
 ferit mekil yat ye incressing of Scottis nacioun suld do hurte  
 to yare posterite. Nor thir persuasiouns commovit yame  
 nocht sa mekill to accept ye were, as responß of yare goddis  
 baith latelie gevin and of ald twiching ye state of yare kinrik.

70 To ye ambassiatouris was ansuerit yat be necessite mare yan  
 beneuolence yai contractit affinite with Scottis quhais maneris  
 and insolence yai sufferit *with* mekil pane : thay preferit ye  
 societe of Britouns to ye freyndschip of all vthir nacioun, nor  
 ye responß of goddis to thame was nocht vnknawin : quhare-  
 fore yai suld provide that in tyme oportune (gif be chance of  
 fortune it mycht be grantit) yai suld move were in ye sorte  
 yai had desirit, sua it plesit Britouns be certane artikillis  
 bind with yame freyndschip, and in furnissing ye were, helpe  
 yame with supple. Sua ambassiatouris, having expedicioun,  
 to yare cuntre returnit. Nocht lang tyme following Pichtis  
 making ane new lyge and confederacioun with Britouns,  
 prively dressit to mak were apon Scottis and, to pretend iuste  
 occasioun, first yai commandit that all Scottis suld remove  
 fra ye strenthis and boundis of Pichtis, proponyng pane of

80 dede to ony disobeying yis charge ; syne slew all Scottis  
 quham yai fand eftirwart in yai partis as transgressours of Fo. VI.  
 ye proclamacioun. Scottis weying yis dispite maist hevily,  
 incontinent devisit to be revengit. Sum parte of Pichtis yai  
 slewe, nor fra slauchter desistit nocht vnto ye tyme yai had  
 maid yame equale in nowmer to yare folkis slane afore. Here-  
 throw ye cuntre war brokin and, incontinent on athir parte,  
 cruell felony was vsit, ffor ony persoun be aventure repairing  
 in ye boundis of vtheris, but consideracioun owthir of tyme or  
 place, dispitefully was slane. Quharefore Pichtis breking pece  
 quhilk sa lang thay had dissimilit, to Scottis denuncit opyn M.L.T. 425  
 were. On athir partie mony iupertyis war made and, that  
 na thing be ire suld be done nor without sad and degest  
 avisement, bot all be counsell and wisdom, privelie yai pro-  
 vidit all necessaris for yare folkis in were, and, be diuerß  
 consultaciouns in mony sindri metingis of yare lordis and

Fo. VI. grete men, deusit how ye were suld be convoyit, be quhat 10  
 chiftanis, or quhat advantage pai mycht haue, or gif pai suld  
 tary the cuming of inemyis, or towart yame first suld tranoynt.  
 In ye ilk tyme Scottis convenit in counsell, quhare ye chiftanis  
 of ye clannys be diuers opinions consultit how ye batell suld  
 be reullit. Sum parte, hiely *commovit* at ye tresoun of Pichtis,  
 allegit yat without tary thay suld invaid pai tratouris as  
 brekaris of ye honorabill lyig, for sa grete was ye wrang yat  
 it mycht suffir na delay; vtheris allegeing the weris in secrete  
 maner war to be dressit, and be wisdom and certane ordoure  
 sa grete materis suld be reullit. Than ane of maist autorite  
 said, "I knawe, freyndis, yis dispite has sua fer kindillit zoure  
 myndis in ire yat fra revengeing thair of (gif it war ye weill  
 of our realme) *nocht* ye space of ane day suld be abstenit.  
 Nocht yeles grete actis ar *nocht* evill dressit quhen be counsell  
 and mature deliberacion pai ar done. Ire but strenth, is na  
 thing. This were *nocht* alanerlie contrare Pichtis, bot siclike 20  
 contrare Britouns, is to be sustenit be persuasioun of quham  
 (as we understand clerely) it is movit. And, als, we knaw  
 yat be yame Pichtis salbe suppleit. Nor we habound *nocht*  
 in sic nowmer, nor zit we haue *nocht* sic strenth, nor sa grete  
 prectik yat to baith the naciouns we may in batell be compare.  
 Quharefore it is conforme to resoun yat to repell iniuris,  
 counsell with strenth suld be myxt. Latt ws send in Ireland  
 to oure ald freyndis and kyn, quharefra our origine began,  
 M.L.T. 43 to require yame with helpe to debate yis were. And becaus  
 multitude of chiftanis rasis oft tymes amang the pepill divi-  
 sioun, we sall name ane, to quhais power and *command* all  
 salbe subiect, and following him in gude ordoure, we sall invade  
 oure inemyis to fecht for oure life and liberte, and, gif ye  
 goddis will assist, we sall haue victorie mare facile, yat we 30  
 haue ado with ye pepill, quhilkis be na maner of iniuris be  
 ws was hurt bot ressaut to affynite, and has tane of ws  
 mony gude dedis and has schawin yame fals, manesworne  
 and brekaris of ye trewis and pece." To euery man plesit  
 yis counsale. Haistelie war ambassiatouris direct to Ireland,  
 quhare in presence of ye pepill, plenezeing hevilie the tresoun  
 and iniuris of Pichtis, at ye king and gretest of the pepill sone

impetrate yare desiris. And Fferquhard (quhilk for ye tyme Fo. VI.  
 abone Scottis regnit in Ireland) send in Albioun his son  
 Fferguß, flurissing in youth and strenth, of singular prudence  
 and fatis of were, with ane gudeliè powerè of walit men, wyfis,  
 barnis and gudis (like as was ye custume of pepill), togidder  
 with ye fataill marbill, sua yat yarethrow in his rage and  
 youth he suld kindill his mynde in desire to regne, chargeing  
 he suld employ all his force and diligence to debate yis perrellus  
 40 were, movit contrare his freyndis the Alban Scottis. And  
 yai resaut him with mair plesoure yat yare affaris war sa  
 nere apperand dangere. Syne in Ergile Fferguß conveyng  
 the nobillis in counsale said, "ze se weill, maist vailzeand  
 men, yat supple quhilk be zoure message fra Ireland was  
 desirit, to debar potent inemyis fra zoure boundis, is now here  
 amang zow present. As to the iniuris done be Pichtis quhilk  
 30ur ambassiatouris menyt sa hevily in presence of the king M.L.T. 43b  
 and nobillis of Ireland, we think yame done semblabill to ws  
 as to zow; ffor tendir progenitouris ar to yare successioun sa  
 inclynit that quhat wrang or displesure to yame is done,  
 thay wey it as to yare awne propir skaith and dishonour.  
 50 We aw to zow the dett quhilk pregenitouris aw to ye succes-  
 sioun; quharefore schaw zow oure sonnys and we ws as  
 parentis. To athir pepill sall the iniuris of ye tothir be commoun  
 sen nocht alanerlie be proximate of corporale blude, bot als  
 be beneuolence of our myndis, euir to this tyme we haue  
 bene vnyt. To defend oure commoun liberte lat ws euer  
 concur with oure pussance. We ar cummyn here (as ze may  
 se) the maist walit power of all Ireland, tending to conqueß  
 to oure self lawde and glore, and baith honour and liberte  
 to zow, quhilk is bot vnstabill pepill as zit. Nochttheles, to  
 perfurnis ye were quhilk ze haue acceptit, na thing (as weill  
 is knawin) is to zow sa necessare as to haue ane chiftane  
 principall, without quhais convoying, na reul may be had  
 in tyme of pece na were, nor na state amang ony kynde of  
 pepill may be sure. Quharefore advise, gif be counsale and  
 60 government of ane chiftane ze can be content, and will pleiß  
 to haue ane king create of newe or committ ye giding of zow  
 and zoure cuntre to diuersß grete men. Advise quhat purpoiß

- Fo. VI. in þis caisþ 3e will tak and quhat sorte of gouerment 3e sall cheiþ; and quhidder I be chosin þareto or remane private, (sen with my folkis, at plesure of goddis, I am cummyn in thir partis to debate þis were), with this power quhilk 3e se, sa lang as strenth in my persoun remanis, I sall be vigilant for ye *commoun* weill; and in this mater it sall be 3oure parte to discerne quhat way for 3oure weill is maist ganand, and oure parte sall be to obey 3oure charge." Quhen ye pepill
- M.L.T. 44 had herd Ffergus in thir wourdis or siclike, þai thocht pluralite of kingis was nocht best and refusit to *committ* ye regiment of ye cuntre owdir to diuers grete men or 3it to suffir ye 70 samyn be gidit in *commoun*. And þat þis trubill of instant weris suld nocht haistelie supprise ye pepill *without* ane cheif, nor ye armye but ane chiftane, þai concludit þai wald haue ane king. Bot becaus in creacioun of ye king na clan apperandlie wald gif place till vthir, (ffor euery ane refusit ane king of ane vthir tribe as ane strangeare and nocht of his clan), to effect þat all appering discorde suld be removit, it was thocht expedient þat howbeit Ffergus in ane parte was ane strangeare, 3it he was ane man of vassalage, vertewe and manhede, of ye blude royall descending, and for his nobill maneris and condicions, be consent of all the pepill was wourthy to be chosin king, and of þat multitude to haue the gouerment. And treulie na man mycht prefer him self nor nane vthir of his clan to this nobill Ffergus be resoun, nor 3it be force durst attempt sic thing, sa discrete and richtwis was 80
- Fo. VII. his iustice and his prudence to all men sa weill apprisit. Ffinalie to Ffergus thay decretit the realme to be gevin. And Ffergus for this beneuolence, first to ye nobillis, syne to the pepill, randerit grete thankis, sitting in the fatall chiare of marbill, quhilk he had caryit with him fra Ireland, and, be responþ of goddis, repute ye samyn as destanye and werde to haue his regne stabill, of all Scottis princis in Albion was first salust king be plesand applauding of the pepill, eftir begynnnyng of ye warld *iiij<sup>m</sup> viij<sup>c</sup> lxix*, before ye *cuming* of Criste in oure nature *iiij<sup>c</sup> xxx*, and fra the first beilding of Romys ciete *iiij<sup>c</sup> xx*, quhilk was the *viiij<sup>c</sup> xxxvij* 3ere eftir þat Brute had tane ye gouerment in Britan.

How King Fferguß passing to batell tuke the rede lion to his armys ; how tresoun of Britouns was to Scottis and Pichtis reuelit ; and how eftir diuerß disceptacions yai concurrit be new pece contrare Britons.

Fo. VII.

M.L.T. 44b

Cap° vj°

10 **B**e thir wayis foresaid the regne of Scottis takin in Albion begynnyng, Fferguß, having regall dignite, to resist ye insist weris gaif his besy cure, calling to him capitanis of the clannys, chargeit yat euery ane for furnessing of his folkis suld apoun cariage horß turß victualis to lest xl dayis, thay suld kepe ordoure and reule without contrauersie or debate (*quhilk* amang ane armye is maist perrellus), yai suld nocht sinder nor departe fra thare mane hoist, ffor tharethrow yai mycht erest be pray to inemyis, and to yare chiftanis yai suld obey ; syne walit ane certane zong and stalwart to stand in fecht and ordoring thame in ye vangarde. Eftir sacrifice deuotelig to goddis was made. Passand before ye armye he  
 20 besocht the goddis thay suld to gude and prospir fyne convoy yis were, quhilk but provocacioun made be him or his folkis was movit, and suld bring all the vengeance and wraik apoun ye pepill quhilk first to vthir was iniurioß and first made occasioun to brek ye pece. Quhill in Ergile sic thingis war done, Pichtis, having thare ordinance dressit and ye power of Britouns reddy, distribute yare men of were in cumpanyis vnder capitanis and arrayit yame in gude ordure for batell. Sua on athir partie was made reddy for ane vnkyndely bargane amang freyndis quhilk war companzeons and marrois, cousingis, gude faderis and gude sonnys. Apon ye landis of Scotland first Pichtis led yare armye, aganis quham Fferguß be ardent desire and stout curage rasing his baner went in meting. In his baner was ane rede lioun rampand in ane feild  
 30 his gentil ire. Off all kingis Fferguß was first quhilk in Albion tuke thay armes, and ye samyn be kingis of Scotland ar kepit to thir dayis. Now war the armyis standing in array

M.L.T. 45

Fo. VII. and amang þame was lippynt ane myserabill and sare bargane, quhen amang Pichtis was ane rwmoure that Britouns (quhilk nocht fer fra the place of þe feild war gadderit) had amang þame devisit secretelie to fynd occasioun for destructioun of baith Scottis and Pichtis and had excogitate ane trane in this sorte that, quhen þai suld se Scottis with Pichtis enterit to batell and þe tane nacioun had of þe tothir advantage, thay suld invaid þe victouris quhilk wery war and irkit in fecht; than certane power, lichtlie bodyn, be cruell slauchter suld persewe the flearis vincust afore, sua quhen þe victouris and þe partye vincust wer ouresett and þai had tane þe spulþe of þe campe, þai suld brouk all þe ile of Albion at þare plesoure. Sic secrete tresoun of Britons (for fynale rewyne of thir twa naciouns) be ane fugitive to Fferguß was schewin, 40 quharethrow followit þat athir chiftane, *commovit* baith be perrell of him self and of inemyis, certane dayis delayit þe batell. In quhilk tyme Fferguß send ane message to þe king of Pichtis saying, or þai reconterit in batell, ane *commonyng* was nedeful, becaus he had certane thingis to schaw pertenyng na les to þe weill of Pichtis þan of Scottis, sua he wald appoynt ane meting. The king of Pichtis nocht refusing his desire, in *presens* of athir armye standing in gude array accompanyit *with* certane gentill men, convenit with Fferguß in *commonyng*. And first King Fferguß said in þis effect:

M.L.T. 45b "It has bene sene þat oftymes nobil cieteis and naciouns, contending for hie estate, to inemyis preparit ane way to occupy þare kinrikis and to þame self fynale destructioun, quhilk to be oure caifß this day gif we recountir in batell, ony man, (how beit he war blynd), may clerelie se and persave. The caufß of all weris quhilk apoun ws 3e haue intentit latelie (be it be 50 richt or wrang it makis nocht) menyis that oftymes 3e haue resaut be Scottis diuerß iniuris without reddreß. Bot gif we suld speik to þe verite erare þan be payntit wourdis coloure oure mater, ambition of oure impire togidder *with* þe subtell provocacion of Britons has kindillit 3ow to batell. Ffor 3e suld neuer haue devisit were apon 3our gude freyndis in law and nychtbouris, gif þe fraudulent persuasion of Britonis (quhilk, doutles, to athir of ws ar inemyis and subtell devisaris



of *ȝis* cast) had *nocht* movit *ȝow* to harnes and in sa fer as Fo. VII.  
 was in *ȝare* power had subornit *ȝow* to mak slauchter apon  
*ȝour* avne blude. Gif *ȝis* be trewe or fenezete *ȝe* sall iuge  
*ȝe* verite. Ffor nowder I nor my folkis may dout bot for *ȝe*  
 skaith, irrecoverabill of ws baith, we mak now for battell gif  
 60 we persevere as was devisit. And quhay may deny *ȝat* quhare  
 it is fohtin in equale strenth *ȝe* victory salbe doutsum, and  
 in caifß *ȝat* we be vincust (quhilk *without* slauchter and blude  
 of grete parte of *ȝow* may *nocht* be) *ȝe* sal expone *ȝour* self in  
 pray to Britons and sal graith to *ȝame* *ȝis* hale kinrik, *with*  
 grete glore, and to *ȝour* self *perpetuale* *seruitute* *with* schame  
 and dishonour? And quhat thing may be mare detestabill  
 and wikkit *ȝan* *ȝe* faderis be *ȝare* sonnys to be persewit?  
 We ar to *ȝow* faderis in law and *ȝe* to ws gude sonnys, and  
 quheder we be vincust or victouris *ȝe* sal pollute *ȝourself* *with*  
 crymes vncurabil; and *ȝarefore* (removing fra *ȝow* al iniust  
 haterent) lat ws *common* of pece and gude wayis, likeas  
 gude freyndis and nychtbouris, memorative how grete skaith  
 to ws baith and how mekil *proffitt* to *our* inemyis may follow M.L.T. 46  
 70 throw *ȝis* iournay. Off al iniuris made to *ȝow* be *ȝe* pepil of  
 Scotland, be me, quhilk is *ȝare* prince, gude redres sal be  
 made. And sen we aucht *baiht* be reson of affinite and als  
 be *ȝe* honorable band of pece assist till *vȝeris* and be of  
 ane opinion, lat ws turne apon *our* inemyis al displesure of  
*ȝis* were quhilk we devisit for *our* avne distructioun; sua  
 it sal *nocht* be iugeit *ȝat* invy to reson, nor haterent to iustice,  
 sal be preferit. To haue *our* realme at gude poynt and stabillit  
 in Albion I persave na way sa *commodious*." Be Ffergufs  
 war schewin thir *premiss*s. To quhilkis ansuerit *ȝe* king of  
 Pichtis, *without* avisement, (ffor now was his mynde inclinit  
 to pece), in *ȝis* effect as be his wordis he wald meyn: It was  
*nocht* *ȝe* custume of his nacion *ȝat* he quhilk had the giding  
 of *ȝe* realme mycht be his private consel dissolue the thingis  
 80 be authorite of *ȝe* estatis concludit; and *ȝis* were be *ȝare*  
 decrete was denuncit and *nocht* be his private way; quharefore Fo. VIII.  
 fore with his folkis, gretest of authorite, he suld haue con-  
 sultacion gif *ȝai* desirit were or pece; in *ȝe* samyn place he  
 suld cum on *ȝe* morn and suld certifye him quhat he had

Fo. VIII. *with* yame devisit. Sua yis meting being dissoluit, athir chiftane departit. Than ye king of Pichtis, in consell *convenyng* his nobillis, rehersit ye desiris of King Ffergus and be quhat maner, gif he had yat day delt *with* Scottis, nocht alanerlie suld yai *contrare* yame debate bot als aganis ye treson and slicht of Britons, quhilk suld be mare *perellus* yat before it was *previdit*. Ffor verificacion hereof he callit certane *exploratouris* in *presens*, quhilk suld certify ye noblis of Pichtis of ye tresoun and dissate of Britons, and als ye frequent and inoportune *persuasioun* of Britons to *proclame* 10 ye were, gaif yame mater to gif credence hereto. Syne in ye consell of Pichtis ye caifs was dispute, quhare sum parte in opinions yai war devidit, *sum* allegeing ye frendschip of Scottis aluterly was to be contempnit quhilkis be sa mekle slauchter and reif had *persewit* yare nacion and had wrocht apone yame sa grete dispite yat yai mycht neuer *condinglie* redrefß ye skathis; all bandis and condicions of pece with yame war to be refusit becaus yai mycht nowdir be sikkir nor *permanent* quhare reif is mare estymyit than sincere lawtie, wrang mare yan richt, and quhare invy abone reson has dominacion and wantoun will ourecummys all honeste. Vtheris affermyt ye societe of Scottis was baith honest and necessare becausß yai had helpit yame in diuersß casis, nor quhil yai war *provokit* be iniuris vsit na maner of felony; and athir nacion, as yai 20 clerelie vnderstude, had Britons *common* inemyis; quharefore *with* grete dishonour owyir new habitacion was to be socht or ellis to renew the band made *with* Scottis; yareto conductit ye affinite contractit, and gif ye samyn suld be violate nane vpir cryme amang mortall men was sa detestable nor sa inhumane; and als, be goddis eterne, it aucht to be revengit gif were suld be movit aganis yame *with* quham lately thay myxt baith kyn and blude, and, testifying ye goddis, had bundyn ane honorable lyig of pece; herefore the amyte *with* Scottis was to be renewit, bot gif yai plesit *erare* for lufe to rander haterent, evill for gude, and tresoun for ane trew parte kepit to yame afore. To yis sentence quhen mony had consentit and apperingly grete parte of yare myndis war 30 inclynit to pece, ane grete man of Pichtis *commovit* *contrare*

Scottis for slauchter of his broder in ye first iuperteis of were. "Quhareof," (said he), "maist valezeand men, procedis amang 3ow this blind contencion? Is nocht ye dissate of Scottis 3it amang 3ow knawin? Ar we nocht enewch expert of yare fellowe? Is it nocht plesand to 3ow to haue forther experience gif pece to yis tresonable nacion aucht to be obseruit, of sa cruell ingyne, maliciofs and vndantit and gevin for our fynale destruction? We remember 3it, as I beleif (bot gif we oure thochtles), yat we haue be ansuere of goddis, that this wikkit nacioun sall sum tyme bring ws to rewyne. And suld yis divyne ansuere be repute with ws as vane? Or in perdicoun of oure self and oure realme suld we furthir yare desiris? Or suld we foster sic ane fall to oure self? This pepill sa fals, dispitefull and cruell (gif credence to goddis may be gevin) 40 sall sum tyme kendill to ws ane terribill bleifs never in oure power to be slokynnyt." Hereto ansuerit ane vthir: "The ansuere of goddis suld nocht move 3ow, for gif it be trew na mortall man may eschew thare mynde, gif it be frevoll, we aucht nocht drede. Herefore lat all rankoure, dissate, fraude, treson and repreif be removit: lat ws provide ye honeste of oure self, and God defend yat be oure culpe the haly band and aith of fidelite suld be violate; ffor how evill it is to fyle oure faith and nocht to haue goddis in reuerence (sa haisty revengearis apoun ye brekaris of trewis of nobill men). We want nocht exempillis. It can nocht be said yat yis necessare lyig, bundin with Scottis, without reproche of ws or iniuris of oure goddis may, be oure autorite, be dissoluit. Lat ws 50 liff and stand yareat and nowthir schaw ws iniuriofs to ye immortal goddis nor till freyndis and oure awne blude, maist dere to ws of ony vthir thing in erde; and latt ws lufe oure gude faderis be hertlie kyndenes as nature (of all thingis parent) has commandit without failze. yai naturale luf oure barnys, yare nevois, and with all yare hert desiris yare weill. It is nocht nedefull yat we vse violence nor debate bot erare kyndenes, quhilk we ar addettit schaw to oure awne blude. In aventure gif we failze in oure dewite, we may be in derisioun to inemyis." Quhen he had schewin his entent, yare wyfis (quhilk at desire of yare husbandis war present in ye armye)

- Fo. VIII. assisting with þare barnys, brist out in prayer and teris, beseking þare men þai suld nocht in þat vnkyndely were dishonoure þare self nor contrare þare kynnyßmen paß in batell, saying, "It is mare plesand to ws, myserable wemen, with  
 M.L.T. 47b oure childer, to desire ony kynde of dede than behald our lufit spousis and oure vthir tendir freyndis sloppand athir with woundis." Thir wourdis or siclyke vsit þe lamentabill 60 cumpany of wemen, heiffand vp handis to þare husbandis, with þare barnys, quham þai teichit to pray and do siclike (samekle as þare age wald suffir). The grete men of Pichtis, movit be lufe of þare wyfis and childer and als be þare dewiteis aucht baith to þare goddis and þare awne blude, in þis sorte concludit þat with Scottis pece be ane new band suld be maid and iniuris done on athir partie be athir consent suld be redressit. And becaus Britounis war begynnaris of þe were and had devisit invencions for distructiouns of athir nacioun, þai suld to þame baith be reput inemyis in tyme cuming. The remanent was be þe pepill to þe kingis will referrit, be quhat lawis þe pece was to be renewit, or gif þe ald artikillis 70 plesit, or gif new addicions war necessare quharethrow þe pece suld be mare thankfull, ferme and lesty. Quhen on the morne the twa chiftanis recounterit, first þe king of Pichtis said: "Broder Fferguß, zesterday exponyng mony grave materis (nocht alanerlie twiching þe weill of thyne awne pepil bot siclike of ouris) thow lete ws feill þi mynde, quhilk, quhen to my consell was schawin, gretelie be þame was apprisit and be þame in þis maner was concludit, þat to thy desiris (becaus þai ar sene thankfull) suld be condescendit, and to þis present were suld be put end, and, conforme to þe rite of oure cuntre, all offensß aganis God be sacrifice sal be remedit, and, safer as aganis men is done, sal be referrit to þe plesure of certane best and maist wourthy of athir nacioun, this pece convenyng sa amang ws, þe Britouns (becaus þai haue maid ane devise nowthir iust nor honest) sall be euer  
 M.L.T. 48 haldin as inemyis suspect to athir nacioun. Thir ar þe thingis 80
- Fo. IX. almaist quhilk with my barouns I haue concludit. Sua sen nowthir to God nor man may þis were be plesand, latt all remembrance of ald haterent and new be forzett. To end þis

present batell is nocht enewch, without we devise be quhat Fo. IX.  
 maner all mater of debate eftirwart may be removit. And  
 twiching concorde in tyme cuming, we sall haue sikkir pece,  
 gif content of oure awne rowmes, we invy nocht ye fortune  
 nor prosperite of *our* nyctbouris bot erare ascrive to lawde  
 and glore quhat athir of ws do *with* vassalege and manhede,  
 and assist to grete and difcill materis, speacilie quhare *our*  
*commoun* inemye invadis. And gif in ye band foresaid the  
 condicions specifijt be nocht plesand, lat vtheris be namyt,  
 10 as we think; I dout nocht yat baith to ye consell and pepill  
 yis sall be thankfull. And I think yis way maist ganand, to  
 haue amang ws pece stabill and permanent." Ffergus apprisit  
 yis way ye mare yat apperandlie he had drawin ye king of  
 Pichtis to his oppinion. Hereto ye chiftanis assignit ane day  
 to haue ye ald pece ratifijt be ane lyig of newe, and to provide  
 thingis for yat mater necessare.

How King Coill of Britouns brocht his army in Scot-  
 land, quhare he was slane; how Scottis to Britons  
 grantit pece, and how Scottis made to King Ffergus  
 ye aith of fidelite of newe. Cap° vij

**B**ritouns quhilk come in supple of Pichtis yis tyme departit,  
 fering yis concord suld gener to yame na litill skaith. At  
 day prefixt quhen ye chiftanis *with* wise men of *ayer* nacioun  
 convenit, eftir all caussis of rankoure war mytigate and M.L.T. 486  
 removit, sua yat apperandlie yai suld admytt na occasiouns to  
 20 nuris discorde in tyme cuming, to ye ald lyig new con-  
 dicions of pece war ekit, yat ony extreme were, movit to  
 athir pepil, suld be *commoun* to vtheris and quhen yai had  
 batell contrare Britouns, athir suld paß with vtheris to bar-  
 gane. Vthir bandis be vthir certane condicions war made  
 and sua was departit. Quhen thir *premiss* war schewin to  
 Coill, king of Britons, passing his tyme at 3ork (cheif ciete of  
 Britan), gretelie *commovit* yareat he dantit his thoctis, for  
 he ferit nocht litill ye *incrementis* of yai *nyctboure* naciouns,  
 to him sa odioß; nor he couth nocht fynd be quhat wayis

Fo. IX. yai mycht be extermynate ; ffor, be ye counsell excogitate afore, he was dissaut; quharefore he concludit to haue experience gif yat pepill, vagabund, bannyst, of obscure and incertane origine, stark in slauchter of wylde beistis, durst mell in batell with his pepill, sa valezeand and manly. Twa 30  
 3eris almaist he deferrit yis purpois, awating gif be ony brek or divisioun of yir twa naciouns amang yare self, fortune wald object oportunitate yat he mycht persew yame be batell. Ffra ye begynnyng be Britouns was suspectit that gif Scottis and Pichtis grew togidder be concorde yat suld neuer haue rest nor eif in Albion. Sua desiring to move sum caus of were, be thift and steling yat trubillit ye bordouris of Pichtis. Quhen redref was desirit, yat denyit yame crymynall yareof, reiecting ye thift and rubry apoun Scottis, saying yat war in vse (and nocht Britouns) to dryfe gudis away. Quharefore athir pepill  
 M.L.T. 49 vehementlie in haterent of Britouns was kyndillit, spulezeing yare landis be hereschip, slaying yare pepill and planely drifand away ye pray. King Coill, weyand displesandlie thir iniuris, 40  
 preparit to do planely quhilk he mycht nocht do be privy wayis, and schortlie providing all necessaris for were and assembling powere fra all partis, invadit ye landis of Scottis environit be ye west seyis, quhare, making grete hereschip, eftir be fyre and swerde yat had distroyit mekill, apoun ye wattir of Dwne he lugeit his campe, sending men in diuers partis to slay Pichtis or Scottis quhare yat mycht be apprehendit. Quhen King Fferguis herd ye were first devisit or yat come on his landis, he chargit yat all bestiall suld fra townys be drevin to hichtis and montanis, wemen and barnis suld pas to craggis and strate erdis, he, with his folkis and 50  
 Pichtis, suld remane at ane strenth devisit before, schewing his folkis yat be delaying of tyme and penwrite of victualis, Britouns suld be irkit, thay suld refresch yare persouns and, quhen tyme requirit, yat suld be reddy and at command of yare chiftanis stoutlie vse thare wapynnys. Ane Scott fugitive to King Coill schew all yis devise, quharethrow he send v<sup>m</sup> Britouns, hantit amang montanis and strate erde, to drive ye pray to ye plane. He devisit pas with ye remanent armye in propir persoun apoun Scottis in ye mornyng following.

Be exploratouris this devise to Scottis and Pichtis schewing, Fo. IX.  
 yai war na litill affrayit. King Ffergus referrit to ye counsale  
 quhat yai devisit in yis caisß. Sum dissuadit ye bargane,  
 agast be the feirßnes and multitude of Britouns; vtheris  
 60 consellit ye king tak ye feild, allegeing he was men enewe,  
 quhilk suld stoutlie stand for defence of thare wyfis, barnys, M.L.T. 49b  
 native cuntre and liberte, and specialie in *presens* of ye king,  
 quhilk sonzeit *nocht* to expone him self to perrellis. It was  
 necessare and honorabill to assay ye aventure of batell and  
 victory was nocht conquest be multitude onelie, bot alsß weill  
 be hardement and manhede. Sua diuersß wayis was consultit;  
 finalie it plesit best that in ye quyet nycht King Ffergusß *with*  
 his power suld invaid ye Britoun wachis, and ye king of  
 Pichtis with his pepill at ane furde suld pas to the wattir of  
 Dwne and be ane strate erde and deserte, left but wachis,  
 at ye clamoure of Scottis suld invaid Britouns at ye bak, and  
 to the aventure of fortoun suld *commytt* ye remanent. Ane  
 70 litill eftir, King Ffergus on the nycht invadit haistelie ye  
 camp of Britouns quhare, slaying the wachis, he brak in oure  
 ye trensche, or to King Coill come ye skry. Syne haistely  
 rasing ane terribill schout, quhen Britouns made to resist the  
 force of Scottis, Pichtis tuke yame at ye bak quhen yai sus-  
 pectit na sic thing. Britouns, skantlie weill walkynnyt fra  
 slepe, without owthir standartis or reule of chiftanis, sum be  
 myrknes of ye nycht war salfit; vtheris, nocht knawing ye  
 cuntre, wandering amang haggis, sewchis and gattis, quhare  
 ye gate was brokin be ye multitude fleand and followand, war  
 oppressit. Amangis quham King Coill, chiftane (quhen *ser-*  
*vandis* to keping of his corps awatit nocht), was oppressit and  
 smorit, the place leiffand ye name perpetualie to ye posterite,  
 callit Coill, now Kyle, the terme sum thing alterit. Scottis  
 80 and Pichtis apoun ye morne to ane hicht assemblit vnder yare M.L.T. 50  
 standartis, and Britouns, *quhilk* in ye terroure of nycht Fo. X.  
 eschapit, convenyng and hering the dede of ye king and grete  
 parte of ye armye loist, send ane herald to ye king humlie  
 praying for pece. Be ye recent victorie, Scottis and Pichtis  
 growing mare insolent yan afore, pridefully contempnyng ye  
 Britouns, devisit to deny ye pece. Bot ye kingis, quhilkis

Fo. X. knewe weill the vailzeandnes of Britouns, schewing to yare folkis fortune suld be discretelie vsit, thocht expedient yat ane band of pece suld be with Britons maid. Thareeftir ane parte of ye spuleze to Pichtis being distribute, (as was ye maner in were), yai departit to yare cuntre. Ffergus, skaling his armye, went to Ergile, quhare, convenyng ane parliament of ye nobillis of his realme, he said: " Be how grete favouris 10 of ye goddis eterne, maist valezeand men, ze haue vincust inemyis, and be how mekill wisdome ze haue stabillit zoure affaris quhilk war turnand to dangeræ manyfest, I beleif nocht ane of zow mysknawis. Quhen it was force till ws to mell with oure inemyis, we war nowthir in multitude nor pussance to yame equale. Bot ye goddis, schewing yame to ws propiciant, failzeit ws nocht in nede. Be gret myscheif we haue stirkin the pepill, quhilk of all vthir naciouns was afore yis tyme be ws maist to be dred. We haue ourthrawin oure maist noysum inemye, quham with all his armye ze saw discumfist. Riche and opulent spuleze to zow yarethrow is fallin, and sa mony as evadit the myscheif, humelie besocht zow with pece, how beit to yame mare necessare yan honest. And yai quhilk latelie sa pridefully contempnit zow as beistlike bodyis, banyst, 20

M.L.T. 50b pure and nakit, before zour feit falling to grund, besocht zow with mercy and perdoun, gevin to ws exempill how febill beleif in manly strenth may be had. Nor we mysknaw nocht, nor to ws may nocht be vnkend, be how grete riches and pussance ye pepill of Britane schynys, baith be sey and land. Quharefore to oure gloure and to yare dishonoure it sall conduce yat be ane febill pepill, vagabund, (to vse yare wourdis), contractit bot of gaderingis, yai war vincust and discumfist. Quhen yai sobirly prayit for pece, we refusit nocht, eftir ye bargane was endit; vsing contrare yame na violence, we vincust in yat caiff oure ire and crudelite, quhareto naturalie we ar inclinit; lat ws provide, herefore, yat be yis onelie avantage we extoll nocht oure self be oure grete presumpcion contrare sa potent inemyis, in aventure we provoke oure goddis to ire quhilkis to ws grantit yis fare victorie and sall suffir 30 vnstabil fortoun lat ws fall sum tyme in handis of inemyis to oure contempcion and skaith; quha be help of dirk nycht



evadit the swerde, war sufferit departe frelie with wapynnys Fo. X.  
 and gudis ; syne made with game ane band for ye weill of ws  
 (as we may lippin) and oure posterite. To yis effect yir fore-  
 saidis war done yat we suld vnderstand oure wyfis, barnys,  
 gudis and quhat vthir thing we haue in yis warld togiddir  
 with oure liberte, quhilk inemyis devisit refe, war al kept  
 self be special gift of our goddis, quhilkis doutles in yis  
 batell war with ws present, and yat we mycht avise  
 wyselie yat our weill in tyme cuming be nocht exponit  
 to sa grete aventure. This, be my apperance, we sall  
 haue mare eselie gif we haue oure goddis in reuerence and  
 obserue lelelie ye band betuix ws and oure nychtbouris,  
 40 Pichtis and Britouns ; gif in giding our realme we kepe ye  
 forme quhilk, with gude will, ze resauit, togiddir with ye aith M.L.T. 51  
 of fidelite, vnviolate or brokin, removing all divisioun, vn-  
 freyndly langage, vnlefull, avaricious marchandice and vthir  
 evillis quhilk naturalie provokis discorde ; siclike, gif we  
 devide all regiouns, landis, woddis, forestis and pasturis be  
 ye commoun consent amang ye men of gude in oure realme  
 with yare subdittis, famyliaris and clannys, and gif every  
 ane of ws, content of his parte, lere to abstene fra iniuris of  
 his nychtboure and all in pece and concorde leid oure life.  
 Quhilk, gif we do, to ws it sall prepare rycheß, strenth and  
 plesure permanent, and without dout to inemyis terroure.  
 And wald God yat, or I departe fra yis life, I may se sic reul  
 amangis zow, my liegis (na les dere to me yan my avne life,  
 sen be zoure authorite I regne, be zoure laubouris I tryumphe  
 aganis inemyis), yat I may haue ferme beleif of ye weill of  
 50 zow and zoure posterite during my life, and yat I may schawe  
 ye samyn to ye goistis and spiritis of our forefaderis efter my  
 dede !” Quhen King Ffergus had in yis sorte concludit his  
 entent, haistely be ye pepill present was ane noyis rasis yat  
 nocht alanerlie war yai reddy to fulfill his desiris bot als to  
 obey in all thingis his command. The lygis suld remane hail  
 inviolate ; baith ye princely name of ye king and ye maner  
 of his gyding was to game plesing. All ye landis possessit be  
 game suld be distribute at his plesure. Syne of newe every  
 ane swore to kepe to him fidelite, ye king nocht requiring game

Fo. X. yarewith, affermyng yai suld neuer resaue nane vthir sorte  
 of goverment bot princelie autorite, nor suld suffir nane  
 regne abone Scottis in Albioun without of ye blude of Fferguß  
 M.L.T. 51b he war descendit. Gif yai falezeit, yai prayit God that all  
 plagis suld happin thame and yare posterite, impetrate be  
 yare forefaderis, baith in Egipt and in Spanze, apoun all  
 thame quhilk transgressit the lawis and faith of ye immortal 60  
 godd'is. Syne King Fferguß causit yis haly affirmacioun of ye  
 pepill, vncoactit, be yare aith roborate, be with letteris gravin  
 in tabillis of marbill, be figuris of certane beistis, as to the  
 pepill was custume for the tyme to write secretis, or sic vthir  
 thing'is as yai wald haue keptit mony yeris, and committit ye  
 cure hereof to kirkmen to sett ye samyn in sanctuare and yare  
 diligentlie to be keptit.

How King Fferguß to his nobillis made his pro-  
 posicioun, and how he distribute amang thame the  
 regions of his kinrik. Capto viij°

Certane dayis hereeftir quhen, be hunting and vther honest  
 solace, yai had baith refreschit yare bodyis and spirit  
 Fferguß conveyng agane ye nobillis in consale said: "Sen  
 I se yat wele eneuch is providit to haue yis kinrik to ws and  
 oure posterite stabill, tyme is now yat ye landis in quhilk'is  
 ze haue remanit but ordoure, vnpartit, and yarefore nocht 70  
 without mony debatis ze haue duelt tharein, to ye nobill  
 pepill and clannys quhilk fra Ireland come with me in yis  
 cuntre, and to yame yat duelt in yir partis afore, be distribute.  
 To accept yis mater, I think yat sevin men, of excellent wis-  
 dome and lawte, sall be namyt quhilk'is, considering the barrane  
 ground, sall yareof extend ye bound'is mare large and quhare  
 it is plentuous, sal distribute leß, and sall mak cavillis, quhareby  
 euery man sall resaue his parte and haue possessioun yareof  
 M.L.T. 52 in tyme cuming." To the pepill the king'is devise was plesing.  
 Sone war chosin vij men of singulare prudence quhilk, vesyng  
 all ye landis of Scottis, eftir yai had considerit ye qualite  
 yareof, be ye maist equale marchis yai couth, dividit ye  
 boundis; syne ye ferde moneth thareeftir to Ergile returnit,

80 quhare remanit King Fferguß, and in his *presens* the nameȝ Fo. XI.  
of nobillis and grete men was distribute and cassyn in cavillis.  
To ane nobill man Cornach with his clan richt copiofs be cavil  
fell ȝe landis liand betuix ȝe promonture of Dwm, now callit  
Dummysbe; opposit to ȝe coist of Orknay and ȝe river of  
Thayn, quhilk zit haldis ȝe name. Fra ȝis Cornach namyt  
was ȝe regioun Cornane (now Cathenes) and ȝe pepill in ȝir  
dayis callit Cathenesß tuke ȝair the name fra ȝare begynnare  
and war callit Cornans. The secund cavill fell to Lutorth,  
ane man of grete nobilite quhilk fra Ireland come with Fferguß  
with ane cumpanye of gudely men. To him war assignit ȝe  
landis betuix ȝe ryver of Thayn and Nesß, quhilk ryver in na  
tyme of ȝere be frost is congelit, how beit it be depe, and  
10 ryn verray dede and still. Of lang tyme kepit ȝat regioun  
Lugia to name fra ȝat man, bot ȝis age callis ȝe maist parte of  
it Rosß. The boundis ȝareof in breid fra ȝe heich brayis  
(Cromartye in oure dayis) to ȝe mowth of ȝe watter of Louchte  
ar extendit. In ȝis cuntre apoun ȝe watter of Nesß standis  
ȝe Wyngit Castell sum tyme sua namyt, of quhilk is mekill  
mencioun made be mony famouß authouris, and now has  
Vrquhart to name. The signis of ȝe samyn quhare it stude  
and ȝe rewyne, to ȝe behaldaris ar richt wouderfull, to con-  
sider the craftynes and hicht of ȝat sumptuousß bigging.  
Vares, callit sua fra thare chiftane Varach, fell to ȝare parte, M.L.T. 52b  
ȝe land liand fra ȝe wattir of Nesß to ȝe ryver of Spey fra ȝe  
est sey to ȝe west, quhilk ȝai gaif Vararis to name. Be divisioun  
and nychtboure discorde lauborit ȝis pepill perpetually, quhare-  
apoun followit mony and cruell slauchteris. And ȝarefore  
20 be autorite of kingis (bot eftir mony ȝeris) it was brocht to  
sic poynt ȝat Vararis war expellit, levand ȝare landis to be  
inhabit be ȝe Moravis, pepill of Germany, as in ȝare propir  
place salbe schawin. Syne ȝat nacioun made ȝe name of ȝe  
cuntre to be callit Morave to the posterite. To ȝe clan callit  
Thoalis, fra ȝare chiftane Thoall, was assignit the cuntre march-  
ing with ȝe wattir of Spey, now devidit in mony regiouns,  
like as Boyne, Aynan, Straithbogy, Gareauth, Fformartyn  
and Bouchane. To ȝe haill cuntre was the name gevin Thaalie  
be ȝai pepill quhilk haboundit in sic nowmer of all gaderingis

Fo. XI. of ye ald Scottis clannys. Marthanis resauit all ye landis extendit fra Thaalìa foresaid to ye west sey, including within ye samyn now Mar, Badzenach and Lochabir. Martach, chiftane of his clan, gaif to ye place, quhare his pepill duelt, the name Martha to be vsit in tyme cuming. The clan of 30 Novantis, (fra quham ye landis quhare yai stabillit thare setis was namyt Novancia), optenit all ye grund, extendit to the cuntre of Mar and ye west sey with ane heich montane, ane grete space within ye sey, callit the Mule, be ye quhilk promontour and hedeland all ye ground is almaist environit and is namyt Cantere, quhilk is to say ye hede and hiechest part of ye erde. Now yat regioun comprehendis Lorne and Cantyre, with hillis and montanis full of gude pasture and naturale gerfs. Atholus, borne of ye blude of Scottis in Spanze, eftir mony valzeand actis done at hame and in ye weris, gaif ye landis fallin to him be cavill, Athole to name. This nobill man come fra Spanze to Ireland and syne yarefra to Albion in seruice to King Ffergus with mony gudelic men. The 40 cuntre of Athole haldis zit ye samyn name. His marchis war Novantis, Mar and Calidone, (now Dunkeld), apon ye river of Tay. The pepill callit Croones and Epidij fra Croath and Epidith, governouris of yat tribe, takand ye name be yair cavill, occupyit ye westir partis of Calidon Wod. Be lang proceß of tyme this pepill ran in new namys, the ald being removit, as Straithbrawin, Braidalbane and vtheris naciouns, adiaçant inhabitantis. Argathele, (the first Scottis yat come in Albioun), be lang tyme held ye cuntre and ye name quhilk yai tuke fra Gathele, begynnare of yat nacioun. Bot in yis tyme yat regioun and name is callit Ergile, the terme sum parte being alterit. Lelgoth namyt ye parte gottin be his cavill and ye pepill duelling vnder him, Lelgonis (Elgonis be 50 Ptolome yai ar callit), and now in our tyme Lennox. To yame fel ye landis of Cliddisdale, callit sua be ye Wattir of Clyde or Glude, quhilk Cornelius Tacitus gevis Glota to name, becaus it rynnys apoun ye grond foresaid. Syne ye Siluris with yare chiftane Silurth, (ane pepill of fers and felloun mynde and of all vthir maist hantit in were), resauit ye landis quhar yai satt before, betuix ye river of Clyde and ye regioun

M.L.T. 53

M.L.T. 53b

of Brigance. Eftirwart becauſ of nychtboure diſcorde this Fo. XI.  
 regioun was devidit in Cunynghame, Coill and Carrik. And  
 yir names leſtis to oure age, baith to ye cuntre and pepill,  
 the firſt name being forſzett, as in antiquiteis of tymes is ſene.  
 Be na cavill bot be ye public decrete was to Brigantis (maist  
 ſtrenthy of all Scottis) gevin the regioun namyt be yame  
 60 Brigancia; bot eftir certane tyme it gat fra ye maist illuſtir  
 prince Gald, Galloway to name, ye terme ane litill being  
 alterit, like as in tyme mare oportune ſal be ſchewin. Becaus  
 in valezeandnes of were yai excellit all vthir Scottis, it was  
 devisit yai ſuld duell apou ye landis adiacent to Britouns,  
 quham almaist yai hatit naturalie, that in tyme of were yai  
 mycht apoun yame awate. Of yir ſprang certane quhilk war  
 gevin to ſedicioun and contynuale diſcorde and yarefore war  
 exilit ye cuntre and fallowit yame with vtheris of Pichtis  
 blude na leſſ crymynale, and held ye dale, now callit Annan-  
 dale, nixt ye bordoure of Britouns, quhilkis ſiclike war flemit  
 yare native realme, and yare maid habitacioun, quhais poſterite,  
 (as plesis ye authour ſay), grew in ſic tyranny yat apoun all  
 nychtbouris yai maid oppreſſioun. Amang men myxt war  
 70 wemen in bataill, mekill mare vnmerciful yan yare husbandis,  
 and never had myſeracion on yare party vincuſt, and held  
 vnlefull yat men ſuld, liſſand, tane in feild, be preſoneris.  
 To be ſlane in batall yai held it honorable. Alſua yai had in  
 conſuetude to ſla yare faderis, husbandis and tendir freyndis,  
 trubli[t] with infirmyte, conforme to ye rite of anteceſſouris,  
 becaus yai thocht ſtrange ſic men ſuld be pynit and ourſett  
 with ſeiknes. Entering to this Ananddale the paſſage is ſtrate M.L.T. 54  
 and narow and apoun al partis owthir it is bordorit be ſey or  
 ellis be ſinking ſandis and vthir dangerus paſſage. This diffi-  
 cill entres was in cauſſ yat the inhabitantis of Ananddale con-  
 tempnit ye puſſance of Scottis, Pichtis and Britouns. In  
 cavernis and covis yai made habitacioun; apoun thift and  
 reif for ye maist parte yai liſſit. Apoun ye nycht, wachis,  
 having heich vocis and ſture, kepit ye entres, and wauchtaris  
 falezeit nocht apoun ye day. At ye firſt ſchout yai ran to  
 80 harnes; gif ony persoun ſunzete, or ran to hiddillis quhen  
 vther maid to were, or fled eftir ye feild was ionyt, he was at Fo. XII.

Fo. XII. hame murdrist be his wyfe. And gif he was randerit to inemyis eftir he had payit his ransoun and returnit to his wife, he was subdewit as hir bonde and sklaif, quhilk consuetude we rede, was vsit amang ye Danys, and fra yis bondage was *nocht* relaxit vnto ye tyme he war condinglie punyst for ye dishonour incurrit. Ffor ye maist parte yai vsit yare wyfis in *commoun*, and ye barnys becaus yai couth *nocht* schaw yare propir fader war reput sonnys in *commoun*. Cornelius Tacitus gevis yis cruell, beistlik pepill Ordindes to name, and oure ald Cronykill callis yame Ordaces, peraventure becauſſ yai excedit fer ye tyranny of ye Danys. Of yir placis and pepill latelie rememberit *nocht* alanerlie writis oure nacioun bot, als weill, alienis and strangearis, and in special sic authouris as ar maist apprisit, like as Ptolome of Alex- 10 andria, in his tyme richt *cunnyng* baith in ye science of mathematic and cosmographie. Cornelius Tacitus, siclike, writare of histories quhilk profoundlie rehersit ye actis of all em-  
 M.L.T. 54b priouris fra the begynnyng of Augustus vnto ye tyme almaist of Domyciane, oftymes makis menciou of thir regionis and pepill, and Veremwnd, ane native Spanzeart, baith ornatelie and faithfully wrate the antiquiteis of Scottis, productit in Spanze, Ireland and Albioun. To yir regions and pepill remanit ye names foresaidis, for ye maist parte, quhill ye regnne of King Fferguſſ ye Secund, quhen to ye space of fortyfive yeris ye crowne of Scotland falezete, and be industrie of ye said king it was restorit. Than be new inhabitantis, (quham he brocht in cumpany), to yir regions war names gevin of newe. All 20 vthir regions, obeying now ye crowne of Scotland, all ye tyme be Pichtis war brukit, as Mernys, Anguſſ, Stermwnd, Gowrie, Stratherne, Perth, Fiffe with ane grete parte of Calidon Wod, Striueling, Lowthiane, Merſſ, Tyvidale, Dere, Berwik and all ye dalis of Scotland, quhilk ar als mekill to say in Pichtis langage as ane porcioun or parte of land, like as Bede ye venerabill authoure writis. How thir regions war namyt afore, sa far as be oure labouris we mycht fynd, in tyme mare oportune salbe schewin. Giff to yis place was lippynnit, to haue ye discriptionis of ye regions in Scotland, with ye names of diuerſſ clannys, I beleif for ye

maist parte be ansuerit. Quharefore to King Fferguß is Fo. XII.  
to be returnit.

How King Fferguß beildit ye castell of Berigone ;  
how he passit in Ireland and in his returne at Crag-  
ferguß deceissit. Capit ix<sup>o</sup>

R egions, chiftanis, pepill and clannys being devidit, as M.L.T. 55  
said is, and all put to gude poynt and rest, King Fferguß  
30 gaif his mynde to haue his liegis instructit in bettir manaris,  
and, to ye effect he suld mare fortunatelie procede, he maid  
his begynnyng at iustice, quhilk of mannys estate is maist  
faithfull president, without ye quhilk he knew weill societe  
and kyndenes amang men *mycht* nocht growe, nor, be na sorte,  
be permanent. Be him war devisit certane lawis in quhilkis  
he defendit rubery, slauchter, hereschip and maist of all  
*commoun* thift, becaus all gudis for ye tyme war left on ye  
plane but keparis. He beildit ye castel namyt Beragone,  
quhare he devisit iustice to be execute in Lowchabre, at ye  
west parte of Albion forgane ye Ilis, sua yat to yat place for  
ministracion of iustice baith Insulanis and Albiane Scottis  
mare eselie *mycht* convene. In ferme tranquillite and pece  
with Pichtis and Britouns, he led ye residew of his dayis, em-  
40 ploying all his poweræ yat his liegis in amyte and concorde  
suld increß. Ffinalie, be ye nobillis of Ireland being desirit  
ane arbitoure, to remove be his autorite and counsell the  
divisioun rasis at ane convencioun for chesing of ane king,  
nocht alanerlie he dressit *yai materis* bot als removit all sic  
discorde fra ye begynnyng. Off all his wardly curis and  
affaris *yis* was ye last, ffor passing ye sey, quhilk devidis  
Ireland fra Albioun, be violence of storme and contrare wynd  
ye schip was drevin apoun rowkis, quhare he deceissit eftir he  
had regnit twenty and five 3eris. To *yis* place was Crag-  
ferguß gevin to name and sua is keptit be ye posterite. In  
*yis* tyme amang Britouns Estdad gidit ye kinrik, and amang  
Pichtis regnit Cruthne Camelon, quhilk beildit ane ciete in  
Pichtland (now Lowthiane) apoun ye watter of Caron, and to M.L.T. 55b

Fo. XII. ye samyn he gaif Camelodon to name, quhare he ordanit 50  
 ye cheif and princely ciete of Pichtis to be stabillit, quhare  
 sum tyme was ane porte maist tranquil and convenient to  
 harbery schippis in storme or wynter. Bot now it is stoppit  
 be glar and rutis of wedis growin amang ye slike. The watteris  
 ar worne out and growin to swarde, and now sum parte yareof  
 is erit land and beris corne; vthir parte, vnlauborit, is fare  
 medow and gerfs. Mony 3eris stude yis ciete, suffering grete  
 affliccioun be troubill baith of Romanis and Britouns armyis  
 and finalie was distroyit and put to sak be Kenneth, king of  
 Scottis, (quham by war baith ye pepill and kinrik of Pichtis  
 deletit), as in place convenient salbe schawin. Alsua king  
 Cruthne beildit ye grete towne of Agned with ye castell, be  
 naturall situacioun maist strengthy of vtheris. Bot ye latter 60  
 age (fra Eth, king of Pichtis) gaif ye town to name Edinburgh,  
 and ye fortalice, ye madyn castell, becaus in it war keptit ye  
 dochteris of princis and grete men of Pichtis to yare lauchful  
 age for mariage, depute to lere to wirk and lauboure with  
 yare handis, as ye custume was for ye tyme. Sua be quhat  
 maner ye nacioun of Scottis tuke begynnyng and stabillit  
 yare kinrik, and how Fferguß (quhilk beildit ye realme and  
 governit ye samyn) deceissit, in yis buke sum parte is schewin.  
 Now ourẽ entent is to continewe ye actis of vtheris, quhilk  
 eftir him governit ye kinrik of Scotland, and to prosew ourẽ  
 mater as we began.

Here endis the first buke of the historyis of Scottis.



## [Liber Secundus.]

How Sembathe and Ffranchta to pepill made pro- M.L.T. 566  
 posicions tuiching the successioun of King Fferguß.

Ca° j°

70 **I**n maner foresaid quhen King Fferguß throw fatall Fo. XII.  
 necessite was tane fra this mortale life, at parliament  
 assignit ye nobillis convenyng to create ane new king,  
 lang contencioun was made and in opiniouns mekill variance.  
 Ffor to King Ffergus war twa sonnys within age. And sum  
 thocht it was ane faleze anentis ye goddis and iniuriosß towart  
 men to suffir ye sonnys of Fferguß be frustrate of ye kinrik,  
 quhilkis war destitute of yare fader, for quhais recent meritis  
 and grete actis yai aucht be tretit at all power, and nocht lat  
 ye realme be transferrit in ane vthir blude, or se ye houß  
 of King Fferguß, (quhilk was sa mekill for ye weill of Scotland),  
 be exponit to iniuris. Vtheris allegit yare barnlie age to gover-  
 80 ment of ye *commoun* weill was vnhabill, ane king suld be ane Fo. XIII.  
 man of wisdom, expert in grete and grave materis, to resist  
 iniuris of inemyis and weris gif alienis wald invaid, and to  
 punyß be autorite and justice the trespass of his liegis accord-  
 ing to yare crymes; vthir wayis ye kinrik mycht nocht be  
 ferme nor stabill, and yat the glorie of grete actis and gude  
 fame of ane noble man pecifyit and fermyt maist new kinrikis.  
 Than Sembathes of Argathele and principall of yat pepill,  
 amang yame of grete autorite in *presens* said sic wourdis:  
 "Amang ws all, (freyndis), is nane quhilkis be diuersß kyndis  
 of freyndschip is nocht addettit to authoriß the sonnys of  
 King Fferguß, his famylie and houß be oure gude mynde  
 10 and cure, becaus be incredill<sup>1</sup> beneuolence and lufe towart M.L.T. 57

<sup>1</sup> So MS., doubtless by error for *incredibill*. L. has *incredibili*.

**Fo. XIII.** oure nacioun with stark ordinance he vesityt ws in tyme maist trubulos and in oure maist affliction made supple, deliuering ws fra weris mare perrellus þan we couth devise. Of inemyis he maid freyndis and marrois. He was þe foundare and begynnare of þis kinrik and decorit þe sammyn be policie and lawis. Syne be ordinance of were he dantit þe mychty nacioun of Britons, sa cruell and gevin sa mekill to batall. To game we war euer odiofs. He dantit game be force and expellit game the boundis of ws and oure nyctbouris, þe Pichtis, and at þe last be gude maneris he informit ws sa weill, þat in quiet and eifs we may occupie þis cuntre, oure native habitacion, in als gude pece, as vtheris nacions brukis þare landis, and to be elongate fra all fere of inemyis, sua na debate of new amang oure self be movit, and þat rankoure nor haterent amang ws haue na place. Now, freyndis, quha sall reput ws as men wourthy to liff or to be cherist in tyme cuming, 20 gif we defraud þe houfs of King Ffergufs, quharefra we haue resaut sa mony gude dedis and to quham we ar sa mekill addettit. Gif contrare thir barnys we schew ws evill myndit, how sall we haue ws eftirwart contrare þe molestaris of þe commoun weill and oure inemyis? Quharefore lat þe spirit departit of oure nobill prince, (as efferis weill), knaw ws gude men, thankfull and luffing vertewe and nocht forþetting gratitudis to ws done, likeas oure king euer desirit we suld behaue ws to him and his blude. With gude hart lat ws provide his

**M.L.T. 57b** 3ong son to his paternale kinrik, (þarewith he schew þe eldest son), and caufs him in gouerment of the kinrik be obeyit. Hereto, (my hertlie freyndis), be reuerence of þe kingis dedelie goist, be 3our awne faith and be vthir thankis, aucht to þe houfs of King Ffergufs, I beseik and prayis 3ow condescend, in aventure gif 3e leif thir barnys destitute of 3oure help, 3e 30 sall suffir game be exponit to loifs baith þe kinrik of þare fader and þare propir livis. Gif 3e be sa vnthankfull, 3e sall, (as resoun wald), mak 3ow odiofs als weill to men in erde as to þe goddis immortal." Apoun thir wourdis of Sem-bathes rais ane plesand noyis and sownd of þe pepill applawding þareto. Eftir him Ffranchtay, of þe Brigant nacioun chiftane, said in this sorte to þe pepill: "I se amang 3ow,

freyndis, questioun gif it be expedient to haue ye son of King Fferguß, (ane barne zit vnhabill for government of ye realme), to be 3oure king or erare to haue ane man of discrecioun and 3eris, schynyng in authorite and wisdom; quhareapoun the opinioun of Sembathes war enewch to be commendit gif in chesing of ane king, kyndenes onelie war to be considerit. Fo. XIII.

40 To nane of ws may be hid how it war vnthankful, vncurtefs and wikkit that, be oure wayis, ye houß of King Fferguß, (to ws euer sa thankfull), suld of ye paternale heretage be defraudit. Nor I can nocht beleif yat sa wikkit cryme was euer excogitate in oure myndis, yat aganis our prince, (quham to we aucht maist kyndenes), we suld brek ye fidelite and aith quhilk vnconstrenit we latelie to him maid. Quharefore consultacioun suld be had, nocht gif ye kinrik heretably is to the barne addettit, bot be quhat maner, to his perfite age, it may be sauflie kept. And now, freyndis, discuss amang 3ow how mony skaithis apoun euery ane of ws, apoun ye houß of King Fferguß and apoun oure realme, (nocht zit solid bot rising), may fall, gif eftir opinioun of Sembathes we committ ye realme to be gydit be ane barne. M.L.T. 58

50 we sall wilfully amang our self kendill ane bleiß of debate and discorde, ffor amang ws ar mony, equale almaist, baith in authorite and pussance. To ane ye cure of ye king and nocht to ws all mon be committit. And yis governoure to ye king sal be haldin amang ws as king becaus to his fidelite salbe lippynnyt ye cure and weill of oure prince. And quhilk of ws sall nocht with all pussance, freyndis and gudis, attempt to haue this honoure and estate. In caifs we all condescend apoun ane this man sall, be ye kingis rentis, mak vp his houß. And als oft as ony thing twiching ye commoun weill is to be reformyt, or were aganis inemyis to be movit, or zit ambassiatouris in vthir realme3 to be directit, yis governoure sall euer haue recours to oure richeß. Than we mon mak him furnessing and man sustene him, his familie and his vthir myn3eons, quhilki's nocht lichtlie salbe saciate. To him, and

60 nocht to ye commoun weill nor to the king, mon we furnyß gere. Nane suld be ressoun ferlie in yis caifs yat in authorite he sall change maneris, how beit, quhen he was private, he

- Fo. XIII. was to ws weill myndit, becauſſ riches and dignite *with* gude inclinacioun standis seildin atanis in ane persoun. Eftirwart, quhen ye king sall grow to perfite age, peraventure be *M.L.T. 58b* persuasioun of his familiaris, sall say he sal amend thingis neclectit in his mynorite, and sall mak punycioun apoun ye brekaris of ye cuntre, and vse his awne autorite; and zit he may nocht perfurnis sa grete actis: sua, quhen ane gouernoure to him is maist necessare, (sen he is zit bot in tendir 3eris), than sall he admitt na counsaloure except sic men as in vicis wil to him applaude. Than man we intertenye and do reuerence to sic myscheant persouns as to oure souerane. Than sal we, (with hie displesoure), daly se his familiaris, (corruptouris of gude maneris), vsing unbridillit, ryatus lustis 70 and gredy, insaciabill auarice, pertlie, without respect to schame or honeste, and zit mon we bere ws to yame in honoure and reuerence. To correct or punyſſ thir persouns, (becaus of ye kingis autorite and power), na man sall be fundin. To conclude schortlie, to se ane barne gide ane kinrik salbe evin sic like as to think 3e saw ye commoun weill sweyand, or peraventure falland with ane haisty clap, and to se lymmaris at yare plesoure oppreſſ ye cuntre, reif and stouth planely without punycioun, cruell slauchter of innocentis, the kinrik full of truble and all ye pepill rynnng disordorit but reule or law, and richt few curing owthir lawte or resoun. Quharefore I think the sonnys of King Fferguſſ aucht be haldin vnder cure and instructit in gude maneris vnder wise men, yare 80
- Fo. XIII. maisteris, to be teichit sic disciplinis as accordis princelie estate vnto ye tyme yai cum to 3eris of perfeccioun, and ye gouerment of ye realme to be gevin to yare eme, Fferichare, or to ane vthir, (gif 3e think ony mare habill to bere yat cure), be quhais protectioun yis kinrik sall be keptit hail to ye houſſ of King Fferguſſ: and during his dayis this barne sal be *M.L.T. 59* honorit be ye pepill as heretoure of ye realme, and eftir his deceiſſ to ye barne without question sall be gevin the kinrik, gif he be abill yarefore. Be yis way apperandy to King Fferguſſ sal be satisfyt quhilk neuer wald of ws desire kyndenes contrare the weill of ye kinrik, quhilk he begouth and foundit him self. This forme and maner to creat 3oure prince I wald

10 remanit perpetualie amang *our* nacion, giff we think we wald Fo. XIII.  
 evaid occasioun of discord and mony vthir incomoditeis, defend  
 and augment this kinrik, and, finalie, gif we wald liff plesandly  
 and be freyndlie to oure native cuntre."

How Scottis princis suld eftirwart succede, and how  
 Fferichare tuke ye crowne and renewit the lyig with  
 Pichtis. Cap° ij°

Efter Franchtaus gravelie had endit thir wordis, or siclike,  
 to his opinioun be consent of ye pepill was condescendit  
 and be public authorite was decretit yat, ye king deceissing and  
 leiffing ane son within age, the maist abill of ye kingis blude  
 to haue authorite suld bruke ye gouerment of ye realme,  
 and, he ending his dais, to ye kingis son, (yan abil be perfite  
 age to ye regnne), without question suld be gevin ye kinrik.  
 Be the *sammyn* decree was defendit yat ony barne suld  
 regnne in aventure yat ye liberte of ye kinrik mycht sum tyme  
 yarethrow be hurt. The counsell of Scotland eftir lang 3eris  
 followit this maner in succeeding of yare princes, zit in ye  
 ilk tyme yai saw yat yarethrow oftymes emys contrare nevois,  
 20 and emys sonnys and nevois contrare fader, bredir and vtheris  
 nerrest freyndis for ambicioun and desire to regnne devisit  
 sindry castis of tressoun, quhare apoun to ye grete skaith of  
 the *commoun* weill followit felloun slauchter of diuers<sup>s</sup> kingis, M.L.T. 59b  
 princis and vthir nobill men. Eftir yis decree the pepill  
 glade with gude harte ordanit ye crown suld be to Fferichare  
 gevin, broder germane to King Fferguß, hwmane and meik  
 and of ingyne liberale, na les gevin to hardyment na his  
 broder. Fferichare, ressavng princelie estate, convenyng the  
 lordis in counsale made his proposicioun in this effect, as he  
 wald say he ressaunt the cure of ye realme nocht yarethrow  
 to bring him self to riches nor dignite bot to the barnis of  
 Fferguß to be protectoure; to yame he suld kepe the kinrik  
 and, becaus be yare fader he was assignit tutoure, he suld  
 30 baith in pece and were do for ye weill of ye *communitie* and suld  
 schaw him in tyme *cuming* of sic mynde and cherite to the

Fo. XIII. barnis as ye fader aucht to ye sonnys; syne exhortit the nobillis thay suld to ye infantis be favorabill, sua yat nocht he allanerlie bot the nobillis and all ye pepill suld be sene vse ye office of tutory; thay suld remember ye meritis of yare fader and neuer lat his vertewis slide of thare mynde; and, gif he deseruit ony thankis in his ministracioun, yai suld refer all to ye barnys and houß of King Fferguß; thay suld vnderstand yat for nane vthir causß he acceptit ye gouerment and autorite bot to schew him perpetuall freynd to ye barnis and kinrik, heretably to yame pertenyng, as he was addettit; quharefore, yai suld cheiß wise men, grundit in vertew, to be yare preceptouris and keparis of yare persouns, sua yat atanis thay mycht be instructit in gude maneris and yare persouns 40 surelie preseruit fra all tressoun gif ony war devisit. Quhill thir premisß war done he assurit yame he wald resaue na princelie estate nor autorite. Apoun thir wourdis of Fferichare grete ioy followit amang ye pepill, thinking sic ane man mycht weill bruke autorite, and was wourthy to reul ane kinrik. Herefore to ye barnys war preceptouris chosin and be avise of ye lordis keparis war assignit, be quhais cure fra all dangeris yai suld be preseruit. Thareftir in ye marbill chyare fataill to kingis and governouris of ye realme was Ferichare sett and ressaut princelie ornamentis, quhilkis war ane nakit swerde with twa eggeis, ane evin wand (now callit ane scepture), with ane crowne of gold in forme of ane round cirkill, signifying he suld defend his kinrik and liberte, punyß trespassouris, minister equite and iustice, vse supreme autorite 50 and be in reuerence with his liegis. Ffra thyne remanit thir princely ensenßeis to kingis of Scotland, in na thing variand vnto ye tyme of King Achay (quhilk first of all vthir Scottis princis, band ane perpetuall lige and societe with grete Charlis, king of Ffrance, Romane emprioure. To ye cirkill of ye crowne he ekit foure lillyis of gold with foure goldin crossis, elike distant fra vtheris, sum parte heichare yan ye lillyis, quharethrow mycht be knawin how ye pepill of Scotland obseruit euer ye faith of Criste inviolate. Nocht lang tyme eftir Fferichare appoyntit ane meting with ye king of Pichtis, quhareapoun mony grete materis concernyng ye commoun

60 weill yai devisit. Pece was ratifyit, punycioun tane of mys- Fo. XIII.  
doaris and vtheris yat trublit ye pece. On athir parte yai  
reiosit yat yare band was obseruit, and exhortacioun was maid  
to haue perseuerance and, eftir completing of divyne cery-  
monis, (accustomyt to be maid at meting of princis quhen  
yai ratifyit yare bandis), athir prince with his folkis departit.

How Fferleig, first son of Fferguß, conspिरit contrare M.L.T. 60b  
King Fferichare, and how in favoure of him ye king  
offerit to leif ye crowne. Cap° iij°

Efter certane 3eris, quhen this nobill prince Fferichare be  
mervellus prosperite gouernit the pepill, and for ye weill  
of Scotland had done mony actis wourthy remembrance and,  
becausß lawtie and iustice war authorist, all thingis prosperit  
with ye pepill, Fferleig, the eldest son of King Fferguß, sterit  
be oportune persuasiouns of familiaris and of vtheris, (to  
quham ye king for his iustice and equite was odioß), began  
70 devise secrete castis contrare ye king, his eme. And quhen  
diuerß of ye pepill, (and specialie sic as detestit justice), war  
to his opinioun drawin, aganis his derrest eme he conspिरit  
in secrete maner; bot quhen he knew him frustrate hereof,  
(ffor his devise fra ye king mycht nocht be hid, becaus in  
his cumpany sum parte to Fferichare revelit ye tresoun),  
yan at ye king he planelie askit ye crowne. The king, fering  
gif he had refusit his desiris ye realme mycht be in trubill,  
(ffor be apperance ye mater tendit to opin violence), plesandlie  
ansuerit, like as in ye presence of ye pepill he was promovit  
to princelie autorite, sua wald he glaidlie in yare *presens*  
denude him of ye samyn, nor wald na langer apoun him  
accept ye government: quhen ony of King Fferguß sonnys  
war abill to reule ye samyn, he desirit na thing mare in his  
80 life than to se ye son of Fferguß brouk ye superiorite of ye  
realme, quharethrow he mycht bere with him to his broder  
Fferguß glaid novellis eftir his dede that he was assurit of the Fo. XV.  
prosperite and weill of his houß and successioun; therefore M.L.T. 61  
yai suld with him pas to ye courte, thare suld he depone princelie

Fo. XV. ornamentis, suld denude him of ye hie authorite and suld do quhat euer mycht concerne ye honoure and proffitt of his broderis barnys. The wyse and tymofß ansuere of Fferichare movit Fferleig to devise nane evill contrare his derrest eme, and removing all rankoure went with him to *presens* of ye counsell, quhare ye king, placeing his nevo at his richt hand, said in yis sorte: "It is *nocht* to 3ow vnknawin, my lordis, quhen questioun was movit gif it was expedient to *commytt* ye cure of ouræ realme to yis my cousing, within age for ye tyme, son to King Fferguß, how 3e gaif to me ye authorite, to quhilk nane is mare vnwourthy, *nocht* yat I suld governe 10 it be equale administracioun alanerlie, bot als be my protectioun it suld be kept salffie to ye sonnys of Fferguß quhil yare perfite age. Quhat laubouris, quhat dangeris, for ye *commoun* weill, for ye felicite of this 3ong rising kinrik, I haue acceptit, 3e knaw. As for me, I will *commoun* of na sic thingis, yat I be *nocht* iugeit oure mekill gevin to myne awne glore and to purchesß of 3ow *favouris*, vndeservit be me as 3it. I wer verray vnkinde and be resoun aucht *nocht* be namyt ane man, gif, having of my body na successioun, I wald *nocht* with all diligence defend my nevois, sonnys of my broder, and wald to ony vthir transfer yis kinrik, sen baith be richt of yare fader and me, (gif I haue ony), it is to thame dett, or yat I suld attempt to defraude yame yareof. Herefore 20 be na wrang Fferleig, now in 3eris of perfectioun, has askit at me ye kinrik ffor he is ane plesand, fare man, robust and strenthy of persoun, of vive and qwik ingyne, of mynde invincibill, of laubouris maist pacient, and daly inressing, mare abill to bruke ye public authorite, and my hevy age requiris now to be absolut and relaxit fra curis. Quharefore I beseik it may be lefull yat of ye goverment of ye realme, (quhilk be 3oure authorite I resaut), I may now, be ye samyn, denude me and put my cousing Fferleig yareto, sen be febilnes of age, (sum in verite callis it infirmite), it efferis me *nocht* bere ye cure yareof. Be my opinioun, na man is mare habill yan this 3ong man to quham of resoun it pertenis. I haue devisit to liff ane privat liffe ffor in civill actis I haue had tyme eneuch. My lordis, resaue fra me regale ornamentis, of quhilk I sall 30



denude me be mekill bettir will þan euer þai wer be me acceptit. Fo. XV.  
 Plesinglie and with gude hert I leif þe autorite." At þir  
 wourdis rasis the clamoure of þe pepill indiscrete, (as will be),  
 quhilk quhen be command of þe lordis was repressit, thay  
 requiestit and prayit he wald in his autorite persevere, nor  
 be ressoun of his age suld fere na incommoditeis, becaus þe  
 weill of þe cuntre standis in counsell and wisdome, quhilk  
 maist in agit men has dominacion, erare þan in corporall  
 strenth. This to þe counsell was sene expedient, nor þe law  
 recentlie constitute to create þair king was nocht to be abro-  
 gate. Alsua aganis Fferleig þai war commovit, ffor how beit  
 at his first cuming to counsell, in presens of þe multitude, þai  
 had resaut him for grete honouris, zit eftirwart taking him  
 to ane parte, hevily þai reprevit him þat by avise of þe coun-  
 sell he had acceptit þe kinrik and was departit fra his keparis :  
 40 and, howbeit he was þe kingis son, he behuffit on force obey M.L.T. 62  
 þe decrete and actis of þe counsell be wise men devisit. Ffer-  
 leig, weping and indigent of counsell, quhen fra presens with  
 his servandis he intendit depart, be þe nobillis was haldin on  
 force and all his servandis resisting war takin and incarcerate.  
 Than ane of his complicis, desiring to evaid punycioun, in  
 presens of þe multitude opynnyt þe tresoun togiddir with þe  
 begynnaris þareof. At his wourdis þe pepill was sua inflambit  
 to ire þat, without þe kingis autorite had nocht defendit, þai  
 had revyn Fferleig at þe counsell. Quharethrow, how beit  
 the king knewe weill þe evill mynde of Fferleig, zit þat he  
 50 suld nocht schaw him self cruell, bot erare (as ane kynde  
 fader to his nevo), remitting þe punycioun for tresoun, and, to  
 haue þe gilde and reill of þe pepill mytigate, be avise of þe  
 counsell he depute to him keparis of newe. Syne iustifying  
 þe devisaris of þis conspiracioun, and dissoluyng þe conven-  
 cioun, the king gaif his mynde as afore to materis concernyng  
 þe commoun wele. Certane tyme he remanit in presens to do  
 iustice to euery man according to equite. Off Fferichare thir  
 almaist war þe actis, ffor þe thrid moneth following, þe king  
 on nycht, (incertane quhiddir preuenit be the dede or be  
 treson of þe complicis of Fferleig), haistelie was brocht to  
 end, eftir he had xv þeris borne þe government of þe realme.

Fo. XV. 3it the fleying of Fferleig of before with certane persouns to ye Pichtis ekit ye suspicioun. Thareeftir becaus he was certifyt how yai devisit his dede, wariand the dissate of Pichtis, he fled to Britane, quhare in dishonour he conswmyt ye remanent of his dayis.

M.L.T. 62b

How Mayine was crownit, and how he institute the iustice are, templis and sacrifice to his goddis, with vthir divyne ceremonis. Capto iiij°

Efter deceifß of King Fferichare ane convencioun was assignit Ewdon, (now Inconnell), quhilk is ane castell in Argatheill, vmquhile richt famousß, quhare be yare haill avise at yare plesure thay mycht name ane prince to gide ye kinrik. At quhilk day ye nobillis, remembering ye vertwis and gude actis of King Ffergufß, recent 3it in memorie, with ane consent thay namyt his 3onger son Mayne to be king, quhilk had in age xxiiij 3eris quhen he resaut ye crowne. This man, mekill different fra condiciouns of his broder, sobir of mynde and wele gevin, be grete discrecioun and evinly ballance vsit the autorite, detesting all movaris of factioun and discorde, or of stiff and doure ingyne, lymmaris, rubaris of ye cuntre, dolf of curage or effemynate; and all vthir ony way gevin to vice, war to him as ony pest, abhominabill. And als he gaif licence yat, gif contrauersy or debate war movit in tovne or suleze, ye possessoure of ye samyn mycht in his awne courte discuss ye caifß. Giff thingis occurrit that eselie be vtheris mycht nocht be dressit, in all townis or villageis of his realme apoun yai materis he sat him self anys euery 3ere, and in ye ilk tyme he iustifyt transgressouris and cryminall persons. During his dayis be him self was yis ordoure of iustice obseruit. Eftir certane 3eris yis cure was transferrit to ane vpir autorite, callit in oure tyme ye King's Iustice to quhais autorite pertenis to tak cognicioun of opin crymes, and his 3erlie correctioun is callit ye Iustice Are. About yis ilk tyme Chryne, king of Pichtis, to King Mayne directit ambassiatouris quhilk to ye new crownit king suld applaude

M.L.T. 63

80 schawing yame glade of his prosperite. With him yai suld Fo. XV.  
 ratify ye auld pece, be ane lyig of new, exhorting he suld con- Fo. XVI.  
 tinewe and conforme to ye gude mynde of his fader, suld  
 fermelie perseuere, quhilk doutles to ye quiet ese and tran-  
 quillite of athir pepill mycht conduce mekle. And King  
 Mayne, teachit be wise men of his counsell, benynglie ressavng  
 ambassiatouris, to yar peticiouns, as yai desirit, ansuerit.  
 Eftir certane dayis pece betuix yir naciouns be ane new band  
 was ratifyit and ye ambassiatouris depeschit. Sua ye realme  
 of Scottis in Albion in sikkir eifs and stabill pece begouth to  
 flurifs and prospir. And ye king considering weill yat without  
 iustice, godlynes and divyne reuerence, the prosperite of men  
 couth *nocht* increfs, and yat all kinrikis and erdlie curis ar  
 vnder power of goddis, and gif ye samyn be nocht propiciant,  
 10 all attemptatis of men and counsale ar vane, and to realme3  
 was na thing sa sikkir as ye beneuolence of goddis; to ye  
 effect he *mycht* draw ye pepill to godlynes to ye ancient haly  
 rytis, he ekit certane solempnit ceremonis of new to be done  
 in reuerence of immortale goddis, yat certane grete stanys  
 in diuers partis of euery regioun, quhare was maist con-  
 venient, suld be invirone and in cirkill, and ye gretest stane  
 suld be erectit towart ye south, to be vsit for ane altare.  
 Apoun ye samyn to immortall goddis suld hoistis be offerit  
 and sacrifice be brynt. Ffor verificacioun hereof 3it in yir  
 oure dayis ar sene thir roundis of stanys and ar callit the ald M.L.T. 636  
 templis of goddis be ye vulgare pepill. Treulie quaha sall behald  
 thir roundis, sall mervell be quhat craft or corporall strenth  
 stanys of sa grete wecht mycht in ane hepe be placit. In  
 20 this age ye offerandis of ye pepill, assignit to yare immortale  
 goddis, conforme to the ritis of gentilite, was ane porcioun of  
 corne or vthir store quhilk was remanent of ye sustentacion  
 of yare preistis, of quham grete skantnes was for the tyme.  
 Alsua he institute yat euery moneth suld be had in reuerence  
 the cours and change of ye mone, (othirwayis callit Dyane),  
 quham ye pepill anornit as protectrix of waist woddis and  
 huntaris. Quharethrow how sone yai saw ye mone eftir the  
 coniunctioun with ye son, be certane devote wourdis, with  
 reuerence yai maid it salutacioun. Lang tyme amang ye

Fo. XVI. posterite was ye prophane consuetude obseruit. Syne be ye king to divine service war depute preistis, to quhais power war ye juris and all thingis concernyng divinite subiectit. And to game of all offerandis made to the goddis was assignit ane lifing. By thir war diuers vtheris solempnit rytis and ceremonis be him institute, of ye Gentile fassoun, like as in the ald bukis of Egipcianis war providit. Quhen be sic divyne and civil actis King Mayne had informyt ye pepill, eftir he had regnit xxix ȝeris, and be his awne handis had gevin the crowne to his son Dornadilla, he departit fra yis life, Elgane abone Britouns, and Thaara abone Pichtis regnyng. 30

M.L.T. 64

Off the regne of Dornadill, and how hunting lawis war institute; how Nothat was crownit; of his mysgidyng and slauchter; how Fforquharde desiring to revenge ye samyn, be Dovale was chasit to ye Ilis, and how he inducit ye clannys to his purpois.

Cap° v°

**D**ornadilla, ressavng ye impire be ambassiatouris, ratifyit the lyig with Britouns, and sic like with Pichtis, luvand all way pece, having were and dissensioun odiofs; in thingis conduceing to ane quiet and tranquill liffe he delitit maist. He tuke plesure in hunting and to haue houndis abill yarefore, with men to ceirfs and chaisf ye dere. He commandit servandis aduert yat na hound suld lyne ye bik, his awne berare, becaus, (as we trow ȝit), houndis generat be sic commixtioun ar vnabill for hunting, and commandit yat euery man suld nwrifs twa raches and ane hound to awate apoun his hunting. 40 Giff at ye hunting ony hound be aventure losit owdir e or vthir membir quharethrow to hunting he war vnabill, he suld be sustenit and fed in commoun. Quha slewe ane wolf suld of ye commvnite resauue ane ox. To oure nacioun was ane auld consuetude to persew scharplie yat beist, becaus to yare bestiall nane vthir was mare skaithfull. About yis tyme quhen Albion Scottis gaif yame maist to hunting and nocht alanerlie had amang yare self concorde, bot als weill wanting were of

nychtbouris, thinking yat all thingis quharein ye ingyne of Fo. XVI.  
 man mycht be exercit war mekill bettir yan sleuth or ydilnes,  
 thay institute certane lawis of hunting. And first to ye man M.L.T. 64b  
 quhais hound first invadit ye hart, following ye beist to dede,  
 50 suld fall ye skyn, the hede with hornys to ye man quhais  
 hound ledderit nixt. The beist being curyit, at discrecion of  
 ye president, ye foure quartaris suld be distribute ; amangis  
 ye houndis, (as ye mater requirit), suld the bowellis and  
 spuleze be partit. Gif in ony of thir foresaidis war questioun  
 or dout, with avise of ye huntaris ane juge suld be namyt  
 quhilkis, incalling ye goddes Diane, reuengear of ye hunting  
 lawis gif yai war violate, apoun yis debate suld deliuer. Gif  
 yir lawis, (as sum parte menys), be ye king wer institute  
 quharethrow prudentlie he mycht induce amang ye pepill  
 commoun solace and be sic plesouris remove all occasioun of  
 discorde and malice, quharefra oftymes procedis grete iniuris,  
 or gif be consuetude of ye pepill yai began and syne incessit,  
 it is incertane : nocht yeles we knaw yat throw all ye realme  
 60 of Scotland thir ritis has ye strenth and effect of law. And  
 in oure tyme we haue persauit yame amang huntaris wele  
 obseruit. Attoure he commandit yat ye lawis made be King  
 Fferguß suld be kepit and statute panis apoun ye trans-  
 gressouris. Of new he ekit certane vtheris, with diuersß sortis  
 of punycioun for diuersß faltis, like as be avise of consell yai  
 war punyst afore, and causit yame be notit in tabillis and be  
 callit lawis. The keping of yir tabillis was committit to ane  
 vertwus man, cunningg in litteratour, quham he callit ye  
 Interpretour of ye lawis, swa yat quhen ony cryme occurrit,  
 he suld in presence baith of ye iuge and ye trespassoure,  
 produce ye pane quhareto he was oblist as in the tabillis was  
 contenit ; and ye pepill suld se yat in punyssing sic crymez M.L.T. 85  
 the iuge had vsit him richtwisly. In yat tyme na man having  
 autorite wald punys ane trespassoure, how beit ye cryme  
 war horribill, gif to ye pepill the tabillis had nocht bene first  
 70 schewin and ye decrete in audience red. Sa mekil incessit  
 yis sorte of iugement amang ye posterite yat foriugeit men  
 gladelie exponit yame to punycioun to ye cryme correspondent,  
 war it neuer sa extreme ; gif be ony vthir torment yan in ye

Fo. XVI. tabillis was contenit yai war afflictit, yai plenezit yat yai sufferit iniustlie war it neuer sa licht. Ffra thyne remanit yis sorte of iugement amang ye Insulanis, nor be na maner couth it be abrogate. Of the lawis yai haue Interpretouris, quham we now call Iuristis, without quhais decrete (extractit of ye tabillis) yai admittit na iugement as richtwis. Off King Dornadilla for ye maist parte thir war ye actis; ffor at Berigone his dayis tuke end, ye xxviiij zere eftir he had resaut ye goverment of ye realme, leiffing his son Rewtare within age, and during his mynorite nocht abill to gide the kinrik. 80

Fo. XVII. Quharefore be ye law foresaid come ye regne to Nothat, brother germane to Dornadilla, plesand of persoun and of ingyne, as apperit, abill and to the commoun weill aplyit. Skantlie had Nothat twa zereis regnit quhen be sa vile *seruitute* he supprisit ye pepill, yat be yame he mycht be namyt ane tyran of resoun. He abrogate ye lawis, be iniuris he regnit, be reif he persewit ye commounis, slewe and exilit ye nobillis: quhilkis iniuris made his name to yame vnthankfull and his empire waik and febill. Oftymes be freyndis monyst to abstene fra sic vile and detestabill crymez, he desistit nocht, bot, vicis increasing with age, but respect to honeste, he grewe in fellony like ane cruell, vnmercifull vnbeist. Nor sa hevy crymes, (as oftymes ar sene), lang tyme vnpunyst remanit 10 nocht. Ffor Dowall, cheif of ye Brigant nacioun, ferß and active of mynde, vehement and doure, (quham ye king had assailzete to slay be tresoun becaus he had his vertew and pussance suspect), conspirit with certane nobillis to quham ye pridefull attemptatis of ye king war odioß, and, to evade indignacioun of the pepill, thay made ye zong prince, Rewthare, of ye conspiracy principall. Schortlie yareeftir Dovale, finding oportunitate to bring his tresoun to effect, quhen be exploratouris he was certifyit how ye king with certane consalouris was devising novaciouns, haistely within ye palace he brocht zong Rewther with his complicitis anarmyt quhare, 20 as was procogitate, stude diuerß of his opinioun, yat mare reddily yai mycht bring yare policy to purpoiß. Dovale, first vsing ane scharpe accusacioun contrare ye king, vehementlie argonyt his dissate and his vnhonest maner of gyding,

allegeand he had spulezeit Rewthare of his paternale heretage ; Fo. XVII.  
 to him yis was nocht sufficient bot als he vsit his autorite,  
 be oure grete haterent, ambicioun and diuers tyranneis,  
 becaus be privye malice he had distroyit ye nobillis fra quham  
 dependit the weill of ye pepill. To yis dispituous araynge of  
 Dovale ansuerit ye king in furie, as ane man by resoun he  
 occupyit the kinrik be iust titill ; yai suld lippin to haue na M.L.T. 66  
 mare clement prince of him yan yai had afore ; the foly  
 30 attemptatis of Dovale and crymez be him committit requirit  
 scharpe punycioun, and ye tresoun contrare him devisit suld  
 apoun Dovale and ye tratouris be brocht. Be thir wordis  
 Dovale kindillit in ire, ruschit to invade ye king ; syne his  
 assistantis but command brocht ye mater to fyne as be Dowale  
 yai war subornit. Nocht but slauchter of mony nobillis yai  
 slew ye king and yame in speciall to quham yai belevit ye  
 conspiracye of Dowale was odious. Incontinent lifting Rew-  
 thare in ye kingis throne and arraying him with regall orna-  
 mentis yai salust him souerane. To grete men of ye realme  
 was yis mater displesand, hevily weying yare prince distroyit  
 be tresoun, the decrete be sa mony zeris obseruit be ye nobillis  
 40 and commounis, be consale of ane wikkit man suld be abro-  
 gate, and ane zong chylde vnhabill to gide ye realme (repug-  
 nyng to ye honorabill decrete of ye law) was crownit. Quhare-  
 fore, ye barons convenyng, Fferquhard, cheif of Novant (now  
 Lorne) and gude fader to Nothat, desiring abone mesure of  
 domynione, thinking he had oportunitie to attempt grete  
 materis, sen to occupie ye realme as he devisit he couth fynd  
 na cast mare commodious, dissymyling yat he defendit ye  
 caufs of ye cuntre, he aggregit mekill that Dowale had slane  
 ye king be tresoun, and, yat he mycht mare lefully exerce  
 50 tyrannye, had crownit ane barne to ye grete hurte of ye  
 commoun weill. Herefore he counsalit yai suld devise how  
 ye kinrik suld be reulit and ye pepill mycht leif in pece ; and  
 gif yai haistelie dantit nocht the appering tyrannye of Dowale, M.L.T. 66b  
 quhilk doutles in place of Rewthare was to vse him self as  
 king, the nobillis be sic sedicioun suld be devidit and trubill  
 ye cuntre, yat of ye hail kinrik thay suld peraventure persave  
 ye rewyne and haisty fall. Fferquhard saying yir wourdis,

- Fo. XVII.** suddanly come Dowale with folkis haistelie gadderit, be exploratouris certifyit quhat contrare him was devisit. Incontinent Fferquhard and vtheris present at ye convencion fled, quhare sum capitans of clannys war slane and Fferquhard, sare woundit, narolie evading ye handis of Dowale, to ye Ilis 60 with his complicis departit. Eftir certane dayis inhabitantis of Ila convenit ofttymes to Fferquhard, (of all ye ilis of Scotland this Ila is maist large and betuix it and Albion the saling is verray schort); siclike conuenit to him ye cheif of ye clannys, to quham the factioun of Dowale was odioß fra ye begynnynge, allegeand yai fled ye ire of yat waryit tyran. Fferquhard, to haue the multitude at his opinion, to ye pepill spak in yis sorte: "Gif in creacioun of oure prince we had obseruit ye law, be ye public authorite pronuncit, maist valezeant men, to me now war bot vane to opin the wourdis I bere in mynde, becaus during ye regne of Nothat, ye nobill 70 prince schynynge in authorite and wisdom, we mycht without division haue had gude dayis and liffit in rest and eifß. Bot sen yat vertuouß prince be tresoun of ye tyran Dowale is distroyit, to mare skaith of ye public weill than may be expremyt, the authorite is vsit, aganis ye actis of oure lawis, be ane barne inexpert in sic curis, and we se ye detestabill tratouris daly awating ws with skaith and providing castis for tynsale of oure livis and kinrik; it efferis ws nocht herefore dispare the weill of oure self and ye realme, nocht zit assalezeing the aventure of fortune in bataill, and like men discumfist, declynynge ye ire of inemyis, dollie lurk in yir placis; ffor be my opinioun, to eik ye power of inemyis and to mak ws febill, nane vthir way is mare commodioß. Ffor 3one vnmercifull tyran nocht alanerlie in ye blude of ye 80
- Fo. XVIII.** gretest of oure nacioun, bot als in ye haly blude of oure native prince, has wett his pollute handis. Als to remove fra ws all esperance, be his tresoun he has distroyit the floure of all oure nacioun favoring oure opinioun. Quhare he lippynyt agit men suld supple ws with consel, handilling yame dispitfully, he haldis yame sa planely in captiuite yat amang ws yai may be comptit as dede; sic like he was ye lauborare yat 3ong Rewthare, (quham he callis king), suld haue ye dochter



of Gethus, king of Pichtis, in mariage, tending be yat affinite  
 to be sa garnist yat he may oppresß ws be yis domestic were.  
 Attoure, (as be secrete writing<sup>is</sup> of his prive consalouris we  
 10 ar certifiyt), he has devisit gif we be vincust and defate, (quhilk  
 all ye goddis and goddessis mot defend), oure ene sall be  
 holkit out, oure eris, neiß and naturale membris sall be cuttit  
 away and mutulate, syne kepe ws liffand for perpetuall con-  
 tempcioun and skorne. Bot, 3e men of hardy curage, lippin  
 weill all thir may be eschewit be help of oure goddis and,  
 be yare iust punycioun, the myscheif may be brocht apoun  
 yat waryit inemye, brekare baith of iustice and faith, quhilk  
 he has devisit for oure perdicioun becaus we haue respect  
 to equite and iustice. And gif we be decernyt to debate oure  
 lawte, liberte, iust actioun and ceremonis of oure lawis, we suld  
 nocht dispare bot erare lippyn yat, be assistence of immor-  
 tall goddis, all sall cum happely and weill. Fferder, be diuersß  
 exemplis baith of strangearis and forbearis, we haue herd the  
 goddis be strenth of fewe persouns has oft tymes revengit ye  
 20 fals tresoun of greter multitude. I exhort herefore, gif we be  
 men, gif we be ocht worth and wald be comptit successioun  
 of oure nobill progenitouris, quhilk<sup>is</sup> in defence of oure liberte  
 and to authoriß iustice and equite exponit yame to sa mony  
 dangeris, and gif we be men to quham the richtwis goddis  
 has grantit this cuntre and fra cruell inemyis has defendit ye  
 samyn and to ws grantit to increß and multiply in sic nowmer  
 of pepill, lat ws agane 3one pridefull tyran defend our livis,  
 liberte, paternale lawis, spoussis and childer, sen to man suld  
 na thing appere mare tender, mare plesand nor honest;  
 thinking mekill mare honorable to *commytt* oure accioun to  
 ye aventure of fortune, than schamefully to be spulezete of  
 oure ene and, dismembrit, liff in dishonoure and skorne. As  
 to ye victory, I think na thing mare facill yan yat we sall  
 ouresett 3one tratour<sup>is</sup>, quhilk<sup>is</sup> doutles for breking of iustice  
 30 and slauchter of innocentis, ar destitute of ye favoure of ye  
 immortal goddis. Lat ws yarefore pas fordwart *with* all  
 oure pussance corporall and affectioun of myndis apoun oure  
 inemyis; and gif we wey oure liberte, wyiffis, barnys, livis  
 and honeste, lat ws propone before ws owder dede or ellis

M.L.T. 67b

M.L.T. 68

Fo. XVIII. victorie : and nocht to revenge alanerly the tresonable slauch-  
 ter of oure Prince Nothat, his freyndis and oure lawis violate,  
 bot als wele, (gif ye goddis be propiciant), to dant ye iniuris  
 and ye cruell dede devisit apoun ws, oure tendir spousis and  
 childer, be zone vnmercifull tyran. Be this way or be nane  
 vthir sall we evaid this *present* dispite and tyrannye." This  
 proposicioun of Fferquhard movit ye captanis of ye clannys  
 to harnes with all ye multitude, bot na thing sa mekill as ye  
 schamefull mutulacion apoun thame devisit ; sua changeing 40  
 in ire all drede latelie before consaut, and straking handis,  
 intynit and sparkit with inemyis blude, (as the ryte was of  
 ye pepill), thay swore yat be fyre and swerd and be quhat  
 vthir violence yai mycht, thay suld revenge ye innocent  
 slauchter of thare prince Nothate and vtheris be tresoun of  
 the tratoure Dowale distroyit, testyfyng the immortale goddis  
 of ye aith amang yame promyst.

How Fferquhard invadit Dowale be batell and of  
 yare slauchter ; how ye king of Pichtis was slane,  
 King Rewther takin, and how Britouns *compellit*  
 Pichtis to Orknay. Cap<sup>to</sup> vj<sup>o</sup>

M.L.T. 68b Schortlie thareeftir Fferquhard assembling power fra Ire-  
 land, Argathel, Novant and vtheris nyctbouris of ye  
 Illis, departing with mony galiouns and langfaddis, come in  
 Albion. At his *cummyng* his folkis with incredibill fervoure  
 addressit apoun the partye of Dowale, astrenezeing yame self 50  
 be ane aith yat fra bargane yai suld nocht remove quhill  
 owder thay had liberte, (revengeing ye felloun slauchter of  
 Nothat and his freyndis), or ellis war euery ane strikkin downe  
 in batell. Dowale, nocht vnaduertist of yare intencioun,  
 occurrit with his folkis in yare meting. Twyis yat ilk day,  
 nocht fer fra ye castell of Berigone, was fochtin, and als oft  
 (nocht without slauchter) was the power of Dowale discumfist,  
 quhen Fferquhard had bot x<sup>m</sup> men alanerlie in armys. Of  
 Dowlis party fell yat day to ye nowmer of viij<sup>m</sup>, be falling of  
 ye nyct fra batell on athir side was ceissit. At spring of

day the powar of Dowale, parte be ire of ye outrage ressaut FO. XVIII.  
 and parte be schame, war kindillit with grete hardyment to  
 60 renewe ye bargane. In ye feild of Dowale was Gethus, king  
 of Pichtis, *with* stark power, Rewthare ye 3ong prince, gude  
 son to Gethus, with mony vtheris nobillis of Scottis to ye  
 partie of Dowale assisting. Sum parte of Pichtis of na litill  
 autorite folloit Fferquhard be resoun of ald freyndschip and  
 famyliare cumpanye, or rather (as *commonly* is) inducit be  
 hope of lukir and rewarde. Siclike the inhabitantis of Lugia, M.L.T. 69  
 Cornane, Marchane, Argathele, Novant (now Rosß, Cathenes,  
 Mar, Argile, Lorne), Insulanis, and vtheris duelling at ye west  
 sey, stiflie recountring inemyis, be manly corage sustenit the  
 fecht. Maist feirß and cruell bargane on athir partie was  
 committit and ye victory in dout, ffor, eftir yai had certane  
 70 tyme prolongit ye fecht, astonyst baith be fere of instant  
 slauchter and to loiß ye victorie, athir partie sonezeit and to  
 vthir gaif place. At yis meting Gethus, king of Pichtis, with  
 grete nowner of his pepill, nobillis and commouns, Dowale,  
 Fferquharde and all capitanis of ye clannys almaist, war slane.  
 This slauchter was sa vniuersale yat day and sa felloun yat  
 of all ye multitude quhilk come to ye feild viij<sup>e</sup> men alanerlie  
 war salf; the remanent to ye leist ane being slane. Tymely  
 ye nixt morow quhen ye partie of Fferquharde (quhilk liffit  
 eftir ye bataill) *persaut* the residewe of Dowalis oist had left  
 ye feild, with all yare force yai attemptit to persew the flearis,  
 comprehending yame at ye last fleand, denwde of wapynnys  
 80 and armoure, be grete slauchter yai straik yame downe. To  
 ye castel of Calidone Wod (now Dunkeld) was ye slauchter FO. XIX.  
 and chaisß skalit. Rewther, 3e 3ong king, was takin and to  
 Berigone led abak: his life was salf, ane way for ye recent  
 meritis of his fader Doruadilla, ane vthir way becaus yai  
 knewe in the 3ong prince bred na sic tresoun. Be this myser-  
 abill plaig, nowthir of ye blude of Scottis nor Pichtis war men M.L.T. 69b  
 left on life to reul or defend the cuntre aganis inemyis. Of  
 yis mysfortoun to Scottis and Pichtis *commoun*, sone aduertist  
 war Britouns, inemyis to athir pepill of ye auld, quharethrow,  
 thinking tyme approachit to occupy ye haille empyre of Albion,  
 10 be decrete of yare counsale contracting ane stark armye, yai

Fo. XIX. invadit ye landis of Pichtis, sparing na thing vndistroyit quhare yai come. Hereof ye nobillis of Pichtis euading ye first batell, and ye remanent pepill, had na leß terroure and murnyng than of ye fall of all yare freyndis in ye recent bargane. Herefore providing yat how beit yai war be bataill brokin yai suld nocht be haisty pray to dispitfull inemyis, quhen yai persauit all the cuntre ouresett be hereschip and spuleze, leiffing thare landis, villagis and burrowis without store or vthir plennyssing, with wyiffis and barnys departing secretelie, be lang and difficill iournais be sey or land yai made to Orknay, quhare yai crownit of new Gethus, brother germane to King Gethus in ye last battaill slane. In Orknay be gude concorde with ye cuntre men yai remanit certane 20 3eris, aggreing in all poyntis, nowthir of yir naciouns moving displeoure towart vtheris. Herefore I beleif be sum writaris of oure cronykillis, the Ilis of Orknay ar namyt the ancient kinrik of Pichtis. ¶

M.L.T. 70

How Britouns, eftir yai had forrayit all Pichtland, vincust Scottis in bataill; how King Reuthare was assegeit; of his eschape and passing to Ireland, and how Scottis be Britouns war banyst.

Cap° vij°

**B**ritouns the present tyme forraying all ye regions of Deer and Pichtland, (now Merß and Lowthiane), stuffit castellis with garnisoun quhen but debate yai war in handis randerit; 3it yai abstenit fra slauchter of sic persouns as be fragill kynde and lak of age war febill and mekil ye mare yat yai knewe ye silly pepill be mony sindry ouresettis supprisit before. Syne stabilling in Pichtland stark mwncyioun, apoun ye landis of Scottis thay brocht yare power, before quhais cuming first gretelie astonyst war Scottis, drawin be necessite to concorde, 30 syne furoure and dispite kendilling to yame baith strenth and hardyment, yai made for defence. At Caledone Wod quhare yai recounterit, of Scottis ij<sup>m</sup> war slane. The remanent, abasitlie fleand, war skalit in diuerß cuntreis. Of yis infor-

- tunate batell the novellis to ye lauborioß pepill, (knawing na Fo. XIX.  
 thing of were), war na leß lamentabill yan in yat ilk batell  
 all ye name of Scottis nacioun had bene extermynate. Re-  
 gretting athir with vthir and making mayne, tyme was cuming  
 yat ye kinrik of King Fferguß being loist, all ye posterite of  
 Scottis blude in Albion and yare name tendit to fynale rewyne.
- 40 Be thir fortunate chancis Britouns growing mare proude, quhen  
 be exploratouris yai knew sum nobillis of Scottis quhilk had M.L.T. 70b  
 evadit the handis of inemyis fled to Berigone to defend yare  
 zong prince Rewthare, becaus he alanerly *with* richt few of  
 ye houß of King Fferguß was left levand, and sum *with*  
 wiffyis and barnys to the Ilis war fled, be *command* of Oene  
 (king of Britouns for ye tyme) with awfull ordinance yai  
 sped to Berigone, tending to tak ye king and all ye nobillis  
 with him in cumpany. Bot persaving ye castell was strang  
 and situate in sic strenth that without assege it *mycht* *nocht*  
 be expugate, haistely about it yai distribute yare folkis.  
 Scottis lang tyme sustenyng the assege, (quhil fynalie all yare  
 victualis being consumyt), be felloun skantnes war oureset ;
- 50 zit yat yai suld *nocht* cum in handis of inemyis, be fude of  
 mennys bodyis (quham apoun fell ye cavill) yai sustenit ane  
 quhile ye myserabill life. At ye last yis sorte of liffe was  
 thocht tedioß, yat sum tyme men maist abill to mak defence,  
 vthir tymes men of maist wisdom quham apoun dependit  
 all yare weill, be aventure of ye cavill fell to be slane and  
 etyn. Therefore consulting to quhat fyne apperingly yare  
 fortune suld turne, yai thocht best to ische and attempt sum  
 iupertie quhil strenth zit amang yame remanit. Of all vtheris  
 first Colane, capitane of ye pepill of Novant, (now Lorne),  
 with i<sup>c</sup> walit men of his clan ischit and drew to ane litill  
 know beside ; with him haistelie mellit ye Britouns. Stoutlie  
 previt ye men of Lorne quhilk for nane vthir cauß departit fra  
 ye castell bot to expone yare live for ye *commoun* wele, and  
 sa lang debatit, quhill Colane with his folkis, be multitude and M.L.T. 71  
 60 force of inemyis oureset, fell at anys dede in feild. Quhil yai  
 in yis sorte war deling with Britouns, Rewthare, ye zong  
 prince, departing at ane posterne with all ye folkis within  
 ye castell of Berigone, passit to ye botis, liand reddy nere

Fo. XIX. beside, weill appoyntit *with* maryneris and vthir gere ganyng for ye saill, as before was devisit. Quharefra first to ye Ilis, fra thyne *with* prosper courß he was be *servandis* convoyit to Ireland. The wemen of Novant quhilk apon ye nixt montanis diligentlie beheld all ye caifs how it happynnyt, seying yare husbandis in yare *presens* sloppit *with* woundis and slane in bataill, yat yai suld nocht be subiect to vile *seruitute*, be womanlie rage owder ilkane slew doun vtheris or ellis cruelly strangillit yame self be ye cord. Britons, hevily weying yat 70 King Rewthare was sa eschapit, apoun ye febill pepill revengeing ye iniuris, slewe of yame grete nowmer; syne, turnyng to ye castellis and strenthis of Scottis, resaut all quhilk wilfully war randerit and nocht without lang assegeing tuke ye remanent be force. The Scottis quhilk evadit ye slauchter, errant in ye cuntre, becauß to ye pussance of Britons yai mycht be na partie nor of equale nowmer to mell with yame in bargane, fleand to ye montanys, be stratenes of ye erde defendit yame contrare inemyis; quhare leiffing ane scharpe and naro life, be mylknes, herbis and blak beryis, (apoun ye hichtis of yai cuntreis haboundis yir beryis), in somer yai sustenit yare life; in wynter be parte of venyson and sum parte be pray of bestiall, reft fra ye lawich cuntre adiacent 80

Fo. XX. to ye fute of ye montanys quhare yai pusturit. Thus apoun  
 M.L.T. 71b Britouns quhilk war presidentis to ye *common* pepill making sic cruell invasiouns, to ye space of xij yeris thay continewit in weris, all Scottis and Pichtis for ye maist parte quhilk remanit in Albion, liffing vnder ye vile and vnhonest *seruitute* of Britouns.

Reuther, here returnit fra Ireland, conquest his kinrik, of new vincust Britouns; to him Rewtha succedit and in ye realme made polecye.

Capto viij°

Quhill in Albion sic thingis war done King Rewthare in Ireland gat apoun his lady ane son quham he namyt Thereus. Sone yareeftir inflammyt be writingis of Gethus,

king of Pichtis, (remanying for ye tyme in ye Ile of Pamonia Fo. XX.  
(now Kirkwall), of all vtheris within Orknay ye maist), and of  
vthir Scottis remanyng zit in Albion he tuke purpois to returne  
to his native kinrik. In ye nixt somer assembling power fra  
10 all partis and *with* grete nowmer of galiouns departing fra  
Ireland, at ye Ilis he arrivit. Thare eking his power and  
pulling vp salis at ye porte callit Relaws (now Lochbrune,  
in ye west parte of Rosß), he tuke land in Albioun. How  
sone his folkis war put to land, yai slew ye first man occurring  
be aventure, and *with* his het blude (as was ye ancient ryte  
of ye pepill quhen yai past in weris), anoyntit yare swerd  
poyntis, and halding to yare mowth ye samyn, euery man  
taistit yareof sum thing; syne erecting yair sweird  
poyntis towart ye hevin, besocht ye immortale goddis yai  
wald be ane ewrouß batell condingly revenge ye innocent  
spylt blude of yare forebearis. Fra thyne yai devisit tranoynt  
toward the south. Bot knawing ye cummyng of King Gethus  
of Pichtis in Albioun, with ane army purchest fra ye freyndlie  
pepill of Germanye, *nocht* abone xxx<sup>tj</sup> mylis fra yame distant M.L.T. 72  
20 still at Lugia, (now Rosß), thay taryit his cuming. The thrid  
day folowing athir prince with thankis and mery chere at  
Dingwell made thare meting. On ye morne yarefra departing  
with yare folkis towart ye sowth yai movit. To yir twa princis  
grete confluence come of all Scottis and Pichtis remanyng in  
Albion and be yame ane copioß armye mare haistelie yan ony  
belevit was contractit. Quhen to Sisillius, king of Britouns,  
(for King Oene latelie had paid ye naturall dett), was schawin  
yare intent, suddanly contracting stark power he occurrit in  
yare meting. Scottis and Pichtis, curing nowder ye rurell  
febill pepill nor mwncyious occupyit be garnysoun of Britons,  
werelike passing apoun Britane, made hereschip and rubery  
30 throw all ye cuntre. Sisillius, king, tending of yir iniuris to  
be revengit, sone gaif bargane to ye Scottis and Pichtis quhare,  
ye batell on athir parte stoutlie lang tyme being sustenit,  
Britons finalie to inemyis left ye feild. In yis iournay be  
reherß of euery man the valseand actis of King Rewther to  
his party preparit vndowtit victorie. Ffor verificacion heræof  
ye feild quhare was ye batell gevin, to ye posterite is namyt

Fo. XX. Redirdaill, yat is to say ye Daill of Rewther, keping still ye name fra Rewther, the victorios prince. To ye partie victorios, and vincust, was yis victorie cruell and sare, sua yat on athir side tynyng mony thowsand nobill men and disparing to renewe ane armye, to yare awne cuntre yai departit. Pece sone yareeftir be ambassiatouris betuix ye kingis was oppoyntit, be yir condicions yat to Scottis and Pichtis suld all castellis, strenthis and vthir mwnycions be restorit and ye garnysoun of Britouns frelie suld depart. Fra thyne mony zere pece 40

M.L.T. 726 Rewther to his kinrik was restorit was eftir begynnyng of ye warld iiiij<sup>m</sup> ix<sup>c</sup> nynety and five, before Criste incarnate ij<sup>c</sup> and iiiij, fra ye first beilding of ye ciete of Rome v<sup>c</sup> xlvi zere. Venerabil Bede in his buke quhilk he namys "ye ecclesiastic historie of Inglis nacioun," quhare he rememberis of Rewtheris returne in Albion, (how beit he call it bot his first enteres), haldis yis king had Rewda to name. Bot following ye writaris of ye actis of Scottis, we obserue ye name be yame vsit, in nathing alterit. Hereeftir King Rewther with nane vthir strangearis had weris nor civill factioun within his realme, and at ye castell of Berigone endit his dayis quhare 50 oftymes afore he maid his habitacion; in ye zere of his regne xxvi, quhilk fra ye begynnyng of ye warld was iiiij<sup>m</sup> ix<sup>c</sup> xcvi zere. Eftir his deceif the nobillis, be consent of ye pepill, providing yat ye kinrik suld nocht be committit to ye gyding of his son Thereus, nocht zit having x zere in age, and be his mynorite suld be exponit to danger, commandit Rewtha, (emys son to King Rewther), of scharpe and qwyk ingyne, resaue ye crowne. King Rewtha, first of all vtheris, devisit yat ye famouss actis of nobill men, quhilk for honoure of ye cuntre had done ony notabill dedis or interprise, suld be in perpetuall remembrance obseruit; and sa mony as debating contrare Britons fell in batell, be honorable sepulturis and epythaphijs suld be decorit. Sa mony heich and square stanys weill dressit be masonry at his sepulture suld be placit as he 60 had slane of inemyis. Of sic stanys, craftelie gravin, in yiroure dayis mony baith in montanys and vyir partis may be sene. Hereeftir rais ye custume yat ye sepulturis of valezeand



men and vtheris vertewus in yare life suld, as thingis haly Fo. XX.  
 and honourable, be had in reuerence, adionyng yareto hepis and  
 cairnys of stanys. Of yir sum of maist quantite on hicht war M.L.T. 73  
 erectit quhareapon war gravin the figuris of certane fowlis,  
 serpentis or dragons, bred amang watteris, (sic figuris in place  
 of *lettres* in secrate writingis vsit yat age), yat yareby suld  
 the passingeris be informyt quhat men yai war and quhat  
 actis yai did in yare tyme. The pepill syne occupyit in manur-  
 ing ye grund, keping of yare store, deliting in hunting and  
 70 vthir voluptuosite, neclectit all cure of medicine and *vyir*  
 craftis. Quharefore to induce craftismen and to draw yame  
 fra *vyir* partis the king gart distribute yame in sindry schiris  
 quhare iugis for ye tyme (now erlis or *schireffis*) exercit iustice,  
 and assignit to yame ane liffing, parte of ye common and *vyir*  
 parte of ye expenss private, sa discretely yat nane yarethrow  
 suld be molestit; like as quhen in ony parte of ye province  
 was ane ox slane, how beit to ony private persoun he pertenit,  
 to the smyth assignit was ye hede, the crag to the forestare,  
 the tung to ye interpretoure of ye lawis, to ye ceirssare of ye  
 thevis ane of ye spaldis, (this ceirssare be ye first langage was  
 callit derauch), to ye wricht ye neris with twa schort ribbis,  
 the remanent of ye spar ribbis to ye leich, off baith quarteris  
 twa ribbis to ye medicinare. Attoure to yame war assignit  
 certane mesuris of bere and ait's, be resoun of yis decrete in  
 80 place of yerelie pensioun, becaus amang oure forefaderis na  
 cunzete money zit was in vse. Sum *vyeris* of ye samyn ox Fo. XXI.  
 clamyt certane vtheris tailzeis, be reson of decrete foresaid,  
 quhilk vse in parting ye ox carcage we se zit obseruit amang  
 ye inhabitantis ye Ilis. Alsua becaus King Rewtha knew yat  
 be inexperience of medicinaris diuerß having woundis or  
 twichit be ony malady war mysgidit, decretit, be avise of his  
 counsale, yat na person suld vsurp the name of ane medi-  
 cynare nor cirurgiane without he war knawin cunnyng and  
 assayit be lang experience, na les pane proponit na to want  
 ye hede gif to yis decrete ony obtemperit nocht. Before yat  
 tyme oure nacioun vsit na medicinaris in speciall, (euery man  
 10 fenzeing him to haue sum practik in medicyne), bot conforme  
 to ye ald rite of Egipcianis, yai productit ye seik or sare to

Fo. XXI. ye strete or ellis quhare plane passage was, sua yat ye visiaris suld gif consale and be exhortacioun suld induce yame to vse sic thingis as yai vsit, quhen yai conualescit fra sic like malady, or as yai knew vtheris eschapit. It was nocht lefull yat ony suld pas by ye pacient *without* of consolacion he gaif him sum wourdis.

Here come ye oratouris of Ptolome in Scotland; Reutha denudit him of ye croun in faouere of Thereus, *quhilk* for his mysgiding was banyst, and eftir gouerment of Conane, Iosina was made souerane.

Capto ix°

**Q**uhill to thir and siclike actis of policy King Rewtha was intent, the oratouris of Ptholome Philadelph, king of Egipt, come in Albion to consider ye situacion and figure of ye ile and maner of ye inhabitantis. King Rewtha resaving yame humanelie tretit be mony diuers kyndis of honoure, and ye rather yat yai wer of ye nacion fra quham his progenitouris sum tyme descendit. Syne be his familiaris war yai *convoyit* throw ye regions baith of Scottis and Pichtis, 20 and, as King Ptholome gaif in charge, put in writt as yai fand and saw of promontouris, nesß, hedelandis, firthis, ilis adjacent, cieteis, famous castellis, louchis, hillis, montanis and variance of ye lenthing and schorting baith of day and nycht. Ffor King Ptholome had devisit to discribe be instrumentis of astronomy ye situacion of ye hale warld, of ilis quhare men made hant, habitacion, of al firthis, cieteis, promontouris, hedlandis, ye situacion, ye lenth and latitude of ye samyn. Hereof is now ane grete volume be him beginnyng bot eftirwart in tyme of ye impriour Adriane completit be ane vyir Ptholome, of Alexandria native in his tyme, in science of mathematic richt cunnyng. This werk, baith commodioß and curioß, is intitult ye Cosmographie of Ptholomee. Quhen 30 amang vyir consideracion of Scottis regions, ye oratouris had diligently notit ye ritis, cerymonis, ye maner of writing and langage, vsit in sacrifice or vyir grave materis, ye leid of ye

cuntre, yare hedis schavin and nocht beld owder bare or lichtlie coverit, hardynnyt at ye son and ye remanent of yare fassons nocht mekill variant fra ye rytis of Egipcianis, yai tuke yareof grete plesure, applauding to ws and richelie being rewardit be King Rewtha according his magnificence, to Egipt, to King Ptholome, yai returnit. Thareeftir regnit King Rewtha in iustice and equite, al thing being peciabil to ye space of xiiij zeris. This prudent prince, fering yat our grete prosperite of fortune suld finalie prepare ane drery fyne, calling to court Thereus, son to King Rewther, (ane plesing 40 zong man apprisit be grete wisdom), in presens of ye pepill he commendit mekil his vertew, constantlie affirmyng he was ye man quhilk with wisdom wourthily mycht gide the kinrik pertenyng to him be paternale heretage. As for him self he was now molestit with age, febill and seiklie and be resoun yareof vnhable for goverment of ye realme. Nor he aucht nocht, na zit wald nocht, bere ye autorite langer; sua be avise of ye noblis and favoure of ye pepill, be his awne handis resignyng ye crowne to Thereus, denuding him self of princelie estate and cure, he chesit to lif ane private life, the xvij zere eftir he had resaut ye crowne. And Thereus, resaving ye autorite and princely name, the first sex zeris mycht weill in vertew to ye maist nobill princis of Scotland before his dayis be comparit. Bot yareeftir, mekill defferent fra rewlis of his fader, nowder gaif he him iustice nor gude werkis, involuit in vicis, scornare of divyne ceremonis and religion, 50 now yir correctit reif nor spuleze, how beit yai war manifest and knawin. Vnder his goverment ye insolent pepill grew wylde, corruptit be evill exempill of ye kingis vicis, quhilk to ye vulgare pepill in vertew suld be myrroure. Quhareapon baith of noblis and commons followit oppressioun and slauchter, and vyris quhilks heryit and disturssit ye cuntre, spulezeing lele lauboraris of yare gudis, war in grete reuerence as chiftanis and men of valoure. It come to yis poynt finalie, throw his mysyging, yat during his regne na man belevit ye regiment of ye common weill suld be reformyt. Be indignacion hereof movit war ye capitanis of ye clannys, thinking vnwourthy yat nobill men suld to sic ane corruptit monstir

Fo. XXI.

M.L.T. 74b

FO. XXI. obey; convenyng ye nobillis in counsale, ye multitude consentit gladelie yat King Thereus deservit grete punycioun and of regne and regale dignite aucht be denwdit. Persaving 60 ye conspiracye, Thereus, fering his life, waryng his familiaris and mynzons, fleyng to Britons, wilfully exilit him self ye realme. At Britons quhen he had oftymes socht supple in vane to be restorit to his kinrik, disparing how he mycht returne to Scotland, at zorke vnwourthely consumyng his days with dishonour he grew in age and deceissit. Twelf zeris durit ye regne of Thereus. Quhil he was thus flemyt his realme, exile at zork, the noblis of Scotland providing yat be failze of princely autorite ye common wele suld tak na hurt, be vniuersale consent create Conane, cheif to ye pepil of Brigance, amang yame of grete autorite, to be gouernour.

M.L.T. 75 Conane, tending to remove all rankoure and fede amang the heris, rasant be sleuth of King Thereus, be contynual laubouris 70 gat his purpoifs; luffing pece, detesting sedicion and discorde, be sare punycioun he dantit ye trubill be mysdoaris movit. In all partis he persewit thevis and refaris, and quhare yai mycht be comprehendit, gart yame be iustifijt be rigoure. In tyme of his gouernment all thingis lay thareout apoun ye plane, na persoun owthir of theif or reiffare having fere. At ye last Conane, ye gouernoure, certifyit of ye dede of Thereus, providing yat ye crowne to ye richtwis heretoure suld be gevin, in presens of ye pepil in parliament at Berigone, left ye autorite and at command of ye multitude crownit Iosina, broder germane to Thereus, becaus to Thereus was na succession. Iosina, being creat king, be ambassiatouris renewit the ald lyig and band with Pichtis and Britouns; cherst 80

FO. XXII. medicinaris and leichis becaus with sic kynde of men in Ireland he was nurist of ane childe quhill he inressit to mannys age. Nor of phesik wantit he nocht the knaulege, ffor wysely he vnderstude ye nature and strenth of herbis quhilkis alanerlie Scottis men vsit for the tyme to cure maladeis and woundis. To oure forebearis was vnknawin sa mony kyndis of strange infirmyteis as we se in oure dayis. Ffew yan incurrit seiknes, bot gif ye occasioun war ministerit be gravell or habowndant flewme or siclike vthir maladie, generit of cald, or wattry

humour, ouresetting ye temperance of mannis complexioun, Fo. XXII.  
 ffor wyislie yai war reulit, temperance of metis fra contrarius  
 infirmiteis preseruit yare persouns and oftymes in mony zeris  
 prolongit yare dayis. Bot eftir ye temperate fude of forebearis  
 was postponit and in all kynde of delicatis deokayit, yan atanyis  
 10 with strange delicate chere began to spring strange maladeis,  
 vnkend afore, to quhilkis, becaus ye medicamentis of oure  
 awne cuntre mycht nocht avale, vtheris war excogitate of new, M.L.T. 75b  
 and sa mony fra vthir partis yat yai ar vnnowmerabill. This  
 foresaidis of ye ancient mesour and temperate diet of oure  
 nacioun, thare maledyis and maner of remede, ar bot breiflie  
 in yis passage rememberit. Of quhilkis mare diligent explana-  
 cion to place mare convenient is reseruit.

How the Spanze preistis inducit Scottis to adoracioun  
 of ane god; how Ffynnane was crownit; of his  
 virtuofß giding; how Drwidis in the Ile of Mon had  
 yare prymare seit, and of ye vicis of King Durst.

Capto x°

**D**uring ye regne of Iosina twa men plesand and honorabill  
 to sicht, (howbeit yai war schip brokin and nakit almaist),  
 convoyit be certane Insulans, in ye castell of Berigone come  
 to ye king. Sum haldis yai war preistis of Spanze tending to  
 saill fra Portugale to Athenis and be violence of storme war  
 cassin fra ye schip apon ye land, and ye schip ouresett be  
 20 seyis and sonkin, disparing yare life with few complicis war  
 fra ye perrel deliuerit. Bot fra quhat parte yai come, it was  
 weill knawin yai war philosophouris. Quhen to presens of  
 ye king yai war resaut, he tretit yame humanely, commanding  
 officiaris yai suld haue of him yare expensß, in his castel yai  
 suld be lugeit and to yame thingis necessare suld be ministrare.  
 Eftir xiiij dayis was passit and yare wery bodyis in walking  
 and laubouris be rest and recent nutryment war refreschit,  
 ye king desirit to here yame schaw, sa fer as yai had considerit,  
 of ye nature of ye grond and of ye maneris and ritis of ye  
 pepill. And yai reddily ansuerit yai had nocht 3it experience



Fo. XXII. *ȳareof*, becauſſ nowdir aduersite of fortoun nor ȳit penurite  
of tyme had sufferit ; bot as be certane coniecturacioun thay  
mycht persave the ground to myneris and metallis was mare 30

M.L.T. 76 gevin than to bere corne, and in the prive vanis of ȳe erde  
mare riches than abone mycht be fundin, quhilk ȳai said be  
ȳe hevin and influence *ȳareof* ȳai knew. As twiching ȳe con-  
dicioun of ȳe pepill and ceremonis, ȳai affermyt ȳat Scottis  
vndirstude nocht ȳe verite of divyne ceremonis becaus, (fol-  
lowing ȳe ritis of Egipcianis), ȳai comparit ymagery of brutall  
beistis to ȳe goddis immortal or attemptit to conterfete  
ȳame be ony figure corporale, affermyng ȳat god was ane thing  
contenyng onelie baith man, erde and sey, quhilkis philoso-  
phouris callis hevin and erde. And nature ȳe moder quhilk  
producis all thingis corruptibill, was god and nocht ellis, and  
his image aucht nocht nor may nocht to ȳe similitude of ony  
beist be comparit. Necessare was herefore ȳat, postponyng  
supersticiouns, rytis, mawmentrye, ȳai suld anourne, be fyre  
and devote wourdis, ȳe God of liffe, without corporale forme,  
regnyng in hevin, in tempill and hallowit place depute ȳareto.  
To him allanerlie ȳai suld offer incensſ, kepe ȳare avowis and 40  
euer lippin fra him sum grace, speciallye sic as in hale, pudik  
life and with equite spendit ȳare dayis. *Vȳir*wais in him suld  
be lippynnyt na mercye. Thir agit faderis, oft tymes repeting  
ȳir wourdis or siclike twiching dyvine ceremonis to diuerſ  
persouns, persuadit and inducit ȳame finalie ȳat, detesting ȳe  
figuris of ȳe god Apis and Isis ȳe goddes, (anournit be oure  
nacioun for ȳe tyme following ȳe Egipciane ritis), grete parte  
of ȳe pepill devotelie and *with* gude intencion, to verray God  
omnipotent trewlie offerit ȳare hartis. *Vtheris*, to quham  
adoracioun of ane God eternale mycht nocht be persuadit,  
frequentit ȳe ald *prophane* templis of ydolis quhare, (conforme  
to ȳe ritis of forefaderis), seking ȳame with consultacioun and  
desiring responsſ, ȳai anournit for goddis ȳe formys of diuerſ  
beistis. Bot ȳit be na resouns ȳai mycht be inducit to grant  
ȳe son, ȳe mone, sternys and *vȳir* celestial bodyis *with* ȳame 50

M.L.T. 76b in motion mycht want dyvine intelligence, dissaut be the auld  
erroure ȳat in ȳare mynde ȳis consate *with* sic obstinacioun  
was fixt, ȳat, sen in al ȳe warld ȳai saw na thingis sa plesing,

sa sublyme and sa mervellus as ye son, ye mone and vthir Fo. XXII.  
 sternis, yai coud neuer consaue bot to yame suld be made  
 adoracioun as to thingis to divinite consecrate, beleving ye  
 son was consecrate in ye name of Phebus, son to Iupiter, and  
 Diane was repute ane goddes and of al huntaris cheif. Thir  
 premisß, to yis passage of Scottis princis reheirsit, all collectit  
 fra Veremwnd, Iohne Campbell and Cornelius of Ireland,  
 quham we haue determyt to follow as authouris maist famouß  
 60 quhilks has of oure materis tretit, like as at oure begynnyng  
 we schew. yis vertwus prince Iosina regnit xxiiij zeris and at  
 Berigone in honorabill age deceissit, his son, Ffynnane, be  
 command of ye estatis, ane litill before ye terme of his liffe,  
 being declarit king. The gouernment of Ffynnane was plesand  
 and modest; to ye pepill, thankfull abone mesure. In posses-  
 sion of landis he put ye capitanis of clannys quhilk he belevit  
 favorit mekill ye weill of ye kinrik. In lufe and concorde of  
 his nobillis he sett his esperance to haue his realme stable  
 and at gude poynt. By avise of his nobillis he put na grete  
 mater in effect, he ekit ye nowmer of wise prudent men to be  
 apon ye secrete consell, sua yat be multitude of vertwoß men  
 ane ordoure mare iust and gracioß in administracion of equite  
 suld be obseruit. Providing alsua yat ye king suld nocht be  
 70 private consell governe ye kinrik, he decretit yat all accions  
 concernyng his maieste or ye weill of ye cuntre nocht without  
 consultacion and avise of wise grave men suld be dressit.  
 Nor to ye king suld nocht be lefull to appoynt pece, bynd  
 societe or lygis, move were or brek ony of yir premisß without  
 mature deliberacion of ye counsell. Sua parte be benevolence  
 and parte be liberalite and gude actis he drew to him ye  
 hartis of his liegis. Quharethrow among his pepil remanyng  
 surelie, persewit be nane exterior weris, flowin in riches, he  
 gaif his mynde to renewe and augment divine ceremonis, be M.L.T. 77  
 his fader, (as he beleuit), neglectit. Ffirst he restorit the  
 ymagis of goddis to be with the pepill in veneracioun. Nocht-  
 yeles, he wald nocht decerne that the adoracioun of ye omni-  
 potent God of liffe, institute be authorite of his fader, suld  
 be abrogate, to euery persoun granting congie to sacrificye to  
 ye god quham he plesit best. He was ye first yat in ye kirk

- Fo. XXII. institute prelatiſ, ſocht and choſin throw all hiſ realme, that in ſum parte of Albion ꝑai ſuld haue ane ſeit of primacie, thay ſuld haue cure of ſacrifice, public and private, and to godlines ſuld induce ꝑe pepill. Be oure ancient Scottiſ langage thir 80
- Fo. XXIII. war namyt Ducierglyiſ and be ꝑe Romane writariſ Drwidis. Thir prelatiſ abone preiſtiſ in leſ dignite ſuld haue autorite. Be decrete of ꝑe king and nobilliſ, of ꝑir men the office waſ to be at public ſacrifice *preſent*, interprete diuyn eceremoniſ and institute ꝑe ſamyn of new, be doctrine and gude maneriſ informe ꝑe ſonnys of nobilliſ, like aſ in Atheniſ ꝑai war inſtrukkit. Be ꝑe ſamyn law waſ pronuncit ꝑat to all thir Drwidis ane ſuld be principall and he oneliſ ſuld uſe autorite ; before him ſuld be borne ane bleiſſ or flam of fyre, aſ armys 10 of honoure and dignite ; to him deceiſſing ſuld ſuccede ane vthir, maiſt famous or ellis quhilk be votis and electioun waſ choſin. To ꝑir kirkmen geuin waſ ꝑe Ile of Mone, far diſtant fra Britane and Ireland bot ꝑat tyme richt nere Brigancia, (now Galloway), how beit now be ane lang way of ſey, abone xxiiij myle fra ꝑame it iſ ſeperate. In ꝑiſ Ile of Mone, aſ in place ſolempnit, haly and prymare ſete of kirkmen, ꝑat venerable eſtate ſuld remane : the remanent, ſkalit in ꝑe cuntre, to diuine ſeruiſe ſuld gif cure. Certane tyme in ꝑe 3ere to ꝑe Ile of Mone thay ſuld all conuene at plesure of ꝑare prelate and gif ony thing concernyng religioun waſ neglectit, be ꝑare auiſe it ſuld be reformyt. Sua ꝑa increſcit, (bot eftir 20 certane 3eriſ), ſa mekill in ſtudie of natural cauſſ and in morall diſcipline, (to quhilk ꝑai war maiſt geuin), ꝑat ꝑai war extemit men of vertewe and gude liffe, and ſua ꝑai war in verite. Quharefore to ꝑare credence the law bukis and mony debatabill actiounſ, baith public and private, war committit. Thay deuiſit punycioun for crymes and rewarde for meritiſ. Quha withſtude ꝑare decrete waſ ſecludit fra diuyn eceruiſe. Thiſ pane waſ euer repute maiſt hevy (amang oure nacioun) and quham apoun ſtraik ꝑiſ interditioun ꝑai war, aſ wikkit and vicioſ, reput odioſ. Ffra ꝑam all vtheriſ removit and fled ꝑare communicacioun and company, ſua ꝑat of ꝑare contagioſ ſociete ꝑai ſuld mak na cauſſ of diſpleſour to ꝑe immortal goddiſ. Gif ꝑai deſirit law or iuſtice it waſ refuſit



30 and to game war done nane honour nor reuerence. Attoure Fo. XXIII.  
 thir kirkmen had priuilege to vaik fra all weris, exemyt fra  
 all temporall chargis. Of thir Drwidis writis mony famous  
 authouris, in speciall Plinius, Strabo, Tacitus and Iulius Cesar,  
 quhilk affermys ye rite and religioun of Drwidis in Britan had  
 origine, folowing ye ald maner of Romane writaris, compre-  
 hending all ye ile of Albion vnder ye name of Britan; syne  
 fra Britan yai war to Gallia transferrit. *Commendit* was King  
 Ffynnane *nocht* alanerlie for divine and godlie actis bot als  
 weill for civilite and polecie be quhilkis mervelluslie he decorit  
 his realme. Alsua to his glore conductit yat to his son, Durst,  
 the king of Britouns gaif his dochter Agasia in mariage. Here-  
 throw he conquest kyndenes and freyndschip of grete parte  
 of Britons. Ffinalie at ye ciete of Camelodune he deceissit,  
 quhare latelie afore he past for consolacioun to ye king of M.L.T. 78  
 40 Pichtis, lauboring for ye tyme in cruell infirmete, eftir yat  
 xxx<sup>tj</sup> yeris he had broukit soueranite in Scotland. Ffra  
 Camelodune was his corps to Berigone convoyit and in ye  
 common sepulture of kingis berijt. Eftir him succedit his son,  
 Durst, gevin to riatus, vnbridillit lustis and gluttony, mekill  
 vaying fra ye maneris of his fader; ffor, quham he cherist  
 and held be liberalite or be his gude and recent memorie  
 persuadit yis 3ong prince to vertew, to him war maist odiofs.  
 He abrogate ye consuetude to consult with ye barouns in  
 grete acciouns, vsing ye averse and consale in grave materis  
 of viciofs persouns favoring his corruptit maneris, and findaris  
 invencious of new voluptuosite and plesuris. Of sage and  
 wise men, admovit be his fader to ye secrete consell, he slew  
 50 sum parte, vtheris he banyst and sum, be fenzeit caussis, of  
 yare gudis he dispulezete. Quharethrow, finalie, denwde of  
 princelie clemence, *nocht* alanerlie gart he sla sic persouns as  
 he hatit bot vtheris quham he lippyntyt ony lukir or gere.  
 Alsua he repudiat the quene Agasia, dochter to the king of  
 Britons, cawsing hir first in sorte maist vyle be prostitute  
 and defoultit be his viciofs lownys, and in hir place brocht ane  
 cumpanye of brokin wemen and *commoun*.

Fo. XXIII.

How the clannys contrare King Durst conspirit ;  
 of his dissimulit crudelite and slauchter of his nobillis,  
 and how he was slane ; how ye crowne was gevin  
 to Evene, and how he fra his liegis resauit ye aith of  
 fidelite. Cap° xj°

M.L.T. 785

Quhill to sic vicis was ye mysgridit prince gevin, 3e pepill  
 inhabitant the Ilis, Novant, Argathele, Lugia (now  
 Lorne), Argile and Rosß with diuers vtheris nychtbouris,  
 amang yare self sending secrete messagis to bynd societe for  
 batell, aganis ye king confederit. Ffor samekle yai hatit his  
 tyrannye yat langare at his fidelite yai mycht nocht remane.  
 And yat yai suld nocht be argumnyt yai had violate yare  
 lawte to yare prince, yai allegit yai had contrare him nane 60  
 accioun bot till evaid his pestilent and evill consalouris, pre-  
 tending ane caufß yat, doutles, in schort tyme, the weill of  
 Scotland, (gyff haisty remede war nocht providit), suld be at  
 febill poynt. To yir confederatis, (grathing yare power), ye  
 nychtbouris fra all partis fortifyit, desiring to haue this tyran  
 removit ; 3it sum parte refusit to mak supple, beleving ye  
 confederatis socht yare awne exaltacioun and princelie autorite  
 and nocht ye commoun weill. King Durst, in yis sorte per-  
 turbit be fere of his liegis, knawing him culpabill in mony  
 crymes, first devisit to fle. Bot quhen he knew na place to  
 evaid, confessing he had iniustlie repudiat Agasia his spouß,  
 he requirit hir agane fra ye king of Britouns togiddir with 70  
 power and suple. Quhen yis mycht nocht be impetrate, to  
 ane dissate he turnit his wikkit mynde, thinking be tresoun to  
 distroye ye conspiratouris, beleving he mycht be nane vthir  
 sorte evade ye apperand danger. He devisit, first, fenze him  
 penitent and wald with gude hart amend ye faultis committit  
 and change ye administracioun of ye kinrik in bettir forme,  
 tending be dissimilate pece mare eselie oureset his partie.  
 Herefore to ye cheif confederatis he send, saying he wald in  
 tyme cuming be yare avise, gyde ye kinrik, punyß mysdoaris  
 be quhais counsell he had iniustlie vsit his administracioun.  
 To ane king efferit nocht be force of armys contend contrare

his liegis, quhilk attemptit *nocht* reif fra him his realme bot Fo. XXIII.  
 80 reduce *ye sammyn* to *ye state* quharefra *yai* thocht it was  
 dekeyit. To *yis* effect thay suld send ane wise man to tak Fo. XXIII.  
 his aith, in quhais *presens*, before Diane and vthir goddes M.L.T. 79  
 honorit be antecessouris, he suld astringe him be sic athis  
 and imprecacions as *yai* wald devise. Giff *yir* offeris war  
*nocht* plesing, he suld denwde of princelie cognossance,  
 skaling his power, cum to *yame* as ane private person, and sua  
*yai* mycht fulfill quhat euer on him *yai* had devisit. That  
 credence to thir *premissis* suld be gevin, of his familiaris, (be  
 quhais persuasions he had done mony wrangis), he incarcerate  
 sum parte, tending apperandlie to cauß *yame* haistelie be  
 iustifijt. Thareeftir to *ye confederatis* he send in irenys vthir  
 persouns of obscure origine weil acowterit to be punyst at  
*yare* plesoure. Thir confederate clannys, to *ye* flatterie of  
 10 *ye* king geving *our* mekle credit, to him send Dorone cheif  
 to *ye* pepil of Novant (now Lorne). The king, takin him before  
 the altare of Diane, tuke the ymage of *yat* goddes fra *ye* preist  
 and be extreme execraciouns and athis swore *yat* be clene and  
 vndissimilate mynde he requirit kyndenes and freyndschip of  
*ye* confederatis. To *yame* he wald glaidlie remytt all offensis  
 and with gude harte wald, in tyme *cuming*, trete *yame* as his  
*tendir* freyndis, nor, by *yare* avise, wald deliuer na thing  
 concernyng *ye* *commoun* weill. Quhen to *ye* confederatis  
 war *yir* foresaidis schawin, be vane beleve to his wordis geving  
 traist, removing baith rankour and ire, *yai* went to *ye* king.  
 With *yame* he had plesand *commwnicacion*, like as his wourdis  
 vult and ene had menit fidelite. Concorde was maid in *yis*  
 20 sorte to *ye* grete plesore of *ye* pepill, be extreme athis, vnherd  
 afore, on *yir* partie to obserue fidelite. Be *yis* appoyntment  
 the king, apperandlie richt ioyus, requestit *ye* heris and cheif  
 of clannys to pas *with* him to banket. Als sone as in *ye*  
 castell of Berigone *yai* enterit the king went to ane sikkir M.L.T. 79b  
 toure and incontinent men in armys, as before was devisit,  
 assailzete the confederatis, denwde of armour, and slewe  
 euery ane *yat* enterit in *ye* castell. Thare wyiffis, quhilk be  
 command of *ye* king to *yis* dedelie bankett followit *yare*  
 spousß, quhen oftymes to the tratouris *yai* offerit *yare* persons

**Fo. XXIII.** in vane for salfte of yare luvit husbandis, ryving yare clething  
 and hare, incallit ye sempiternall goddis, revengearis of  
 tresoun, and *with* lamentable schowtis fra the castell departit  
 bewaling yame self miserabill creaturis becaus to de *with*  
 yare spowsß best beluffit yai war nocht sufferit. Thir cruell  
 crymes and treson apon ye king war nocht lang tyme vnre-  
 vengit. The remanent confederatis haistelie gaderit ane 30  
 armye, contracting fra all partis baith men and wemen be age  
 abill for batell, and, *with* mare haiste expedicion yan ony  
 belevit, assegeit ye castell of Berigone, quhare 3it remanit  
 the king, to euery man odioß for ye detestable slauchter of  
 sa mony nobill men. Sum ran to ye wallis, crying, Deliuer out  
 ye tratoure king to be pynit *with* tormentis, for schortlie he  
 sall haue experience gif crymes mare facil may be done, or  
 batell *with* mare difficulte may be sustenit. The king, rageing  
 in furie, indigent of counsel, disparing of victorie, *with* ane sobir  
 cumpanye, *without* ordoure, occurrit to inemyis. Skantlie was  
 ye bargane begunnynq quhen ye king of his life and kinrik  
 was dispulzeit, quhais fall was in ye ix zere of his regne. Ffra  
 regall sepulture he was nocht stoppit, nobillis decernynq yat 40  
 be nane iniuris ye corps of ane prince deceissit suld be punyst.  
 Eftir his body was beryit and his sonnys, declynynq perse-  
 cucion of ye confederatis, be freyndis war convoyit to Ireland,  
 at parliament amang ye nobillis was question quha to ye crowne  
 suld succede, ffor yai detestit al ye kingis blude, fering, gif of  
 his houß ane king war create, he suld apoun yame sum tyme  
 revenge his slauchter. Herefore amang yame was altercacion  
**M.L.T. 80** quhat man and of quhat lynage in speciall was maist worthy  
 to brouk princelie maieste. Sum parte thocht best yat to  
 Ragao, chiftane of Brigancia (now Galloway), suld ye crowne  
 be gevin; vtheris to Cornane of ye Ilis, quhilk first aganis  
 Durst movit ye coniuracion. Bot he, as vnhabill for ye kinrik,  
 be clamour of ye pepill sone was repellit, becaus apperingly, 50  
 (gif he had princelie autorite), he suld, for his intemperance,  
 suffir lymmaris brek ye cuntre at yare plesoure. Sum vtheris  
 to Coryman, chiftane of Novantis, gaif yare votis. Thus  
 quhen be diuersite in opinions yai desirit ane king be chosin,  
 eftir mony altercacions, quhen ye mater apperandlie tendit to

divisioun, Caron of Argathele of grete authorite amang his Fo. XXIII.  
 folkis, nurissare and luffare of pece, to ye nobillis said as  
 followis: "How vnthankfull is to ye pepill and perrelus to ye  
 kinrik to haue ane tresonabill tyran regnyng, and to ye com-  
 moun weill how skaithfull is intestyne divisioun, ye may eselie  
 vnderstand be experience of ye mysgiding and tyrannye of  
 King Durst, and be ye civill were be oure forebearis, Dovale  
 60 and Fferquhard, movit. Trewlie be yat division to fynale  
 destruccion and rewyne was almaist brocht yis kinrik, quhilk  
 be sa mony lauboriofs wayis our antecessouris conquest and  
 with na lefs travell and diligence conseruit. In yat were be  
 ye swerde was slane ye maist nobill men of oure nacioun, the  
 commons to vile *seruitute* war thirllit and, doutles, yat tyme  
 had ye name of Scottis nacion bene deletit, gif in yat dedelie  
 divisioun langare tyme had bene perseverit. Of our pro-  
 genitouris we haue herd how oure nacioun, be Britouns assegeit  
 within ye castell of Berigone, war contrinit, throw extreme  
 penurite, be fude of mennys flesche sustene certane tyme yare  
 livis, and how, eftir ye sare batell, necessite drewe yame to  
 concorde and for defence of ye cuntre and liberte to yare  
 prince finalie observit fidelite; King Rewther, in grete danger  
 isching fra ye castell, quhen his kinrik almaist was tynt,  
 70 euadit ye handis of inemyis; Colane, of all vyir Scottis maist M.L.T. 80b  
 valzeand, with walit power of his clan fechting for ye weill of  
 his prince and native cuntre, with mekill honour resaut dede;  
 nobill wemen in womanly rage be vrgent extreme myserie, be  
 violent dede inferrit be yare awin handis, evadit ignomyiofs  
 and vile *seruitute*. Quhat brocht our progenitouris to sic  
 scharp poynt yat yai war defeat be inemyis and exilit, seking  
 fra vthir nacions supple, bot intestine sedicion and nychtboure  
 feid? How beit Britons be strang in werelie ordinance, thay  
 had never enrageit apon oure landis be depopulacioun and  
 hereschip, gif yareto, be oure awne civill dissensioun, we had  
 nocht preparit ye way. Quharefore, maist valezeand men,  
 abone all thing we suld provide yat yis intestyne sedicion,  
 80 begynnyng to rise, increfs nocht to ye hurt of ye commoun Fo. XXV.  
 weill, ffor na vyir thing may febill ye pussance of our kinrik  
 mare yan sic division. Now, latelie, fra fere of ye furiofs

Fo. XXV. tyran 3e deliuerit 3our cuntre, revengeing ye innocent blude of nobillis, be tresoun of King Durst evill put down. To provide oure weill now ye tyme is best. And God defend (my hartlie freyndis), yat be domestic division 3e suld loiff the victorie be sa mony grete laubouris afore conquest. God defend yat 3oure fais (quham be ane licht iournay 3e haue vyncust) suld se 3ow defate and slop vyiris with cruell woundis, ffor to yame yat sicht suld be maist plesing. 3e se ye commoun pepill of 3e slauchter of King Durst iocund and glaid, desiring to haue ane prince at 3our plesoure chosin. Quhil yis fervoure amang yame remanis, devise quham for princely autorite 3e think maist ganand. Name ane nobill man to be 3oure king, in tyme cuming to defend 3our affaris. Vyir wayis 3e sall lippin nocht ellis bot domestic and nychtbour were, grete incommoditeis baith of ye public weill and private, slauchter 10 of nobillis, hereschip and ruberie of 3our landis, in tyme following; and sum parte, peraventure, sall accuse 3ow of tresoun and be yat way procure 3our distruction." The nobillis and pepill, mervelling mekil ye wisdom of Carone, to him of yis grete act remyttit all power and cure and he, with capitans of ye clannys consulting, schortlie namyt Evene, (son to ye fader brodir of King Durst), exilit in Pichtland for ye present, becaus at ye corruptit maneris of ye king he was euer displeisit, and, yat princelie estate suld euer in ye kingis blude haue place, be consent of ye pepill declarit him king and souerane. Nocht lang vareeftir convoying him fra Pichtland, accowterit in princely ornamentis, regale ensenezeis preceding, be mery and iocound clamour of pepill yai had him to Berigone, the strenthy castell. The keparis vareof 20 refusit to resaue ye king. Bot quhen yai persauit sic multitude about ye wallis and yai wer destitute of reskewe, yat lang tyme yai mycht nocht resist, randereng ye castell, with gude will yai offerit yame to ye king. In yis sorte ye king in Berigone entering, the nobillis at his command, twiching his richt hand quhare he satt in his imperiall throne, astrin3ete yaim self be ye grete aith yai suld to him obserue lawte in tyme cuming. Of all Scottis princis Evene was the first yat fra his liegis requirit ye aith of fidelite. To ye posterite yis consue-

tude mony 3eris yareeftir remanit. And following yis rite, Fo. XXV.  
 capitane of ye clannys, quhen yai resauit autorite, be ye  
 30 grete aith *contrynit* yare subditis promytt to yame fidelite,  
 twiching in signe yareof the hand or fute of yare capitane.  
 In oure tyme yis rite is *nocht* abrogate. The inhabitantis ye  
 Ilis and montanys, in chesing yare capitane, for ye maist  
 parte obserue zit yir ilk ceremonis. Quhen yir premisß in  
 yare maner war done, at the nixt *merket* croce be proclamacion  
 yai defendit yat ye chiftane suld nane vthir way be namyt  
 than ye auld and couth terme, quharewith ye capitane of yat  
 clan was knawin namyt, na leß pane na dede proponit to ye  
 brekaris of yis charge. And quhare he herd this name rehersit, M.L.T. 81b  
 removing his cap and kneling, he suld to yat name do reuerence,  
 like as at dyvine *seruice* he had bene present. In ye decree  
 foresaid was pronuncit, I *coniecture*, yat oure nacioun, inhabi-  
 40 tant ye ilis and hichtis, vsis in marchandice and vtheris affaris,  
 to swere be hand, fute or name of yare capitane, as it war  
 sum haly thing quharein was diuine reuerence, thinking cryme  
 irremysbill to maynswere ye samyn. Now of King Evene lat  
 ws prosew ye historie.

How Evene *with* Pichtis barganit *contrare* Britons ;  
 of his deceiß ; how ye aris of Durst be Gillus war  
 slane ; how Gillus inuadit ye crowne and slew the  
 heretouris ; of his tyranny and how he was chassit  
 to Ireland. ¶ Cap° xij°

This new prince to haue be vertew his kinrik ferme, quhilck  
 he brukit peciablíe, made ane act yat 3ong men rising  
 fra barne age suld narowlie and scharplie be tretit ; on ye  
 nycht apon ane hard flaik or ryse *without* coddis yai suld [lay]  
 yame to rest ; in archerie, wersling and rynnynge yai suld be  
 exercit and be hantit *with* wapynnys and armour ; ffra all  
 exercicion quhilck *mycht* soft or mak yare myndis effamynate  
 yai suld abstene : yat, gif it aventurit yame in defence of ye  
 cuntre debate, yai suld be prompt and reddy, *nocht* oureset  
 50 be delicatis nor lustis, bot be vassalage and manhede suld

Fo. XXV. defend ye kinrik. Fferther he vesityt all regions within his realme to minister iustice quhare offenß was *committit*, and be tormentis punyst sum mysdoaris and extremlie iustifijt vtheris. Quhill to sic curis Evene was intent, ambassiatouris, fra Pichtland directit, besocht him be resoun of ye lyig fortify yame *with* supple to expell inemyis fra yare boundis. Ffor eftir Britons had waistit ye landis of Deere (now Merß, Tevidale <sup>2c</sup>), yai come in Pichtland. And, doutles, apperit ye assegeing of Camelodune. Plesandlie Evene in yare peticion consentit and, assembling haistelie stark power, movit apoun Britons. Be assistence of Scottis power in corage increscit ye Pichtis. Syne tranoyntit yir twa *confederate* nacions apoun Britons, 60 like as ye victorie had bene optenit; samekil war yai *inflammyt* apoun iniuris sufferit, in yeris bipast, to be revengit. Britons *with* na les diligence occurrit in yare meting. Ffollowit ane scharp and ferß batell, and lang tyme be variable fortoun indurit ye fecht. The victorie zit incertane, ye *nycht* disseverit ye bargane, to athir *partye* richt disp[l]esing. Quhen ye kingis confederate *vndirstude* yare pussance mekill falezeit and brokin and grete nowmer of yare folkis slane, abasitlie to ye hillis of Pichtland ye samyn *nycht* fra ye feild yai departit. Britons, be na lesß plaig afflictit, disparing to renewe ane armye, in ye mornyng, like flearis, left ye feild, levand in Pichtland ye pray opulent and large. Ffra ye hillis Scottis and Pichtis, persaving ye feildis denwde of inemyis, quhen be 70 *exploratouris* yai war certifijt the fleing of Britouns merit na trane, descending to ye plane, sesing the pray collectit be Britons, to yare folkis yai restorit sa mekill as to yame pertenit. The remanent bestiall and vthir riches, left be Britons in yare fleing, amang ye oistis was distribut. Thareeftir to Berigone returnyng, King Evene confort his folkis, rewarding sum parte panelie and vthir parte in private maner, quhilki's be fall of freyndis in batell war in sadnes and displesour. Ffra thyne he devisit in tranquillite to governe his realme. In euery region he constitute iugeis to mynyster iustice to the 80

Fo. XXVI. pepill and to conserue yare iuris and lawis. He was ye first yat institute inquisitouris and ceirsaris in euery region, to dant and spere *lymmaris* awating lele men be ye way, assignyng



landis for *ȝare* habitacioun and victualis for *ȝare* sustentacion Fo. XXVI.  
of *ȝe* *commoun* expens̄s. Of *ȝis* kynde of men mony ar *ȝit*  
in oure tyme in diuers̄s partis of Scotland, and howbeit the  
cure of *ȝare* office be oute of vse, *ȝit* *ȝai* hald *ȝe* landis assignit  
to thame be consent of the king and nobillis. Nocht fer fra  
Berigone he beildit ane castell in ane place be naturall situa-  
cion inexpugnabill, and eftir his name callit it Evon (now M.L.T. 82b  
Downstaphage), quhilk is to say the castell of Stevyn. To *ȝe*  
grete vtilite of Scotland he gidit the kinrik diuers̄s *ȝeris* follow-  
10 ing. Ffinalie eftir he had xx<sup>ij</sup> *ȝeris* vsit princelie authorite  
he departit fra *ȝis* life. His corps in funerall attyrement,  
according princelie estate, (as *ȝat* tyme was vsit), beside his  
new castell of Evon, beryit was *with* mony dissymulit teris  
of Gillus, his bastard son, of subtell ingyne and sle abone  
mesoure, desirous to regne. Beside his towmbe in honorabill  
remembrance of his name erecting mony square throwchis,  
gravyn and dressit be masonry. That his funerall pompe  
suld be mare honorabill, present war *ȝe* twa sonnys of King  
Durst, Dothane and Dorgall, (of quham latelie was schewin  
how *ȝai* departit to Ireland), and *ȝe* samyn tyme movit new  
divisioun for *ȝe* kinrik. Ffor King Evene latelie, or he departit  
fra this life, brocht *ȝame* fra Ireland quhare *ȝai* war exilit  
and with mekill honoure intertenyit *ȝame*, as efferit *ȝe* kingis  
sonnys. Thir twa brethir war twynnys, borne baith at ane  
20 of thame to *ȝe* crowne suld be preferrit. Quhareapon amang  
*ȝe* twa bredir vnkyndelie was debatit, be ambicioun to regne,  
athir to betraif̄s devising vthir. Be mony dissimilit and  
exquisite occasions Gillus fosterit *ȝe* fraternale discorde,  
attempting to anarme *ȝis* ane in distructioun of *ȝis* vthir.  
Dalie inressit *ȝe* rankoure and na cast of tressoun was omittit.  
Ffynalie, be avise of Gillus *ȝai* appoyntit that discrecioun of  
freyndis suld end *ȝe* fraternall discorde and declare to quham  
*ȝe* kinrik pertenit. Bot athir avansing his richt mare than be  
equite was requirit, obtempering to na decrete, be fowsum flyt-  
ingis lichtlying vtheris, frustrate of *ȝare* intent, departit. Bot M.L.T. 83  
be desire of Gillus returnyng, *ȝai* war tane by to ane secrete  
passage *with* ane few nowmer of nobillis to mak reconsiliacion,

Fo. XXVI. Gillus consulting now to haue the kinrik equalie deuidit, now 30  
 to the tane decernyng þe hail seneþeorie, be ire he kendillit  
 mare þan he mytigate þare furioſſ myndis. The *servandis* of  
 Gillus, feneþeing ane haisty tuleþe, as þai war *commandit*, how  
 beit he chargeit þame fraudulentlie to ceifſ, slew baith þe  
 kingis sonnys. Quhen þis was done, sone lap out Gillus and  
 ran ourethwort þe feildis, crying he had eschapit grete perrell  
 and *with* difficulte evadit vnslane quhare þe kingis sonnys be  
 tratouris, subornit in his murthure, war slane: syne chargit  
 his folkis, standing beside, þai suld haue him quhare he mycht  
 be assurit of his life, ffor *without* he war helpit, he couth *nocht*  
 evaid vnslane. His *servandis*, to his wordis gevin credit,  
 folowit, and beleving his wourdis of verite, followit him  
 fleing to þe castell of Evon. Entering in þe samyn, the nobillis 40  
*with* grete power followit. Gillus, occupying þe castell, in  
 diuerſſ partis depute keparis to sla all to his desiris aduersant;  
 syne, conscending ane hicht, quhare be þe pepill he mycht  
 be sene, be ane lang proposicioun, of þe kingis sonnys detesting  
 þe contencioun for þe realme, þare voluptuoſſ life, auarice,  
 insolence, crudelite of þare fader and al *vyir* crymes, be mony  
 resouns finalie schew þame to þe goverment vnabill; loving  
 þe inmortale goddis þat be tresoun quhilk apoun him þai  
 devisit, (as he feneþete), þare self was distroyit. Quharethrow  
 be benyngnite of goddis þe kinrik fra insaciable auarice and  
 cruel tyranny was deliuerit. As for his parte, at þe appoynt-  
 ment, he had lauborit mekill for weill of þe realme and to 50  
 reduce the twa breder to concorde. Bot, quhen all avalit  
*nocht*, he was invadit to slauchter and narolie evadit *with*  
 his life. He allegit alsua he was be his fader, King Evene,  
 left *gouvernour testamentare* to þe realme, and be his last will,  
 to him was *committit* cure þat for weill of his houſſ he suld  
 distribut all þe kingis substance, store, abilþementis and vthir  
 siclike amang nobillis and vailþeand men quhilkis to him  
 liffand kepit gude *parte*. This he promyst to put haistelie  
 in effect. And þarefore þat þe *commoun* weill suld tak na  
 skaith be domestic division, doutles for þe tyme apperand,  
 be mony payntit wordis he prayit þai suld to him *committ*  
 þe gouerment quhill it war knawin to quham of resoun suld

be gevin *ye* crowne, promitting he suld stoutlie and gravelie Fo. XXVI.  
 60 do sic thingis as to that mater pertenit. The nobillis present,  
 hering his mynde and nocht mysknawin *ye* tresoun, seing *ye*  
 castell in his power and men at his *command* in reddines, *yat*  
*yai* suld incur na dangere, be ane dissymulit consent ordanit  
 Gillus regne. And he, resaving princelie name to haue *ye*  
 kinrik to him stabillit, fra al *yame present* for *ye* tyme take  
*ye* aith of fidelite. Incontinent to *ye* favoraris of his opinioun  
 he distribut al *ye* kingis gudis, quharethrow of mony he wan  
*ye* kyndenes. Bot *ye* samyn ambicioun and inordinate lufe  
 to haue authorite quhilk impellit Gillus to desire *ye* crowne,  
 left him nocht all *ye* tyme he regnit, revoluyng mony castis in  
 70 mynde be quhat way he mycht denwde *ye* houß and successioun  
*yat* he mycht onelie without partie brouk *ye* kinrik. To  
 Dothane, (son to vmquhile King Durst), remanyt thre sonnys,  
 in *ye* Ile of Mone be cure of *ye* Drwidis nwrst: Lismore of xij  
 3eris in age, Cormak of x and Eder thre 3eris alanerlie 3onger.  
 Ffra Evon King Gillus departing, be haisty iournayis went to  
*ye* Ile of Mone, fene3eing he wald fra *ye* Ile to *ye* mane land  
 bring *ye* kingis sonnys, to haue *yame* nurist in *ye* castell of  
 Berigone, with *v3ir* sonnys of grete men to *yame* equale in  
 age, vnto *ye* tyme *yai* come to 3eris of perfeccioun. Lismore  
 and Cormak, richelie abil3ete, meting the king, (as be *ye* M.L.T. 84  
 Drwidis *yai* war teichit), with mekill nurtoure made him  
 80 reuerence. Be aventure Eder for *ye* tyme with hevvy seiknes  
 was twichit. The king, to coloure his fraude, imbrasing *yame*  
Fo. XXVII.  
 abone the maner of trew affectioun, kissit *yame* tendirlie as  
 apperit, consumyng *yat* nycht in cherising *ye* barnis oure  
 mekill and in safer *yat* *ye* prelate of Drwidis vehementlie  
 suspectit fraude. On *ye* morne, with *ye* prelate and *ye*  
 remanent of Drwidis he commonit mony materis twiching  
 religioun, the rite and maner of sacrifice, of constituciouns, of  
 contrauersyis and debatis to discern e apon debatabill materis  
 concernyng heretage and rowmes and to haue sic thingis  
 mytgate, to revenge slauchteris and of vthir grete enormyteis  
 and crymes gif *yai* occurrit. The thrid day, in myddis of *ye*  
 Drwidis, having the prelate collaterall, and in ane preistlie

Fo. XXVII. stole revestit, (as ye maner was for ye tyme), be mony solempnit  
 ceremonis to goddis, (anornyt be his forefaderis), he made  
 sacrifice, causing ye kingis sonnys yareat be present. Syne all  
 thingis done to divyne ceremonis pertenyng, departing fra 10  
 ye Ile with Lismore and Cormac, yare foster fader and bredir,  
 in ye ferme land arrivit. That tyme ye barne to ye fader  
 moder and brethir quhare yai war fosterit, (like as zit amang  
 ye Hieland men is obseruit, kepit sic kyndenes yat yai luffit  
 yame na leß na yare naturale faderis and breder. To ye  
 castell of Evonium he come efter certane dayis, leiffing folkis  
 in ye Ile of Mone quhilkis at day assignit suld sla Eder, ye  
 barne. The nuris of Eder, (to hir fra ye begynnyng ye mater  
 was suspect), be counsel of ye Drwidis on ye nycht putting  
 ye seik barne in ane bote, vnwitting ony persoun, convoyit  
 him in Argathele, and quhen he was sett on land on hir bak  
 bure him to ane heich montane, (throw asperite of cald almaist 20  
 M.L.T. 84b vnhabitabill), quhare in ane caverne apoun rutis of herbis  
 certane monethis scho liffit ane herd and narrow liffe. The  
 samyn nycht that Gillus come to Evonium, athir barne in  
 armes of yat foster faderis, (aganis ye cruell bouchrie of tor-  
 mentouris in vane incalling yare helpe), be command of ye  
 king was slane. In ye meyn tyme the king, certifyit of ye  
 eschape of Eder, hevily weying ye caifs, first slaying all yame  
 quham he left to sla ye barne in ye Ile of Mone, causit ceirß  
 ye innocent to the dede. Quhen he was certijft he was had  
 in Ireland, finalie, contrare his will, he ceissit to mak forther  
 persute. Nor nocht lang tyme eftir, convenyng ane counsell  
 of ye nobillis at Berigone, remembering mony materis baith 30  
 concernyng ye commoun weill, justice, religioun, divyne service  
 and godlynes, and how ye kinrik suld be governit, ffynalie  
 be ane lang orange he desirit yat his regne be yame suld be  
 approbate and ratijft of newe: oftymes remembering how  
 he was gevin to exalt the realme of Scotland, and had lauborit  
 mekill yat be intestine sedicioun it suld suffir na skaith, nor  
 be gouerment of ane zong prince suld nocht be hurt, and had  
 removit ye sawaris and movaris of all divisioun. Nor to him  
 aucht nocht be imput how beit, be aventure, the kingis sonnys  
 war put doun, becaus sa was ye mynde of ye goddis quhilkis,

like as yai ordanit impiris and kynrikis, siclike yai devisit Fo. XXVII.  
yame be men of wisdom and vertew to be gouernit and nocht  
be sic persouns quhilkis, owder be fragil kynde, or leß age,  
ar bot febill. Nedefull war that men evill gevin and nuris-  
saris of discorde war removit, be quhais wayis, to ye hurte  
40 and perdicion of diuersß, dissensioun oftymes is kendillit.  
Eftir thir wourdis or siclike the king with the nobillis present  
to ye castell of Evonium past. Incontinent the freyndis and  
principalis of the houß of King Durst war slane, ffor of yame M.L.T. 85  
grete nowmer be ye kingis command war brocht to ye castell.  
Sa vehement was ye murthare yat nowyir kynde nor age mycht  
avale. At clamour of this slauchter ye nobillis quhilk at ye  
kingis plesure enterit in ye castell trymblyt and grew pail,  
fering yai suld suffir na leß pane. The king for yare comforting  
prayit yai suld be of gude mynde towart him, and gif at his  
faith yai wald fermly stand yai suld haue mare prosperite  
yan afore. Efter yis slauchter, hevy crymez stering ye kingis  
mynde evir to war, he devisit vesy all regiouns within his  
50 realme, intending to distroy fra ye rute all freyndis and  
favoraris ye houß and blude of King Durst. Ffra Evon depart-  
ing he come to Ergile, quhare finding certane familiaris of  
Dothane he causit yame be slane, having contrare yame nane  
vthir actioun bot yai had favorit his partie mare than to him  
was thocht expedient. Throw all ye land yis cruell man  
tharæftir, spreading his furie, left na crudelite vnexercit.  
Quhen thir crymez and innowmerabill vthiris, vnsemyng ane  
prince, war divulgate, ye pepill of Brigance, Argathele, Siluria,  
Novant (now Galloway, Ergile, Kyle <sup>⁊</sup> Lorne, Ilis) and all  
vthir ye maist parte of Scottis nacioun, in were maist exercit,  
impacient of yis bludy gouerment of yare prince, assembling  
stark power contrare the king, movit sedicioun be sa grete  
wisdom and convoyance yat, or euer the tyran knewe the  
60 conspiracioun, ye pepill war in his contrare rasis. The tyran  
sone heræftir, siclike contracting ane army, fra ye castell of  
Evone departit, and quhen force was to fecht and ye feildis  
stude arrayit in sicht of vtheris, the king, destitute of supple  
of freyndis, quham be buddis onelie he had conquest and be  
fere and aw war kept, leiffing his armye, (quharein bot few,

Fo. XXVII. and yai without ordoure, war of his opinioun), secretlie fled  
 M.L.T. 85b in ane fischare bote to Ireland. Quhilk knowing, his folkis  
 wilfully randerit yame self to Cadale of Brigancia prince,  
 chiftane to ye armye contrare ye king for ye tyme. Cadale,  
 resaving to his faith the kingis armye, but tary assalezeing ye  
 castell of Evon, resaut ye strenth togiddir with ye fortalice  
 of Berygone, wilfully randerit almaist without resisting,  
 quhare, be favouris of ye pepill, he was governoure constitute. 70  
 Syne, postponyng al vyir besynes, public and private, and  
 garnissing ye twa castellis be stark mwnicioun, he devisit  
 persew Gillus, in quhat parte he declynit, in aventure he suld  
 contract power of sic persouns, that nowdir extemyt lawte nor  
 honeste, to renewe ye batell, ffor of sic condiciouns has euer  
 in ye Ilis bene mony fra ye begynnyng; and brocht his army  
 in the ile of Ila. Be freyndis of King Durst, yat war left  
 vnslane, 3ong Eder, of ye blude royall and nevo to King Durst,  
 to him was present as to ye maist sikkir and anerlie refuge.  
 Efter Cadall had resaut ye chylde, he send him to Brigancea  
 yat to his perfite age to ye regnne he suld be kept in Epiac,  
 the cheif ciete of Galloway for the tyme.

How Evene was crownit; how Cadall persewit  
 Gillus in Ireland and of his slauchter; how Cadall on  
 the sey was trowblit at his returne.

Cap° xiiij°

Fo. XXVIII. Aboute the ilk tyme quhen Gillus in Ireland, nocht without  
 M.L.T. 86 Agrete favoure of ye inhabitantis, was resaut in presens 80  
 of ye noblis, be mony wourdis he plenzete ye iniuris of ye  
 Albiane Scottis, how be grete wrang he was banyst his realme  
 and maist parte be ye wayis of Cadal, and in na place of  
 Albion was to him securite bot be treson of conspiratouris was  
 schorit to dede; and yarefore prayit yaim for supple to recovir  
 his realme. Be his autorite to ye kinrik of Ireland yat he  
 suld faitfully be grete athis vnyt and adione ye Ilis he promyst  
 gif to his kinrik he war restorit. Ibernianis, be hope to brouk

ye Ilis being brokin, nocht contempnyng his vnchancie fortune, Fo. xxviii.  
 promyst to him supple; and, sone preparing ane armye to  
 haue Gillus in his realme restorit, with stark ordinance addressit  
 10 to Albioun. Quhen to Cadall yis was schewin, he left ye Ilis  
 and reterit his armye to ferme land, assignyng incontinent  
 ane convencioun at Berigone to create ane new king; ffor  
 without assistence and autorite of ye king he belevit to Gillus  
 mycht nocht be resistit; and, be consent of ye barouns and  
 heris, create Evene, ane man maist nobill, nevo to King  
 Ffynnane of his broder Dovale. Recentlie with Cadale come  
 yis Evene in Albion fra ye ile of Gaver, quhare certane zeris,  
 vnkawin of Gillus, he declinit ye tyrannye. Evene, resaving  
 ye crowne, with strang power garnist all ye coistis, quhare  
 he lippyntyt Gillus suld arryve, to resist his landing. Quhilk  
 Gillus persaving, left his purpois to pass in Albioun and with  
 20 his power went to ye ile callit Ila, quhare he draif ane huge  
 pray, slaying ye inhabitantis, sparing na age nor na kynde of  
 state, ruggand doun ye cornys on ye feildis zit growand,  
 birnyng ye residewe quhilk mycht nocht be caryit. Be yir  
 iniuris ye king and his barons gretelie commovit, haistely  
 maid to harnes, to be yareof revengit. Contracting fra all  
 partis power, thay assemblit ane stark armye, tending apoun  
 Ireland, apoun Gillus, to mak persute. This cure of yis expedi-  
 cion to Cadale, prince of Brigancia, for his notabil vassalage,  
 be public decrete, was committit. Sa mony galions and lang-  
 faddis as apperandlie mycht cary ye army, be command of  
 ye king war brocht to ye porte of Berigone, quharefra Cadale  
 30 with his power in schort space salit to Ireland. Quhare, be  
 daly confluence of fugitivis fra Gillus, he augmentit sua his  
 oist yat nocht anerlie to debate Gillus, bot als to conquess all  
 Ireland apperandlie, he had sufficient pussance. Gillus, knaw-  
 ing ye cais, ordoring his folkis, tranoyntit towart inemyis. M.L.T. 86b  
 Cadall to the kingis power, (taryng ye bargane), arrayit  
 his armye in ye nixt feild and gaif ye signe to ione ye  
 batell. Quhare, at ye armyis recontering, be mekill strenth  
 on athir partie ane quhile was fochtin. The hoist of Gillus  
 finalie behad yame as mate and wery in batell and, in speciall,  
 yai quhilk thocht yai debatit wrangwislie contrare yare native

Fo. xviii. kinrik, grete parte of yame finalie to Cadall fled, at him sek-  
 ing refuge. This Gillus persaving, be fere yat he suld nocht  
 quyk cum in handis of Cadall to be lichtlyit and contemptnit,  
 or ye feild was planelie discumfist, ryfing fra him princelie 40  
 cognossance, *with* ane few menze maid to flicht; syne hid him  
 in ane thik forest nere ye feild. The armye of Cadall zit stand-  
 ing in batell, the oist of Gillus, be fleing of yare chiftane, tynyng  
 curage, thinking yai wald fecht na langare for ane man fugitive  
 and abasit, quhilk to debate him self refusit, wilfully to Cadall  
 become randerit. Quhen faithfully he had to yame promyst  
 perdoun and to remytt all iniuris, haistelie he send to persew  
 Gillus. Certane dayis he mycht nocht be fundyn, bot compre-  
 hendin him finalie, lurking in ane coif about buskit with thik  
 treis, almaist ouresett be hwngir, yai straik of his hede, quhilk  
 with grete plesoure of euery man to Cadall was present. In  
 slicht and pussance Gillus confiding oure mekill, be aventure 50  
 tuke sic end, eftir he had twa zenis occupyit ye regnne in  
 Albioun. Quhen the batell in yis sorte happelie was fynnyssit,  
 Cadall, reduceing his victorioß armye to Albion, with mony fare  
 ornamentis and spulezeis of were, be ye sey, (rouch and brym  
 movit be ane contrare aspect of ane vnchancye planet), loist  
 the maist parte yareof, quhare throw ye pepill with mekill  
 M.L.T. 87 mare dolour twichit, yan be plesure of ye fortunate batell of  
 before. Ffor quhen the weremen that evadit ye storme at  
 land arrivit, the myserabill moderis and wyiffis of yame  
 quhilkis ye violent seyis had swellyit, demandit of yare freyndis  
 ye estate. How sone ye dedelie plaig of yare tendir freyndis was  
 knawin, be zoulling and pietuouß lamentacion yai fillit all ye  
 cuntre. Amang vtheris fra ye schip come ye chiftane, Cadall,  
 to land, richt evill and sobirlie arrayit, towart the hevin 60  
 lifting his handis, blamyt sarelie fortune and ye goddis quhilkis  
 to sa mony valezeand men had done sa grete myscheif, how  
 beit yai had grantit yame victorie afore. The dolorus *presens*  
 of this chiftane, so robust and strang, to euery person *present*  
 with greting and regrett movit mony teris. To yis public  
 lamentacion occurrit King Evene, with ane tryne of nobillis,  
 to confort Cadall, to him maist tendir of all vtheris, weying  
 hevily he suld be *with* displesouris sa ouresett, and to his



consolacion said: "Maist vailjeand Cadill, to me and all Fo. xxviii.  
 Scottis nacioun thow has done na litill mater of plesures, sen  
 thow has convoyit to Albioun this victorioss armye without  
 ony harme resaut fra inemyis. In strange cuntre apoun thy  
 70 fayis thow tryumphit, fechting in sare batell in plane feild  
 vnder standartis for richt of yis cuntre and eifs of ye *commoun*  
*weill*. Vincust is Gillus, the cruell tyran, of sa mony evill  
 dedis the receptakill and resett. To him his schameful fleing,  
 (the goddis to him aduersant), mycht be na refuge. His hede,  
 dispitefully schorne fra his crag, is brocht here in Albion sua  
 yat eftir dede for his odioss tyrannye, vsit all his dayis, he suld  
 nocht want derisoun and schame. Ffra inemyis is reft ye  
 spuleze, and grete parte of oure nacioun, repenting yare doingis,  
 to fidelite ar resaut, ffor in prosperite we suld to clemence and M.L.T. 87b  
 mercye gif sum place. Be thy manhede and wisdome amang  
 multitude of inemyis, fer elongate fra oure kinrik, oure army  
 80 is salfit but *damage*. Ffinalie, na thing is omittit in thy  
 expedicioun concernyng ane stout and prudent chiftane. The Fo. xxix.  
 honoure of yir weris nor ornamentis of victory may nocht  
 fra ye be reft. Herefore is na caifs that aganis the hevin or  
 fortune thow suld be *commovit*, ffor how beit be tempest of  
 weddir and seyis grete parte of ye armye be loist, zit thy  
 awne persoun, (the onelie glore of *our* nacioun), is fra yis grete  
 myschance *preseruit*, and stoutlie yow has vincust oure maist  
 felloun fa. It was ye gift of goddis that with prosper cours  
 yow went so Ireland, yat yow oure sett inemyis, yat yow  
 skalit yame and discumfist, wan the spuleze and fra iniuris  
 also kepit yi folkis. Now has ye goddis agane requirit yare  
 awne and thy honoure to thy self salflie is kepit. Be thy awne  
 vassalage yow has mater quharein yow may glore. Inemyis  
 may wele be glaid of myschance, brocht apoun thy folkis be  
 10 fortune, bot yarethrow yai may neuer glore, becaufl nowthir  
 yai may avant yat sa mony as be sey war tynt be yame war  
 slane, nor zit sa mony as returnit be yame war chasit. Gif be  
 aventure of sey ony parte of spuleze, (quhilk yow stoutlie  
 reft fra inemyis), be salfit and drevin bakwart apoun yare  
 coist be violence of seyis, thay may weill knawe yat be yare  
 vassalage sic spuleze was nocht gottin, bot yat sic casuale

Fo. XXIX. thingis war drevin to thame be instabill fortune. It is manifest  
 yat herethrow suld na lawde to yame be gevin, bot to chance  
 M.L.T. 88 of fortune suld be ascrivit. Treulie thingis mortall ar sa  
 mutabill yat to prosper fortune succedis aduersare, and apoun  
 aduersite followis prosperite. Doutles of werdis sic ar the  
 rewardis, for like as yai may nocht be removit, sic like be  
 mortall men yai aucht nocht be bewalit. Quharefore, yow 20  
 invincibill Cadall, wey pacientlie this fortune aduersare, as  
 efferis yi wisdom, and reserve thy self to bettir chance, and  
 knaw wele thyne armye be ye sempiternale goddis and nocht  
 be inemyis is afflictit. To remede this myscheif, sa scharp  
 and felloun, standis nocht in ye power of man bot in ye dis-  
 posicioun of oure goddis, quhilk governis all estate mortall  
 nocht at ye plesure of man, bot be yare propir will and previ-  
 dence. Herefore schaw till ws ane gudelie vult, yat baith fayis  
 and freyndis may clerelie vndirstand yat be na aduersite thy  
 constance may be brokin and, like as in thy persoun yow ar  
 invincust, yat richtsua in mynde yow perpetualie perseuere." 30  
 Quhen king Evene had said thir wordis, the nobillis present,  
 exhorting ye samyn, to Cadall made grete consolacioun and he,  
 refrenyng sum parte his displesure, pretendit ane glade  
 contynance sa mekill as in sa grete myscheif mycht be schawin.  
 Nochtwithstanding, he weyt na thing mare hevily yan yat  
 ye vnhappy plaig, (quharein sa mony nobill men war loist),  
 had conservit and sparit him to se *with* his ene sic calamyte  
 and tynsell of his folkis. Efter in ye castell of Evon for  
 consolacioun he had certane dayis remanit, skaling ye residewe  
 of his armye, *with* his *servandis*, salf fra yis felloun plaig, to  
 ye ciete of Epiac, (maist famous in Brigancia), he departit.  
 Of yis myscheif, inflictit to Ibernienß be persecucioun of  
 Albiane Scottis, writis the poet Claudiane *with* diuerß vtheris.  
 King Evene, efter slauchter of Gillus and Ibernienß to him  
 assisting, with vther inemyis oureset in batell, fra fere of  
 M.L.T. 88b inemyis relevit, tending to governe his realme be justice,  
 vesityt all his regions and purgit ye samyn fra *lymmaris*: 40  
 syne to vesity the nobill Cadall, went to Epiac; to Cadall, for  
 his gude mynde towart him and ye *commoun* weill, he had,  
 of his magnificence, gevin heretably yat ciete with vthir castellis,

landis and townys in Brigancia, and statute yat all sorte of Fo. XXIX.  
iusticiarie within Brigancia suld fra yne to discrecioun of  
Cadall be committit.

How Evene allyat with ye king of Pichtis ; how he  
expellit lymmaris and how Balus, king of Orknay,  
deceissit ; how he foundit Innerlochtee and Inner-  
neß ; how to Cadall he erectit ane image ; how he  
deceissit. Cap° xiiij°

E vene, hereeftir, with ane honorabill tryne of nobillis, to  
ye king of Pichtis at ye marchis of Brigancia appoyntit  
ane meting, quhare, efter mony consultaciouns for vtilite and  
honest administracioun of ye realme, betuix yir twa naciouns  
pece be ane new band was roborate. This societe be matry-  
mone following was confermyt, for ye virgine Siiora, excelling  
in formosite, dochter to Gethus, the thrid of Pichtis, to King  
50 Evene was in mariage copwlate. At Epiac with solempnit  
ritis and ceremonis, (accustomit for ye tyme), the matrymone  
was complete. At ye spousage was ye grete prelate of Drwidis  
brocht fra the Ile of Mon that, be *presens* of sa grete ane man,  
ye act suld be mare solempnit. Nocht lang efter, ye king  
*with* his spouß to Evon returnyng, be writingis fra ye cheif of  
Lugia, (now Rosß), was aduertist yat ane power fra Orknay  
had salit Pichtland Firth *with* grete nowmer of galions and  
at Ternydvñ, (ane hedeland in Cathenes), war arrivit, quhare  
landing yare folkis, cruelly had herijt Cornane, (now Cathenes),  
and grete parte of Lugia, slane of ye inhabitantis sum parte  
and apoun vtheris vsit grete iniuris. Be sic invasioun King  
Evene inflammyt, contracting power, haistelie movit apoun  
ye Orknayis, skalit for ye tyme in ye cuntre at ruberie, and  
speding his iornais nycht and day, prevenit the brute of his  
60 expedicioun. Affrayit war the Orknayis be haisty cuming of  
ye king and divisit be flicht to salf yare livis. Bot frustrate  
of yare purpoiß, on force yai reconterit Scottis in battell.  
Be quham lichtly vincust and defate, spedelie yai maid to ye

- Fo. XXIX. hillis abounding mekill in yat regioun. Scottis persewing, ceissit nocht to follow quhill yai draif ye Orknayis to ye sey, quhare sum parte be botis eschapid. Sic preiß was of flearis and followaris yat ye galiouns mycht nocht wyn ye depe. The residew owder be swerd or sey war brocht to dede, and Balus, king of Orknay, ouresett in curage, disparing his liffe, in his persoun put violent handis, cheissing sic horribill dede erare yan be randerit to inemyis. Be yis victory ye king wan ye favoure of his liegis and suffering his folkis departe, addressit vesy ye coist of Albion, bordorit be ye occiane sey, opposit 70 to Spanze. In yat viage persaving ane place convenient to beild ane ciete, at ye mouth of ye river of Lowchte he foundit ane burgh and namyt it Innerlouchtee fra ye ryver, quhare he comandit suld be girth and refuge, in honoure of inmortal goddis obseruit, decreting it suld be dede to molestaris of ony persouns fleing yareto for refuge, war yai neuer sa crymynall. Syne be mony zeris to yis ciete was grete confluence of marchandis baith fra Gallia (now Ffrance) and Spanze, becaus yai seyis haboundantlie sowmys in salmon, hering, keling, selchis, pellokis and diuers kyndis of vthir fisch in yat oceane productit. Of yai ciete zit remanis ye rewyne in signe how opulent it was and of quhat boundis, as ye behaldaris may consider. Siclike in yat parte of Albion quhilk to ye est has 80
- Fo. XXX. respect, nocht fer fra ye loch callit Nessa, (quhareof before is said), he beildit an vthir ciete and namyt it Innernes, fra ye rivere and louch fleting yareby. To yis ciete sum tyme fra 80
- M.L.T. 89b Germanye come grete confluence of marchandis, bringing zerelie to ye vse of the inhabitantis sic marchandice as in yis region was skant. Quharefra yai had agane to yare cuntre skynnys of martrikis, beverris, ottirris and sic vthir beistis, vsit be nobillis and men of gude, in furringis, and mekill vthir gere and marcheand ware. Zit remanys yis ciete, abound- 10 ing in sumptuofs marchandice as afore bot oftymes hurte be iniuris of cuntre men, to slauchter, hereschip and ruberie 10 commonlie gevin, and it kepis zit ye first name. This King Evene, baith in civile polecye and weris honorabill, be felicite and eiß passit ye residew of his dayis without inemyis, domestic

or exterior. Be mervellus prudence and mansuetude he dressit Fo. XXX.  
the domestic sedicioun be quhilk certane tyme be Insulans he  
was inquiet ; ffor, baith public and private, abone mesure he  
detestit nychtboure feid. Ane litill before ye fyne of his life,  
he went to ye ciete of Epiac to provide the weill of ye familie  
of Cadall, his tendir freynd, latelie fra yis liffe departit. Amang  
his barnis for his riches, large and opulent, was discorde. The  
king at his cuming removit yis debate and to yame distribute  
20 according to ye lattir will of yare fader ; syne at Epiac did  
funerall sacrifice for Cadall conforme to ye pagane rite. Zit  
was oure nacioun be erreoure of ye fulich gentilite dissaut, (like  
as almaist all vtheris), in veneracioun of devillis and idollis.  
In ye myd strete of Epiac apone ane stage he causit ane  
image be erectit, like in all thing be continence and propor-  
cioun to Cadall, quhais gude remembrance was with him of  
sic estimacioun yat to yis image he commandit incenss and  
wyne in sacrifice be offerit. Nocht eftir mony dayis, be pansyfe  
displesure throw affectioun to Cadall, he incurrit ane hevvy  
maladye, and, disparing to convales, he callit zong Eder of  
the blude royall, (of quham latelie is rememberit), to him  
heretably efter his deceiſs pertenit ye crowne, exhorting yat M.L.T. 90  
fra all iniuris he suld defend his liegis. To nane he suld be  
30 iniuriouſ. To ye inemyis of iustice he suld neuer committ  
authorite. Of grete actis he suld tak cure and suld commytt  
finall materis to vtheris, and suld behaue him sua yat be  
resoun he aucht to all vtheris be preferrit. Without appering  
skaith of ye commoun weill, he suld neuer move were : gif it  
was force to move ye samyn, he suld refuse na laubouris nor  
travell in hoisting. Off clemence he suld neuer be denwde,  
becaus yat vertewe efferis maist ane prince. He suld to  
religion be weil myndit and haue ye goddis in reuerence quhais  
benevolence to all kinrikis is maist sure strenth and defence.  
Quhen meiklie ye king had rehersit yir wordis or siclike, be  
his awne handis to Eder deliuering ye crowne, he obeyit ye  
naturall necessite and deceissit, efter he had regnit xvij zeris,  
the xiiij king fra Ffergus, quhilk first beildit in Albioun ye  
Scottis kinrik. In Epiac in honoure of yis nobill prince,

Fo. XXX. Evene, was ane image erectit to quham, mony 3eris following, 40  
 ye pepill, (efter ye folie custume of Gentilis), be honorabill  
 ritis made reuerence. Thir *premiss*s of King Evene and Cadall,  
 chiftane of Brigancia, fra Iohnne Campbell, Veremwnd and  
 Cornelius of Ireland ar collectit. Of vthir *princis* following  
 all actis drawin fra thir authouris and *vyiris*, as we may best,  
 sall be schawin.

Scotorum historie libri secundi finis.

## [Liber Tercius.]

Folowis the thrid buke of the historie of Scottis. M.L.T. 90b  
 How King Eder regnit in tranquillite and pece ; how  
 he dantit ye insolence of Brede the Insulane and his  
 complicis. Cap° j°

**E**der, in sorte foresaid resaving ye crowne, vesityt ye Fo. XXX.  
 boundis and regiouns subiect to his senzeorie. To  
 50 grete parte of nobillis was his cuming mare thankfull  
 yat he delitit in hunting, quhareto yai war mekill gevin ;  
 ffor in sic sorte of gamyn all his tyme to yai dayis he was  
 maist exercit. He extemyt na thing mare plesand nor  
 delitabill yan with hundis and rachis chaisß ye dere and  
 beistis of reif, (wolfis in speciall), to ye bestiall maist  
 noysum, ffor be resoun of vehement cauld in oure cuntre  
 the wolf naturalie is felloun cruell. Than was ye realme  
 in tranquillite and nowthir be nychtbour were nor vvir  
 wayis ferit was troubill. In securite and eiß plesandlie  
 liffit ye pepill: to move trubill na man attemptit. Giff  
 60 nychtbouris with wrangis war iniurit ye offensß incontinent  
 be ye king was punyst. To trubill this domestic prosperite  
 began Brede of ye Ilis, cousing to Gillus, quhilk be persute of  
 Cadall was in Ireland slane. This Brede, collecting lymmaris  
 throw Ireland and ye Ilis, tending to revenge ye dede of Gillus  
 and freyndis with him slane, with mony galions and lang  
 faddis landit in Argathele, quhare, herying ye cuntre, he draif  
 ane large and riche pray. Herethrow the cuntre men affrayit  
 fled to ye king, for ye tyme with grete nowmer of nobillis and  
 commons hunting in ane forest beside, schawing abasitlie how  
 Argathele be lymmaris was invadit, distursit of al bestiall and  
 insicht ; wemen, 3ong innocentis and febill persons be fragilite  
 70 of kynde or age war slane. At yis message the king commovit, M.L.T. 91

- Fo. XXX. left ye hunting; syne, waling ane gudelicie cumpanye, per-sewit Brede in ye nycht, and in secrete maner passing by his oist, come to ye west coist of Argathele (quhare it marchis with ye sey), and sone wan yare galiouns; syne, slaying yare keparis, brynt yame in ane fyre that ye lymmaris suld haue na refuge to fle to Ireland. On ye morne in ye dawing, invading Brede and his complicis be batell at ane parte quhare yai suspectit na dangere, be slauchter he distroyit mony, and chaising the remanent, quhen yai mycht nocht evaid ye persute of followaris, yai war takin, be command of ye king hangit, and ye pray to ye possessouris restorit. Efter yis act Eder fra Argathele departit to ye Ilis, quhare he dantit ye 80
- Fo. XXXI. assistantis to Gillus and Brede, justyfyng sum parte, of vtheris confisking yare bestiall and store, as for ye tyme was ye maner.

How at desire of Cassibilane, king of Britouns, King Eder send power fra Scotland in supple contrare Iulius Cesare and the Romane armye.

Cap° ij°

The Ilis pecifyit in yis sorte, sone efter returne of ye king to ye castell of Evon, to him come ambassiatouris fra Cassibilane, king of Britouns, beseking him for supple contrare Iulius Cesare, Romane chiftane, quham, be exploratouris of Romanis and Gallis with him in captiuite, he knewe was with ane armye fra Gallia approcheand to Britan, tending to subdew ye samyn. King Eder, hwmanelic ressavng ye ambassiatouris, commandit yai suld in convencioun of nobillis, present for ye tyme, propone sic thingis as in name of Cassibilane and 10 pepill of Britane yai war to desire. On ye morne at ye counsell Androgeus, of grete blude and autorite amang Britouns, to ye king and nobillis said in yis sorte: "I am to say na thing in presens of yis honorabill auditour, maist illustir prince, for

M.L.T. 91b vtillite of Cassibilane, king of Britouns, and his pepill, bot yat thy Maieste clerely sall vnderstand concernys ye weil of yi celsitude and kinrik of Scotland. Nature, of all creaturis



maist nobill parent, in yis ile of Albion has placit thre naciouns, Fo.XXXI.  
 maist bellicose and valezeand of vtheris, nocht, (as we beleve),  
 yat yai suld be amang yame self devidit, nor ather were apoun  
 vther as wyld vndantit beistis naturalie to crudelite inclinit,  
 20 bot to increß and be unyte in concorde but iniuris, and be  
 leß difficulte (*comionit* in strenth and pussance) resist to all  
 exterioure weris gif ony in yare contrare be movit. Now,  
 maist clement prince, quha may say or ymagine yat, gif ye  
 pepil of Britan be deletit, thy kinrik may be sure and stable  
 in tyme cuming, without he wald be frivole esperance, salffie  
 persuade him self yat quhen all nychtbour pepill war extermyn-  
 nate, Romanis, (quhilkis fra kingis reiffis yare sceptoris), sal  
 be bettir mynde towart ye and ye pepill? How to sic vane  
 hope suld be gevin na credit, yi prudence may vndirstand be  
 myscheif of vtheris. God defend it be yi caifß, ffor, Romanis  
 pridefully stiling yame self lordis of ye warld and avanting  
 yame to joifß ye impire yareof be special gift of immortal  
 30 goddis, tending to subiect Britouns to yare senezeory, (as we  
 ar sikkirlye aduertist), has devisit haistelie invade yis ile of  
 Albion. Thir Romanis for tyrannye exercit dalie apoun  
 naciouns to yame subiect, has maid to all pepill yare name and  
 impire odioß. At reuerence of goddis inmortal, I beseik 3ow,  
 quhat sall we lippin Romanis sall do efter Britouns be vincust  
 and thirlit to seruitute bot, be sic like auarice and ambicioun  
 of wrangwis conquest as yai vsit apoun Britouns, (subiect and  
 dispulzete of lawis, juris, landis and liberte), thay sall haistelie  
 apoun Scottis and Pichtis move were yarefter? Fferder, 3e  
 may persauie ye fyne of yare intent yat yai covate na thing  
 mare yan to occupy oure strenthis, rowmys and cieteis and M.L.T. 92  
 ouresett ws be perpetuall servitute and, fynalie, fra oure  
 40 native cuntre exile ws all quham yai persave in nobilite  
 schynyng or of maist estimacioun and honoure. Of yir premisß  
 the rewyne of Carthage, (vmquhile maist opulent and strang  
 ciete) may be document, ffor, eftir be Romanis it was expug-  
 nate, ressaut to fidelite and at yare faith remanyng be  
 obseruacioun of all condiciouns of pece before acceptit, be  
 invy of yai tyrannys it was aluterlie deletit. Gif sic actis in  
 partis sa fer distant be to 3ow vnknawin, behald ye realme

Fo.XXXI. of Gallia, oure nyctbouris, quhilk, vincust be violence of Romanis, mvnyciouns, strenthis and all kynde of armour war fra yame reft, and war to perpetuall *seruitute* thirllit. It is nocht to beleif yat Romanis to ws, (I mene the inhabitantis ye haill ile of Albion), suld be mare freyndlie gif we be in batell vincust and in yare power randerit, (quhilkis ye goddis omnipotent defend), becaus yai ar in vse ye mare yai haue 50 dominacion to oppress mare hevillie yare subiectis. This common skaith herefore be oure common armys suld be expellit. At begynnyng to ye Romane pussance suld be resisit, in aventure, gif it be augmentit, yai sall incress sa mekill yat yareeftir yai may nocht be dantit. Quharefore, maist victorios prince, address ye haill pussance and be fortificacion of the and yi douchty liegis, augment and support ye affaris of Britons. Contrare our commoun inemyis mak to ye feild and defend our ancient liberte, traisting fermlie, be supple of oure native goddis, to haue victorie apoun thir cruell inemyis quhilk, nocht content of ye remanent warld, ar to invade pis ile, seperate fra all vtheris, provokit be na iniuris of the inhabitantis bot onelie sterit to haue superiorite and pridefull dominacion. And, by all vthir commoditeis, ye sall prepare to 3ow and 3our kinrik liberte and inmortallore. 60

Of King Cassibilane 3ir ar ye desiris, na less for ye weill of 3ow  
 M.L.T. 92b yan him self; and ye pepill of Britan with hartlynes desiris ye sammyn." Quhen Andrigeus had fynissit his wourdis, ye ambassiatouris war chargit remove fra ye counsell yat quhat to yare peticiouns suld be ansuerit, mycht be consultit. Eftir yai war removit and the mater in consultacioun deducit, thay concludit yat Cassibilane and Britouns, freyndlie pepill, suld be suppleit contrar Romanis to resist ye commoun perrell apperand; proclamacions suld be made and power assemblit to be with diligence to Cassibilane send. Of ye commoun and private expenss suld ane armye be furnist. The king, syne convenyng the ambassiatouris, said: "The postulacioun yat ye desire, freyndis of Britane, in name of Cassibilane, 3our souerane, is plesing, honorabill and commodioss yat in 70 pis extreme, apperand dangere to ws inhabitantis Albion, we suld defend pis kinrik, be antecessouris begunnyng and be

game conseruit hail to oure tyme. Be relacioun of diuers, Fo.XXXI.  
 expert of ye Romane senezeorie, we haue herd how desirous  
 Romanis ar of nychtbouris rowmys, how opulent in yare  
 awne cuntre, how strang in weris and how pridefully apoun  
 pepill subiectit yai vse yare domynion. Nor we vnderstand  
 na thing bettir, gif Britouns be ouresett and subiect to yare  
 senezeory, yai sal inuaid ws *with* weris and owder expell  
 ws Albion or ellis, reiffing oure liberte, sall thirll ws to vile  
 seruitute. The trubill of Gallis and Spanzeartis, (quharefra  
 come oure progenitouris), and ze afflictious sustenit be vthir  
 80 naciouns, *servandis* to Romanis, persuadis to ws yare pride- Fo.XXXII.  
 full tyrannye. To yir pepill, (be my opinion), had bene mekill  
 bettir to haue bene slane honestlie in batell than to be reseruit  
 liffand to sa vile and ignomyniofs *seruitute*. Fferder, we knaw  
 weill yat fra Britons nocht without cruell batell sall yare  
 kinrik, libertie, lawis and juris be reft, for quham, of resoun,  
 we aucht fecht, siclike, becaus yai being salff, oure realme can M.L.T. 93  
 be in na dangere. To yis effect we ar resolute to anarme ws  
 in societe *with* Cassibilane and his pepill of Britan and, with  
 ferme esperance to vincuifs inemyis, sall pas with him in batell  
 quhare, (gif ye goddis sua has devisit), we sall de mare honestlie  
 10 yan, remanyng at hame, suffir fra our freyndis and nychtbouris  
 yare liberte be reft and oure realme, spoufs, childer and native  
 goddis to perdicion be exponit. Quharefore, we sall assembl  
 ane armye and without tary in supple of Cassibilane send ye  
 samyn to London, and effectuoslie, be oure ambassiatouris,  
 sall exhort oure cousing Gethus, king of Pichtis, with his  
 barouns to do siclike, be resoun of ye lyig. Ffor we beleif, for  
 ye gude mynde thay obserue to inhabitantis Albioun, yai sall  
 gladelie here oure desiris. We are adettit hereto be dewite  
 to oure native cuntre, and be ferme beleif sal stoutly per-  
 furnis ye samyn." Be yis ansuere of King Eder the Britane  
 ambassiatouris erectit in bettir hope, first humelie thanking  
 his Maieste, syne his nobillis, and departing, went to Gethus,  
 king of Pichtis, *with* ambassiatouris of Scotland. And he,  
 20 certifyit quhat Cassibilane and ye pepill of Britan desirit,  
 discussing ye caifs with his consell, (Scottis ambassiatouris  
 lauboring for haisty expedicion), plesandlie to yare peticiouns

Fo. XXXII. consentit. Sua, ambassiatouris returning to yare cuntre, King Eder throw all Scotland walit x<sup>m</sup> men to quham he made chiftane, Cadallane, son to Cadall, (of quham before is remem-berit), and Dovald, cheif of Argathele, directing yame to Cassibilane at Londoun, namyt Trynovant for ye tyme.

How Cesare be the Albians was rebutit and how to  
Gallia he returnit. Cap<sup>o</sup> iij<sup>o</sup>

M.L.T. 936 **T**o Cassibilane and his liegis was ye cuming of Scottis mair thankfull, yat apperandly yai had ado contrare inemyis maist potent to quham grete parte of ye warld was obeysant. Cassibilane before was aduertist be exploratouris yat Cesare with ane grete navyne was arrivit on ye coist of Britan and had landit ane copioß armye. The garnysoun, assignit to kepe ye coistis and resist his landing, was rebutit. Sa mony as reconterit Romanis in batell war slane. The egill and Romane anseneze was displayit apoun ye ferme land of Britan, and inhabitantis to evaid yare felony war fled. At thir novellis Britouns gretelie war agast. Bot yare king, comforting yame *with* gude wordis, vehementlie kindillit yare curage to fecht for yare liberte, yare kynde, cuntre and sic thingis as to mortall men ar maist dere, as wyiffis, barnys and native godis, off quhilkis men being distursit thare life mycht nowthir be sikkir nor honest; promitting of inemyis ferme victorie, becaus Cesare, having na accioun iuste nor honest bot onelie be iniuste ambicioun, had wrangouslie apoun yame movit yis were. The cuming of Scottis and Pichtis augmentit Britouns in beleif of victorie, ffor in thare vassalage thay confidit mekill. Cassibilane, taryng na langare, be grete journais with all his ordinance tranoyntit towart Romanis, and directit his folkis best horssit and were cartis to brek the ordoure of inemyis. Twyifß at ye first tyme be licht iupartiyis was contrare Romanis fochtin, incertane quha had victorie. Syne ionit ye mayne batellis. Ffolowit ane doutsum bargane, the fecht on athir

partie maist feirsleie enduring, quhil be assaleze Tenance, Duke Fo. XXXII.  
of Walis and Cornwall, *with* ane new rout be ratling and noyis  
50 of quhelis and bellis depending fra ye harnessing of ye hors  
in ye were cartis, the Romane armye astonyst gaif ye bak and  
fled. Quham following, Britouns, Scottis and Pichtis, disor-  
dorit and skatterit, abusing yis victorie be sa grete laubouris  
conquest, to inemyis did *nocht* sa grete harme as yai resaut, M.L.T. 94  
ffor Romanis fleand kepit ordoure and cloisß togidder followit  
yare ansenezeis, and sum tyme wald stand and renewe ye  
bargane and resaue ye followaris, how beit yai *mycht* *nocht*  
mak ye chaisß, becauß yai war of mekill leß pussance than  
inemyis. Britons disorderit, *nocht* without slauchter persewit,  
nor before ye nycht fra ye chaisß reterit *nocht*. How sone  
inemyis abstenit fra persute, Cesare be grete laubouris incon-  
tinent assemblit his folkis and causit sa mony as war woundit  
60 be had to schippis, tending on ye morne to renew ye batell  
and be cruell slauchter revenge ye supprise he had resaut.  
Bot, aduertist how his navyn be storme of weddir was sa  
fruschit yat grete parte yareof wald in tyme *cuming* mak  
na stede, ffering yat ye myschance of his navyne suld augment  
the curage of inemyis and abafs the hardyment of his folkis,  
thinking he wald defer to be revengit quhil tyme mare oport-  
une and in ye *present* tyme wald beit his schippis, he abstenit  
fra bargane. Sone yareeftir he reterit his armye to ane camp,  
walit apoun ye west sey bank, strang and strenthy be naturale  
situacioun. Syne, leiffing ye schippis maist traffillit and  
vnhabill for saill, having ye remanent weill bet, fynding fare  
wynd, on ye nycht he schippit his folkis, in ye camp leiffing  
70 ane huge pray, quhilk for skant of schippis he *mycht* *nocht*  
carye, and departing fra ye porte, with prosper courß arrivit  
at ferme land. To Albion the first *cuming* of Cesar with ye  
Romane armye was of King Eder ye ferd zere, efter origine  
of ye warld v<sup>m</sup> j<sup>c</sup> xxxix, and before Criste Incarnate thre skore  
zeris.

Fo. XXXII.

How Britouns refusit supple offerit be King Eder to resist Iulius Cesare, and how to Romanis yai war made tributaris. Cap° iiij°

M.L.T. 94b

Britouns, Scottis and Pichtis occupying the camp of Romanis dividit amang yame ye pray according ye rite of were men. To all inhabitantis Albion this victorie and departing of Cesare and cowart fleing, (as yai reput), generit mekil ioy. Quharefore, with sacrifice conforme to ye rite of Gentilis in yai dayis accustomyt, thay lovit ye inmortal 80

Fo. XXXIII.

goddis, beleiffing yai war perpetually fra iniuris of Romanis deliuerit and yat alienis in tyme cuming suld nocht invoid Albioun with weris. Cadallane with ye armye of Scottis, lossing of yame bot fewe and rewardit richelie be Cassibilan, returnyng to Scotland to Eder, his souerane, ordourlie schewe all ye chance of yat iournay, how Cesare was vincust and be force drevin to ye sey, fra thyne was fled to Gallia, lossing grete parte of ye Romane armye; Albanis war victouris and had spuleze and pray, opulent and riche. Quharefore it was beleiffit ye Romane armye be inhabitantis Albion suld neuer in tyme cuming be crynit. To Cassibilane and nobillis of Britan 10 ye poweris of Scottis was acceptabill, and ye king, with all grete men of yat nacioun, to Scottis randerit mekill thank yat be yare supple and fortificacioun, in honest interpris of were, fra extreme *imynent* dangere yai war deliuerit and sa potent inemyis defate. Na thing to yame suld be in tyme cuming mare dere yan the name of Scottis, and to yame war addetit to kepe kyndenes. Eder, be victorie apoun sa pussant inemyis gretelie reiosit, chargeit yai suld thank yare goddis, syne to yame causit supplicaciouns and processions thre dayis contynualy be maid, with offeringis and hoistis apoun thare altaris. Ffollowit hereapoun merynes and glaid chere amang ye pepill. Herethrow generit was amang thir thre naciouns of Scottis, Pichtis and Britouns sa grete amite, congratulacion and tendirnes, yat apperandlie in ferme pece and concorde yai suld perpetualie be conionit. Efter sacrifice done, Eder, in materis concernyng ye weill of his realme,

M.L.T. 95

20 spendit ye wynter folowing, and be hunting, (like as in barne Fo. xxxiii.  
 hede he was exercit), he vsit in plesing tyme of somer. In  
 age and youth he delitit in na thing mare than hunting. Eftir  
 courfs of ane zere be marchandis of Gallia, (resorting in marchan-  
 dice to Innernes), he was aduertist how Cesare had pecifijt all  
 Gallia and preparit of new ane flote of schippis, tending doutles  
 with ye samyn and mony legiouns of Romanis returne haistelic  
 to Britane to be revengit apoun iniuris resaut the zere pre-  
 cedent, and to ye Romane senezeorie subiect ye ile of Britane.  
 Of thir novellis Britouns war certifijt be freyndlie writingis  
 of ye Gallis, to quham the domynioun of Romanis was odiofs.  
 How sone King Eder hereof was aduertist, incontinent to  
 Cassibilane of Britane he directit ambassiatouris to schew  
 him, gif yis brute of Cesare was trewe, yai suld in his name  
 30 offer x<sup>m</sup> Scottis in supple of him and his kinrik, sua yat Britouns,  
 his gude freyndis, be violence of Romanis suld nocht be  
 ourethrawn. To Londone come ye Scottis ambassiatouris,  
 exponyng ye charge of Eder to Cassibilane and his counsel.  
 The Britane nobillis, sare contrare ye mynde of yare king,  
 refusit ye offeris of Scottis, affermyng yai had in yare awne  
 realme valezeand men quhilk latelie had discumfist ye Romane  
 armye, be quhilk victorie and daly exercicioun in chevalrie  
 yai inressit in hardyment. Thare realme was at waik poynt,  
 gif at all invasion of inemyis thay suld charge nyctbouris  
 with supple. It efferis nocht the victoriofs Britouns dout to  
 haue victorie apoun Romanis quham yai had discumfist in  
 batell afore. Ambassiatouris rehersing the responfs of Britouns  
 40 to King Eder and his counsale, thay wounderit mekill yare  
 folie yat yai suld refuse suple of freyndis in ye necessare were  
 contrare Romanis, lordis of all the warld for ye maist parte,  
 to be sustenit, coniecturing yarethrow yat schortlie yat nobill  
M.L.T. 95b  
 realme of Britan, be foly hardyment of ye nobillis, throw ane  
 sobir advantage, suld suffir grete harme and skaith, as be fyne  
 of ye mater haistelic was preuit. Cesare within few dayis  
 returnit to Britane. At his arriving ye werz men keping ye  
 coistis, affrayit be multitude of schippis, reterit and fled, and  
 Cesare, landing his armye, be Cassibilane in vnchancye batell  
 was assailzete thryis. In ye last iournay discumfist war

Fo. xxxiii. Britouns, grete parte of yare folkis slane and thre vailzeand chiftanis takin, Androgeus, Cisentorige and Tenance. Be 50  
 yis myscheif Cassibilane, skaling his armye, be contynual trubill was sa oureset that, disparing his caiff, become randerit to Cesare and, gevin plegeis, promyst the realme of Britan to Romanis suld be tributare. Cesare, resaving the plegeis, resaut Cassibilane to fidelite, chargeing the realme of Britane to Romanis suld in name of tribute 3erelie pay thre thousand pund wecht of siluer. Entering syne in ye strang toure of London, with mekill honoure be ye cietenaris he was resaut. Quhare remanyng nocht lang quhen his folkis fra laubouris war refreschit, he addressit to move were apoun Scottis and Pichtis. The querell of were was becaus yai fortifijt Britouns at ye last weris in his contrare. 3it, or were suld be denunciit, 60  
 he devisit be ambassiatouris to assay the myndis of Scottis and Pichtis gif yai desirit pece or were. Pece mycht be had, gif to ye senatouris and Romane pepill thay wald wilfully be randerit, and in tyme cuming obey; gif yai stiflie contempnit yare senezery, thay suld of were be assurit.

M.L.T. 96

How the legacioun of Cesare send to King Eder was refusit; how he directit the secund legacioun mare scharpe; how thareto was ansuerit; how he left purposis to assaleze Scottis and Pichtis and to Gallia returnit.  
 Cap° v°

To the kingis of athir nacioun be Cesare war directit ambassiatouris quhilk suld say: "To Romanis now all realmes war obeysant be gift of ye sempiternall goddis, (as mycht be weill belevit), quhilkis to diuers naciouns in yare courfs grantit soueranite and impire, as to Asseryis, Perfs, Medis, Grekis and now last to Romanis, with quham yai fermly perseuer. Skantlie in yis warld is ony place quhare come nocht ye Romane armye. In all partis Romanis (be beneuolence of goddis) tryumphis, and to yare senzeorie subiectis all impiris, Affrik, Egipt, Arabie, Syria, Palestine, 70



Parthe, Tyria, Galathis, Asia, Macedon and all vtheris of ye Greik tong, Spanze and alsua Gallia, Britane and maist parte of ye world vniuersall, inuironit be ye occiane, to ye Romane lawis obeyit. To nane nacioun nor pepill is ye Romane senzorie vnknawin bot gif peraventure yai be sic pepil yat nane vthir nacioun kennys. To mortall men is na securite nor in this life na honeste bot quhare ye Romane lawis has dominacioun. Of all naciouns ye senatouris and Romane pepill ar protectouris, stabil porte and refuge. Tharein standis ye Romane glore, be fidelite and equite to defend yare freyndis and confederatis. Herefore it war richt honorabill to Scottis and Pichtis to bynd societe with Romanis, to be and als to be

80 comptit freyndis and fallowis *with* yat potent pepill to quham sa mony cieteis, sa mony mychty kinrikis made provincis and sa mony vailzeand princis, (oureset in batell), makis *seruice*. This was ye charge of Cesare and Romane pepill for vtilite of athir nacioun, affermyng it was be yame ardentlie to be desirit, *without* yai wald planelie resist to ye goddis omnipotent, quhilkis has now decretit yat all this world suld to ye Romane senezorie be subiectit." Quhen King Eder and nobillis of Scottis had herd thir foresaidis, suspecting vehementlie sum fraude to lurk vnder yare payntit wourdis,

ansuerit yai wald with all yare pussance defend to ye extreme yare spousis, childer, native cuntre and liberte and wald to vile seruitute prefer all kynde of dede. To yame was ye Romane name knawin onelie in yis sorte, yat, be brute and fame, abone ye commoun cast of vthir men yai insaciable reiffaris reft rowmys and senzeoryis fra vtheris, howbeit

10 yareto yai had na richt. Be fenzete querellis, fra kingis yai reft scepteris and regnis, and be iniust weris subiectit mony fre naciouns to vile seruitute and to yare lawis and ceremonis. Giff Romanis war determyt yai wald invade yame be batell, (never to yame offending), and wald fra yame attempt reif richtis, iuris, liberte and kinrik, yai testifijt ye sempiternall goddis, (quha has onelie power to punyis tyrannys and revenge iniuris), yai wald, in defend of yare cuntre, offer yame all, atanis, honestlie in batell to ye dede. Be the king of Pichtis and his nobillis the Romane ambassiatouris war ansuerit

Fo. XXXIII.

Fo. XXXIII.

M.L.T. 96b

Fo. xxxiiii. *nocht* mekill variant fra *pis* effect. Cesare, be reherß of ambassiatouris, hering the ansuere of Scottis and Pichtis, decernit to *yame* ane *vthir* message mare scharpe with *vthir* terrouris. And quhen to *presens* of King Eder and his nobillis *yai* war 20  
 admittit, the ambassiatoure principal said: "Cesare, Romane chiftane, persuadis to the, Eder, king of Scottis, and thy liegis *yat* to *ye* maist potent nacioun of *ye* warld *ze* optempir, sua *yat* in finale destructioun *ze* drawe *nocht* *zoure* kinrik, liberte and *livis*, gif *ze* contend contrare Romanis, lordis and dantaris of all *ye* warld. Of *vthir* rebell nacioun *ye* incommoditeis, the maieste of *ye* Romane pepill and grete brute of *yare* name suld move *zow* hereto; or think *ze* plesand to assay *ye* chaunce of batell, as did Britouns, quhilkis, latelie attempting oure mekill (bot erare oure barnlie) to defend *yare* liberte, efter all *yare* nobillis in obstinate batell war owder captive or ellis slane, be  
 M.L.T. 97 swerde preparit to *yame* self perpetuall seruitute. Quhat may *ze* Albiane Scottis debate contrare Romanis, conquerouris of all 30  
*ye* warld? Peraventure, presumptuouslie *ze* confide sa mekill in *zoure* strenth *yat*, be frivole *coniecturaciouns*, *ze* think Romanis, dantaris of *ye* warld, may be vincust *with* *zow*, *ye* extreme nacioun and pepill *yareof*, and *yarethrow* fra *seruetute* *ze* may deliuer all *pis* warld, and *yat* *zoure* pussance, (na thing almaist in respect of Romanis), may restore *impiris* and *senzeoryis* deletit be *yame* afore, or to princis may redress *yare* realmes. Or knaw *ze* *nocht* *yat* mony Romane chiftanis, baith in corporall strenth, curage of mynde and practik of were, may be compare to Cesare, be glorie of quhais actis all regiouns quhare *ye* son movis courß, ar decorit? Nocht *yeles* to vincuß onelie Cesare is mare *yau* *ye* warld may comprehend, quhareof procedis *pis* blynd arrogance and folie? Contempne *ze* *nocht* *ye* goddis quhilkis, sen *yai* haue subdewit all to Romanis, will *yat* *yare* *senzeorie* consist stabil and ferme and wilbe *yare* *speciall* protectouris and defence. Gif *ze* think *yat* 40  
 be strate erdis, moß, slike and sward, irksom to ane armye, *zoure* regiouns aboundis, and als be skant of victualis *ze* may *cummyr* and tyre *ye* Romane armye, and *yat* in sic strenthis *ze* may salffie remane with *zoure* gudis, and Cesare on force mon *yarefra* departe, attend *ze*, quhilk sa barnelie providis *ye*

weill of your self and gudis, yat thir terroures may na mare Fo. XXXIII.  
 move Romanis fra yare purpoiss yan all youre boundis war  
 plane and abill for weremen, replete with all viueris necessare  
 for yare vse. Romanis of all vtheris ar maist expert in were,  
 agill and swamp in yare persoun to clym youre montanis,  
 50 rochis and strate erdis, to ryn and indure all vthir laubouris  
 and travell; of slepe and fude na men mare continent nor  
 sobir and exercit in all sorte of weris yat be men may be excogi- M.L.T. 97b  
 tate. Ffra Gallia, Germanye and Britan, subiectis to Romanis,  
 sall victualis, (gif nede beis), for sustentacioun of the armye  
 be brocht, ffor Cesare wiselie agane all sic caissis has providit.  
 Quharefore gif ze haue the weill of youre realme in cure, gif  
 ze aduert and consider, (quhilk necessare is ze do), provide  
 in tyme yat ze bind nocht apoun youre hedis, sorowis and  
 bandis indissolubill, and, be foly hardyment, to youre self,  
 wyiffis and childer prepare fynale destructioun and syne on  
 force be constrenit to be shamefully to inemyis randerit.  
 Ffor ze may now but batell provide youre caiss mare honestlie  
 with youre freyndis, ye Romanis, gif ze in tyme to yame  
 60 obtempir. It may nocht aventure vthir wayis, sen fortune  
 is aduersant, yat gif sa obstinatelie ze resist, bot ze sall be  
 denude of liberte, and be sa felloun plagis afflictit yat on force  
 ze sall resaue seruitute and to ws be subiectis; and this, be  
 youre stiff and wilfull mynde, ze sall incur and, at plesure of  
 inemyis, contrare youre will mon suffir perpetualie to liff in  
 thirlage, without esperance to be in tyme cuming yarefra  
 redemyt." At yir wourdis ye pepill in furoure and dignacioun  
 was sa inflammyt yat almaist fra slauchter of ye Romane  
 ambassiatouris yai refrenit nocht, the name of seruitute to  
 yame was sa odioß. Nochtwithstanding ye naturale law of  
 all naciouns, euer be Scottis honorably extemyt, defendit ye  
 ambassiatouris fra violence. Syne, at command of ye king,  
 be Cadallane, chiftane of Brigancia, was ansuerit: Howbeit be  
 70 opinioun of vthir naciouns the pepill of Scotland ar of ingyne  
 sympill and rude, thay war nocht movit at the fraudulent  
 adulacioun of Cesare, nor be his terroures and boist sa affrayit,  
 yat yarethrow yai mycht be impellit to wilfully rander yare M.L.T. 98  
 liberte without batell: thay war in vse to obey kingis justelie

- Fo. XXXIII. in yare realmes regnyng, and nocht to reiffaris of kinrikis obtempir; quharefore yai wald na freyndschip with Romanys becauſ, (as be yare flattery mycht be considerit), yai menynt nocht ellis bot fraude; and testifijt yare goddis yai wald aluterlie contempne yare feid and iniust *immynent* weris aganis yame to be denuncit. The ambassiatouris departing, to Cesare schew ye schorte answere of Scottis and Pichtis. Hereat Cesare, *nocht* litill offendit, tendit invade Scottis and Pichtis, 80
- Fo. XXXV. *rebellaris*, in yare awne regiouns with all his ordinance and armye. *Nocht* yeles, be writingis fra Labiene (quham he left at ye porte to defend ye navyne and provide victualis), he was aduertist how ye pepill of Northmandie, (yan Newstris), and Terewanis, peciabil nacions at his departing to Britan, had rebellit and ye Carnwtis, (now Charteris), had in Gallia movit grete trubill and slane *Transigere*, yare king, create be Cesare for fidelite and gude parte *observit* to him and Romanis, and herethrow desistit fra his purpois. Attoure, becaus of victualis to furnis ye armye was penwrite and skantlie was in Britane to sustene ye inhabitantis, nor fra Gallia, (becaus of rebellion), he had na beleif viueris mycht be caryit, and als wynter approachit quhen be stormes ye sey is *nocht* abill for navigacioun, panging apoun yir cais, he concludit retere his 10 armye to Gallia becaus in yai partis for ye wynter was provision made. Schortlie *yareeftir* Britane, (as said is), being tributare and Scottis and Pichtis skantlie affrayit, Cesare fra Albion departit.

M.L.T. 986

Of diuersite in opiniouns concernyng ye expedicion of Cesare; of his *tempill*, and deceis of King Eder.

Cap<sup>o</sup> vj<sup>o</sup>

**T**hir premis of ye expedicion of Cesare in Britane and of his memorabil victorie apoun Cassibilane and rander-ing of Britouns, nocht mekill discrepant fra his *Commentaris* be him self of his awne actis writtin, fra Veremwnd and *Schir* Iohne Campbell, for ye maist parte, ar collectit. Als in oure vulgare croniclis is rememberit that Cesare to Calidone

Wod brocht ye Romane armye, wan Camelodune, cheif ciete FO. XXXV.  
 20 of Pichtis, and spulejit ye samyn, and, in ye opposit of ye  
 ciete nocht fer fra ye ryver of Carone, left ane stane houf,  
 of hewyn aslare, weill dressit, biggit on ane huge quantite,  
 abone xxiiij cubitis in hicht and mare than xij cubitis wide,  
 in remembrance to the posterite yat ye Romane armye was  
 sum tyme to yai partis convoyit. Fferder, yai allege that  
 Cesare in expediciouns vsit yis houf for his consell and causit  
 with him ye stanys separate in pecis be caryit, and had to  
 name Iulis Hoff, als mekill to say as the Hall or Clois of  
 Iulius. This name is *cumin* to oure dayis and sua callit be  
 ye inhabitantis. Nocht yeles, becaus na famous authouris,  
 (quhilkis be maist circumspection writis the Romane actis),  
 makis mencion yat euer Cesare gaif batell to Scottis or Pichtis  
 30 bot erare, be ye contrare, yai mene ilkane according to his  
 Commentaris, we haue transcurrit and omittit diuerf thingis,  
 vulgarlie alleget done in yis expedicion, affermyng in yis oure  
 werk na thing quhilk of resoun may haue reproch. Bot  
 twiching ye stane houf, we se in oure dayis the forme of it  
 is rownd, having na wyndoys bot ane opin abone, like to ye  
 auld templeis of goddis in Rome, *with* benkis of stane rownd  
 about ye houf within, as certane signis zit schawis. The M.L.T. 99  
 paithment *with* tylde has bene laid, like as ye small pecis  
 collectit zit verifijs. Apon certane stanis war egillis gravin  
 bot now be lang tyme almaist consumyt and worne. In this  
 houf at ye south was ane huge stane quhilk is belevit yai  
 40 infidelis vsit for ane altare. Quharefore ye opinioun of Very-  
 mwnd twiching yis houf apperis trew, consenting with Swet-  
 onius and Cornelius Tacitus, maist apprisit writaris of Romane  
 actis, that it was ane tempill apoun ye ryver of Caron, nocht  
 fer fra Camelodune, be Vespasiane vmquhile biggit of stanis  
 weill dressit and hewyn in honoure of Claudius Cesare and ye  
 goddess Victoria, as is haldin yat the titill engravit in the  
 stane abone ye zett sum tyme schew; and be command of  
 Edwerd Langschankis of Inghland quhen dispitely ye realme  
 of Scotland he dispulejete, this stane was brokin to haue ye  
 remembrance yareof distroyit. The place, as may be sene,  
 zit remanis quharefra yai allege the stane was removit. Bot

Fo. XXXV. of yis mater mare largelie sal efterwart be tretit. And we will now prosew ye actis of King Eder, quhilk having fra ye Ilis and vthir regiouns of Scotland men in reddines, taryng 50 ye cuming of ye Romane armye, ane haisty brek in ye Ilis was movit. Ffor ane myscheant man, namyt Murkett, nevo to King Gillus, (off quham oftymes is made mencion), assembling power of brokin men and larouns fra Ireland, with mony langfaddis and galiouns, come to mak rubery in ye Ilis. To yis tratoure was nocht vknawin how ye Insulanis, for ye maist parte, be proclamacioun of ye king war in werefare, to resist ye invasiouns, devisit be Romanis apoun Scottis; herefore he thocht mare eselie vse felony in ye Ilis. At arriving of yis Murkett grete nowmer of wyiffis and barnis, at hame be fragilite of persoun remanyng, war opprest. Ane

M.L.T. 99b riche pray was collectit and schippit in yare botis. Aganis him was Cadallane send with power, quhilk on ye nycht, almaist but straik, wan ye weschell, ffra thyne fra ye depe brocht ye botis to ye ile callit Gowrye, quhare, landing all ye 60 bestiall and presoneris, takin afore be lymmaris, he sufferit yame departe; syne apoun ye coist side hangit all the mysdoaris, of quham na litill nowmer in hope of lukir invadit ye Ilis; syne causit apoun ane hieare gebate hyng vp Murkett, as capitane and cheif of all ye larouns. In yis sorte was yis bruleze dantit and ye movaris thareof distroyit. Of King Eder the senezeorie in tyme cummyng was tranquill and peciabil, sen all weris, baith civill and exterioure, war repressit: and fynalie, eftir he had xlvij zeris broukit ye impire, grave in age and hevily twichit with infirmite, at Evon, (now Downstaphage), he deceissit. His regne durit to ye xxvj zere of Augustus Cesare, Romane emprioure, quhilk was fra ye begynnyng of the warld v<sup>m</sup> j<sup>c</sup> lxxxij zeris. Be funerall pompe 70 according ane prince, as in yat age was the maner, in honorabil sepulture in ye plane feild of Evon he was beryit and mony hewyn stanys at his tovmb erectit, as of ye pepill fra begynnyng was the ryte. ʒ

How Evene, son to Eder, was crownyt; off his Fo. XXXV.  
 mysgiding and corruptit lawis; off the Romane  
 legacioun send to Metellane to him succeding, and  
 how during the regne the Son of God was incarnate.

Cap° vij°

**H**appy and fortunate mycht yis nobill prince Eder be  
 callit in his life and efter his dede for his excellent vertwis  
 and honouris done to him be all estatis and ordouris inhabi- M.L.T. 100  
 tantis Albion, gif he had nocht left heretoure to ye crowne his  
 son Evene, ye thrid of yat name, abone all vtheris werst and  
 maist vnwourthy, of quhais actis sall now be tretit. This  
 Evene, returnyng fra ye funerale attirement of his fader, be  
 consent of ye estatis was declarit king, becaus nane belevit  
 bot he suld follow the vertuofß gouerment of Eder, his fader.  
 Nocht yeles, how sone he was declarit king, ordoring his life all  
 80 vthir wayis, he was involuit in all vicis. In ye first 3eris of  
 his regne in lustis and voluptuosite he rageit abone ye Fo. XXXVI.  
 petulance of all vther wanton gallandis, war yai never sa  
 mekill to plesure of women gevin. He vsit j° concubinis,  
 walit with grete cure amang maist nobill matrons and virginis.  
 How beit be sa grete nowmer he was sum tyme wery, 3it his  
 appetite was neuer saciate bot was ever infamosß and vile.  
 Be persuasiouns of rutouris and harlotis quhilkis for rutorie  
 and licht latis fra sobir estate war exaltit to honoure and  
 riches, he exilit of his nobillis sum parte yat he mycht mare  
 frelie apon his plesouris vaik, sum parte he causit with lymmaris  
 be invadit and slane. Attoure he was determyt, (as planelie  
 was haldin), be socht occasiouns, to slay cruelly all men of  
 10 gude, to quham his vicis war odioß, yat he mycht mell with  
 yare gudis. In yir vicis and enormyteis, defouling all thingis  
 be lustis and filth, with mekill vnhap and dishoneste he regnit  
 vj 3eris. Nocht yeles his goverment to diuersß crymynal persons  
 was commendabill, quhilkis crynyt nowther reproche of  
 honour nor fame bot be hope of lukir and gere apprisit the  
 enorme lustis of yare prince. Syne turnyng him to auarice  
 he grew fast haldand, and of ingine illiberale to conquess gere

Fo. xxxvi. be vn honest wayis, and yarefore he was vnthankfull to his  
 mynȝeons quhilk alanerlie in hope of rewarde on him awatit.  
 M.L.T. 100b But reuerence owder of God or man, he dispuleȝete diuerß  
 his liegis be fenezete causis baith of landis, gudis, insicht,  
 bestiall and vthir store. In samekle furie finalie he was  
 involuit ȝat panielie he fosterit lymmaris and fortifijt all  
 offenß apoun ȝe pepill and of reif and ruberie was partici-  
 pant. By thir he did diuer vthir crymes, nocht worthy to be  
 reportit; he maid vnlefull lawis, menyng na thing bot vilite  
 and abhominacion, ȝat to euery man mycht be lefull to wed 20  
 mony wyiffis at plesure, sum vi, sum x, according to ȝare  
 substance. The wyiffis of commouns suld be with the nobillis  
 vsit in commoun; with ane madyn ȝe lard of ȝe grund suld  
 haue carnale consuetude the first nycht of hir mariage.  
 How beit be vertuofß princis the vthir twa lawis schortlie  
 ȝareeftir war abrogate, ȝit ȝis law be na labouris mony  
 ȝeris following mycht be removit, sa mekill ȝis contagioß  
 pest infectit ȝe myndis of ȝong gallȝeartis of heretage. Ffinalie  
 King Malcolme Canmore, be persuasioun of his spouß, Sanct  
 Margaret, (as in tyme mare oportune salbe schawin), rescindit  
 aluterlie ȝis law, becaus to the iniuris baith of God and man  
 it was pronuncit, and at ane virginis mariage ordanit ane  
 goldin penny, (now callit ane Marchete), be gevin to ȝe  
 larde for redempcioun of ȝe virginis honeste, to salf hir vnde- 30  
 florit. This be ȝe pepill of Scotland ȝit in oure dayis is obseruit.  
 Bot to Evene lat ws returne. Quhen be brute of his mysgiding,  
 his enormyteis and vicis in eris of ȝe pepill war divulgate,  
 the nobillis, irking of sa mony and dampnabill crymeȝ to  
 regne in ȝare prince, and dedenȝeing ȝat ane monstoure  
 effemynate, gevin to gredy auarice, thift and reiff, erare  
 ane laronie and rubare ȝan ane governoure, suld vse autorite  
 abone ȝame, lufing iustice and equite, haistelie contrare him  
 conspirit. The king, knawing ȝe conspiracioun, with sobir  
 M.L.T. 101 power, but ordoure, occurring contrare ȝame to fecht, at the  
 first ionyng, of all his folkis destitute, without bargane  
 become in handis of inemyis randerit and was depute to 40  
 warde. Syne at convencioun of the nobillis was thoct ex-  
 pedient be all ȝare vocis ȝat Cadallane suld be governoure



and ye king suld fra his crowne and kinrik be degradit and Fo xxxvi.  
 haldin in perpetuall presoun. And sua in effect was done, euery man thinking for his demeritis he had deseruit ye samyn. On ye nycht following ane zong pert lymmure murdrist ye king in presoun, beleiffing to Cadallane his dede suld be richt plesing. Bot of his opinioun he was dissaut, and at command of Cadallane for yis hevy cryme in presens of ye multitude he was condampnit to ye gebate. Of King Evene yis was ye fyne, the vij zere of his regne in presoun strangillit, in ye xxxij zere of Augustus Cesare, of Romane princis maist fortunate and ewroß. Incontinent to him succedit Metellane,  
 50 (nevo to King Eder of his broder Carrane, becaus Evene had na successioun), of all Scottis princis before his tyme maist humane and clement. During his regne ye kinrik be na civill weris nor be strangearis was molestit. With felicite all his affaris war convoyit. He was of grete clemence towart his liegis and of devote observance towart ye goddis and kirkmen, yare servandis, as than of ye fulich gentillite was ye maner. He gaif grete cure yat ye abhominabil lawis of King Evene suld be abrogate, of quhilk laitly is made menciou, bot, vincust be importunite of ye barons reiosing to haue ye renzeis louß of lustis and venereane actis, to be fre fra trubill fra his purpoiß he desistit. To Kymbalyne, king of Britouns, about yis tyme come ye Romane ambassiatouris to thank  
 60 him yat eftir his coronacioun he had to ye senatouris and Romane pepill schawin him freyndly and obseruit fidelite, and suld schaw how all ye warld was now peciabill, all naciouns M.L.T. 101b in euery regioun had rest and pece, like as neuer mycht be rememberit afore, and suld exhort yat, be exempill of vthir humane naciouns, yai suld, with vthir nychtboure princis and pepill, stand in gude pece and suld remove all divisioun, domestic and exteriour. For it mycht conduce to ye felicite of Augustus Cesare, yat now had almaist throw all ye warld stanchit and repressit weris, and siclike to ye vtilite and eiß of ye Romane pepill and all vthir naciouns. Alsua be command of Augustus Empriour ye ambassiatouris come to Metellane of Scotland, schawing him in ye samyn sorte and exhorting him to thir premisß. Metellane, be ye Romane

- Fo. xxxvi. ambassiatouris, hering how to all mankynde was grantit pece and ye pepill in extreme partis of ye orient had requirit ye societe and freyndschip of ye senatouris and Romane pepill, and had send to ye Empriour Augustus crownys, wrocht of fyne gold, with riche giftis and rewardis, fering ye maieste of ye Romane emprioure and ye grete name of ye Romane pepill and senatouris, desiring be legacions and obseruance to conquest yare beneuolence, he send to Augustus Cesare and his domestic goddis in Capitole, certane presentis to be offerit in his name and his pepill of Scotland. Quharethrow he conquest ferme amyte and freyndschip of ye emprioure and senatouris, obseruit to him and his kinrik mony 3eris. Of thir legaciouns Strabo, famouss outhoure, cunninggly and elegantlie writis in his buke, intitulit "ye Situacioun of ye Warld," quhare he discrivis ye situacioun of Britan, the figure and maneris of ye inhabitantis, 70
- Fo. xxxvii. and how Cesare twyiss come in Albion, vnder ye name of Britane comprehending the haille ile, conforme to ye maner of Romane writaris. In yis sorte all naciouns liffing at tranquillite and pece, Iesus Criste, oure Lorde, gevare of pece and makare, King of all creaturis, was borne of ye glorioß Virgine Marie, dochter of Ioachim and Anna in Jowrie, within ye ciete of Bethleem. To yis place of his birth, be voce of angell, come ye hirdis and the thre kingis, (monyst be ye celestially sterne), fra ye orient, with na litill haist and, as testifyis ye Scripture, diuersß myrakillis and strange at birth of oure Saluatoure war kythit. This haly and halesum birth was in ye tent 3ere of Metellanis regne and of Cesare Augustus ye xlij 3ere, ffra ye begynnynge of ye Scottis regne iij<sup>e</sup> xxx, 10 ffra origine of ye warld v<sup>m</sup> j<sup>e</sup> xcix 3eris. Thareeftir regnit Metellane certane 3eris in grete pece and tranquillite, to nane iniurioß, bot to euery man thankfull, and was notable throw all Albion, be brute of his nobilite and fame. Ffinalie deceissit yis prince in all his dayis peciable, of his regne ye xxxij 3ere, of ye Virginis birth xxix, quhilk was of Tiberius, Romane impriour, ye xiiii 3ere. Ffra begynnynge of ye regne of Eder to yis tyme flurist cunning men at Rome: Virgill, of all poetis writaris in Latyne toung prince and cheif, Orace and Ovide,

cunnyng in poetry, Cicero oratoure quhilk, (as writis Plinius), Fo. xxxvii.  
 20 had ane ingine eleuate abone ye cast of all vtheris, Marcus Varro, be jugement of ye senatouris maist cunnyng, Strabo, maist diligent discriber how ye warld is situate, Titus Liuius and Salust (maist facund writaris of historijs), quhilkis, be mekill eloquence and erudicioun abone ye commoun ingine of vthir men, put ye Romane actis to ye posterite in remembrance. By thir war diuerß vtheris philosophouris and oratouris, excellent in doctrine and vertew. Trewlie ye tyme requirit ye samyn quhen first ye lorde of science and vertewe was sene incarnate in erde and, (as sais ye prophete), amang mortall men conuersit. Bot lat ws continewe the historie of oure nacioun as we began. ℥

How to Metellane succedit Caratake; how Gwidere M.L.T. 102b  
 king of Britouns, conspirt contrare Romanis, and how be the Emprioure Claudius Aulus Planctius and Sensius his colleig war directit to repreß yare rebelloun.  
Cap° viij°

**M**etellane of his body had na successioun left becaus in his life he had sene yame laid in graif; vthir wayis he was  
 30 ane prince happy and fortunate. For this cauß the crowne of Scotland come to Caratake, lorde of Brigancia, son of illustir Cadallane, (of quhais fidelite to ye commoun weill is mencion maid afore), and nevo to King Metellane, of Europeia his sister. This Caratake, flurissing in pussance and riches, gaderit quhen vnder Metellane in his age he was gouernoure, excellit all vtheris nobillis within Albioun and, resaving princelie autorite, eftir all was in perfectioun and ordoure, he left na region of Scotland vnvesyit. With ane stark armye he went to the Ilis, becaus he was aduertist the kingis president was amang yame trublit. Nocht without grete laubouris he dantit  
 40 ye attemptatis of Insulanis and punyst with dede the begynnaris of trubill. The king, having ye Ilis pecifyit, returnyng to Albion, passit to Carictoun, cheif ciete in Siluria, (now Kyle, Carric ℥). Ffra yis ciete apperandlie ye cuntre of Carrik

Fo. xxxvii. nixt to Galloway tuke ye name. In yis ciete was Caratak borne, nurist and brocht vp. Affectit herefore to yis place, in ye samyn he remanit mekill yareeftir and augmentit and plennyst it sa weill yat of all yai regiouns it was ye cheif and best. Of this ciete writis Ptolome of Alexandria, Verymwnd and vtheris apprisit authouris. Quhill in Scotland yir thingis war done, deceissit Kymbelyne, king of Britouns, quhilk in his youth to Cesare Augustus was maist familiare and dere and perseverit constantlie at ye fidelite and amyte of Romanis.

M.L.T. 103 Be vocis of ye pepill Gwiderius syne in his place succedit. 50  
 This zong man, ferß and kene, pecifyng his kinrik, hevily weyit ye pepill of Britan, naturalie borne to liberte, suld be in sic sorte to Romanis thirllit yat to yame nocht onelie yai obeyit bot als war contrinit to mak *seruice*. Erectit herefore in esperance to recover ancient liberte, at convencioun of nobillis, be ane lang proposicion, he plenezeit ye iniuris of Romanis becaus yare garnisons occupijt all ye strenthis of Britan; thay ressaut and resset rebellis quhilk amang yame war intertenyt, to ye skaith of ye Britane kinrik, nor restorit nocht ye plegeis, like as yare compromitt proportit, bot compellit yame spend yare dayis *with* grete dishonoure at Rome, with mony vthir (almaist infinite) iniuris, in hurte of ye kinrik and pepill of Britane. Ffynalie, he concludit yai 60  
 suld rebell nor langare suld nocht bere ye zoke of *seruitute*. Amang yis grete multitude the king reheirsing yir *premissis*, the fervoure of nobillis and *commouns* in yare vult apperit and apou his wordis followit glaid and ioyus contynance. Haistelie yai made to harnes and sone yareeftir rebelling in all partis, cruelly yai persewit Romanis. During yis trubill all persouns obeysant ye Romane name war slane yat owther be flicht or strenthis war nocht salfit. Gwidere syne contractit ane copioß armye, tending to haue ye Romane garnisoun in euery *parte* of Britane extermynate or ye conspiracioun mycht at Rome be schewin. Claudius Empriour, certifyit of sic novaciouns in Britan, how beit he devisit mak ye expedicioun apoun 70  
 Britan in propir person, zit he send to Britan twa nobill men of ye ancient Romane blude, Aulus Planctius, Cneus Sensius, with ordinance and mwnycioun, to occur *with* diligence to

this apperand dangere, and dant all brulezeis *within* the ile. Fo. xxxvii.  
 Planctius and Sensius arriving at ye coist of Britane nixt to  
 Gallia and landing yare army in the ile, first be strang mwncy- M.L.T. 103b  
 cioun stuffit all fortalicis obeying Romanis. Syne thinking  
 yai suld nocht remane in strenthis as men besegeit, apoun  
 ye feildis yai lugeit yare soldeouris in cumpanyis and bandis  
 and yare chesit yare camp, yat gif yai suld debate with inemyis  
 yai suld be reddy to resist all yare invasiouns. Gwiderius,  
 king, sone yareeftir *having* his folk in reddines, be ane batell  
 ferß and kene resavit Romanis. Certane tyme be duchtines  
 80 of athir partie equalie was fochtin, ffor Britouns feirslie for  
 yare liberte faucht and Romanis be practik of were for yare Fo. xxxviii.  
 impire and lyvis. Ffinalie towart Romanis ye victorie inclinit.  
 Britouns, nocht mekill harmyt, fled quhen Phebus begouth  
 declyne. yareeftir followit frequent and ythand barganis,  
 nocht without felloun slauchter, baith of Romanis and Britouns.  
 In sic actis spendit was ye somer and in wynter ye Romane  
 armye remanit in yare schelis and ye garnison in strenthis.

How fra Britan war ambassiatouris directit to  
 Scotland for supple ; of yare proposicioun ; of yare  
 ansuere, and devise of ye king. Cap<sup>o</sup> ix<sup>o</sup>

**I**n this ilk tyme be Gwiderius and his counsell ambassatouris  
 to King Carratak war directit and, quhen to *presens* yai  
 war admittit, ye principale to quham was *committit* ye charge  
 said: "Maist illustre prince, it is resonabill yat quha sekis  
 strangearis with refuge, (as now is our caiß), gif nowder gude  
 10 dedis, meritis nor amyte intercedes with yame fra quham yai  
 seik supple, yan yai suld first propone sic thingis as may  
 conduce to ye honeste of yame fra quham yai require succours  
 and offer to yame equivalent, quhen necessite requiris, yat  
 sua yare desiris may be mare graciouslie impetrate. Sen sua  
 is, we ambassiatouris of King Gwider and Britan pepill ar M.L.T. 104  
*cummyn* to 3ow to preif yir premisß and humilie to implore  
 3oure supple and help, becaus be hevvy weris we ar surprisit  
 and ar destitute of all amyte and supple, 3ow and Pichtis

**Fo. xxxviii.** onlie except. It is force to grant we haue ye Romane pepill innemyis, daly provoking ws be extreme *damnage*, and yai ar potent in pussance and practik of were abone ye estimacioun of man. Nochtwithstanding, we beleif yai may be vincust. Ffor *Cesare*, ye maist strang chiftane of Romanis, be vassalage 20 and supple of zoure progenitouris was expellit zoure boundis and ouris, how beit to him be force of armys all Gallia, Germanye, Spanze, Grece, Asia, Egipt and Affrik war subdewit, and thir Romanis, tending now reif oure rowmys, skantlie ar ye remanis and refuse of Cesaris armye. And, doutles, to vincuſt yame ze sall haue ye mare glore, (oure goddis to zou assisting), yat with sic arrogance yai avant yame lordis and conquerouris of ye warld, and in contempcioun callis zou the refuse and extreme pepill of ye erde. To expell inemyis yis ile, (sen oure pussance is nocht sufficient), we require help, maist illustir prince, of ye and thy liegis. Gif as we beleve ze be memorative of ald amyte and wil fortify oure affaris, tending to rewyne, doutles ze defend ane actioun, *commodioſ* and honest, quharethrow ze sall haue perpetuall 30 lawde and name; ffirst, becauſ to ye pepill repelling and nocht inferring iniuris ze assist and in yis appering danger employis zoure pussance to deliuer ws, zoure auld freyndis, fra fere of oure terribil fayis, quhen in defence of liberte and native goddis ze offer zou to ye feild. Na thing yan yis may be excogitate mare honorable in yis erde. Attoure, ze sall deliuer zoure awne realme and persouns fra grete dangere becauſ yir dispitfull inemyis, attempting to subiect ws first, to prepare ane reddy way to invoid zoure kinrik,

**M.L.T. 104b** salbe throw zoure supple and assistance drevyn fra this ile, to ws all *commoun* habitacioun. Sen sua is, maist douchty campions, gif ze provide ye weill of yis kinrik and zoure persouns, ze suld strenth and garnyſ ye samyn 40 with al mwncyioun contrare ye Romane armye. This ze may do eselie gif, *with* ws and oure nychtbouris Pichtis, diligentlie addressing for were, ze will pas to batell contrare oure *commoun* inemyis. We dar afferme yis expedioun sall pertene na les to ye weill of zou yan ws, becaus gif Romanis vincuſt ws in batell, spuleze ws of substance, thirll ws

to yare domynion and mak Britane as ane province, (as doutles yai devise), yai salbe mare potent to conquest and subdew  
 30w to yare senezorie. Herefore Romanis be batall mon be  
 persewit quhil strenth with ws remanis, quhil athir pepill,  
 50 be fortifying of vthir, may be mare stark, mare prudent and  
 mare abill to resist to iniuris of inemyis. Ffor gif all ye  
 pepill of Albioun wald contract yare power, the strenth of  
 Romanis suld decreß sa mekill, as yare pussance be vnion  
 and accesß war fortifijt. Quharefore we persuade, exhortis  
 and, gif ze will suffir, we pray, lat ye fortitude of Britouns,  
 Scottis and Pichtis concurand, as gude freyndis, anarme ws  
 to debate oure liberte, as efferis freyndle naciouns, to resist  
 yis apperand skaith and dangeræ. Ffor gif swa aventure yat  
 we be vincust, (quhilkis oure goddis defend), it sal be to ws  
 na reproch, becaus nocht be ane nacioun bot be pussance and  
 ordinance of ye hail world we ar oureset. Gif we tryvmpe,  
 60 (as our iust actioun persuadis), ze sall haue na leß glore yan  
 we, and nocht be Romanis onelie, bot be all vthir naciouns,  
 we sall in tyme cuming be crynit." Quhen said war yir  
 premisß, King Caratake in yir wourdis ansuerit: "Gif ze had  
 nocht refusit oure supple, nyctbouris and freyndis of Britane,  
 be gude will offerit quhen Iulius Cesare, Romane imprioure,  
 iniustlie assailzete 30w with batell, it had nocht now bene  
 necessare to 30w implore vvir naciouns for succourß nor to  
 ws to tak our harnes contrare sa potent inemyis, ffor with  
 oure power conionit yai had bene lichtlie defate and we mycht  
 without fere of inemyis haue had rest and eiß now in Albion.  
 Nochtpeles it is bettir, (as sais ye proverb), to vnderstand late  
 na neuer. On nede now we mon consult how ye appering  
 70 Romane weris may be evadit and how to ye commoun perrell  
 may be remedit, and nocht how we mycht sum tyme haue  
 debarrit yare iniuris. ze pleneze, nyctbouris of Britan, yat  
 yis were iniustlie to 30w is inferrit be ye maist opulent nacioun  
 of ye world, and desirus abone mesure to reif rowmes and haue  
 domynion abone vtheris; how beit to yame, be 30ur awne  
 culp, ze war subiectit and made seruice mony zeris. Be  
 intestyne sedicioun and nyctboure feid ze ar perturbit, and  
 sa lang as amang 30w it has place, 3oure kinrik may neuer

Fo. XXXVIII.

M.L.T. 105

Fo. XXXVIII. be at liberte. Be ye Romane garnison occupijt ar zoure  
 mwnicions of London, zork and vthir maist nobill cieteis of  
 Britan; the feildis ar plennyst with ye Romane armyis and  
 campis, and we ar aduertist how ye Romane legiouns and  
 supple of vthir naciouns *with* Claudius Cesare and Vespasiane,  
 of ye ancient Romane blude, (made colleig to ye empriour 80  
 Fo. XXXIX. quhen zour rebellion was knawing), ar to arrive haistelie at  
 zour kinrik. And sen ze ar be diuerß calamyteis and batellis  
 brokin, how beit all ye pepill of Albion wald to zow assist,  
 doutles ze may *nocht* ouresett sa mony potent inemyis nor far  
 zoure boundis debar samekle force and violence, without ye  
 goddis to Romanis wald be aduersant. Herefore I think yis  
 civil division amang zow suld first be slokynnyt and abstenit  
 fra batell and attempt with all zoure power to haue yis apperand  
 were *contrare* ws and zow transferrit in to Gallia. yat yis  
 M.L.T. 105b mare *commodioslie* may be, we mon vse ane policye and solist  
 ye Flemyngeis, Treviris, Maduoß, Morynis, (now Terewanis),  
 Newsteris, (now Northmannis), Lesouris, Armorikis, (now  
 Litill Britanze), and all vthir naciouns of Gallia and yare 10  
 nychtbouris, be tyranny and dominacioun of Romanis iniurit,  
 to failze first fra ye fidelite of Romanis, and quhen ye con-  
 spiracioun is maid, lat ws all togiddir with ane purpoiß inuaid  
 Romanis. And to yai naciouns to quham the pridefull  
 tyrannye of Romanis is maist odioß, lat ws promyt furnessing  
 of men, schippis and *vyir* *necesseris* for were, and bynd with  
*yaim* societe. Gif we mycht drawe yis cast, Romanis sall  
 apoun Gallia turne all yare ordinance, *contrare* ws Albianis  
 devisit. Be yis way zoure caiß and ouris respiring, we may fra  
 invasiouns of inemyis be deliuerit, (this zere at ye leist), and  
 mare eselie provide ye weill of all pepil duelling within this ile  
 and to tyme mare oportune reserue all *vyir* caißß. Giff 20  
 fortune vthir wayis has providit yat be na way we may evaid  
 thir perrellus weris, I think all ye inhabitantis Albioun suld be  
 attanis assemblit to stand in batell quhil oure life may lest,  
 and regard oure live bot litill in compare of oure glore and  
 honoure. *Contrare* nane vthir nacioun fechting for oure  
 liberte, iuris and ceremonis of oure goddis, may we de with  
 mare honoure yan *contrare* Romanis. This we think best and



we ar resolute to offer ws erare to deid þan to be bondis and sclavis to Romanis." Be þis orange the Britane ambassiatouris, in esperance of bettir fortune erectit, laulie thankit þe king and  
 30 his nobillis þat þai wer sa kyndillit to expone þare persouns to all chance of batell in defence of þare liberte and commoun weill, beseking þe goddis omnipotent to grant þe victorie  
 þat sa honestlie for þare liberte and lawis war determyt to de. Fo. xxxix. M.L.T. 106

How fra Britane oratouris war directit to solist the inhabitantis of Gallia to conspire, and how Guiderius of Britane was compellit to fecht and was slane.  
 Cap<sup>o</sup> x<sup>o</sup>

Fra thyne departing þe ambassiatouris, how sone þai come to Guiderius, þai reportit þe ansuere of Caratake and his nobillis of Scotland according þare desire. Thare devise was commendit and messagis war send to Fflandris, Newsteris, Terewane, Armorik and vtheris naciouns apoun þe coist of Gallia, to persuade conspiracioun contrare Romanis, and allegit þat na thing efferit les to pepill euer before at liberte  
 þan *seruitute*, to haue þare lawis and iuris alterit and to Romane ceremonis be subdewit. Oure pridefully and with grete crudelite Romanis vsit þare domynyon, pynyng plegeis  
 40 of naciouns subiectit with all pane and tormentis. Daylie new inuensiouns of importabill *seruitute* war excogitate and thir invenciouns war sa dishonest and vyle þat ony dede suld þareto be preferrit in defenß of liberte, without quhilk na nacioun suld desire in þis eird to lif; ffor to liff in thirlage suld *nocht* be callit ane life. Thay suld herefore rebell contrare Romanis with all þare pussance, mak for were and throw all Gallia in castellis and strenthis sla the Romane garnisoun. The kingis of Albion suld largely furnys þame schippis, men, money, armoure and al vthir mwncyiouns for weris. The men of were, quhilk come with Planctius, in daly iuperteis be þe cuntre men war sa assailþete þat þai had loist all þare nobillis and horßmen, and with grete myscheif owthir war on force drevyn to þe sey or chaissit to castellis. Þai had now bot few  
 strenthis quhilk be strang assegeis war assailþeit; Romanis M.L.T. 106b

Fo. xxxix. fra ye assegearis war daly desiring tretie and pece, and doutles  
 yai suld haistelie be all randerit to Britouns. Herefore yai 50  
 suld haue ferme esperance gif yai wald anarme yame for  
 batell and to ye samyn effect inflam yare nychtbouris, yat  
 all ye Romane nacioun with grete dishonoure suld be expellit  
 Britane and Gallia. The Tyrewanis, (to quham first come ye  
 Britane legacioun), desirous to haue yare liberte, refusit nocht  
 yir efferis. Bot in sa grete mater quhat suld be ansuerit yai  
 knewe nocht quhil yai had assayit ye myndis of vyir nycht-  
 bouris naciouns. Quharefore yai prayit yis devise suld be  
 secrete, ffor gif it war divulgate yare plegeis suld suffir grete  
 punycioun. Thay suld pass to ye porte callit Itium (now  
 Calice), fering yat be yare repare and tary Romanis suld of  
 ye Gallis haue sum suspicioun. Thare yai suld pas yare tyme 60  
 quhill be secrete messagis yai mycht be certifyit gif to yare  
 nychtbouris of Tornay, Northmandie, Bowace, Ambianis, (now  
 Amyanis), and vthir naciouns of Gallia yis postulacioun war  
 plesing. On ye morne ye Britan ambassiatouris fra ye ciete  
 of Terwane reterit to Calice, quhare certane tyme yai taryit  
 ye responß of Gallis, and in ye present tyme, quhill diuers  
 legaciouns amang ye Gallis to and fra war send, to Guiderius  
 king, was schewin how Planctius fra ye camp had brocht ye  
 Romane armye to ye plane and invadit all regiouns to ye  
 king assisting, distroying all be fyre and swerde. Guiderius,  
 knowing ye caisß, was contrinit occur in meting Romanis,  
 waling first amang all his folkis ane armye. How sone yai 70  
 war in sight of innemyis, in oistis, elike distant fra vthir, he  
 distribute ye pepill of Cambre and Walis quhilk inhabitis ye  
 M.L.T. 107 parte of Britan opposite to Litill Britanze, in ane poynt  
 having respect to ye occident, togiddir with the Tegenis,  
 Icenis, Labwnis (thir pepill dwelt for ye tyme in Derbyschire,  
 Loncastre and zork), with ye Candalis, quhilk zit inhabitis  
 Kendale, how beit ye terme be sum parte alterit; syne com-  
 mandit yat with cartis and sleddis all his armye suld be parkit,  
 except ye fore entre, yat be flicht yai suld lippin na refuge.  
 In ye cartis wemen suld be placit *with* gude wourdis to walkin  
 ye curage of ye fechtaris and suld bittirlic ban ye flearis.  
 Planctius with thre hoistis movit towart Britouns and quhen 80

his armye herd ye awfull blast of trumpet to ioyne ye feild, Fo. XL.  
 sa sodanelie and with sic feirßnes yai assalezete Britouns yat  
 archeris to spend yare arrowis apoun Romanis had na space.  
 Britouns herefore, denwding yame of bowis, faucht *with*  
 swerdis, wemen with felloun schowtis exhorting ye men, (*with*  
 yame sum parte of wemen myxt stoutlie faucht), yat douchtelie  
 yai suld deliuer yame and yare barnis fra *seruitute* of Romanis.  
 Ffollowit ane scharp and kene bargane. Ffinalie, Romanis  
 be multitude and practik of were ouresett Britouns and, efter  
 Guiderius in ye vantgarde was slane, ye remanent gaif ye bak.  
 Wemen in ye cartis be preiß of flearis war opprest. Nor yai  
 desistit nocht to fle quhil yai war impeschit be ye ryver of  
 10 Garieme, distant nere vj mylis fra ye feild, quhare sum con-  
 fiding in yare corporall strenth swam ye flude. Vtheris be  
 botis and cowbillis evadit slauchter. To Romanis was yis  
 victory litill plesand throw loiß of Cneus Sensius, chiftane,  
*with* grete nowmer of Romane nobillis. Of yis vnchancye  
 batell the Gallis certifijt, yai left all esperance to recovir yare  
 liberte. The ambassiatouris at Calice, awating ye consent of  
 ye Gallis, frustrate of yare purpoiß, to Britan returnyt. Thir  
 premisß of Guiderius, king, Cneus Sensius, and Planctius, M.L.T. 107b  
 men of ye ancient Romane dignite, fra Godofred, writare of  
 Britane historyis, Veremwnd, *Schir* Iohnne Campbell, Cor-  
 nelius Tacitus and Ewtropius ar collectit.

How ye Emprioure Claudius and Vespasiane  
 arrivit at Britan; how Britanis to thame war  
 randerit, and of ye clemence of Vespasiane.

Cap° xj°

20 **S**hortlie herefter the Emprioure Claudius and Vespasiane,  
 sane nobill man quham he tuke colleig in ye empire, (as  
 writis Armolaus Barbarus), at Sluce pulling vp salis, with  
 copioß nowmer of Romane legiouns and supple of vthir  
 naciouns, without difficill saling arrivit at Britan. Of his  
*cuming* inhabitantis certifijt in all cieteis, townys and strenthis  
 quhilkis latelie had fochtin contrare Planctius and Sensius,

Fo. XL. Romane legatis, gretelie war agast. Incontinent in counsell  
 yai concludit yai wald to ye empriour direct ambassiatouris  
 to schaw yat all attemptatis movit contrare Romanis be  
 sinister counsel war done, yai war prompt and parate of  
 iniuris to mak satisfacioun, and wald to ye Romane lawis  
 obtempir. The empriour hering yare legacioun incontinent  
 desirit plegeis, chargeing ye nobillis of Britouns at day assignit 30  
 convene. Gif yai refusit, he schorit to persew yame quhil yai  
 wer fynalie extermynate. Plegeis war deliuerit as desirit.  
 ye emprioure and ye Britan nobillis at day prefixt, denwde of  
 wapynnys and armoure, obeyit his *command* at Londoun.  
 Swa was yis ciete namyt be King Lude and ye ald name of  
 Trynovant deletit. The emprioure demanding quhat yai  
 pretendit yat nocht alanerlie had brokin thare fidelite, sworne  
 be sempiternale goddis to be obseruit, bot als, without provo-  
 cacioun, yai had contrare Romanis movit weris, ye nobillis  
 of Britan, prostrate before his fete, with mony teris confessit  
 M.L.T. 108 they had falezete, and enrageit in furie, and be ye dedelie  
 batell and iuste iugement of goddis had resaut punycioun  
 of yare furie. Quharefore yai besocht he wald haue piete of  
 yame, myserabill creaturis, sua afflictit be ye goddis, and  
 resaued yame to his fidelite of new and put to thame sic chargis 40  
 of seruitute as he plesit, testifying ye inmortal goddis, (quhilk  
 be huge slauchter had latelie revengeit yare rebellion), yat,  
 gif in tyme cuming thare band war violate or ony skaith be  
 yame devisit contrare Romanis, yai suld apoun yame and  
 yare kinrik bring al *dammage* mycht yareeftir follow. Sum  
 Romanis persuadit ye emprioure to revenge the dissate of  
 yis tresonable nacioun and in *presens* of ye multitude put the  
 cheif conspiratouris to dede, vthir wayis Britouns at felice  
 of Romanis mycht nocht be contenit. Bot Vaspasiane be  
 resonabill persuasions exhortit ye emprioure to clemence,  
 becaus ane prince, denude of grace, mycht wele be ferit bot  
 neuer with subdittis lufit. Attoure he alleget it pertentit to  
 ye Romane maieste to spare pepill to yame subiectit and 50  
 defend yame fra iniuris, nocht to molest yame with *cummeris*  
 bot be protectouris gif inemyis wald inuaid. Sua was conquest  
 the Romane senezeory, and be sic graciofs wais, and be nane

vthir sorte, mycht it lang endure. Be ye tymoß wourdis of Fo. XL. Vespasiane the empriouris mynde was sa sett fra vengeance and wraik, yat he desirit erare be namyt ane gracioß prince yan revengeoure of iniuris. Syne with ye Britane nobillis he devisit thingis concernyng ye administracioun of ye kinrik. Ffirst, be strate condiciouns resaving yame to fidelite of newe, he create Arbitrage, (broder germane to Guiderius, in batell latelie slane), king of Britane, for ye tyme prince of Walis and Tegenis, yat of princelie dignite in yare awne blude yai suld nocht be defraudit; and continewit Aulus Planctius in M.L.T. 108b  
60 his lieutenandry; syne made Marcus Trebellius resaver of ye 3erelie tribute. To yir he gave in charge to stuff with stark garnysoun all cieteis and strenthis within ye ile, to euey persoun equalie minister iustice, conserve ye Britouns at rest and eifs and, sa fer as to yame pertenit, defend yame fra all invasioun and iniuris off Scottis and Pichtis, nycthoure naciouns, quham he herd war pepill hardy and stout in batell and impacient of seruitute. To yame yai suld nocht vnprovokit move were or batell. Giff it war force to fecht, yai suld be vigilant baith at hame and in weris and consult euer to conseruacioun of ye Romane Impire, memorative na mare to conserue Britouns at fidelite of Romanis than to augment ye boundis of yare senezeorye; syne convenyng before him and Vespasiane ye nobillis of Britan, benynglie exhortit yai suld  
70 at ye Romane faith constantlie remane and be memorative of calamyteis and myscheif latelie resaut be ye Romane armye bot erare be iust punycion of goddis for fidelite violate. Thay suld consult apoun ye weill of yare gudis, wyiffis and childer best belufit. Romanis to yame suld be gude lordis and maisteris, (bot erare tendir faderis and protectouris), sua yai wald obey yare senezeorie. He nor Romane senatouris desirit of yame nocht ellis. In yis sorte quhen ye appoyntment was dressit, licence was gevin to departe. The Britane nobillis, at departing, to Vespasiane made grete thankis yat be his convoying and counsell nocht alanerlie Britouns bot als vthir naciouns salfly war conservit. This benyngnite of Vespasiane, (as diuerß haldis), was ye begynnnyng of his chancy aventuris and tryumphale victorie sone thareeftir following.

Fo. XL.  
M.L.T. 109

How Claudius werit apoun Orknay; of ye com-  
moditeis of ye cuntre, and how having the king  
captive he tryumphit on ye Orknayis.

Cap° xij°

**H**erefter the Emprioure Claudius providing yat without  
presoneris and blude of inemyis he suld nocht returne 80  
Fo. XLI. to Rome, yat yarethrow his tryumphale suld be les glorios  
yan he belevit, inflammyt alanerlie be desire of victorie, he  
devisit *with* awfull ordinance vesy ye Ilis of Orknay, ye extreme  
and vtmost of ye occiane, allegiand ye Orknayis, (quham he  
belevit be sobir bargane *mycht* be vincust), had in ye weris  
precedent assistit to ye Albianis contrare Romanis. Syne  
within few dayis furnist in all necessaris for ye expedioun  
apoun Orknay, and ordering all his affaris in Britane, takand  
with him plegeis, fyndand fare wynd and gude weddir for ye 10  
sail, ffra Britan he departit towart Orknay. Quhen he  
approchit to ye ilis, be contrare tydis in Pichtland Firth, in  
stark stremys rynnnyng betuix ye promontoure of Dwne and  
Orknay, naroly he evadit drownyng. Ffinalie with grete  
laubouris, *nocht* without dangere of his liffe, he wan ye land  
of Orknay. Na man in ye ile quhare he first arrivit was sene,  
ffor the inhabitantis, (quhilk at *coming* of Romanis ran to  
ye coist syde), war affrayit be multitude of ye navyn and fled  
fra ye sey, lurkand in cavernys and cavis amang craggis.  
Leiffand yis ile as denude of pepill, with his army he salit  
to ye Ile of Pomonia, (now Kirkwale), quhare landing his  
folkis and waling ane convenient place for ye camp, he tuke  
with him Vespasiane to ane hicht to explore the nature of ye  
ilis. Quhen be skurreouris he was certifyit the ilis aboundit 20  
abone estimacioun in schepe, nolt, hors, gate, cwnyngis,  
M.L.T. 1096 swannys, crannys, herons, pluvaris, capons, geiß, dowis and  
mony vthir sortis siclike, for ye vse of men; and how in  
Orknay was nowder wolf, fox, taid, serpent nor vthir noysum  
vnbeist; the fertill ground producit cornys of diuers sortis  
quharewith ye feildis war plennyst for ye *present*; in ye sey,  
beside aboundit fisch, quhilk be litill lauboure *mycht* be takin;

inhabitantis grewe weill in age, liffit mony yeris, passit yare Fo. XLI.  
 tyme with gude heill of persoun, and yarefore vse of medi-  
 cinaris was almaist amang yame vnknawin; he ammervellit  
 mekill and thocht yat yē Ilis of Orknay for fertilite, tem-  
 30 perate and haesum are, mycht be preferrit to mony vthir  
 regions be testifying of famouß authouris apprisit. On yē  
 morne yē emprioure, be certane captivis of rurall bodijs, was  
 certijft within xij mylis fra yē Romane camp was ane castell,  
 be craft and naturall situacioun strenthy and strang. In the  
 samyn was Ganus, king of Orknay, the quene and his barnys.  
 Tharefore he send ane cumpanye of weremen to assege yē  
 fortalice. Romanys apoun yare vyage saw apoun ane hill  
 beside, to yē nowmer of ij<sup>m</sup> inhabitantis quhilkis had cumin  
 fra yē ilis adiacent, cavernis and covis quhare yai had all  
 nycht lurkit. At yē strange sicht of Romanis the Orknayis  
 war affrayit. Bot Romanis persewand and Orknayis seand  
 40 na place to fle, yai tuke hardyment and with terribill schowtis  
 ruschand apoun Romanis the batell, scharp and kene ane  
 quhile was yē bargane. Ffinalie yē inhabitantis war rebutit,  
 and all for yē maist parte slane or takin. Ffew yat evadit  
 fled to yē nixt castell. Be yis victorie Romanis reiosing tran-  
 oyntit to yē castell, assailzeing it with ane strang assege.  
 Certane dayis yē garnison within be grete force sustenit yare  
 assaltis. Ffynalie, quhen nowder be yare pussance mycht  
 yai resist, nor nane esperance was to haue reskew fra nycht-  
 bouris, wilfully to Romanis yai become randerit. In yē castell  
 tane was Ganus king, yē quene and his barnis, and in irenys  
 led to yē schippis. In yē castell Claudius certane dayis remanit,  
 50 and vesyit yē vthir ilis. Sone eftir, findand wynd and tyde  
 convenient, with his armye fra thyne he departit and on yē  
 aucht day arrivit at Calice, quhare Romanis landing, becaus  
 be batellis, weris, walking and saling, yai war wery, be toller-  
 ance of yē empriour yai gaif yame certane days to rest. In  
 yis sort the Orknay weris fynissit, be ane licht bargane without  
 mekill blude. The Empriour Claudius to Rome returnit,  
 quhare with mekill pompe he tryumphit, having Ganus, king  
 of Orknay, his barnis and vyeris captivis, with the plegeis of  
 Britan led in tryumphe before his chariot. Of yis expedicion

Fo. XLI. made be Claudius, first in Britan, syne in Orknay, aouthouris ar Swetonius Tranquillus, Ewtropius and Bede; amang vtheris mare recent, Schir Iohne Campbell and Cornelius Hiber. This tyme ye apostill Petir fra Antioche went to 60 Italie, eftir he had constitute grete nowmer of kirkis in Asia, and in Rome preicheand ye ewangell, began ye origin of the kirk militant, and siclike was ye Assumpcion of ye gloriofs, incontamynate Virgine Marie, moder of our Saluatoure, Ihesus, to ye celestially glore in ye v zere of ye Empriour Claudius and oure Redempcion xlvij. Now to our historie lat ws returne.

How Arvirag repudiat his quene and spousit ane Romane lady; how Walis and vthir schiris contrare him conspirit, and war vincust. Capto xiiij°

Arviragus, (as said is), be authorite of ye empriour regnyng in Britane, repudiat and incarcerate his iust spoufs, Voada, sister to Caratak, king of Scotland, eftir apoun hir he had gottin ane onelie son and twa dochteris, syne be incestuofs mariage copulate to him Genissa, ane nobill Romane woman. 70 It was plane this divorce was made be slicht and polecy of Aulus Planctius, be quhais avise and counsell all thingis war done within Britan, yat quhen the affinite betuix King Caratake and Aruyrag war dissoluit, gif Britouns wald ony tyme contrare Romanis rebell, thay suld lippin na supple fra Scottis. The heris of Walis and Tegenis, (quhilkis of ye commoun weill and honoure of yare prince tuke grete cure), knowing ye repudie of ye quene, weying hevily ye lichtlynes done to yat nobill woman, euer lauboring for weill of ye Britan kinrik, and yat yare king without avise of his counsell had myxt his kyn and blude with Romanis, be mony resouns tendit persuade him 80

M.L.T. 110b

Fo. XLII. to resauie of new Voada, his derrest spoufs, quhilk mony zenis had liffit with him in iuste matrymone, and excluding ye Romane adulterare suld intertenye his lady of ye blude royall, as efferit ane princes, memorative of ye fare barnis apoun hir procreate yat to thame na thing mortall may be to men pre-



ferrit, and suld in mynde revolue quhat vtilite mycht follow Fo. XLII.  
apoun affinite *with* nychtboure naciouns gif be aventureinemyis  
wald invade, and suld be vigilant yat be flatterie of Romanis  
he suld nocht birn in wilfulnes to his awne dammage, quhare-  
throw he and his liegis mycht be seperate fra yare confederatis  
and freyndis be ane new pestilent fantasie of ane corruptit  
woman. Quhen be yir persuasiouns and diuersʒ vtheris thay  
had lang tyme in vane assayit ye kingis mynde, and be his  
10 wordis and doingis yai fand *nocht* ellis bot be plesuris of his  
new spousage he wald without respect to honeste or gude  
maneris rage in his blind affectioun, on nycht yai brak ye  
presoun and tuke ye quene and hir barnys to Walis. Arvirag,  
knowing ye caisʒ, aduertist ye nobillis of his realme how his  
liegis of Tegenis and Walis, in quhom he confidit maist and  
quhare he was borne and nurist, had dispitefully vsit apoun  
him felony, becaus with ye quene Voada he had maryit ane  
vthir Romane lady: like as to him war vnlefull to haue  
pluralite of wyiffis at his plesure, howbeit sic actis nowthir be  
ritis or lawis of Britouns war defendit. Be rage of lufe he was M.L.T. 111  
*nocht* hereto kendillit, bot erare yat Britouns suld multiply  
and increʒ in ane ferme and solid nacioun with Romanis, to  
20 quhom on nede yai behuffit obey. He besocht yame gif ye  
Tegenis and Walis wald failʒe fra him and Romanis yai suld  
defend the affaris of Britane and fidelite latelie to Romanis  
promyst. Be ye heris of Britons was ansuerit: it was nocht  
lefull to Arvirag without avise of his wyse barons to induce  
ane new lady apoun his first spouʒ; iniuris done to ye quene  
war to yame richt displesing, allegiand ye samyn thing almaist  
as did Tegenis and Walis. Arvirag, knowing how Britouns to  
him war myndit for his recent mariage, thocht na tyme to  
defer ye mater and at persuasioun of Planctius, (erare be his  
*command*), haistelie assembling his folkis, movit apoun Tegenis  
and Walis, quhilkis with na leʒ diligence contrare him gaderit  
30 power. On athir partie quhen ane stark armye was reddy,  
King Arvirag and Romanis convoyit be Planctius, chiftane,  
contrare inemyis straik ye bataill. To ye Tegenis and Walis  
was ye bargane sare and cruell, ffor sum parte of yame war  
slane and ye remanent chaissit. On ye morne Arvirag and

Fo. XLII. *ye* lieutenant Planctius war certifiȝt how contrare him and Romanis conspirit war the Icenis and Lobwnys. Thir pepill for *ye* tyme inhabit Darbyschire, Lancastre and ȝork, *with* rowmys adiacent, as before is said. Herefore Arvirag and Planctius, fering inemyis suld invade Kentschire and est *partis* of *ye* realme, devisit returne to Londoun to defend *yare* gudis within *ye* ciete. To London quhen *yai* come Planctius, confiding litill in Britons, send in Gallia for supple of twa 40 legiouns ; syne, stuffing *ye* strenthis with stark mvnycioun, passit his tyme in *ye* camp *with* the armye.

How the nobillis of Walis and *vyir* schyris condescendit *yat* to Caratake, king of Scottis, suld *ye* gouerment of *ye* weris be referrit and how he acceptit *ye* samyn. Cap° xiiij°

**Q**uhill Planctius was intent to sic thingis the heris of Walis, Tegenis and Icenis conuenit at Corymyne, (now Schrewisbery), to consult quhat best war to be done in *yis* mater sa full of trubill and danger. At *yis* conuencioun was concludit *yat* all *ye* pepill of Tigenis, Icenis and Walis, abill to bere wapynnys, *with* hail pussance contrare Romanis suld debate, owthir to expell *yame* Britane, or ellis stoutlie all atanis offer *yame* self to dede. Siclike in this conuencioun war messagis decretit to solist *ye* pepill of Cornwell, Candalis and Damonis, (occupying in auld tymes the boundis of Kendale, 50 Carlele and Durame to *ye* march of Anandale), with *yame* to be participantis. In the hervist following the chiftanis of Cornwell and Carlele, saling *ye* sey fra Cornwell deviding Walis, come to Schrewisbery, quhare *ye* ilk tyme war cumin the heris and nobillis of Candale, now Westmarland, and at conuencion pleneȝit lang and hevilie the iniuris of Romanis, blamyng *ye* inconstance and myscheant gouerment of *yare* king quhilk, contempnyng his awne nacion, desirit erare be *servand* and sclaif to Romanis *yau* be king of Britons ; concludit *with* all *yare* study and pussance to were apoun Romanis : *yai* war sa inflammyt to recovir liberte and gloure in armys as *yai* war in 60

vse afore. Syne among the nobillis was questioun to quham Fo. XLII.  
suld be *committit* ye government of yir weris, ffor euery nobill  
attemptit to reserve this prerogative to him self. Than Comws,  
grest of Walis, said: " Freyndis, we may contract lichtlie  
ane armye of oure folkis and freyndlie nychtbouris mare  
strethty yān be ony force may be resistit, sua be discipline  
and ordoure of were *our* affaris be rewlit, becaus in reule and  
ordoure standis onelie baith hono*ur* and victorie in weris. To  
ordoure and reule sa contrariof*s* ar division, debate, discorde  
of chiftanis and ambicioun of governouris yāt, quhare ony  
of yir premis*s* among weremen has place, na ordoure, band  
of amyte, nor freyndschip may be obseruit; howbeit to were-  
like discipline yir concernis maist becaus without ye samyn  
70 na victory apoun inemyis may be conquest. Quharefore all  
ambicion is to be removit, contencions and debatis slokynnit,  
and ane man, on nede, be all oure votis mon be chosin, to  
quham we all sall obtempir, and, be directioun of yis chiftane,  
yis instant were mon be dressit, gif we desire victorie and  
wald tryumphe honestlie apoun inemyis. Now sen I persave  
nane of ws in yis cais*s* sall refer to vthir, becaus diuers*s* of ws  
ar almaist equale in blude and substance, I think best, gif ye  
assent hereto, ane message be send to Caratake, cheif of  
Brigancia and king of Scottis, becaus he bure euer cruell  
haterent contrare ye Romane name, praying he will with ws M.L.T. 112  
revenge ye dispitis done to his sister Voada, him self and his  
kinrik be Arvirag, king of Britouns, and, be force of armys,  
defend ye cauf*s* of his nevo, quham ye king, his fader, be  
80 persuasioun of Romanis tendis defraude of his iuste heretage.  
The cais*s* to him be law of nature pertenis, and herefore ye Fo. XLIII.  
maist parte of Britons has contrare Arvirag conspirit, and,  
gif he will at oure request accept ye charge of yis were, the  
tutory and government of his nevo, quhill yeris of perfectioun,  
to him sal be *committit*, and we sall promytt to obtempir to  
him in yir present weris. I beleif yir premis*s* mare eselie may  
be impetrate at ye king of Scotland, (sua ye condiscend hereto),  
yāt to his sister and nevo, his gude lufe and kyndenes was  
euer naturalie applyit." Britouns, following yis sentence of  
Comws, haistelie to Caratake directit ambassiatouris, beseking

Fo. XLIII. him for *ye thingis* be Comws said. The king, benynglie resav- 10  
ing *ye ambassiatouris* and hering *yaim* peticioun, ansuerit, he  
weyit *nocht* *ye dishonoure* done be Arvirag to his sister and  
nevois samekill as quhen, in hurt of him and kinrik, he  
spousit ane Romane woman iniustlie: Romanis be *yare*  
inveterate *consuetude* of dissymulit amyte had in vse be  
diuerß policyis and fraudulent wayis on far and on dreich  
to invaid kinrikis and of crownys and scepteris dispuleze  
princis providing *nocht* *yare fraude* and mak *yame* subiectis  
and tributaris: at *ye first signis* of were he suld *with* Britouns  
be *present* with his folkis in werelike wedis contrare Romanys  
to *paß* in quhat partis *yai* plesit, and suld employ all his pus-  
sance for weill of his sister, nevoyis and felicite of *ye inhabi-*  
*tantis Albion*: doutles of him and his liegis *yai* suld beleif  
*nocht* ellis.

How Caratake of Scotland convenit *with* thir nacions  
foresaidis ordorit *ye army* of Albanis and straik *ye*  
batell contrare Romanis Cap° xv°

Ambassiatouris, departing within schort tyme, to Schrewis- 20  
bery returnit, schewand *ye ansuere* of Caratake and his  
counsell. The wynter following on all partis fra weris was  
abstenit. At *ye first signis* of somer *ye heris* of Schrewisbery,  
Tegenis, Walis, Cornwell, Damonis and vthir naciouns, rebellaris  
M.L.T. 1126 contrare Romanis, appoynting ane meting, decretit that all  
men abill to weild wapynnys and armoure suld convene, pro-  
ponyng pane of dede gif *yai* disobeyit *ye charge*. To *ye*  
meting *yai* assignit ane speciall day and place quhare *ye*  
power of Scottis and Pichtis, solistit afore be ambassiatouris  
to defend *yare liberte*, suld convene, and apoun *yame* *with*  
grete esperance awatit. At day prefixt in *ye feildis* beside  
zork, of Britons favoring *ye partie* of Tegenis and Walis abone  
auchtly thowsand assemblit. Siclike come Conkist, king of 30  
Pichtis, with his noblis, and Caratake of Scotland with stark  
power, to debate *yare commoun liberte* and lawis. Be *yare*  
*cuming* Britouns war sa kindillit in curage *yat* *nocht* onelie

to batell bot erare thocht yai past to tak yē Romanis presoneris, Fo. XLIII.  
 as yai had bene vincust and oureset. Syne yē Britane nobillis  
 to yē twa princis randerit grete thankis for benevolence schewin  
 to yame, lauboring in sa dangerus estate for yē present, and,  
 as before was decretit, consentit to commytt yē gouerment of  
 the weris to Caratake, king of Scotland. He, resaving the  
 40 reule, to haue yē weris be wisdome and strenth convoyit,  
 ffirst to yē armye distribute capitanis, to quham he chargit  
 yē remanent suld obey, beseking euery man attend baith to  
 yē singuler and commoun weill and nocht, neclecting yare  
 liberte, becum randerit in handis of inemyis to be pynyt at  
 yare plesere, memorative of yē vassalage of antecessouris  
 quhilkis fra Albion expellit Iulius Cesare, of all Romanis yē  
 maist vailzeant chiftane. Be yē weill convoyit and maist  
 prudent wourdis of King Caratake yē Albanis, in curage erectit,  
 with glade continence and full of esperence contrare Romanis,  
 inemyis of yare liberte, procedit. Quhen to Alvirag, king of  
 Britouns, and Planctius, yir premisß be skurreouris and fugi-  
 tivis war schawin, with na leß diligence yai devisit yare ordi-  
 50 nance. Nocht yeles Planctius thocht nocht expedient to fecht  
 incontinent in ordorit batell contrare sa copioß multitude  
 of inemyis, knawand weill weremen of all gadering war cruell  
 and wald postpone all perillis, ffor of sic men aboundit the  
 oistis of Albanis, and had bot litill prectik in wourthy disci- M.L.T. 113  
 pline. Quharefore be production of tyme, laubouris, walking  
 to quhilk yai war nocht accustomyt and penurite of thingis  
 necessare, yai war to be tyrit. Be yis way, (as he belevit),  
 inemyis, but grete effusioun of blude, mycht be oureset. To  
 Arvirag and his folkis yis devise was plesand. Quharefore  
 diuersß dayis yai maid continence of batell. Howbeit yai  
 delayit yē samyn vnto yē tyme yē confusit multitude of  
 Albanis grew wery and nowdir mycht be reulit nor war sufferit  
 60 to seik victualis in yē cuntre. Grete parte of yame, yarefore,  
 compellit be penwrite of viueris, leiffing yē armye, privelie on  
 yē nycht haue returnit. Of yame sum parte happynnyng  
 amang Romanis, tane and to Planctius led, schew how yē  
 armye be hungir, travell and walkyngis, to quhilk yai war  
 nocht accustomyt, was cummerit, irkit and wery. Planctius,

- Fo. XLIII. on ye morne, ordoring his batellis towart inemyis, tranoyntit, commanding his folkis but tary strike ye bargane. Caratake, knowing quhat Romanis devisit, to his folkis gaif ane signe to tak ye feild, devisit ye day precedent. Ffollowit ane bataill scharp and kene and mony woundis on athir partie war resaut. Romanis in cast of dartis war mare exercit yan inemyis, Britons and Scottis in archerie and slungis, quhareby ye left wyng, quhare Arvirag facht, apperit to be oursett. Bot 70 haistelie to yame in sic perrell occurrit Planctius, with fresch power renewing ye battell. Doutsom indurit ye fecht quhil ye late nycht had be myrknes removit all sicht, yat on nede ye fechtaris disseuerit becaus inemyis fra vtheris mycht nocht be decernit. On ye morne at spring of day na thing was sene quhare ye feild was stirkin except ye carions of men slane ye day before ; ffor athir army to vthir gave place and leiffing ye feild fled at the stragill to ye montanis. Planctius, attempting to renew his armye, mycht nocht haue his intent, his folkis, fra tyme first yai gaif ye bak, war sa affrayit. Quharefore with grete tynsell of horsmen he departit towart Londoun. Be na 80
- M.L.T. 113b
- Fo. XLIII. leß mischeif Caratak was stirkin. yarefore, collecting ye residew of his folkis, he tuke purpoiß suffer yame depart to yare cieteis and townys, chargeing yai suld at all tymes be reddy to ye weris quhen proclamacions suld be made. He went to zork and fra thyne, eftir he had remanit certane dayis to refresche his curage, to Cariccoun. On all partis fra weris was abstinence the remanent zere, quhilk was ye fyft eftir the Romane weris in Britan war begunin.

How Planctius be ambassiatouris desirit redress fra Caratak, and of his respons. Cap° xvj°

This quhile Aulus Planctius to King Caratak directit ambassiatouris, quhilkis suld say he was na litill amervalit yat he, prouokit be nane iniuris, suld infer batell to Romanis and suppleit inemyis nocht anerlie with power of folkis bot als he acceptit ye haill charge of ye weris, and richt vnfreyndlie invadit the Romane province, nocht remembring ye beneuo- 10

lence schawin be Claudius, divyne emprioure, towart him and his kinrik quhen he subdewit Britan and mycht lychtlie haue removit him fra his senezeorie, zit he abstenit to iniure him and his pepill of Scotland, turnyng all his werelie ordinance apoun ye Orknayis, pepill euer to ye nacioun of Albion infest and noysum : quharefore he suld redrefß the skaithis latelie inferrit to him, ye Romane armye and vyeris, his freyndlie nychtbouris, and abstene fra new iniuris : vyerwayis, ye empriour and Romane senatouris suld repute Caratak and his pepill mortall inemyis in tyme cuming. To yis ansuerit Carataik : The Romane legate had na cauß to be amervellit, how beit *with* all pussance and strenth he come in supple of  
20 Britouns yat Guiderius his nevo suld nocht be defraudit of his regne, iustlie to him pertenyng : he had mare mater to amervell quhy Planctius impellit King Arvirage to ye repudie of ye quene, Voada, ane woman of preemynent vertew, and *with* dishonour kest hir in presoun ; syne induceit ane brokin Romane woman, extemyng na thing his iust spouß, to ye effect yat ye zong prince Gwidere, (for lak of zeris, deserving of na man vnkyndenes), suld of his iuste heretage and regne  
30 be dispulezete : bot gif, eftir ye *commoun* opinioun, in sorte of Romanis, led be insaciabill ambicion to invade kinrikis and rowmys na thing to game pertenyng, he was oure desirous of dominacion and devisit first to reif fra Britons yare kinrik and ye remanent of Albioun yareeftir, he invadit nocht ye  
Romane province bot defendit, (as was resoun), ye action of his sister and nevo, fermelie beleving ye goddis eterne suld revenge iniuris done to yai innocentis quhen ye pussance of erdlie men mycht nocht prevaill : and how beit Claudius, Romane emprioure, eftir subiectioun of Britan, turnit his weris fra Scottis and Pichtis, he menit na benevolence to game yarethrow, bot erare becaus he knewe gif it aventurit game be vincust, *without* cruell bargane yai mycht nocht be oussett : he passit apoun ye febill, rude pepill of Orknay, na thing expert in arnes, yat quhen yai war lychtlie ourethrawin he mycht dispuleze yare ilis and turß ye pray to Rome, avanting yat he was ane mychty emprioure and vincust yai febill bodyis and brocht game in tryumphe yat sua, be purchest glorie eftir sa

Fo. XLIIII.

M.L.T. 114

- Fo. XLIIII. grete weris, he mycht mare glorioslie enter in Rome : be ye contrare the recent and ald iniuris of Romanis done to Scottis 40 and Pichtis aucht to be amendit, yai suld departe clenelie fra Albion and leif ye samyn fre to ye inhabitantis : vthir wayis yai suld in tyme cuming be assurit yat Scottis, Pichtis and Britouns, of all ye warld maist remote pepill, quham sa of[t] yai had contempnit, throw naturall affectioun to the liberte of yare kinrik and lufe to yare native goddis suld to Romanis be perpetuale inemyis. The ambassiatouris departing, quhen to ye Romane heris yai had reportit as yai herd, indignacioun kindillit the mynde of Planctius yat ye Scottis pepill, nowder potent in weris nor opulent in riches, suld sua contempne ye Romane pussance, and in yare folie hardyment sua confiding yat lippyunnyng mare in yare awne strenth yan all vyir pepill of ye warld, thocht yai mycht nocht to ye Romane Impire 50 be subdewit. Quharefore, testifying ye goddis in *presens* of mony nobillis, he schorit to revenge thir outrageous iniuris.
- M.L.T. 114b Siclike avowit diuerß vyiris, be exempill of Planctius, kindillit be ye presumptuoß and contumelioß wourdis of Caratake in reproch of the imperiall maieste and Romane pepill. About yis tyme Arvirag, king of Britan (thinking gif his power *with* the haill pussance of Albiouns war conionit, Romanis mycht be vincust and expellit ye ile), desirous to recovir his liberte and honorabill name, leiffing Planctius he past *with* ye nobillis of his realme to him assisting, to Schrewisbery, in Walis to Comws, (of quhom before is rememberit). His cuming was to Comws and vyir heris of Tegenis and Walis, (quhilkis for ye tyme convenit in counsell at Schrewisbery), richt thankfull 60 and erectit yame in ferme beleif to recovir yare liberte. Quhen hereof certifjt was Genissa, the Romane lady, graif *with* chylde, (how scho was intertenyt be Arvirag in place of his iust spouß is schawin), vnderstanding how scho was contempnit and of matrimoniall dett defraudit, be suddane displesoure scho departit *with* hir birth ; quharethrow followit haisty dede. Than Aulus Planctius daly thinking he mycht confide na thing in Britouns (quhilkis howbeit yai testifyit inmortal goddis, had sa oftymes violate yare fidelite promyst to Romanis), *with* stark garnisoun and victualis he stuffit castellis, mwyny-



ciouns, fortalicis, burrowis and cieteis to ye Romane domynioun Fo. XLIII.  
obeysant; syne haistelie to ye Emprioure Claudius send  
writingis, pleynzeing mekill ye dissate of Britouns yat nowder  
be gude dede of Romanis, remembrance of amyte nor be grete  
70 aithis, quhareto yai war astrictit, mycht yai be kepit at  
fidelite: now vniuersalie *with* all pussance, studie and sub-  
stance yai war intent to were contrare Romanis and yareto  
had rasit Scottis and Pichtis, felloun, inhwmane and cruell  
pepill, be quham Romanis in ye last iournay tuke na lefs  
myscheif yan to yame yai inferrit: *nocht* alanerlie had yai  
now ado *with* Britons bot *with* all inhabitantis Albion throw  
yare solistacion and wayis: he suld herefore consult apoun ye  
Romane affaris in Britane, tending to sic *dammage* yat be  
multitude and perseuerant audacite of yat barbare pepill,  
amangis quham was na place of lawte, honeste, reuerence of  
goddis, nor men in erde, yai suld *nocht* suffir sum notabill and M.L.T. 115  
80 haisty harme. Quhen yis to ye Empriour Claudius was  
schawin, he devisit *with* diligence to suple Planctius and Fo. XLV.  
Romanis with him in Britane. Herefore be decrete of sena-  
touris Vespasiane was chosin chiftane, to dant ye rebelloun  
and defend ye Romane senezeorie in Albioun.

How Vespasiane returnit to Britane; how ye kingis  
of Scottis, Pichtis and Britons persewit him be  
batell and war discumfist. Cap° xvij°

**N**ocht lang hereeftir Vespasiane with ane armye fra Rome  
departit and be grete travell come in Gallia quhare,  
waling new power, he augmentit his armye and to Britane  
brocht ye samyn. Be diuers kyndis of honour Romanis in  
Britane ressavit Vespasiane, becaus be weredis (as amang  
yame was opinion) yai traistit for his excellent and singuler  
vassalage he was sum tyme to be exaltit to grete honouris.  
Vespasiane, knowing how ye Romane affaris stude in Britane,  
employit all his diligence to reduce yame to bettir forme.  
10 Ffirst he convenit Aulus Planctius to know gif ye myscheif,  
resaut latelie be Romanis contrare Albanis in batell, was

Fo. XLV. happynnyt be his myscheant gouerment, (as was ye brute), and be necligence of weirlie discipline. Planctius for his purgacioun schew doingis and na wourdis, how castellis, quhare remanit ye Romane garnisoun, be fowsyis, dykis and trenschis war weill stenthit and with mwnicioun providit, conforme to ye Romane vse, like as be inemyes yai war incontinent to be assegeit. In ye campe ye men of were be incredibill ordoure war at sic reule, *without* all occasioun yat mycht mak yare myndis effemynate or dolf, and all werelie ordinance sa wyslie convoyit yat the chiftane Vespasiane and his cumpanye gretelie war amervellit. Herefore be Vespasiane was Planctius commendit, belefing yat be onelie convoyance of Planctius, how beit nan vthir supple to Romanis had arrivit in Britane, all 20 inhabitantis Albioun mycht eselie be vincust. Sone eftir Vespasiane chargeit ane expedicioun be preparit contrare Arvirag and Britons quhilkis had violate thare faith and failzete fra Romanis. Arvirag, knowing quhat Vespasiane devisit, commandit his noblis convene at zork, quhare be writingis he knew Caratak of Scotland *with* ye nobillis of his realme was to cum; and consulting, yai decretit yat at day assignit nocht all yare folkis abill for were, as in ye zere precedent, suld convene to resist ye violence of Romanis, bot certane of euery regioun suld be walit, becaus be sic confusit multitude nowder mycht yai discerne yare avne folkis nor haue victualis suffi- 30 cient to ye armye. Thay commandit herefore yat Carlele, Kendale and yai boundis suld furnis vj<sup>m</sup> men, the Tigenis and Walis *with* yare nyctbouris xij<sup>m</sup>, Kentschire and ye pepill adiacent suld furnis elike nowmer, the Icenis and remanent Britons obeying ye senezeory of Arvirag, xxxv<sup>m</sup>, and euery man suld *with* victualis for twa monethis be providit. All thir completing yare nowmer beside zork convenit, quhare come King Caratake, (as before was devisit), *with* xxx<sup>m</sup> Scottis; siclike Illithara, king of Pichtis, *with* na litill power. Syne to naciouns of euery regioun war maid capitanis, be quhais convoying ye instant weir suld be 40 rewlit. Vespasiane, vsing ye counsell and giding of certane Britouns zit to Romanis observing fidelite, be passagis vnknawin to Romanis passit apoun inemyis to debell atanis all

ye Albiane pepill for ye maist parte. Ffollowit ane batell Fo. XLV.  
 felloun, scharpe and sare. Albanis, becaus Romanis invadit  
 soner yan yai belevit, in myris and merressis, full of crag  
 stanis, *nocht* abone xij myle fra zork, cummersum to fecht in  
 sic place, *with* grete ferocite provokit ye batell. Apperandly  
 Romanis in ye richt wyng war liklie to be ourset. Vespasiane,  
 yis persaving, send in yare supple ane legioun, zit vnfochtin,  
 be quhais *cummyn* Romanis to sic curage inressit yat, how  
 50 beut yai war woundit, yai renewit in yat parte ye bargane. The  
 Albiane chiftanis inflammyt yare folkis yai suld stoutlie stand  
 and nocht fle bot be vassalage sauf yare honoure, cryand yat  
 owther in yat iournay yai suld be victouris or ellis resaue  
 perpetuale *seruitute*. Vespasiane sic like kindillit his armye  
 yai suld be memorative of the Romane prowes and fecht with M.L.T. 116  
 hardyment; thare inemyis war bot barbare, rude pepill,  
 nakit almaist of wapynnys and armoure; yai ran ourehede  
 to batell *without* ordoure and lichtlie mycht be vincust. Sa  
 kenelie stude ye Albanis in batell yat, quhen ye vantgarde  
 and vtheris fechtaris in forefront war ourethrawin, thare  
 feris, standing on ye deid cariouns, sonezit *nocht* to fecht.  
 Vtheris, rvn throw with speris or transfixit with dartis, lenand  
 apoun ye samyn sustenit ye bargane. Sum parte, fra quham  
 handis and swerdis at anis war strikin, *with* yare teith cruelly  
 raif inemyis quhare yai fell abone yame or vnder, yat it apperit  
 weill yai faucht na lefs yat day be haterent yan be force and  
 60 strenth. Bot nowder be multitude, perseuerance, strenth nor  
 nane *vyr* vailzeandnes mycht fataill destanye be *ourcummyn*,  
 —goddis aduersing, quhilkis for ye tyme decernit, as was ye  
 opinioun, to haue all realmes and nacions to Romanis sub-  
 dewit. And how beut ye Albanis omyttit na thing to vailzeant  
 chiftanis and stalwart men of were pertenyng, zit fechtand  
 almaist to extreme perdicion yai war vincust finalie, and all  
 yare folkis for ye maist parte slane, richt few evading ye  
 terribill slauchter. Arvirag, oureset be intollerabill dis-  
 plesour be loifs of samony nobill men, devisit put in his awne  
*persoun* violent handis, thinking he wald lif na langare eftir  
 sa grete myscheif. Bot be *servandis* he was reseruit to bettir  
 fortune, (gif be goddis sum tyme it mycht be grantit), and to

Fo. XLV. 3ork was convoyit. Caratake *with* ane sobir tryne to Brigancia 70  
 (now Galloway) returnit. Thaara, king of Pichtis, irking to  
 lif eftir tinsell of his tendir freyndis, abiecting armes and  
 princelie cognossance, on ane stane sitting, wery and evill at  
 eifs, be Romanis persewing he was slane vnknawin.

How eftir Arvirag of Britane become randerit he was  
 sufferit regne as afore ; how lawis and autorite fra  
 Britons war remouit and Romane ritis inducit.

Ca° xvij°

M.L.T. 116b **A**ruirag and ye Britane nobillis, quhilk eftir yis sare and  
 dedely iournay war liffand, thinking Romanis in tyme  
*cuming* mycht haue nane impediment and he nor his assistantis  
 mycht haue na securite, devisit direct ane herald to Ves-  
 pasiane for pece, to offer yame randerit, sen in yis miserabill  
 calamyte of Britouns of lxx<sup>m</sup> men of were yai war distroyit  
 to v<sup>c</sup> and mare cruelly afflictit yan inemyis wald devise,  
 quharethrow ye favouris of goddis to Romanis was manifest 80

Fo. XLVI. and plane, in yare contrare ; contrynyng yame to sic calamyte  
 and myserie, yat yai mycht nocht be sufficient in tyme *cuming*  
 to defend yare kinrik, nor nane war left to mak *seruice* to  
 inemyis, except ye febill vulgare pepill, and yat Britouns  
 vincust for fidelite violate and Romanis victouris mycht be,  
 to all naciouns and pepill, *perpetuall* document of grace and  
 clemence, quhilk maist to yame in sic caisß efferis. Vespasiane,  
 hering ye herald report thir wourdis and mony vtheris siclike,  
 chargeit yat Arvirage, denwde of princelie ornamentis, suld  
 cum to him on credence, promitting he suld haue na dis-  
 plesoure ; nor he wald here na tretie nor pece quhill Arvirag  
 war *present*. Arvirag, thinking force to obey, danting sum 10  
 parte to exaltacioun of his mynde, went to Vespasiane as he  
 desirit. Movit was Vespasiane be mysfortune of Arvirag,  
 quham he saw ye day precedent sa heich and potent, with  
 sa stark ordinance, and yan had loist all his armye and,  
 destitute of kyn and freyndis, humlie imploring mercie and  
 kyndenes, come in powere of inemyis. Quharfore, nocht  
 refrenyng teris, he said : " Quhat mycht move ye, Arvirag, to

failze fra fidelite of Romanis, quhilkis decorit ye with regall Fo. XLVI.  
 dignite and estate? With ye yai myxt kin and blude, to ye  
 effect yat yi successioun, decorit be Romane blude, mycht  
 with all naciouns be comptit mare honest, mare illustir and  
 serene." Arvirag, prostrate at ye fete of Vespasiane, with  
 20 mony teris confessit his trespas, affermyng yat apoun him and  
 his folkis it was be ye goddis sa scharplie vindicate yat it  
 efferit erdlie men revenge na ferther: hereof he blamyt nocht  
 ellis bot his fidelite violate, his grete prosperite and impwnye  
 of goddis. He besocht herefore he wald vse grace apoun his  
 pepill, nocht as yai had deseruit, bot sic as Romanis vsit to M.L.T. 117  
 naciouns to yame subdewit, and at his plesoure be ony tor-  
 mentis distroy his persoun, quhen it efferit him nocht to liff  
 eftir sa mekill truble and sorowe. His demeritis had deseruit  
 ye samyn. He wald have compaciencie on his spouß and  
 childer, quham he had latelie iniustlie fra him expellit, to ye  
 hurte of him and his kinrik. Vespasiane, hering his regrete,  
 30 nocht alanerlie was sterit to myseracioun bot, als of new, his  
 ene birst out in teris, and having consultacioun, demandit  
 quhat to Arvirag and captivis of Britane suld be done. Sum  
 Romanis said yat Arvirag with his spouß, childer, landis,  
 cieteis, inhabitantis and all vthir his gudis, be lawis of weris,  
 suld be pray to Romanis; he suld be send to Rome to sub-  
 mytt him to the sentence of ye emprioure and Romane sena-  
 turis yat, be exempill hereof, vthir naciouns mycht know how  
 it is wikkit and grete folie to failze in lawte and infer weris to  
 Romanis. Vtheris, sterit be ye kingis present fortune conferrit  
 with his first estate and be remembrance of ald kyndenes,  
 contendit yat to Arvirag suld be grantit grace, becaus yat be  
 40 manifest ire of goddis he was condingly punyst; he suld be  
 sufferit regne as of before, and nocht be led to Rome, becaus,  
 howbeit he was vyncust, he was nocht tane be force bot on  
 credence wilfully come to ye Romane chiftane: nor Romanis  
 aucht nocht brek yare faith to inemyis, sen yare large empire  
 and senzeorye nowder be fraude, pride nor ambicioun bot be  
 clemence and mercy apoun subiectis euer was augmentit and  
 confermyt. Vespasiane, be innative clemence to pepill afflictit  
 and vincust following yis counsell and refusing ye tothir,

Fo. XLVI. remittit to Arvirag all offensis and levit him regnne as of before, chargeing yat all cieteis quhilkis fra Romanis had failzete suld be skaithles, requiring and resaving new plegeis yat in fidelite of Romanis in tyme cuming yai suld persevere. Of ye plegeis Gwider, son to Arvirag, was cheif, quhilk eftir-wart tending towart Rome with Vespasiane, in myddis his 50 iournay, *with* ane fever oureset, deceissit. Heræftir Vespasiane tuke fra Britouns all iuris and lawis be antecessouris vsit and inducit Romane ritis. He chargit yat Aulus Planctius, lieutenant, and his deputis onelie suld of blude haue power. To every province of Britane he constitute presidentis quhilk, conforme to ye Romane consuetude, suld exerce iustice and at yare fidelite contene the pepill. At brute and fame of yir premisß, every ane of the Britane nacioun, disparing in pussance to oureset the Romane armys, become to fidelite of Vespasiane and fra thyne furth send to him riche presentis and rewardis. Now approachit wynter and ye victorius army was sufferit depart to yare schelis. Vespasiane with King Arvirag went to 3ork, quhare *with* mony Romane nobillis he 60 spendit ye wynter following.

M.L.T. 117b

How Vespasiane wan ye ciete of Camelodune ; how Caratake persewit Romanis *with* batell and be Planctius was vincust ; how he was spulezete of his tressouris, and how the offeris of Vespasiane be him war refusit. Cap° xix°

**I**n the nixt somer Vespasiane bringing his armye fra yare wynter schelis preparit ane expedioun apoun Scottis and Pichtis, contracting stark power, movit apoun ye Ordolucis and Derreis (now Berwic, Merß, Tevidale and dalis remanent). Of all Pichtis nacioun thir pepill war maist feirß in batell and nerrest ye bordoure of Britane, bot brokin mekill baith in strenth and pussance be ye recent batell contrare Romanis, and disparing of supple fra yare nychtbouris of Pichtis, wilfully to Vespasiane yai made fidelite. Following yare exempil ye remanent Pichtis without batell become randerit to Romanis.

Nochtyeles grete part of Pichtis, abhorring to be led in pray FO. XLVI.  
to Rome gif yai become in ye power of Romanis, fled to  
Camelodune, quhare yai belevit Vespasiane suld *nocht cum* for  
70 ye *cummersum viage*. Quhen yis to Vespasiane was schewin,  
he brocht his armye be haisty iournais, and stranglie assegeit  
the *sammyn*. At his *cuming* Pichtis *within* ye towne, how  
beit yai ferit yare livis, gudis and ye maieste of ye Romane  
name, zit be ire and haterent yai tuke hardyment, and con-  
cludit yai wald defend yare wallis. The assege langare lestit  
yan ye assegearis belevit ; quharethrow quhen to sustene yare  
multitude within, victualis falezit, be hunger and indigence ye  
cietenaris had grete pane ; ffinalie, brokin be penurite of all M.L.T. 118  
necessaris, ourset be thrist and hungir, yai become randerit  
and to Romanis made ye portis patent. Vespasiane nowder  
sufferit ye ciete be distursit nor nane *vpir* thing *with* violence  
80 be done. In yis ciete kingis of Pichtis had yare regall orna-  
mentis, ane crowne of gold sett *with* variete of preciofs stanys, FO. XLVII.  
ane swerde having plwmet and hiltis of gold with ane purple  
skawbert mervellus craftelie wrocht. In all expeditious  
yareeftir Vespasiane vsit yis swerde, takin sum *coniecturacion*  
of ewrofs fortune yarethrow. He sufferit ye nobillis, quhilk  
thidder had fled, departe salflie to yare castellis and landis,  
first resaving yare plegeis. He taryit at Camelodune and first  
yarein causit Romane morpeis, (*quhilkis* war agit soldeouris),  
remane, yat perpetually yare suld duell pepill to ye Romane  
senezeory obeysant. Thay suld haue Romane iuris and lawis  
and in ye samyn suld instruct ye cieteneris and rude pepill.  
Syn in the opposite of Camelodune, apoun ye river of Carron,  
he beildit ane tempill in honoure of ye Empriour Claudius,  
erecting yarein twa ymagis to be anournit *with* ye pepill. Of  
10 yir ymagis ane was of ye empriour foresaid, the tothir of ye  
goddess Victoria, quhais dedicacion, be mony devote prayeris,  
he maid conforme to ye rite of Gentilis. Quhill in yis sorte  
Vespasiane at Camelodune was intent to policie and religiofs  
ceremonis of Gentilite, be exploratouris he was certifyit how  
King Caratake had renewit his armye and fra Brigancia (now  
Galloway) departit, tending to be revengit of ye skaith inferrit  
be Romanis. At yis message, be *command* of Vespasiane, his

Fo. XLVII. lieutenant Aulus Planctius, *with* ane strang armye contrare Caratake procedit, leiffing na litill power of folkis *with* Vespasiane for his defence. Planctius was nocht fer fra Brigancia quhen be fugitivis he was aduertist how Caratake was nocht ye space of foure mylis distant *with* ane huge oist of Scottis, 20 Pichtis and Britons. Planctius, yan fenzeing him affrayit like as he wald tary ye *cuming* of Vespasiane *with* ye remanent armye, in ane plane beside tuke his campe, syne, in ye quiet nycht rasing palzeouns, convoyit be exploratouris and figitivis knawing ye ground, in arrayit batell past apoun Caratake, quhilk suspectit na thing less yan to be invadit be Romanis, becaus of straitnes of ye grond. Wachis, persaving ye *cuming* of Romanis, rasit ye schout and sustenit ye assailze of inemyis quhil yare folkis mycht be anarmyt. Bot at ye first countir all ye wachis war slane. Ffollowit ye batell scharp and kene, 30 quhare mony grevous woundis on athir partye war resaut. Ffinalie, quhen fra ye dawing yai had fochtin quhil myd day, the victorie inclinit towar[t] Romanis (with na litill slauchter of yare folkis). In ye feild still remanit Romanis. Sum parte of Scottis, Pichtis and Britons, (quhilkis evadit ye slauchter), affrayitly ran to strate erdis and montanis. Vtheris, finding botis and veschell, fled to ye Ile of Mon. King Caratake, sare woundit, with certane *servandis* apoun him awating, with grete travell went first to Argathele, fra thyne to ye castell of Evon (Downstaphage for the *present*). Be brute of yis batell aduersare, to Romanis come grete confl[u]ence of Scottis, Pichtis and Britons quhilkis zit to Vespasiane had promist na fidelite. The inhabitantis Brigancia, disparing yare 40 strenthis and mwnicions, fled to strate erdis and desertis, with wyiffis, barnis, bestiall and store quharein stude yare riches for ye tyme. Planctius, ye feird day following, with his armye refreschit, to ye ciete of Carictoun movit, quhare he herd was ye cheif habitacion and palace of Caratake, his regale ornamentis and thesauris, and, occupying the ciete sonare yan was belevit, amang his weremen distribute ye pray. Be ane herald ye mene tyme he aduertist Vespasiane of yis victorie: Brigancia *with* regions adiacent was in handis: inhabitantis had promyst randereng: it suld be honorable to his name gif



he war *present* at zeilding of ye pepill vnvincust euer afore, Fo. XLVII.  
 50 and herethrow he mycht haue excellent lawde of victory.  
 Vespasiane apprisit ye gude mynde of Planctius towart him  
 and rade incontinent to Caricton. At his *cuming* all inhabi-  
 tantis Brigancia yat war vnflod, become randerit *with* all  
 yare gudis to Romanis as lordis and maisteris of ye warld.  
 On ye morne Vespasiane, movit be mysfortune of Caratak,  
 quhilk for his liberte and kinrik had fochtin, (the goddis as  
 apperit aduersing), almaist to finall destructioun, directit to  
 him ambassiatouris quhilkis suld say: Na langare was to  
 be resistit to eternall goddis, to quhais plesoure all victorie,  
 all power to regne, all impire and senezeory on nede ar sub-  
 iectit. Thay had decretit yat all pepill and nacions to Romanis  
 suld be subdewit, as be ye fyne mycht be knawin, quhilk  
 60 confermyt yare respons. Quharefore gude it war he and his  
 pepill obeyit ye Romane senezeory sen be mony vnchancy  
 batellis, be manifest ire of goddis, yai war afflictit. Gif hereto  
 he wald consent, he suld regne sauffie as afore and be namyt  
 freynd to ye Romane senatouris in tyme *cuming*. Vthir wayis,  
 gif he wald vnwiselie to his awne distruction in batell per-  
 severe, he suld fra his regne be removit and *with* all his pepill  
 be brocht haistelie to rewyne. To yis ansuerit Caratake:  
 It war *presumptuofs* folie yat mortale men suld to yame  
 ascrive the prescience of weirdis or destanye, to goddis onelie  
 famyliare. Be benignite of goddis, habitacioun to him and  
 his pepill was grantit in Albioun. Romanis, be ambicion and  
 70 insaciabill desire of wrangwis conquest, provokit be nane  
 iniuris, infestit him with weris. He expellit iniuris and inferrit  
 nane. Be his opinioun goddis war *nocht* sa iniuste yat yai  
 wald to ye movaris of iniust weris grant happy fyne of batell.  
 He couth never vndirstand Romanis wald sallie kepe him in  
 his realme, of quhilk yai attemptit sa oftymes to haue him  
 dispulezit, and had fra sa mony kingis iniustlie reft yare  
 regnis. The amyte and societe of Romanis war to be desirit  
 gif it mycht conduce to his honour and suretie. Now it is  
 to be refusit, becaus gif it war procurit, it menit *nocht* bot  
 grete hurt to him and his kinrik. To him pertentit ye realme  
 of Scotland, as to ye *emprioure*, pepill of Rome and *senatouris*

Fo. XLVII. pertenit the Romane kinrikis. He repute yame worth als grete reproche yat defendit nocht yare awne rownes as the invasouris of vtheris. He wald herefore persevere in weris 80

Fo. XLVIII. contrare Romanis to ye end of his life for his liegis, kinrik, liberte, native goddis and sepulturis of progenitouris to quhilkis be invocacioun of yare spiritis he had recours as to extreme and onelie refuge. Of him Romanis suld beleif nocht ellis. 10

M.L.T. 119b Vespasiane, resaving this respons, wouderit mekill the constant curage of Caratake, quhilk sa stiflie determyt resist to ye Romane armye, all vthir princis of Albion submitting yame to Romanis. First he devisit persewe him with ane armye. Bot, certifyt yat for moß, myris, merrefß, intractabill montanis and penurite of viueris in yai partis quhare he tendit, without hurte and damage of ye Romane armye, he mycht nocht mak sic persute, changeing purpoiß, he garnist with 10 mwnicioun strenthis of Brigancia; syne to ye sey, regarding Ireland, convoyit his armye, tending yarefra to invade ye Ile of Mon, nocht be mony mylis fra the mane land separate. To assailze ye ile before his cuming he had send certane Pichtis and Britons, figitivis fra yare native princis. This ile, as said is, betuix Ireland and Albion is situate. To this iournay certane new schippis war made and vpir veschel fra ye coistis sone war contractit to cary ye armye to ye ile.

Eftir departing of Vespasiane Caratake invadit Romanis be batell and was vincust; Planctius deceissit, and Ostorius the new legate was in his place directit to Britane, Cap° xx°

To Vespasiane this tyme was schewin how the inhabitantis of Kentschire and ye Ile of Wicht had slane the Romane garnisoun in yai regions and ye maist parte of ye Britane boundis direct opposite to Gallia had rebellit; incertane gif 20 be impulsion of Gallis yis was done. To yis apperand skaith, Vespasiane tending haistelie occur, committing stark power to ye goverment of Planctius lieutenant, to conserue yat parte of Albion at fidelite of Romanis, omytting ye expedi-

cioun apon ye Ile of Mone, be grete iournais he movit to Kent. At his cuming be licht iupartis he dantit ye rebellious of inhabitantis. Syne eftir he had pwnyst the begynnaris yareof, at command of ye Empriour Claudius, eftir all his affaris in Britan brocht to prosper fyne, in few dayis with na litill lawd and glore he returnit to Rome. How sone King Caratake knewe Vespasiane departit, he addressit to recover ye landis of Brigance and Pichtland, be persuasioun of ye barouns of Pichtland and fugitivis to the Ile of Mon. Ffra all partis of Albion resortit to him grete confluence, movit be desire of liberte to be deliuerit fra iniuris of Romanis. Of yame Caratake haistelic collecting ane armye, be esperance of bettir fortune he movit apoun Romanis, quhilkis with na leß diligence ordorit yare batellis. Be grete hete syne was fochtin, Scottis contending at yare power to recovir the parte of yare kinrik loist afore and Romanis tending to kepe ye rowmes conquest be grete laubouris. Certane tyme doutsum was ye bargane. Ffinaly, practik of were and wisdom to Romanis preparit victorie. Scottis war discumfist and chasit and, as was yare custume, ran or euer yai ceissit to mosß, merresß and strate erdis. This batell sa vnchancilye was fochtin yat contrare Romanis to renewe bargane thay had na mare belefe. Romanis, inexpert of ye ground, na ferder persewit ye flearis. Caratake, weying hevily his mysfortune, collecting ye residewe of his folkis as he mycht best, reterit to ye castell of Evon, quhair schortlie yareeftir convenyng his nobillis, consultit how ye kinrik contrare Romanis mycht be assurit. Caratake desirit yat fra all regiouns of Scotland and Ilis all persons abil to bere armour or wapynnys suld be assemblit and suld purches power and supple fra Ireland, quhare fra descendit Scottis nacioun; and herethrow, gif in gude ordoure yai wald fecht to ye extreme, owder suld Romanis be defeat, or Scottis suld all de atanis: be yis way and nane vthir suld ye lang weris be fynnyssit. Vtheris, fra quham yare votis war requirit, thocht ye kingis devise nocht convenient as stude ye caiß, (quhareof consideracioun first suld be had), becaus it was oure dangerus to iupert ye chance of ye haill kinrik to ane onlie iournay be Scottis, sa oft

Fo. XLVIII.

M.L.T. 120

M.L.T. 1206

Fo. XLVIII. tymes ouresett contrare Romanis, sa mekill be fortune favorit,  
 bot erare to suffer ye pepill sa lang brokin and supprisit be  
 contynuall weris tak rest for ane tyme and increfs to strenth ;  
 Romanis be diuerfs skarmuschis and nocht be plane batell war  
 to be resistit yat bezond Brigancia yai suld nocht extend yare  
 boundis ; dalie yai suld solist Britouns, (euer desirous of new  
 senezorie), to conspire contrare Romanis, quharethrow mycht  
 follow yat quhen Romanis war restrenit fra forraying ye  
 cuntre for yare viueris yai suld be sa dantit with hungir yat  
 owder suld yai remove fra Brigance or ellis be constrenit 60  
 to vnhonest randering. Sua on ye morne ane walit cumpny,  
 having wise and expert chiftanis, was directit fra inemyis to  
 defend Saluria, (now Carrik, Kyle  $\mathcal{C}$ ), nixt adiacent to Brig-  
 ancia. In yis sort twa 3eris following be diuerfs skarmuschis  
 and iupartiyis on ayir partie without mekill slauchter ye were  
 was prolongit. During yis tyme Aulus Planctius, be ane lang  
 continewit flux hevillie torment, quhen nowther in cure of  
 medicine nor in strenth of nature he had confidence, he wrate  
 to Emprioure Claudius how ane grevous malade apoun him  
 inualescit and grew, sua yat ye naturall poweris of his body  
 yarethrow war oursett : sa lang as strenth in his persoun  
 remanit he was vigilant for weill and augmentacioun of ye 70  
 Romane Empire, bot now destitute of all helpe, baith of medi-  
 cinaris and nature, he taryit dalie the dede : praying, herefore,  
 he suld provide yat in yir provincis conquest be sa grete lau-  
 bouris and dangeris na rebelloun in defalt of ane legate suld  
 be movit of new, and yat ane man of ye anciant blude, expert  
 in weris, grave in age and maneris, suld in Albion be send and  
 maid lieutenant : be his gouerment ye pepill, to ye Romane  
 senzeorye obeysant, suld at fidelite be conseruit. The empri-  
 oure, resaving yis message, directit to Britane Ostorius  
 Scapula, ane nobill man, excellent in grete actis in pece and  
 M.L.T. 121 weris, of ye Romane affaris to haue ye gouerment. Sone  
 eftir his cuming Planctius at Camelodune deceissit. His corps,  
 conforme to ye Romane rite, was brynt. With grete pompe  
 Romanis placit the powder of his body in ane vrne or boist  
 within ye tempill dedicate be Vespasiane to Claudius Cesar 80  
 Fo. XLIX. and ye goddes Victoria, as before is remembrtit. Herethrow

come in consuetude amang Scottis and Pichtis, (as sum writis), to birn the bodyis of yare freyndis deceissit. Hereof in thir *our* dayis mony signis zit are sene, ffor in ye zere of *our* Redempcioun j<sup>m</sup> v<sup>o</sup> xxj, in ye towne of Ffindour in ye Mernis, v mylis distant fra Abirdene, ane ald sepulture was fundin quharein was twa veschell, like laym piggis, of strange fassoun, replete with powder and asß, and apoun yame baith war Romane *lettrez* gravin. How sone yai war productit to ye aire, incontinent yai war dissoluit in powdir.

10 Siclike in ane towne in Mar callit Kenbatten, ten mylis fra Abirdene, about ye samyn tyme be pleuchmen twa sepulturis war fundin, of square assillare and hewin stane. In yame war foure vrnis half full of powder, wrocht of siclike craft, of ye samyn quantite and siclike *lettrez* as of ye *toyir* twa is remembrit. Diuers vtheris siclike antiquiteis to testify pis consuetude has oftymes bene sene in diuers partis of Albion, like as antecessouris has left in remembrance ; bot lat ws return quharefra we made degressioun.

Off the fortunate gestis of Ostorius ; of his crudelite ; how Caratake be him was oursett, takin and send presoner to Rome ; of his returne and deceiß.

Cap<sup>o</sup> xxj<sup>o</sup>

The cuming of Ostorius in Britan knawin, ye pepil of Cambria, Tegenis, Damonis, Icenis, (now Walis, Cornwall and nychtbouris adiacent in ye west partis of Britan), gretelie molestit Romanis, beleving, be cuming of ane new chiftane *nocht* acquentit with ye Romane armye nor accustumyt with ye Britan ritis, yai mycht *without* difficulte recovir yare liberte. To haue yare intent yai solistit vyir nychtboure naciouns to failze fra fidelite of Romanis, like as Kendale, Anandale, Kyle, Cwnynghame and all ye naciouns of Pichtis togiddir with ye Scottis of Brigancia, aduertising King Caratake be writingis he suld haue respect to ye commoun weill ; tyme was now to recovir yare liberte, refra yame afore, ffor to his chargis yai suld gladelie obtempir. Quhen

M.L.T. 1216

Fo. XLIX. hereof certifijt was Ostorius, knawin weil ye vassalege of ane new chiftane at ye begynnyng suld *nocht* be hid, he invadit inemyis or yai mycht convene. At ye first counter he skalit ye Tegenis and Walis and chasit yame nocht without felloun slauchter: syne movit apon the Icenis, ane stark pepill and robust, of all this *conspiracion* begynnaris. Quhen yai persaut it was force to fecht, yai walit ane place for batell, hegeit 30 with ane feild dyke and ane strait entrefß, yat to Romane horsßmen it suld *nocht* be patent. Bot haistelie Romanis beth downe ye fald and within ye dykis gretelie perturbit ye Britouns. Quhen to fle ye Icenis *persaut* na place, standing dourlie in bataill, almaist al atanis yai war slane. The sobir remanent, vnslane, war in power of inemyis randerit. Be myscheif of Icenis ye Kendalis *with* vthir *nichtbouris* affrayit become zoldin to Romanis. Ffra thyne Ostorius went to Carlele, ane tovn in Kendale, in ye parte now callit Cummyrland, nixt Annandale and Galloway. Schortlie yis towne was takin, the landis adiaçant waistit and be pray disturssit. Siclike he dantit ye *conspiracioun* of Britons, to ye Kendalis *nichtbouris*, and, slaying ye *resistaris*, *with* all his ordinance 40 fra thyne departit to Pichtland. In his vpage be mare myscheif yan was herd afore he surprisit ye Syluris (now Kyle, 'E), cruell and vnmercifull pepill, quhilk, abone yare naturale forocite, confidit in pussance of yare prince, Caratak, quham yai knew was to recounter Romanis in bataill gif weris aganis yame war movit. Thus Romanis, birnyng cornis stakkit or in barnys, murdrissing agit men and women, innocent barnis and all vtheris zong persons, indifferent quham yai mycht apprehend, subdewit ye *inhabitantis* to *seruitute* mare vyle yan mycht be excogitate or devisit. Caratake sa hevily weyit this recent oppressioun made be Romanis yat, to be revengit, 50

M.L.T. 122 he wald expone his live to ye extreme aventure of fortune. At his *cuming* to Pichtland convenit grete confluence fra all partis of Albioun, tending owder to revenge the Romane iniuris or ellis de in batell and end at anys baith iniuris and thirlage. Or Caratake ye army assemblit of his awne liegis and *nichtbouris*, contenit to ye nowmer of xl<sup>m</sup>, quham he ordorit in yis sorte, yat behind yai suld haue ye depe ryver

quhare na furde nor passage was knawin, to ye effect (as we Fo. XLIX.  
 may beleif) yat nane suld lippin securite in fleing; at ye  
 skirtis of ye armye on athir side, he placit ye gentill wemen,  
 (of quham grete nowmer come to feild to se ye fyne of batell),  
 60 with cryis and schowtis to walkin ye curage of ye fechtaris,  
 to strike stoutlie ye bargane: apoun inemyis yai suld cast  
 stanis, and euer as Romanis war dung downe yai suld cutt  
 throttis and sla. Wemen, zong and stark, war ordorit to fecht  
 anarmyt, myxt amang ye men. Attour, all ye chiftanis exhortit  
 ye armye to batell, confort yare corage, removit all fere and  
 drede and inflammyt yame in esperance and gude hope,  
 transcuring in all partis with ye king, affermyt yat day yat  
 batell suld begyn to yame liberte and fredome or ellis perpetuall  
*seruitute* and thirllage; syne maid invocacioun of ye namys  
 of antecessouris, quhilkis doughtely expellit Iulius Cesare  
*empriour*, and to yat tyme had conseruit yare liberte and  
 salfit yare persouns haille inviolate fra tribute and Romane  
 ceremonis. Quhen yir exhortacions or siclike war remembrit  
 be ye capitanis, the pepill war sa reiosit yat euery ane avowit  
 70 yat in defence of the cuntre and liberte yareof, nowder  
 wapynnys nor armour suld gar him fle. This feirß and glaid  
 continence of Scottis, yare copioß nowmer, yare strang and  
 strange fervoure to fecht, astonyst gretelie ye Romane chiftane  
 and Romanis, yat diuerß abhorrit ye fyne of ye batell, nocht  
 ignorant it was na litill danger to recounter pepill constitute  
 in extreme dispare. Caratake, chiftane of all yis armye, or  
 he gaif ye signe to ione ye feild, proponit for yare guerdoun  
 perpetuall liberte. Ostorius *with* mekill wisdom, as ye  
 Romane chiftanis accustomyt, ordoring his folkis, to exhort M.L.T. 1225  
 was nocht swere, vsing ane vehement vrasoun: thay suld  
 remember yai war Romanis, dantaris of princis, pepill and  
 80 naciouns; yare partie quham aganis yai contendit war bot  
 fulehardy, vnmanerlie, barbare pepill, separate fra all humanite Fo. L.  
 and yarefore be wise nature, (parent of all thingis), constitute  
 in maist extreme partis of ye warld. Syne on athir partie was  
*commandit* to ione ye batell. Incontinent be sic ire and hete  
 yai recounterit, yat never *with* greter amang na naciouns afore  
 was fochtin. Doutsom betuix hope and drede certane tyme

Fo. L. *Ƴai faucht. Ffinalie, lang experience and vse in were to Romanis dressit ane reddy way to victorie. Albanis to Ƴe montanis fled, Romanis scharplie persewand. Excellent and notabill was this victorie, ffor takin was Ƴe spoufs and dochter of Caratake and his bredir Ƴoldin. The king, (as commonlie in aduersite is na securite), seing Ƴe feild tynt, socht refuge at Cartwmandua the agit quene, his gude moder, quhilk eftir 10' deceifs of Cadallane his fader had maryit Venwsius, ane nobill, (bot of subtell and dissatefull mynde towart Ƴe commoun weill), and be hir was deliuerit bundin to Ƴe victouris in Ƴe nynte Ƴere eftir Romanis had begunnyn were in Albion. Quhen be his takaris he was led to Ostorius, reuerendlie in his meting rising, Ƴe Romane chiftane, as to ane nobill prince, deiectit fra Ƴe hiest gre of dignite, at his first cuming he birst out in teris, with his richt hand syne apprehending Ƴe king, said: "This caiß, King Caratake, equallie is to be sufferit, ffor how beit fra Ƴe favoure of fortune Ƴow be abiectit, of vertewe Ƴow art nocht destitute. Thow art now becummyn in Ƴe handis of Romanis. Thow has na mater to be eschamyt how beit Ƴow be pray to Romanis, quhilkis has in vse to leid afore Ƴame in tryumphe sa mony nobill princis and chiftanis captive, 20' eftir of realmes and scepteris Ƴai ar denwde." To Ƴir wourdis with sare sichis ansuerit Ƴe king: "I confesß it is force to me suffir Ƴis caiß, how beit contrare my mynde. Bot I wey it nocht sa hevily as I do fortune, sa cruell inemye to our affaris, Ƴat before Ƴine ene scho suld produce me for exempill of hir instabilite and variance. Thow has me presoner, vincust mare be policie and fraude Ƴan force. Sa lang as pussance remanit, I contendit contrare Romanis. Be fraude of my wikkit gude moder Cartwmandua (to quham eftir my armye discumfist I gaif credit of my life), I am cumin in Ƴi handis. NochtƳeleß it efferis me obtempir to Ƴe quhilk is victorie, and submytt me to pleßour of my inemye, sen be oure goddis it is sua providit. And to Ƴe pertenis vse Ƴe caiß of ane victoure, providing all way Ƴow be nocht denwde of clemence and 30' mercye, maist excellent vertwis in ane chiftane, be quhilk vertewe na captivis ar in sa extreme myserie deiectit, bot Ƴai beleif sum grace." Quhen Ƴir wourdis be Caratake war said,*



be command of Ostorius he was to ane tent convoyit and Fo. L.  
 honorably intertenyit as ane prince. Eftir certane days, with  
 his spous, douchter and brethir he was had to Rome to be  
*present* to ye emprioure. The brute of his renoune was sa  
 honorabill in Italie, vthir ilis and provincis, yat all inhabi-  
 tantis addressit to *observe* ye way, desiring to se yat prince  
 quhilk sa mony *zeris* contempnit ye Romane pussance.  
 Attoure, in ye ciete of Rome ye name of Caratake was na  
 litill magnifyit. The pepill as to solempnit playis war warnit.  
 40 Men of armys stude in cumpanyis in ye feild to ye camp  
 adiacent. Than ye *kingis* familiaris preceding, ye chenis and  
 harnessingis, conquest in ye Britan weris, war borne. Syne  
 the bredir, spouß and dochter of Caratake and his self last  
 was schawin. The captivis for fere and terroure made bot  
 sobir request for grace. Bot Caratake schew him *nocht*  
 deiectit in yis extreme caiß of fortune and, nowthir be sad  
 contynance nor be wourdis requiryn mercy, quhen to ye  
 empriouris throne he assistit, said in yis sorte: "Gif ye  
 prosperite had bene moderate, conforme to ye nobilite and  
 fortune of me descending of sa nobill antecessouris and having  
 senezorie abone sa mony pepill, sua yat I had deynzit to bynd  
 societe and be resoun yareof tak pece with Romanis, I had  
 cumin to yis ciete as ane freynd erare yan presoner. This  
 50 *present* caiß of myne, as it is to me vn honest, rycht sua,  
 Cesare, it is to ye richt honorabill. I had sum tyme men, M.L.T. 123b  
 horß, armoure and richesß and it is na mervell gif contrare  
 my will all yir be loist and, gif ye Romanis will abone all  
 naciouns haue senezorie, it followis yat all vtheris mon be  
*your servandis*. Gif I had als sone randerit me as ye Romane  
 armye come in Albion, nowder yi glore, Cesare, nor zit my  
 myschance had bene sa notabill to ye warld. And now, gif  
 yow slay me, thy presonere, haistelie *with* my dede I sall  
 be forzett; and gif yow will I salfie departe, I sall be perpetuall  
 exempill of clemence of ye empriour and Romane pepill."  
 At thir wourdis Cesare to him, his spous and bredir, grantit  
 grace and haistelie yai war lowsit of bandis. Hereeftir the  
 60 *senatouris* convenit quhare, twiching ye captiuite of Caratake,  
 mony and grete *materis* war dispute, concluding ye act was

Fo. L. na leß honorabill yan quhen Siphax be Scipio, Perses be Lucius Paulus, and vthir siclike chiftanis and princis war vincust be Romanis. To Ostorius yai decernit ye ornamentis of tryumphe. Caratake, making ye grete aith to obserue amyte and fidelite to ye emprioure, senatouris and Romane pepill, leiffing in Rome his eldest broder and dochter in ostage, be tollerance of ye empriour returnit to Scotland. In yis 3ere latelie, or Caratake *with* all his pussance last reconterit Romanis, mony ferlyis on ye feildis of Scotland war sene. Ane batell of horßmen in myddis the plane was sene kenelie fecht, apperandlie be felloun slauchter on athir partie debating, and incon- 70  
 continent all evanyst sa clene yat quhare ye batell was sene na takin remanit. Alsua it is haldin yat ane heird of wolfis assemblit ye day precedent or Albianis contrare Romanis debatit, and on ye nycht following invading ye wachis, haistelie bereft ane and bure him to ye forest beside, in ye dawing suffering him sauffie departe. Ane barne in Carictoun was borne with ane crawis hede, vyirwayis in na parte deformyt. Thir ferlyis before yis infortunate feild war to the pepill terribill,  
 M.L.T. 124 becauß divinouris interpret yame to ye damage of Caratake and his kinrik. Bot eftir fyne of ye weris quhen Caratake was haill and sound, all war interpret to ye bettir sensß. At his 80  
 Fo. LI. returne, grantit be clemence of ye Empriour Claudius, ye pepill obseruit ye wayis and stretis *with* incredibill honouris, convoying yare prince to Carictoun. This ciete togiddir with Brigancia (now Galloway), and Syluria (now Kyle, 'E), to him be command of ye empriour was restorit. Hereeftir quhen he had gude pece he perseuerit faithfull freynd and marrow to Romanys, spending his remane[n]t dayis in rest and eiß, coft be grete labouris and pyne. Oftymes reduceand to mynde the incommoditeis and skathis of were, he waryit batellis, employing all his cure to obserf pece and fidelite to euery man in tyme cuming. Quhen be writingis of Ostorius, legate, ye empriour knew ye gude parte he kepit, he remyttit his dochter quham he held in oistage at Rome, langing sare to se hir fader. To ye space of twa 3eris continewit yis pece 10  
 and weris on all partis war stanchit. Syne at Carictoun deceissit yis vailzeand prince, Caratake, worne and consumyt mare

be laubouris yan age, in ye xxij zere eftir deceiſs of his eme Fo. LI.  
 Metellane. His senezory mare be force yan felicite was governit.  
 Off all Scottis princis before him regnyng ye maist nobill, and  
 maist valezeand in weris of all vtheris liffing in his tyme,  
 becaus he directit all ye cast of his life to defend his kinrik  
*contrare Romanis*, lordis and maisteris of ye maist parte of  
 ye warld, and, fynalie, gaif his cure yat his pepill in honest  
 ritis and gude maneris suld be instructit. His regne durit to  
 ye xiiij zere of Claudius, Romane emprioure, and of mannis  
 Redempcioun ye liiiij zere.

About yis ilk tyme at Rome liffit men of excellent ingyne :  
 20 Persius, Iuvenale, athir vsing ye style of satiris, Lucane, ye  
 poet maist preclare, Seneca of ye Stoic opiniouns and eftirwart  
 be Nero slane. Sanct Ierome, for epistillis writtin be Sanct  
 Paule to Seneca and be Senec to Paule, apperandlie ascrivis  
 him to the Catalog and nowmer of Sanctis. Alsua throw all ye M.L.T. 124b  
 warld infidelis be preiching of ye haly apostillis began to  
 ressaue the verite of ye ewangell and ye fraude of devillis was  
 made manifest quhilkis illudit man kynde mony zeris afore.

ffollowis the ferde buke of the Scottis historijs.

## [Liber Quartus.]

How to Corbrede was gevin the crowne ; how Pichtis  
contrare Romanis conspīrit, and of deceiſ of Ostorius.

Cap° i

Fo. LI.

**C**aratake fynissit his dayis, as in the buke precedent be 30  
ws is schawin, and was beryit in ye plane besid the  
castell of Evon, as for ye tyme was vse. Apoun his  
sepulture ane sumptuoſ towmb, be ye public decrete, sone  
pareeftir in his honoure was erectit ; and nixt it, square  
hewin stanis in greter nowmer yan at sepulturis of vtheris  
his progenitouris. He had ane onelie dochtir, quhilk for  
continewall infirmite was vnhabill for mariage. Quharefore  
remanyng chaist to ye end of hir life, fra all veneriane actis 40  
scho abstenit. For pis causſ ye barons convenyng for creacioun  
of ane king, Corbrede, jonger brother to Caratake, be votis  
of ye pepill was chosin to succede in place of ye king deceissit.  
The elder broder nocht suffering ye hetis of Italie, in oistage  
at Rome deceissit of before. Of feirſ and active ingyne was  
Corbrede and nocht mekill different fra ye maneris<sup>1</sup> of Cara-  
take his broder. To Romanis lang tyme he was faithful  
freynd, lyke as Caratak, be his lattir wourdis, had gevin in  
charge. To nane he was iniurioſ, nor be offensis of nane  
vtheris was he prouokit, expert quhat incommoditeis apoun  
weris followit. In begynnyng of his regnne he went to ye  
Ilis, quhare he made residence quhil he had dantit ye insolence  
of certane lymmaris, quhilkis during ye infirmite of Caratake  
had sum parte inquiet ye cuntre. Herefore to Insulanis was  
his cummyng thankfull. Returnyng to Albion he institute 50  
divine ceremonis, be weris and batellis neclectit ; and of new,

M.L.T. 125

<sup>1</sup> MS. *mananeris*.

reparellit fortalicy beth to erd afore. To Lugia and Cornane Fo. LI.  
 (now Roß and Cathnes), extreme partis of Albion, he past  
 yareeftir, quhare in his viage he punyst lymmaris and sornaris,  
 quhilkis infestit the rurale pepill, and rewardit sic men as  
 defendit yame fra iniuris. Quhill to sic thingis was King  
 Corbrede intent, the Romane affaris in Albioun vnder ye  
 legate Ostorius war at febill poynt, ffor Pichtis with Conkist,  
 yare new create king (lord of Ordulice and Deer afore), tending  
 to recovir yare liberte, assailzet ye Romane capitane and his  
 soldeouris left in Pichtland to beild strenthis and fortalicy  
 in Dere and Ordoluce (now Merß and Berwic) and gaif na grete  
 60 cure to wrefare, thinking be dede of Caratake all trublis  
 war fynysst; and gif be supple fra vtheris castellis, Romanis  
 had nocht haistelic bene reskewit, yai had deit all atanis.  
 Nocht yeles ye chiftane and viij of his capitanis (namyt cen-  
 turions), with diuers vtheris his duchtist soldeouris, in walit  
 cumpanyis war slane. Nocht lang eftir apoun bandis of  
 Romanis seking necessaris in ye cuntre yai made ane iupartie,  
 and fulezeit yame in batell, with all vthir succourß yat come  
 in yare supple. At last Ostorius with his army weill appoyntit,  
 contrare Pichtis past in batell. Pichtis stoutlie sustenit ye  
 70 fecht and in ye samyn ye Pichtis of Berwic schew maist  
 manhede. Thir faucht in ye vantgarde, and be felloun slaucher  
 dang doun ye Romanis. This ye legate aduerting, haistelic  
 maid for yare reskewe, yat war sa scharplie assailzete. Nocht-  
 yeles he resaut ane grevouß wound, and almaist be ye Ordu-  
 lucis was opprest. Sua ye day declynyng, quhen sicht fra ye  
 fechtaris was removit, ye batell was disseuerit with na litill M.L.T. 125b  
 damage to athir partie. Eftirwart followit ithand iupartis  
 and maist in sorte of rubry in woddis and mosis, as be aventure  
 yai reconterit. Ffynalie Pichtis, with supple of Britouns and  
 vtheris fra ye Ile of Mon, ionit contrare Romanis; and skantlie  
 was ye feild begunnyn quhen on purpoiß Pichtis like flearis  
 gaif ye bak. This fleing drewe sum parte of Romanis persewing  
 80 out of ordour, without command of chiftanis, apoun ye busch-  
 mentis of Pichtis, be quham yai war takin and slane. Vtheris Fo. LII.  
 alsua war tranyt and, cummerit amang stakkis and haggis,

Fo. LII. at returne of inemyis war opprest. This persaving, Ostorius, *nocht without grete affray*, with ane parte of his armye returnit to his campe; syne to Rome send ane herald to schewe ye empriour ye rebellion of Pichtis, how yai had ressaut fugitivis, inemyis to Romanis, fra ye Ile of Mone, and war at sic poynt of insolence, yat nowder be force nor beneuolence *mycht* yai at fidelite of Romanis bene content. Be ye emprioure was ansuerit: "All Pichtis, in speciall ye inhabitantis Berwik, as begynnaris of ye rebelloun, suld neuer in tyme cuming to ye fidelite of Romanis be ressaut; nor quhen yai war subiect, suld haue na grace; bot ye name of yat nacioun aluterlie suld be deletit. To yis effect, twa legiouns fra Gallia 10 suld haistelie be send to Britan." Quhill Ostorius taryt ye responß of ye emprioure, Pichtis, be ye recent victorie mare insolent and proude, fra all partis contracting supple of pepill to quham ye Romane name was euer odioß, assailzeit two cumpanyis of Romanis, imprudentlie forraying ye cuntre; syne distribute baith spuleze and presoneris to yare complicis, induceing *vyir* nyctboure naciouns of Kendale, Tegenis and Icenis, Britouns, to failze fra ye Romanis, quhill Ostorius, wery be *cummyr* of sic curis and doloure of ye grevous wound resaut in batell precedent, to grete plesoure of inemyis, fra yis life departit. Pichtis and complicis *with* yame conspiring, *commovit* be ansuere of ye empriour, haistelie invadit Romanis *with* bataill. Contrare yame Manlius Valens, chiftane to ye 20

M.L.T. 126 Romane armye eftir deceiß of Ostorius, brocht his ordinance to ye plane, and in place convenient arrayit his batell, ffollowit ane feirß bargane and sare, and mony woundis on athir partie gevin and tane. In reskew of Pichtis fechting in grete dangere, but beleif of ony partie, *with* ane haisty onsett come ye power of Kendale weill horssit, to ye nowmer of *iiij<sup>c</sup>*. Be yare cuming astonist war Romanis, and lange *mycht nocht* sustene yare scharpe assailze, bot fleing, *with* grete tinsale of yare cvmpanye to yare campe returnit. Of Romanis in yis batell abone *iiij<sup>m</sup>* war slane, of Pichtis and complicis to ye nowmer of *ij<sup>m</sup>*.

How Aulus Didius come in Britane ; how Scottis Fo. LII.  
and Pichtis contrare him faucht, and to quhat fyne  
come ye bargane. Cap° [ij°]

30 **Q**uhill thir actis war done in Britane Aulus Didius, quham  
Cesare (knewing ye dede of Ostorius) had substitute in  
his place, yat ye province of ane chiftane suld nocht be desti-  
tute, with twa legions haistelie sped to Albion, quhare he fand  
ye Romane affaris at febill poynt, and yarefore opponit him  
revengeare of yare harmes. To draw all ye nacioun of Pichtis  
to fynale rewyne, as ye impriour had gevin in charge, ffirst  
convenyng ane counsell, vehementlie he blamyt ye weremen  
yat failzeing to yame self and ye Romane senezeory, yai war  
nocht intent to exercicion of were, eftir captiuite of King  
Caratake ; nor aduertit nocht quhat was to done, quhen yai  
suld procede, or quhen yai suld stynt and contene, reducing  
to mynde quhat vtilite mycht follow apon werelie exercicion,  
and quhat skaith mycht aventure to weremen gif it war  
remys ; and he amervellit mekle ye Romane weriouris war  
40 sa dekeyit fra vassalage, yat be barbaris sa oftymes ouresett  
yai war nocht without schame and dishonour defait ; ffinalie,  
be mony resons he made yare curage ferme and solid, praying  
yai suld nocht be perturbit for ye unchancy bargane, and to  
ye proves of inemyis yai suld nocht ascrive ; ye last myschance  
happynnyt be inaduertence of werelie discipline ; to yare  
chiftane in tyme cuming yai suld obtempir ; yai suld obserue  
temperance and continence, to quhilkis nane vertew in ane  
man of were mycht be preferrit. Wiselie persuading yir  
premiss, to ye effect yare curage suld nocht be deiecit,  
quhen yir wourdis or siclike to ye weremen war schewin, in  
grete esperance and glaidnes war yare hartis rasis. Nane  
was in yat multitude quhilk avowit nocht to be, of ye dis-  
honoure resauit, haistelie revengit. The brute hereof first  
50 affrayit ye king of Pichtis, his pepill, and vtheris his assistantis,  
zit eftirwart fermyng yare myndis be remembrance of ye  
recent victorie, to Corbrede, king of Scottis, yai send ambas-  
siatouris quhilkis suld say : “ How beit Romanis twyis latelie

- Fo. LII. war vincust, lossing grete parte of horsmen and yare chiftane Ostorius, zit be supple brocht fra Gallia be ye new chiftane, Aulus Didius, yai had renewit ane armye, tending to hery Pichtland, and delete ye name of Pichtis, decreting, gif it fortunyt Romanis be victouris, doutles ye nobill kinrik of Pichtis suld in maist extreme sort be demanit, and ye pepill fynalie all distroyit; Romanis towart ye pepill of Brigancia war na bettir myndit, apoun quham yai had devisit siclike felony, nocht onelie to haue yame subiect to yare senezeory as afore, bot als to haue yame thirllit to importable con- 60 ditions of servitude; this and nocht ellis suld in Romanys be lippynnyt; effectuoslie herefore yai prayit to supple yame and Brigancia contrare ye appering danger, yat yai mycht fra iniuris of inemyis be assurit; bettir war to resist yare invasiouns zit quhil yai had pussance, than quhen strenth war feblit, the army discumfist, the pepill subiectit, regions occupyit and at ye vrgent persute of inemyis, to attempt ye thing quhilk war impossibill to perfurnys." To yis ansuerit Corbreid king: "He was certifiyt yat Aulus Didius, Romane legate, was towart him and his kinrik evil myndit; he come in Albioun, nocht onelie to conserue at ye Romane fidelite regions conquest afore, bot be manifest ambicion to extend 70 fordwart his weris, and subiect to ye Romane senezorie new regions vntwichit and euer at liberte to yat tyme; herefore he wald with ane cumpanye of gudelie men haistelie cum to
- M.L.T. 127 Brigancia to defend his liegis fra all invasioun of inemyis, gif ony wer intentit; he wald be na iniuris provoke Romanis bot gif yai first to him or his kinrik did offenss; ffor in ye band made be King Caratake with Romanis, sua was contenit be lawis of quhilk haly lyig he was astrenezete and oblist." Ambassiatouris departing, Corbrede contracting power to Brigancia movit. Didius the legate, knawing ye cuming of Corbrede to Brigancia with ane armye, haistelie be ane herald chargeit he suld remove fra Brigancia, quhilk was ane Romane province, and be benevolence of ye empriour and Romane 80
- Fo. LIII. pepill grantit to Caratake during his life, alanerlie be yis restrictioun yat Caratake deceissing, it suld to ye domynion of Romanis returne; gif he refusit yis charge he suld be



assurit to be repute inemye to ye Romane pepill in tyme Fo. LIII.  
 cuming, and be force of armys suld be debarrit nocht onelie  
 Brigancia, bot all vyir regiouns quhare he regnit now in sa  
 grete ese, throw benigne tollerance of ye emprioure and  
 Romane senatouris. Skantlie had ye herald in *presens* of ye  
 king rehersit yis charge, quhen skurreouris schew how Cesium  
 Nasica (to quham Aulus Didius, grave in age and vnabill for  
 weris, had *committit* reule of ye armye) had brocht his ordi-  
 nance in Brigancia, to ye grete feir and terrour of ye rurale  
 pepill. The king hering yir novellis, sum parte *commovet*,  
 10 demandit the herald gif his cuming was to betraifß him vnder  
 coloure. The herald, addressing ansuere, be clamoure of ye  
 assistantis was inhibit, crying atanis he *deseruit* to be incar-  
 cerate. Bot be *commoun* lawis of all naciouns the herald  
 salffie was deliuerit and returnit to his maister. In ye ilk  
 tyme, be messengeris fra Pichtland, Corbrede was certifiyt  
 quhat Cesium Nasica had contrare him and his liegis devisit ;  
 yarefore he drewe his folkis to ane strenth, to preserue yame  
 vnharmit be Romanis, quhill he mycht fra all Scottis regions  
 assembl power, thinking it concernit mekill his dignite and  
 ye *commoun* weill to preserue his liegis fra all myschance ;  
 syne to Epia departit to Venusius (spouß of Cartwmandua  
 20 ye quene, ane man of na litill autorite for ye tyme) to con-  
 sult *with* him in yis apperand dangere. Venusius lang tyme M.L.T. 127b  
 be ye Romane armye was defendit contrare all nychtboure  
 naciouns, to quham abone mesure he was odioß for betreas-  
 ing and deliuering of King Caratake to Romanis be Cartw-  
 mandua ye quene, bot finalie werie of ye pridefull domynacion  
 of Romanis, quhen he knewe weris contrare Corbrede movit  
 fra Romanis, he failzete and assistit to his native king. Cartw-  
 mandua weying yis hevilie and knawing hir culpabill in ye  
 cryme, suspecting the apperand prosperite of Corbrede, be ane  
 policye scho tuke and presonit hir spous Venwsius, his brethir  
 and vtheris tendir freyndis. At yis dispite, the king *with*  
 ire inflambit, how sone he come to Epia, deliuerit Venwsius  
 30 and his freyndis fra preson ; syne *commandit* Cartwmandua  
 suld be erdit qwyk, all the pepill crying yat mischeant woman  
 had weill *deseruit* ye samyn. Quhill sic thingis war in doing

Fo. LIII. certane of ye kingis folkis, *without* command of chiftanes, assailzeit Romanis sekand *necessaris* in ye cuntre, and chaising yame persewit sa vnwiselie yat yai war environit be inemyis and slane. This caisß affrayit sua ye remanent in ye strenth, yat be authorite of yare captanis, with difficulte fra fleing yai contenit. The fyft day following, Romanis *promitting* certane horßmen to putt terrowr to ye Scottis, devist wyn ye strenth, quhilk was ane litill mote within ane bog, to na horßmen patent, and be treis and rammell invironit on all 40 partis except ane entre. *Nocht* yeles, knowing be exploratouris ye hoistis of Scottis and Pichtis approcheing within thre mylis, fra purpoiß yai desistit. Than Cesium Nasica, Romane chiftane, *commandit* all his weremen tak ye plane beside, quhare in gude ordoure he taryit ye bargane. How sone ye mane batell of Scottis and Pichtis in huge nowmer approchit, and saw Romanis, be sic fervoure and haist yai ran to batell yat

M.L.T. 128 or ye feild was ionyt be haisty *rynnyng* baith aynd and spiritis almaist war falezeit. At ye son declynyng, yai mellit syne *with* incredible hete, and mony on athir partie at ye first counter slane. Apperandlie towart Romanis inclinit the victorie, bot be recourß of Scottis, quhilk at ye strenth remanit 50 afore, ye batell was renewit. At last quhen licht was passit, athir armye to vthir gaif place, Romanis returnyng to yare camp, Scottis and Pichtis to ye nerrest montanis.

How Cesium Nasica *with* the king of Scottis and Pichtis appoyntit pece, and of articulis and condiciouns yareof. Cap° iij°

The nycht following, Aulus Didius be ane herald aduertist Cesium how Britouns in Kentschire had *contrare* Romanis rebellit; quharefore he suld wey wiselie ye caisß, and gif he mycht *with* honeste, suld *with* inemyis tak pece; in aventure gif he taryit at werys in yai partis, Romanis mycht leisß *with* dishonour ye senzeory, be sa grete laubouris conquest in Britane. Herethrow ye ardent corage of Cesium to fecht was sum parte softit. The confederate kingis, brokin be ye recent bargane, on ye morne to Cesium oportunelie send heraldis for

60 trewis, and to schaw how grete skaith followit yir lang weris, Fo. LIII.  
 sen be ye samyn yare gudis war loist and yare freyndis slane  
 in batell; it war honorabill to Romanis to haue freyndis  
 in tyme cuming of inemyis, quham yai mycht neuer vincuſs  
 sa lang as life mycht lest; and in yare name suld promytt to  
 accept sic condiciouns of pece, as war decretit be wise men  
 to be chosin yareto be commoun electioun.

Cesius and his Romanis, finding occasioun of honest pece,  
 refusit nocht yir offeris, expert of nane avantage bot of grete  
 dammage in ye precedent batell. 3it to Aulus Didius, Romane  
 legate at Camelodune, tarying ye aventure of batell, Cesius  
 70 thocht best to refer ye cais; and quhat he determyt yarein,  
 he suld perfurnis. This mater was nocht delayit, ffor how  
 sone Aulus Didius be the herald knewe in quhat perrell  
 Romanis in ye last iournay war constitute, consulting to ye  
 honour of the commoun weill he devisit ambassiatouris to the  
 confederate kingis be directit; yai suld appoynt ane place M.L.T. 1286  
 conuenient for communicacioun, for he wald devise with yame  
 apoun ye condicions of pece and vtheris grave materis. To  
 yis legacioun be ye kingis was ansuerit: "Thay wald do as  
 Didius desirit, sua with ten horſs onelie as yai suld cum he  
 wald convene to ye meting, and on athir partie leif yare armye  
 ane hundreth paiſ fra ye place quhare ye triste was sett;  
 vthir wayis yai thocht ye meting mycht be dangerous." 80

Didius refusit nocht ye appoyntment, and ye thrid day follow-  
 ing to ye commonyng was assignit. Apoun ye marchis of Fo. LIIII.  
 Brigancia was ane plane and within ye samyn ane grete stane.  
 Hereat, like as was appoyntit, yai convenit. And first ye  
 Romane legate reducit to remembrance the kyndenes done  
 be Cesare and Romane senatouris to King Caratake and ye  
 pepill of Scotland, quhen yai had him captive at Rome, calling  
 him freynd and fallow and rewarding him richely, sufferit  
 him regne at his plesure in Scotland as afore; siclike yai  
 remittit his dochter, quham yai held in plege for hir fader, to  
 hir native cuntre; gude iuste princis war in vse for gratitudis  
 done to refer siclike, herefore Corbrede had na mater to brek  
 ye lyig, nor move weris contrare Romanis quhilkis be sa mony  
 10 meritis and grete honouris had avansit Caratake his brother

Fo. LIIII. germane ; testifying ye inmo[r]tale goddis, herefore he besocht him and his pepill stand content of his awne boundis and liff at eifß, nocht iniuring his nyctbouris, nor invading ye Romane provincis yareeftir ; gif yis was to him plesing, Cesare, ye senatouris and Romane pepill suld repute Scottis gude freyndis and confederatis in tyme cuming ; vvir wayis, gif vnwiselie yai wald, to yare grete hurt, in hichtynes persevere, thay suld doutles of ane haisty fall be assurit. To yis ansuerit ye king : " I tak witnes of ye goddis eterne yat I inferrit na weris to Romanis, bot alanerlie repellit iniuris. Quhen Cesium Nasica, contrare ye band contractit with King Caratake, brocht his armye within my realme and be fyre and swerd cruelly bett 20  
 M.L.T. 129 euer myndit to defend my kinrik and pepill of Scotland fra all exterior invasioun and iniuris, and to rander thankis at my power to Cesare, Cenatouris, and Romane pepill ffor honouris and kyndenes done to King Caratake, his dochter, brethir and kynnyßmen. Attoure with all my pussance I haue lauborit to lif at pece in thir rowmys, be benignite of goddis to ws grantit, without weris of ony nacioun. I desirit pece with Romanis, thinking to ye end of my life it suld indure." Than ye Romane chiftane turnyng to ye king of Pichtis said : " He amervellit quhat provokit Pichtis to weris contrare Romanis, quhilkis had neuer onerit yame with sic chargis, as victouris mycht of resoun put to pepill vincust, 30  
 like as hevvy tribute or furnessing of weremen ; bot be ye contrare thay had curtesly fred yare plegeis, apoun yame had exercit na tyrannye, bot chargit yame with ane sobir tribute to the agit morpeis in Camelodune, to be pait yerelie in onelie name of tribute, nocht yat yai suld be molestit, bot yare to be remembrance of ye honorable victorie and maieste of ye Romane name : herefore Pichtis suld wiselie wey gif yis beneuolence of ye empriour and Romane pepill deseruit sa mekle vnkyndenes, or erare thankis and favoure ; gif yai war determyt in weris to persevere, yai suld be assurit Romanis suld nocht denwde yame of armys, vnto ye tyme ye name of Pichtis aluterlie war exterminate ; giff yai desirit pece, he suld in name of ye empriour and Romane pepill consent 40

yareto, be certane honest condiciouns." To ye king of Pichtis FO. LIIII.  
 yir offeris war plesing, and sone yareeftir, the auld pece be  
 ane new band was ratifyit. Of pece yir war ye condicions :  
 Romanis abone ye rowmes conquest suld *nocht* extend yare  
 boundis ; to Scottis nor Pichtis, yai suld infer na weris *without*  
 be iniuris yai war first *provokit* ; Pichtis suld vse yare propir  
 ritis and lawis ; Conkist ye king suld regne as of before ;  
 yai suld pay ye 3erelie tribute to ye morpeis and agit wemen  
 in Camelodune ; the Romane legate suld haue power of  
 blude ; nowder Pichtis nor Scottis suld resett rebellis fra M.L.T. 1296  
 Britane nor Gallia ; Scottis suld frelie bruke Brigancia with  
 vtheris yare regiouns and vse yare ancient consuetudis and  
 lawis ; nowdir *with* victualis nor armoure suld yai supple  
 inhabitantis the Ile of Mon, to quhome ye Romane name  
 50 was euer odiouß, and latelie falezeing ffra Scottis had done  
 grete violence to nychtbouris vnder domynyoun of Romanis ;  
 Scottis suld nowder supple Pichtis nor Britouns gif yai wald  
 contrare Romanis rebell, nor to yame Scottis suld infer na  
 weris sa lang as yai stude at ye Romane fidelite. Quhen done  
 war yir *premissis*, on athir party to yare folkis yai departit.  
 Sex 3eris following, *perseverit* yis pece, in quhilk tyme Aulus  
 Didius brukit surleie all rowmys conquest of before at fidelite  
 of Romanis.

How the legate Verannyus come in Britan ; of his  
 felony and deceiß ; to him succedit Paulinus  
 Suetonius, quhilk subiectit ye Ile of Mon ; how  
 eftir his departing to Gallia, Pichtis rebellit, and of  
 mysfortune of Romanis. Cap° iiij°

A fter his deceiß at Londoun, be Nero, Romane empriour,  
 in his place was send Veranius, all way to ambicioun  
 gevin. Efter yis new legate had vesyit grete parte of ye  
 Romane provincis in Britan, he went to ye ciete of Camelo-  
 dune quhare, *conforme* to ye ritis of Gentilis, he made divine  
 60 sacrifice to ye goddes Victoria and Claudius Cesare, recentlie  
 deceissit, to quhom be consultacioun of ye *senatouris*, decretit

- Fo. LIIII. war celestiall honouris. Hereeftir, kindillit be glore of antecessouris (quharein abone mesure he covate *with* yame equalite), seking sum occasion of new weris, quhen nane of resoun couth be fundin, he devisit *with* wrang molest ye *nichtboure* nacions, ymagynyng mony wayis to haue his intent. Be aventure it fortunyt certane larouns of ye Hieland, in secrete maner fra Pichtland drive ane pray, quhareof Verannius, taking occasion to move were, desirit na redrefß conforme to ye lyig, bot send apoun ye landis of Scottis grete nowmer of weremen, quhilkis forraying baith forestis and landis adiacent, draif ane copioß pray of bestiall and men to Pichtland. Be thir iniuris 70 Scottis provokit, ran to harnes; ffollowit haistelic amang yame diuerß radis and hereschippis without grete effusioun of blude. In myddis yis trubill Verannius, Romane legate, oureset *with* hevvy seiknes, at Camelodune deceissit. His extreme wourdis (as writis Tacitus) war full of ambicioun, adulacioun and flatterye to ye Emprioure Nero, avanting gif he *mycht* lifft twa zenis langare, he suld haue all ye ile of Albion subiect to ye Romane Impire. Eftir dede of Verannius, be the autorite of ye Emprioure Paulinus Suetonius gat ye gyding of Britan. He was ane man weil gevin and of modest ingine, abone all thing luffing pece. Haistelic betuix him and Corbrede of Scotland redressing iniuris, and takin punycioun of thevis, he ratifyit ye ald lyig and pece. Syne fra Scottis departing, apoun ye Ile of Mon he preparit ane expedicioun. This ile 80
- Fo. LV. (as said is) was ane resett, quhare fugitivis had recurß. Quhen sonare yan ony belevit he had yidder caryit his armye, parte be schippis made of new, parte brocht fra vthir placis, he happynnyt in ane new sorte of bargane. Apoun ye coist stude ane cumpanye in maner of religiouß wemen (quhilk in the tempill made *seruice*) in furioß habit, with haris skalit out of plett, and birnand torchis in handis. Siclike stude the Drwidis (the preistis of goddis) lifting yare handis towart ye hevin, with grete schowtis terribly cursing and bannyng ye Romanis. In myddis stude the remanent multitude in harnes. Nocht alanelie yat thik and strang array of armyt men astonist ye Romanis, bot als be ye strange sicht of ye furioß wemen and Drwidis yare membris war sa suspensß, yat almaist yai

stude immovabill, astonyst, reddy to resave strakis. Nocht- Fo. LV.  
 10 yeles be exhortacioun of yare chiftane moving fordwart yare M.L.T. 130b  
 standartis, yai mellit *with* inemyis, straik all doun quham yai  
 recounterit, involving yame in myddis yare fyrie torchis.  
 Insulanis skalit and chasit, war compellit to randerig and  
 resauē ye Romane garnisoun in yare strenthis. Down war  
 bett woddis and schawis, quharēin (as was ye brute) preistis  
 be abhominabill ritis, making of slane men sacrifice, con-  
 sultit with yare goddis. Quhen done war ye *premissis*, Paulyne  
 Suetonius legate, requirit be ye Romane presidentis in Gallia  
 to supple yame contrare certane rebellioun appering fra ye  
 Ile of Mone, departing first to Walis, fra thyne to Armorik,  
 now Litill Britanȝe. This knawing Britouns, and thinking be  
 absence of ye legate thay had oportunitē to rebell of new,  
 haistelie fra Romanis failȝete. The cauſs of rebellioun (as  
 20 sum haldis) was yat Arvirag, king of Britouns (Tacitus writis  
 him Phasuirag), borne of ye Tegene pepill, as before is said,  
 excellent and potent be lang continewit opulence, deceissing,  
 left in legacye the emprioure and his awne twa dochteris  
 heretouris, thinking be sic kyndenes his spouſs and kinrik  
 fra iniuris suld in tyme cuming be preseruit. Nocht yeles all  
 vthir wayis it happynnyt, sua yat his kinrik be centurions,  
 his houſs be *servandis*, war waistit, like as be violence yai  
 had bene conquest, his lady Voada bett and dung, his dochteris  
 deflorit, the maist potent of Britane nacioun distursit of  
 paternale gudis, and ye blude royall as sclavis demanit. Be  
 sic dispitis Britouns vexit and be fere of greter, sen be force  
 yare realme was thirllit to forme of ane province, having na  
 prince nor governoure of yare avne blude bot grete nowmer  
 30 of strangearis, haistelie addressing yame for armys, rasit grete  
 rebellioun, *commoving* vthir *nichtboure* naciouns to ye samyn.  
 About yis tyme mony ferlyis war sene in Albioun. The grete  
 occiane flowit bludy rede, and monstouris like as figuris of  
*mennis* bodyis, war cassin be sey apoun ye sandis: *ffuriouſ*  
 wemen enragein prenosticate ye myscheif to cum. At Camelo- M.L.T. 131  
 dune ye ymage of Claudius emprioure, falling of ye stage, in  
 small pecis was brokin. In ye samyn tempill the figure of  
 ye goddes Victoria fell apoun hir bak, signifying obeysance to

Fo. LV. inemyis. Spamen and divinouris, consultit quhat herethrow was signifyit, ansuerit yai menyt vnchancy and felloun myscheif with loifs of victorie to Romanis. Pichtis, remanyng in Cameldune and mwnycions beside, throw ye ansuere erectit in esperance of bettir fortune, be secrete conspiracions vsing all kinde 40 of fellony apoun ye Romane garnisouns, slewe mony or ye rebellioun was manifest; cawsing ye morpeis and agit weremen disluge denwde of possessiouns and landis, in derisioun calling yame captivis and sklavis, becaus contrare yame yai had euer inveterate rankoure; and fynalie of yame slew na litill nowmer, and sa mony of yir morpeis and soldeouris supporting yare febill age, as ran to ane anciant prophane tempill to declyne the furore of Ordolucis (now Berwic), quham yai knewe incontinent to persewe, all atanis war murdrist in the sanctuare. Ane vthir legioun gidit be Petus Cerialis, vsing for ye tyme autorithe of ye legate absent, attempting to reskewe ye morpeis, sone yareeftir was discumfist and slane. 50 Petus *with* ye horßmen alanerlie fled to ye camp, and in ye quiet nycht vnwitting inemyis tursing his standartis, haistelie sped him to Catus, procuratour of Britane, in Kentschire passing his tyme for ye *present*. Catus, knowing how in all partis of Albion was movit rebellioun, gretely agast to Gallia departit.

How Voada, quene of Britan, requirit supple fra King Corbrede; how he requirit redres of hir iniuris at Catus legate; of his contumelioß responsß, and how Scottis and Pichtis inuadit Romanis.

Cap° v°

**M.L.T. 131b** **A**bout pis tyme Quene Voada send ane to King Corbrede (hir broder germane as said is), regretting hevily hir miserie and iniuris done be Romanis, how hir twa dochteris be hurdome war defoulit, hir self attempting to defend ye honeste of hir dochteris contumeliosly was demanit, freyndis of King Arvirag with Scottis and Pichtis in his ordinance 60



afore war contempnit as bondis and sklavis ; pacience avalit Fo. LV.  
nocht ellis bot to haue sarare chargis apon yame lade, sen on  
force yai behuiffit suffir ; sum tyme Britouns had onelie ane  
king ; now twa kingis (erare reiffaris), the legate and Romane  
procuratour, abone yame regnit ; this ane in blude, yis vthir  
in the gude of Britouns enragit ; amang Romanis, quha made  
grettest spuleze, abusit wemen maist and fand invensiouns to  
cauſs men of substance deburſs maist monye, was repute maist  
nobill ; na thing now fra the insaciabill auarice nor vnbridillit  
lustis of Romanis was exceptit ; Catus, Romane procuratoure,  
ane myscheant man, of all yir inconvenientis was the cheif  
fortifiare. Praying herefore hir broder he wald cum in hir  
supple, and nocht suffir his onelie sister *with* sic confusioun  
70 be stirkin and lichtlyit, nor his neceis, hir dochteris, defoulit be  
hurdome, nor deiectit in sa vile *seruitute* ; ffor at yir iniuris  
and vthir innowmerabill *commovit* was all ye realme of Britan  
(of quham *mycht* be weill belevit goddis sum tyme wald haue  
myseracioun), and contrare Catus had rasis rebellion. Quhare-  
apoun haistelie suld follow (gif ye goddis war propiciant)  
yat be his fortificacioun, Britons abiecting ye servile zoik,  
Romanis suld be contrinit *with* dishonour to leif Britons at  
liberte ; in esperance hereof the ferlyis recentlie sene be  
Albianis, and respons of native goddis rasis ye curage of hir  
and all ye pepill. Be reporte of ye herald, Corbrede king  
knawing thir premisſ, with hie indignacioun his mynde to  
myseracion was sterit, yat his sister Voada of ye blude royall,  
80 decorit be spousage and bed of ane potent prince, suld be with  
sa mekill lichtlynes molestit. Haistelie herefore be ane Fo. LVI.  
herald he chargit Catus, Romane procuratour (quhilk *with*  
new power fra Gallia to Britan returnit), he suld fra iniuris of  
Voada ye quene abstene ; suld amend all iniuris according to M.L.T. 132  
equite and iustice, quhilk Romanis avancis yame to observe  
abone all vyir nacions ; vthir wayis to him and Romanis he  
suld be inemye in tyme *cuming*. Of yis message ye king fra  
Catus gat nan vthir ansuere bot wourdis full of contempcioun  
and displeſour, saying, it concernyt him na thing quhidder  
10 he failzeit or nocht to Voada ye quene ; it was folie yat ane

Fo. LVI. sempill barbare man subiectit afore, suld schaw him curios in Romane affaris, in na sorte to him pertenyng; gif ony iniuris war done to Voada, be doubill dishonour suld be redressit; be yis way and nane vthir (conforme to ye Romane equite) to the folie attemptatis of barbaris suld be satisfyt; he extemyt na thing gif he war freynd or fa in tyme cuming; he weyit all his mannassing as thing vane and of nane effect. At yis contumelios ansuere ye king commovit, band societe with Caranach, king of Pichtis for ye tyme, quhilk with his pepill of lang tyme was langwissing for ye samyn, tending to expell Romanis fra yare boundis. Schortlie yareeftir contracting ane army of Pichtis, Scottis and complicis, solistit fra Ireland in yare supple, throw all Pichtland, Deer, Candale and Icene yai made grevoß slauchter apoun Romanis and yare complicis, revengeing yare rankoure with sic felony yat nowder amyte, kyndenes, auld familiarite, age, nor na condicioun of persoun, mycht preserue yame fra yis murthir. Sparit was nocht ye ciete of Ordolucis on the coist side, and maist populoss within Pichtland. Slane war ye cietenaris, the castell wynnynng and bet to erde, the Romane soldeouris murdris, and all the towne brynt and deletit, becaus apperandlie ye inhabitantis favourit ye Romane garnisoun within ye castell. Efter certane tyme, quhen yis ciete was reparalit of newe, sum haldis it was namyt Berwic. Quhen thir novellis in ye Ile of Mon war divulgat, haistelie yai addressit all to harnes. Ffollowit cruell distruction of all Romanis and vpiris in garnisoun left to kepe the ile. To thir war sociate ye pepill of Brigancia and Siluria, maist inhumane of ony vtheris and vsing felony apon ye Romane provincis, abstenit fra na sorte of crudelite. Ffra this terribill myscheif sparit was nocht Carlele, ye strenthy towne, quhilk eftir inhabitantis slane and biggingis euertit, was made equale with ye grond. In this murthure wemen abstenit nocht fra armys, be sa grete desire vniuersalie yai war kindillit to revenge iniuris inflictit be Romanis.

How the Moravis come in Scotland and passit *with* Fo. LVI.  
 Scottis to batell contrare Romanis ; how be force of  
 Voada quene and supple of Scottis and Pichtis,  
 Romanis war discumfist. Cap° vj°

A bout the ilk tyme ane pepill of Moravis (as in oure corni-  
 killis is rememberit), of Germanye native, discumfist be  
 ye Romane armye and expellit yare *propir* cuntre, come wan-  
 dring to ye mouth of ye river of Ryne, quhare multiplying  
 in grete nowmer and preparing schippis as yai mycht best,  
 making ane navyn, with yare chiftane Roderich pullit vp  
 sale, tending to seik new habitacioun ; be mony wilsum and  
 strange salingis ya devayit apoun ye rowme seis certane tyme.  
 Ffinalie eftir be Gallis and Britons yai war stoppit fra ye  
 coistis foresaid, be aventure yai arrivit in Fforth (quhilk is  
 40 ye firth deviding vmquhile Pichtland fra Otolinia (now Fiffe).  
 Benignely war thir strangearis be inhabitantis resaut, beleving  
 yare supple and *presens* mycht to ye apperand batell be prof-  
 fitabill, becaus yai war namyt of grete vassalage, expert in  
 weris and of implacable haterent contrare Romanis, yat yai  
 mycht yarethrow with leß difficulte recovir yare liberte. This  
 beleif was augmentit be ye stout personagis, portratoure and  
 continence of ye Germane pepill, yare origine *commoun* with  
 Pichtis, and ye outrageous dispitis resaut be Romanis, of  
 quham, testifying ye goddis eterne, yai avowit to be vindicate.  
 In this sorte Rodorich *with* his Moravis brocht to Pichtland,  
 quhen he knewe ye confederatis kingis of Scottis and Pichtis  
 nocht yarefra distant abone xx<sup>tj</sup> myle with yare armyis, be  
 50 gydis of Pichtis knawing ye cuntre, he went to yame *with* his  
 folkis, quhare in presence of ye kingis, be ane lang and prolix  
 proposicioun plenezeing ye iniuris of Romanis, he schewe how  
 be onelie desire of ambicioun yai had occupyit grete parte of  
 Germanye, thirllit ye inhabitantis to servitude, rescinding yare  
 ancient ritis, had subiect yame to vncouth lawis ; Moravis to  
 quham he was chiftane, vincust and discumfist, war nocht  
 ressaut in *servitude*, bot expellit yare boundis, and as vaga-  
 bound outlawis exilit, to seik new habitacioun ; ane conforte

- Fo. LVI. onelie remanit, yat be favoure of goddis, eftir mekill erreure and devaying on ye seyis, he was convoyit to yai partis quhare he mycht revenge ye skaithis done be Romanis. He requestit herefore ye confederate princis, it mycht be to him grantit 60 to paß with Scottis and Pichtis contrare Romanis to batell, quhare yai suld haue experience quhat vassalage and werelie practik ye Germane pepill vsit in batell; gif eftir inemyis war rebutit yai had deseruit lawde, yai wald assigne him and his pepill landis quhare yai mycht duell, and wemen to yare spousß to multiplie and growe in ane ferme nacion with Scottis and Pichtis; gif yai war vincust and slane in batell, yai thocht yame satisfyt yat, stoutlie fechtand, yai war apoun yare maist arrogant inemyis revengit. To ye confederate kingis war ye offeris of Rodorik mare thankfull, yat yai knew ye pepill of Moravis, kindillit be invy and rankoure contrare Romanis, reiosing mekill yai had presentlie men of huge stature and incredibill fortitude, weil exercit in armys to supple yame 70 in batell; and with gude hert thanking Rodorik, to his postulacion condescendit. Syne having reddily all necessaris for ye expedicioun, on nyctis and dayis be grete iournais, towart ye quene Voada yai movit. With hir war ye floure of all ye Britan pepill for ye maist parte tarying ye cuming of Scottis and Pichtis. How sone Voada knewe hir brodir Corbrede ye king of Pichtis present with power, scho went with ane tryne of Britan nobillis in yare meting. Eftir mony hartlie saluta-
- M.L.T. 133b ciouns said ye quene: "Gif I had bene productit in manly nature, I suld nocht, liffand, haue sene nor sufferit sa mony importabill skathis to ye pepill of Albioun, as we se yai suffir dalie, subiect to ye pridefull domynioun of Romanis. Nocht- 80
- Fo. LVII. yeles how euer nature has formyt me, gif ze will assist to me in revengeing ye lichtlynes done to ws all, thir Romanis, sa stalwart contrare fragill wemen, sa cruell and wikkit apoun subiectis, sall feill quhat wemennis curage may do in batell, quhen extreme vrgent perrell apperis. I confesß me ane woman, quhilk nature how beit I may nocht remove (I pray God it war in my power); zit within my breist is ane stoute and manly harte. I sal, anarmyt, pas before zoure armye. In ye vantgarde I sall fecht with v<sup>m</sup> wemen of ye Britan blude,

all sworne to be of yir dispitis revengit. We sall procede Fo. LVII.  
 formest to the fecht, forzetting oure fragil nature, and for na  
 wappynnys, harnes, nor woundis sall be agast. Nowthir be  
 10 slauchter of inemyis, nor grevous bludy woundis, be yame  
 inflictit sall I be affrayit, as *commonlie* ar vthir wemen. Ffor  
 I may never haue miseracion apoun yame quhilk, be sa mony  
 sortis of slauchter, has distroyit my familiaris and freyndis,  
 becaus yai tyrannys, denwde of all humanite and piete, ffor-  
 zetting, as I beleif, yai ar mortail men, quhen yai dispulzete  
 oure cieteis and murdrist ye inhabitantis, defoulit sa mony  
 nobill matrons and chaist virginis in Britan. Herefore enarme  
 30 w, maist illustir princis, contrare oure *common* inemyis and  
 remember auld and recent iniuris, thinking ze dar weill accept  
 ye interprise quhilk ze se *presentlie* wemen, provokit, dar  
 attempt. The victory clerelie is zouris and nane may dout  
 thareof. Sua affrayit now ar Romanis yat in fleing thay  
 20 lippin all yare weill. Think ze suld nocht delay yis iournay,  
 in aventure, gif new power of Romane legions, with supple of M.L.T. 134  
 Gallis, be to ye armye of Catus conionit, ze may nocht sa  
 eselie to yat multitude resist. Ffynalie I beseik yat ze failze  
 nocht in curage, nor degener nocht fra vassalage of nobill  
 weriouris, nocht, without hard fechting, randerung to Romanis  
 zour self, spousis and barnys, quhilkis amang all erdlie men  
 ar maist tendirlye luffit." Apoun the wourdis of Voada  
 followit grete merynes amang the multitude, diuers amervaling  
 ye stout hartis of wemen, yat in manlie curage yai had changeit  
 ye imbecillite of yar fragill kynde. Nor in all ye multitude  
 was nane quhilk apprisit nocht ye vult, hardy contenance and  
 wourdis of ye quene. Quhen this to Catus, Romane chiftane,  
 30 was schawin, Romanis of ye Albiane armye war gretely ferit,  
 and at ye brute of yare haisty moving, Catus *with* strang  
 ordinance contrare yame procedit. Thay sonzeit nocht for  
 his *cummyng*, bot feirslye recountering, rebutit first ye Romane  
 horis men; syne lukynnyt about ye futemen, of yare horis men  
 denwde, haistelie vincust, and put yame to flicht. Apoun  
 flearis was maid orribill murthire. Catus, woundit *with* ane  
 dart, be reskew of ane *servand* evadit ye handis of inemyis,  
 and gretely affrayit, fleand to Gallia, departit. The Albanis,

Fo. LVII. be yis *present* advantage heich and proud, quhen ye spuleze of ye feild was collectit, enrageing in furie, exercit all sorte of cruelte apou Romanis and yare assistantis within Albion for ye *present*. In yis battell, as writis Cornelius Tacitus, war of 40 Romanis lxx<sup>m</sup> slane, of Albanis xxx<sup>m</sup>. Be yis vnhappy myscheif ye Romane affaris in Albion war put to sa scharpe calamyte, yat gif Paulyne Swetonius, Romane legate (for ye tyme be command of ye Empriour Nero rewilling Gallia), knowing the trubill movit be Albanis, had *nocht* sone occurrit, Britane fra yame had bene loist. Ffor haistelie he arrivit with twa legiouns and x<sup>m</sup> supple of vthir nacions. With this power and Romanis in Britan, he tuke purpois to fecht aganis ye strang multitude of inemyis.

M.L.T. 134b

How eftir returne of Suetonius, Voada inuadit Romanis be batell of new; how ye Romanis war victouris; of ye dede of Voada; how King Corbrede to ye Morauis assignit habitacioun, and of his deceif.

Cap° vij°

Voada the quene, knowing the arriving of Suetonius with new power of Romanis in Britan, chargeit Britouns, quham scho sufferit afore *departe* to yare rest, returne agane 50 to ye weris. Of Britons, and wemen be exempill of ye quene gevin to armes, haistelie scho contractit ane copiois army to bring ye remanent weris to fyne. With expedioun come Scottis, Pichtis and Moravis of Germanye, in thik hoistis, be ye recent victorie presumptuoslie gloring, yat apperandlie pai had occasioun and tyme oportune to discumfis Romanis. Thare wyiffis in yare cumpany (as ye rite was of ye pepill) war placit in cartis at ye extreme bordoure of ye feild, and vehementlie war requirit to be suthfast vitnes of yare victorie. Thus ye hoistis of Scottis, Pichtis, Moravis and Britouns weill ordorit for batell, Voada, bisselie rynnand *ourthwort* ye armye, and hir dochteris anarmyt *preceding*, said scho was nowmerit ane chiftane amang vtheris, *nocht* alanerlie 60 to defend hir kinrik and gudis, bot als to revenge hir liberte

loist, ye strakis resaut in hir awne persoun, and ye defloracioun of ye kingis dochteris, dispiting yat Romanis abusit yare lustis in sic turpitude, yat without discretion owthir of persouns or age, yai left nowthir virgine nor matrone vndefowlit; affermyng ye goddis war *present* to testify yare abusioun, and iustlie to revenge iniuris; be yare ire, grete nowmer of Romanis in ye recent batell was slane, fechting iniustlie aganis the pepill, never thrall nor subiect afore; now was to be fochtin with yai cowartis, quhilk be flicht in the last batell war salf; the new chiftane mycht weill exhort yame to bargane, bot *nocht* restore yare curage; gif yai wald maturely discuß how yare partye was vincust afore, how potent  
70 and strang was yare awne ordinance and thare iust cauß of ye batell, yai wald think owthir to vincuß in yat iournay, or be slane (quhilk ye goddis mot defend); 3it erare yai suld cheiße ye samyn yan sa shamefully to lif in thirllage. Nor Suetonius, Romane legate, in sic grete dangere was *nocht* still, and howbeit he confidit in ye vassalage of Romanis, 3it he myxt exhortaciouns and gude wourdis: yai suld *contempne* ye reird and vane rebouß of yat barbare pepill, in quhais armye war ma wemen nor men, and for ye maist parte war bot 3ong without *armour*, *nocht* expert in weris, and suld sone fle (as yai had oftymes done) quhen yai persaut ye fortitude of yare fais; in his few legiouns was men ynewe to strike ye instant batell; to yame it suld be mare glorioß yat *with* sic small  
80 power yai suld conqueß lawde as ye haill Romane armye war *present*; quharefore yai suld feirslie mell *with* inemys, Fo. LVIII. sla and murdris yame downe with pikkis and swerdis, and for ane tyme defer ye spuleze, quhilk *without* debait yai mycht eftir ye victorie bruke. Be yir wourdis Romanis tuke grete hardyment; sa mekill to drefß yare wapynnys sped ye ancient weriouris, be lang experience of sindry iournays confiding in yare strenth, yat Suetonius, thinking him assurit of victorie, gart son ye terrible trumpett to ione ye feild. On ye tothir parte the Albiane chiftanis, stuffit *with* multitude of men in armes as assurit of victorie, chargit yare folkis strike ye bargane. At begynnyng ye batell was scharp and cruell, bot fynalie Albanis war discumfist, chasit and *with* grete slauchter

Fo. LVII.

M.L.T. 135

Fo. LVIII. planelie oureset. To yame sua vincust, ye fleing was deficill, 10  
 for ye cartis and sleddis bordorit about ye feild. Fra slauchter  
 M.L.T. 135b of wemen was nocht abstenit. Romanis had clere and excel-  
 lent victorie, how beit richt skaithfull, be loiß of maist parte  
 of yare armye. In yis bargane (as writis Tacitus) fell to ye  
 nowmer of lxxx<sup>m</sup> Albiouns, quham commonlie he callis Britouns,  
 togiddir *with* maist parte of ye Moravis and Rodorik yare  
 chiftane. Voada ye quene, yat scho suld nocht liffand cum in  
 power of inemyis, in hir awne persoun put violent handis; hir  
 twa dochteris war takin and *present* to ye Romane chiftane,  
 anarmyt as yai facht in feild. Marius, ane nobill Romane,  
 eftir certane monethis spousit ye eldest (for he had deflorit  
 hir afore); and throw hir ye emprioure made him king of  
 Britouns, yat ye ile mycht be mare peciable in tyme cuming. 20  
 Marius resaving ye regnne and vsing to hunt in Candale,  
 quhilk marchis *with* Anandale and Galloway, fra his name  
 callit ye regioun Westmorland; of quhilk ye parte nerrest  
 Scotland eftir expulsion of Romanis is namyt Cumbirland,  
 and zit in *our* dayis ane parte of Candale kepis zit ye first  
 name, callit Kendale, the terme ane litill being alterit. King  
 Corbrede, sorie and trist, *with* ye residew of his army quhilk  
 evadit yis myscheif, departit to Scotland. Syne to ye Moravis  
 eschaping slauchter, for yare experience in weris, he distribute  
 ye landis betuix ye ryveris of Fforne and Spey to be haldin  
 of his regall maieste, namyng yat regioun Morave; how beit  
 afore it was callit Vararis. Expelling fra yai boundis ye 30  
 Vararis (of quham before is writtin), in diuerß regiouns yai war  
 skalit, becaus yai exercit mare domestic tulerie, to ye hurte of  
 yare self and nychtbouris, yan honest weris in defence of ye  
 common weill. Syne to Moravis war gevin ye Scottis virginis  
 in mariage, quharethrow within schort tyme yai mervelluslie  
 multiplijt and increscit; and the posterite following ye mater-  
 nale toung, forzetting the faderis langage, *within* certane yeris  
 grewe ane solid and ferme nacioun *with* Scottis, common in  
 langage and vthir consuetudis. To ye pepill and regioun, to  
 M.L.T. 136 yir dayis yis name remanis. Corbrede king, oureset in pus-  
 sance and substance, fra weris abstenit his remanent dayis,  
 nor be na exterior weris was invadit. Ffor Romanis be vrgent



40 civile weris certane 3eris following, infesting nowder Scottis Fo. LVIII.  
 nor Pichtis with difficulte, contenit ye south parte of Albioun  
 at ye faith of Romanis. Ffynale at Evon deceissit King Cor-  
 brede, decorit with famouß actis baith at hame and in weris,  
 eftir he had governit Scotland xvij 3eris; and in ye plane  
 adiacent, conforme to ye maner of antecessouris, with erd was  
 coverit. At his sepulture na lital nowmer of square hewin  
 stаны war erectit, as ye rite and custume was of ye pepill.  
 His regne durit to ye impire of Vespasiane, Romane em-  
 prioure, and to ye 3ere of oure Saluacioun lxxi.

Corbrede flurissing in Scotland, cunningg men wer in Itale:  
 Stacius Papinius, poet eloquent; Parsius poet, writare of  
 50 Satyris; siclike ye excellent poet Lucane, of Cordubia native;  
 Plutharcus Cheroneus, writare of historijs and exemplare of  
 gude maneris. Than was ye kirk of Criste devotelie and godlie  
 institute be preiching of ye apostlis in diuersß partis of ye  
 warld. At Rome Petir and Paule, contempnyng all wardly  
 plesouris, be contynuall doctryne and orisoun instrukkit and  
 defendit ye flok of Criste, purgit be fontane of bapteme as  
 efferit gude pasturis of ye kirk. Ffinalie, at command of  
 Nero, athir for ye faith be sindri pane and in diuersß place  
 was slane; for Petir at ye Goldin Mont *with* feet vpwart was  
 crucifijt, quhilk kynde of torment (it is haldin) he desirit. Paul  
 60 *with* ane ax was hedit at ye port callit Hostiensß. Bot lat ws  
 prosew oure historie of Scottis.

How Dardane resaut ye crowne; of his mysgiding  
 and slauchter. Ca° viij°

**D**ardane (pronevo of Metellane), eftir deceiß of Corbrede  
 resaving ye kinrik, for ye huge quantite of his persoun M.L.T. 130b  
 namyt Dardane ye Groß, sall begyn ye historie following. Ffor  
 Corbrede had thre sonnys; twa war infantis, and the thrid  
 nocht 3it of manly age: Corbrede, Tulcan and Brecus. The  
 eldest was nurist with his avnt Voada, quene of Britane (of  
 quham before is made mencion), and was teichit ye vrbante

- Fo. LVIII. and maneris of Britouns. Herefore the vulgare pepill gaif him Gald to surname; ffor Scottis ȝit in oure dayis, quhare ane man of ȝare blude is instructit in maneris of alienis, ȝai vse to name him Gald. That ȝe kinrik suld salffie be kept to ȝe lauchfull age of ȝong Corbrede, be resoun of ȝe ancient sanctioun ȝe nobillis, with consent of ȝe pepill, ordanit Dardan regne; quhilk, or he resaut ȝe crowne, was *with* ȝe noblis of Scotland best beluffit of ony vtheris, baith at hame and in weris. He was nerrest to Corbrede his prince, obeying his command, of counsell honest and proffitabill towart ȝe commoun weill; quharethrow euery man thocht this new prince suld follow the gouerment of Metellane, Caratake and Corbrede, his progenitouris: of quham is mencion made before. Siclike ȝe commoun pepill *with* hartlynes and incredible blythnes favorit Dardane, ffor remembrance of his recent beneuolence and gude mynde towart ȝe noblis and pepill drewe to him of all man favouris. He was of large and fare persoun, liberale in vult and continence. Bot as ȝe fyne of his goverment preuit, in him lurkit ane viciouſ and dissimylit
- Fo. LIX. mynde. In begynnynge of his regne he had him myd way in administracioun of public materis, vsing consell of his lordis, and wiselie defendit his pepill fra all domest[ic] and exteriour iniuris. Bot skantlie was ȝe thrid ȝere rvn quhen, omytting thingis concernyng iustice, he abusit himself be all sorte of viciis, removing vertuouſ men fra autorite and be assentacioun of certane familiaris, substitute in ȝare office vtheris viciouſ persouns, of law and obscure lynage, vehementlie suspecting all persouns decorit be nobilite or vertewe; and drownit thus
- M.L.T. 137 in vile lustis, daly ran in grete inconuenientis. Nocht lang eftir, quhen all his thesauris war waistit apoun sic trumpouris for proffitt alanerlie, *with* flatterie wourdis magnifying his vnwourthy doingis, he grewe to insaciabill auarice in heare gre of covatise ȝan efferit ane mortall man. He causit betreif and sla nobill Cardoure, his nere cousing, quhilk during ȝe regne of Corbrede was Grete Iustice of Scotland, becaus he favorit nocht his viciis. Diuerſ nobillis siclike ȝe samyn tyme tresonably war slane. Sic enormyteis kindillit baith noblis

and *commouns* in *haterent* abone *mesure* *contrare* the king. Fo. LIX.  
*Nocht* lang *pareeftir* *Dardane* *tuke* *purpoiß* to *distroye* *Corbrede*  
*Gald*, now of *manlie* age, and *efftir* his *deceiß* *heretoure* to *ye*  
*crowne*, to *bring* his *breidir* to *ye* *samyn* *cast*, *thinking* *gif* *yai*  
*war* *removit* the *kinrik* to *him* and his *posterite* *mycht* be *stabill*  
20 and *ferme*. *Gald* *zit* was in *Ile* of *Mon* *vnder* *cure* of *pre-*  
*ceptouris* and *keparis* *depute* *yareto* be *decrete* of *ye* *counsell*, as  
*custume* was for *ye* *tyme*. To *Carmonak* *ye* *kingis* *familiare*,  
was *lippynnyt* to *sla* *ye* *kingis* *sonnys*; and he *ressaving* his  
*rewarde*, *incontinent* *salit* to *ye* *Ile* of *Mon* *quhare*, *finding* *occa-*  
*sion* to *sla* *Gald* in *ane* *secrete* *passage*, be his *keparis* he was  
*comprehendit* *with* *ane* *nakit* *knyffe* and *led* *before* *ye* *reullaris*  
of *ye* *tovn*: *syne* on *ye* *pyne* *bank* *confessit* *ye* *tresoun*, the  
*kingis* *devise* and *ye* *cauß* of *slauchter*. *Sua* *convictit* of  
*tresoun*, *haistelie* he was *iustifijt* to *dede*. *Quhen* *yis* was  
30 *manifest*, *suddanlie* *contrare* *ye* *king* *followit* *conspiracioun* of  
*ye* *noblis*, to *quham* he was *odioß* for *detestabill* *crymes* and  
*murthure* *apoun* *ye* *kingis* *sonnys* *devisit*, *slaying* all *quhilkis*  
*favourit* his *opinioun*. This *ilk* *tyme* *Cornan*, *ane* *man* of  
*sobir* *blude* (*how* *beit* of *grete* *substance*), and *nocht* *alanerlie*  
*favorit* the *kingis* *vicis* *bot* *vsit* to *avance* and *magnifie* his  
*doingis* as *notabill* *actis*, *throw* *oure* *grete* *insolence* *mysknaw-*  
*ing* his *awne* *estate*, *attemptit* to *raiß* *power* in *defence* of *ye*  
*king*. *Nocht* *yeles* be *ye* *barons* he was *comprehendit*, and  
40 *destitute* of his *folkis*, *apoun* *ane* *heich* *gebate* was *contrynit* M.L.T. 137b  
to *end*. *Syne* *Gald*, *quham* *ye* *conspiratouris* *made* *chiftane*,  
*with* *power* *persewit* *ye* *king*, *quhilk* *knawing* *ye* *caiß* *fled*,  
*first* *devising* *quhare* in *safite* he *mycht* *lurk*. *Bot* *knawing*  
*na* *remede* to *fle* for *ye* *scharpe* *persute* of *inemyis*, and *tending*  
*with* *violence* to *distroy* *himself*, be *familiaris* he was *impeschit*,  
and *bundin* *deliuerit* *quyk* to *inemyis*: *syne* in *presens* of  
*Gald* was *slane*, his *hede* *apoun* *ane* *sperre* *with* *grete* *derision*  
*throw* all *ye* *hoist* was *borne*; his *mutulate* *carioun*, *rent* and  
*revyn*, was *castin* in *ane* *vile* *privye*. Of *vnhappy* *Dardane*  
*yis* was *ye* *fyne*, the *feird* *zere* of his *regnne*, about *ye* *sext*  
50 *zere* of the *impire* of *Vespasiane*, *Romane* *imprioure*, and of  
*Criste* *oure* *Saluatoure*, *sevinty* *five* *zere*.

Fo. LIX.

Of incidentis concernyng the Romane estate in Britane vnder Swetonius, Trebellius and Vectius ; of ye coronacioun of Corbrede Gald ; how Petilius invadit his boundis ; how Corbrede recounterit him be batell and was vincust. Cap° ix°

**D**uring the tyme of yir premisß, the Romane estate in Britan be persevering civill discorde and sleuth of ye legatis was perturbit. Ffor becaus Paulyne, quhilk (as said is) had ye government of Britan was callit outrageous and arrogant, sare and vnmercifull, to wreik iniuris apoun subiectis, Petronius Turpilianus, as sobir and mare facill to remitt offensß, be ye empriour was directit legate to Britan. At his cuming, he kept ye rowmys conquest afore, attempting na ferder, and vnder him to Trebellius Maximus committit reule of ye province. Trebellius, dolf of nature and knawing litill of werelie fatis, be his gude and curtaß havingis conseruit ye province. Nocht yeles the armye, accustomyt to weris and travell, and  
60 than throw rest insolent and wantoun dalie discording, quhen he mycht skantlie evade yare ire, to Vectius Velanus he left  
M.L.T. 138 ye autorite. Als vnwourthy towart inemyis was Vectius, excusing his sleuth be civil weris, and be pacience and cherite mare than autorite dantit ye petulance of ye armye. His autorite durit to ye tyme of Corbrede Gald, king of Scotland, of quham sal be ye narracioun following. Eftir slauchter of Dardane, king, ye nobillis of Scotland in parliament commonit amang yame diuersß thingis of Corbrede Gald : yat he was ye kingis son and nocht ane aliene nurist in his barne age in regale ornamentis. He conversit all his tyme amang nobillis. Oftymes be ye king his fader, he was to yame commendit, knawing weill he was to governe wiselie ye kinrik quhilk immediatelie descendit of ane king. Sua be votis and consent of ye estatis, Gald with regall ornamentis decorit, sitting in  
70 ye fatall marbill as was the rite, all ye pepill beseking his regne suld be happy and ewroß, he was salust souerane. Gald (Tacitus namys him Galgat) in this sorte crownit, first to ye goddis eterne, syne to ye nobillis and remanent pepill

present, maid his thankis, yat be yare studie and fidelite his Fo. LIX.  
 paternall kinrik was kept to him haill vnbrokin : promitting  
 he suld in tyme cuming consult with his noblis and wisemen  
 in administracioun of ye kinrik, and in *presens* of yame all  
 confermyt yis promitt be ye grete aith vnrequirit, quhilk  
 thing maid hym to yame mervellus acceptabill and luffit,  
 80 and be his flurissing age, plesing personage, recent memorie  
 of his nobill fader, and nobilite of athir parent, drew to him Fo. LX.  
 ye favoure of his liegis. In doubill sorte be princelie nobilite  
 he was decorit, for *nochtwithstanding* his fader was king, his  
 moder was dochter to ye king of Pichtis, lynyalie fra kingis  
 descending ; ffinalie he wantit na thing yat mycht wyn ye  
 hartis of ye pepill. In begynnyng of his regnne, becaus ye  
*commoun* weill was at waik poynt be mysgiding of King  
 Dardane and vtheris to quham he *committit* reule of ye cuntre,  
 and be yare persuasioun and *convoying* Dardan had slane  
 grete nowmer of nobillis, he punyst yame be exquisite panys M.L.T. 138<sup>b</sup>  
 to schaw he wald extremelie revenge iniuris, and quhat ordoure  
 and reule he was eftirwart to observe. Towart ye Ilis *with*  
 stark power he movit, quhare lichtlie he dantit ye truble of  
 10 certane brokin men walkynnyt be myscheant goverment of  
 Dardan. Syne with lang faddis and galiouns saling with his  
 folkis to ye Lewis and Skye, ilis maist elongate fra Scotland,  
 seildin vesyit be Scottis princis, and finding certane inemyis  
 to ye *commoun* weill yare reset, declynyng ye autorite of  
 iugeis, causit yame with dede be punyst. Ffra thyne he  
 returnit to Lugia (now Rosß) to pecify ye trubill of inhabi-  
 tantis. Quhil he remanit in Lugia, to him come ye Moravis,  
 applawding yat he had distroyit Dardan, to all nobillis and  
 ye *commoun* weill public inemye. To ye king yir Moravis war  
 20 *rycht commodius* to reduce ye kinrik and *commoun* weill to  
 ye state quharefra it was dekeyit eftir deceiße of his fader,  
 bringand to ye king thevis, reiffaris, sornaris, with yare reset-  
 taris in irnys, *with* diuerße vtheris mysdoaris quhilkis, be *com-*  
*mand* of ye king, all atanis to ye dede war iustifijt. Sum  
*lymmaris* fled to ye Wyngit Castell (now Vrquhart) to declyne  
 the kingis ire. Nocht yeles ye kingis servandis, persewing and  
 comprehending yame or yai mycht stuff ye castell with mwni-

Fo. LX. cions, put yame all to dede. Ffra thyne ye kinrik was mare  
 peciabil. In ye zere following, of his regne the thrid, in  
 parliament at ye castell of Evon, diuerß actis concernyng ye  
 commoun weill war decretit. The king lauborit mekill to  
 haue ye cursit lawis of King Evone rescindit (hereof is remem-  
 brit before quhen of his life was tretit), and optenit onelie  
 yat noblis suld nocht vse ye wyiffis of ye laware pepill in 30  
 commoun. He mycht be na way remove ye remanent, the  
 multitude opponyng yame yareto. Quhil he was thus intent be  
 mony resons to drawe ye nobillis fra thir detestabil ritis, he  
 was aduertist how Petilius Cerialis, Romane legate, send fra  
 ye Emprioure Vespasiane in Britane to recovir Albion, quhilk  
 almaist was loist (as ye remanent of all ye warld), had brocht  
 his armye throw ye cuntre, tending to invade Ordovicia and  
 Brigancia (now Anerdale and Galloway). Howbeit of yir  
 novellis the king and barouns war affrayit, it was thocht  
 expedient yat were suld nocht be denunciit in ye cuntre, quhill  
 yai mycht persauie quhat Romanis devisit contrare Scottis  
 and Pichtis. Herefore be command of ye king certane walit  
 men, weill horssit, war send to explore the counsell of Romanis. 40  
 Thir skurreouris, diligently consid[er]ing ye Romane ordinance,  
 nowmer, and ordoure of weremen, schew yai war abone  
 mannys estimacioun to be ferit. Attoure yai said Romanis  
 had cruelly disturssit Ordolucia and Deer (now Merß), Tevi-  
 dale, and ye remanent dalis in Pichtland nixt the bordoure  
 of Britan; cornis was distroyit and ye pray of bestiall sesit.  
 Pichtis of Ordolucia and Dere, augmenting yare powere be  
 supple of nychtbouris, had vnwiselie mellit with Romanis,  
 and be fellow slauchter war ouresett. Romanis, haltane and  
 proude be this avantage, dispitefully passing throw Pichtland  
 to ye west partis of ye kinrik, haistelie apoun Brigancia pre-  
 parit ane expedicioun. Quhen yir premisß to ye pepill, nocht  
 without terrouis, war schawin, yai blamyt Britouns of  
 vnkyndnes, yat forzetting all gude dedis done afore, had  
 nocht certifiyt Scottis and Pichtis of ye cuming of Romanis in  
 yare boundis, howbeit yai had euer to yame bene freyndlie, 50  
 and for yare weill had fochtin latelie almaist to yare exter-

minacioun fynall. Gald, thinking best to occur to inemyis or Fo. LX.  
 yai war spred in ye cuntre, throw all his kinrik *with* diligence  
 walit ane armye. Fifty thowsand gudelie men war vnder his  
 baner. Nor in ye boundis of Scotland was nane quhilk haistelie  
 made *nocht* to harnes. Quhill ye king was on his viage towart  
 Romanis mony diuerß ferlyis war sene. Ane egill ye maist M.L.T. 139b  
 parte of ye day, *with* wyngis displayit, flewe with grete travell  
 abone ye armye. To mony yis sicht was terribill, *coniecturing*  
 yat Scottis suld be randerit to Romanis, quhilkis in yare  
 60 armyis bure the egill. The king exhortit yame haue gude  
 esperance yat all suld cum to gude fyne, interpretand yis  
 expedicioun suld apou Romanis bring mekill lauboure and  
 pyne. Ane armyt knicht was sene fle in ye are, and how sone  
 he had flowin environ ye armye, incontinent evanist. Alsua  
 abone ye feild quharethrow the armye was to move, ffoulis in  
 diuerß sortis, ouresparkit with blude, fell fra ye horribill  
 clowdis and trublit are. The king interpret all to ye prosperite  
 of Scottis, erecting his weremen in gude beleif be mony sindry  
 persuasions, and be counsell of noblis maist grave and prudent,  
 chargit yai suld *with* displayit baneris towart inemyis tran-  
 oynt. To ye king yis tyme was schewin yat Romanis *with*  
 70 greter multitude and ordinance mare strang yan euer afore,  
 war cumin in Brigancia, *nocht* as to fecht, bot erare to mak  
 plane residence, like as ye cuntre had bene almaist conquest,  
 pertenyng to yame be lawis of weris, confiding samekil in  
 yare pussance yat yai belevit na mortall men (war yai never  
 sa strenthy) mycht be force of armys to yame resist. Hereto  
 ansuerit ye king, teichit be his wise counsell, he suld oppone  
 the hard and rude werfare of his pepill to ye Romane ordi-  
 nance, ffor quhirland Fortune instabill (reulare of mortall affaris  
 sum tyme), as *mycht* be weill lippynt, wald betraiß Romanis  
 to quham scho had grantit sa grete prosperite ; and ye goddis  
 war in vse oftymes assist to men of gude zeill, repelling iniuris  
 and violence. Sum persuadit ye king he suld *nocht* sa haistelie  
 80 move towart inemyis, bot erare tary with sobir power and suffir  
 ye remanent departe ; that Romanis be penurite of viueris Fo. LXI.  
 suld be contrinit owthir departe fra Brigancia, or suffir hungir M.L.T. 140

Fo. LXI. and diuerſ incommoditeis. The heris apprisit the counsell, bot  
 yai doutit yat lang tary sould cauſ ye hoist faleze in curage ;  
 Scottis conveyng first in hoisting, has feirſ curage, reddy to  
 indure the fecht, and be lang tary ar brokin and wery, gif yai  
 ly lang in pailzons. Best war herefore to move haistelie apoun  
 inemyis. Chiftanis and weremen following this devise appro-  
 chit ye thrid day to sicht of Romanis, quhais multitude and  
 vassalage, sa oft assayit, perturbit sua ye Scottis yat to mony  
 yare curage turnit in raddoure and dispare. Bot returnyng 10  
 to yare first ardent feirſnes, be oportune exhortaciouns of  
 chiftanis, praying goddis for prosper fyne of batell, be incredi-  
 bill ire and hete yai gave ye bargane. The batell of Siluris  
 (now Carrik <sup>2</sup>C), quharein faucht ye king, stalwartly at ye  
 first counter rebutit ye richt weyng of Romanis. Petilius,  
 yis persaving, send ane legioun to reskew yis weyng, almaist  
 or yare cummyng opprest. Sua the batell renewit be force of  
 Romanis, ye Siluris had repulſ. Ane bludy batell and sare  
 with mekill slauchter on athir partie followit. Quhill ye  
 oistis faucht in yis sorte, the chiftanis stoutlie did yare devoure.  
 Petilius past about his armye besely fechting, and quhare he  
 saw ony failze, haistelie send reskew. Intent thus to supple 20  
 his folkis, persaving ye king had ane sare and cruell bargane,  
 with ane rowt awating on him at all caisſ he assailzeit with  
 curage and gude will, owder to haue him presoner or slane.  
 There was the sarest fechting quhen ye maist robust of Scottis  
 in presens of yare prince omytting na thing to stalwart were-  
 men pertenyng, fell with mekill honoure in ye feild. The  
 king, sare woundit in ye visage, apoun ane fresch horsſ fra  
 ye feild departit. Be fleing of ye king, ye remanent, deiecit  
 in curage, turnyng ye bak haistelie, ran be desertis and plane.  
 Quhare Romanys apprehendit euer, yai slew and straik at  
 m.l.t. 140b erde. Sa mony as eludit ye persewaris, in bog and merreſ as  
 in sure refuge contenit yame yat nycht, eftir yis vnhappy and 30  
 dolly iournay. In yis batell war slane (as in our cronykillis  
 is remembrtit) to the nowmer of xij<sup>m</sup> Scottis and of Romanis  
 vj<sup>m</sup>. On the morne ye residew of ye Scottis armye, be diligence  
 of capitanis, war collectit. The king, sare woundit, to ye



strethly castell of Lelguoß (now Lennox) be servandis was Fo. LXI.  
convoyit. Romanis *with* litill difficulte wyunnyng ye ciete of  
Epiac, with grete parte of Brigancia, the remanent 3ere fra  
grete batellis abstenit.

How Voadicia, inuading Romans be *nycht*, slewe of  
yame grete nowmer ; how scho brynt Epiac on ye  
morne ; how scho was finalie takin and slane.

Cap° x°

**I**n somer following, Petilius legate, *nocht* onelie desirus to  
extend ye Romane impire in Albion, bot als to be equale  
with antecessouris in glore, bringing his army fra ye campe,  
gaif all his cure to subiect ye remanent of Brigancia. The  
40 cuntre men with diuerß iupartis and licht berganis, certane tyme  
sustenit ye violence of yare dispitefull fayis ; for it was inhibit  
be ye counsell, yat eftir slauchter of sa mony nobill men, yai  
suld fecht with the haill body of ye realme in ordorit batell  
contrare Romanis, yat ye weill of ye kinrik, all and sum, suld  
nocht to chance of ane batell be iupert. In ye *quhilk* tyme yat  
Romanis war at hereschip in Brigancia, the 3ounger dochter of  
Arvirag, namyt Voadicia, (of quham mencioune is made, how  
scho was deflorit be Romanis and takin be Swetonius in  
batell), remanyng exilit in ye Ile of Mon to evade the tresoun  
of Marius, assemblit power fra ye ile foresaid, and certane  
50 Brigantinis (fleing thidder to declyne iniuris of Romanis, M.L.T. 141  
tending to revenge hir defloracion and iniuris done to hir  
moder), apoun ye *nycht* assailzeyt Romanis, fering na thing  
leß yan inemyis at ye bak. Ffirst yai herd noyis, gyld and  
clamoure, exhorting to batell. Syne ane multitude of arrowis  
and ganezeis apoun Romanis war schott. Herethrow astonyst  
in yat suddane caiß, yai knew *nocht* quhat erast suld be done.  
Nowthir mycht yai declyne fra inemyis nor durst yai mell  
with sic strang, awfull power, becauß myrknes had removit  
ye sicht. Quhil Romanis thus war in dout, inemyis be fellow

- Fo. LXI. audacite breking in oure the trenschiſ of ye camp, but mercye  
 maid ſlauchter, and stalwart men be wapynnys and ſchot of  
 febill bodyis gretelie war ourethrawin. Sua had ye Romane  
 armye bene diſcumfiſt, and ye ȝoik of thirllage removit fra  
 Brigancia be labouris of Voadicia, gif ye providence of 60  
 Petilius had nocht haſtelie occurit. Ffor with birnand torches  
 myxt with pik, roſett, talloun and burntſtane quhilk he had  
 reddy for all auenturis of ye nycht, he ran quhare he herd ye  
 clamour maist abound, and caſting fyrebrandis and birnand  
 torches with dartis apoun inemyis, he cauſit yame retere ſum  
 parte fra ye camp. Nocht yeles Voadicia, with mekill hardy-  
 ment exhorting hir folkis, renewit ye batell. Thareeftir *with*  
 ſic ire and hete was fochtin, yat all ye nycht fra batell was  
 nocht ceiſſit. Ffinalie in ye dawing, Romanis be multitude  
 having avantage, Voadicia *with* hir folkis war put to flicht.  
 Petilius defendit to mak ye chaiſſ, fering Romanis mycht be  
 tranyt apoun ane buſchment. The day following ye nycht  
 of bargane Voadicia, provokit be mony iniuris, enrageing in 70  
 womanlie furoure, haſtelie ſped to Epiac, wan and brynt ye  
 ciete, ſlaying but pietie ye Romane power keping ye ſamyn  
 with morpeis (ageit weremen be *command* of ye legate in ye  
 towne remanyng), to wreik apoun yame the iniuris quhilk  
 apoun Petilius ſcho mycht nocht revenge. And he to be  
 wrokin contrare Voadicia ſend ane legioun, be quham takin  
 and ye maist parte of hir folkis ſlane, ſcho was led quyk to  
 ye Romane chiftane. Before him accuſit yat ſcho eſchamyt  
 M.L.T. 141b nocht to attempt ſa pert interpriſe aganis ye *commoun* con-  
 dicioun of wemen, and ſcho anſuering ſcho was to Romanis  
 inemye, and hir mynde was to diſtroy hir fays; hereto lakkit  
 ſtrength and nocht gude will; ſcho weyt na thing mare hevily 80  
 Fo. LXII. yan ye prosperite of Romanis, quhilkis, vincuſſing hir fader,  
 ſlaying hir moder in batell, had fra the houſſ of Arvirag reft  
 the ſceptir and crowne of Britouns: be ye *ſervandis* aſſiſting  
 to Petilius, with ſwerdis ſcho was hewin in pecis.

Of the deceiſſ of Petilius ; how Iulius Frontinus to Fo. LXII.  
 him ſuccedit ; how he perſuadit Pichtis to concur  
*with* him contrare Scottis ; of *ȝar* reſponſſ ; how  
 be licht iupertyis he moleſtit Scottis ; how twicht  
 with infirmite he was had to Italie, and how Iulius  
 Agricola come in Britan. Cap° xj°

**H**ereeftir to Petilius was ſchawin how inhabitantis the Ile  
 of Wicht had movit rebelloun and to *ȝame* aſſistit grete  
 nowmer of Kentschire. Marius the king almaist was expellit  
 his realme. The mater tendit to manifeſt conſpiracioun, gif  
 haisty remede war nocht providit. This message cauſit *ȝe*  
 legate returne to Kent, quhare nocht without grete laubouris  
 he dantit *ȝe* attemptatis of conſpiratouris. Romanis remanyng  
 in Brigancia, in abſence of *ȝe* legate gaif *ȝame* erare to con-  
 ſerue boundis conquest, *ȝan* ferder to extend *ȝare* ſenȝeory.  
 The nixt *ȝere* Petilius in *ȝe* flux deceiſſing, the empriour,  
 10 providing *ȝat* Albioun ſuld nocht want ane legate to governe the  
 Romane affaris, ſend to Britan ane nobill man namyt Iulius  
 Frontinus *with* twa legiouns, quham Marius king *with* hart-  
 lines reſautit. Eftir *ȝe* weremen, wery be travell on ſeyis and  
 land, war refreschit, the legate *with* King Marius veſyit all  
 Romane provincis within Albioun, exhorting be mony per-  
 ſuaſiouns *ȝai* ſuld in *ȝe* Romane fidelite perſevere. And  
 quhen he knewe all was peciabill and na appering ſedicioun  
 amang Britouns, deſirous to obſcure *ȝe* cure and fame of  
 vtheris legatis preceding, he deſiſit pas throw Calidon Wod  
 and ſubiect inhabitantis *ȝe* extreme partis of Albioun, ſa  
 oftymes be *ȝe* Romane armye afore invadit, and be na chiftane  
 vincuſt to *ȝat* tyme. Herefore *with* ſtrang ordinance he M.L.T. 142  
 20 preparit for were. Nocht lang *ȝare*eftir, leving Marius king in  
 Kent to kepe Britouns at *ȝe* Romane fidelite, he movit to  
 Brigancia nocht harmyng *ȝe* Pichtis, knawing gif Scottis war  
 vincuſt, he mycht eſelie haue *ȝat* pepill ſubiectit. At his  
 cuming, amang Scottis was grete terroure, ſamekill *ȝai* ferit *ȝe*

Fo. LXII. name and vassalage of Iulius Frontinus legate. Iulius, cuming in Brigancia, *commendit* nocht litill ye Romane garnison keping castellis and strenthis, becaus yai had stoutlie and faithfully done yare devoure in myddis of inemyis for honoure of ye Romane name, and felice of ye *commoun* weil: exhorting euery ane yai suld be of gude mynde, yai suld haue esperance 30 in yare valezeandnes, sa oftymes assayit, quharethrow barbaris mycht be ourethrawn *without* damage of Romanis, quhilkis to yare domynioun mycht haistelie resaeue al ye boundis of Albioun: syne to ye king of Pichtis send writingis be ane herald, desiring him kepe ancient societe and frendship *with* Romanis, or gif he plesit bettir, mak ane lyig of newe, memorative of calamyteis and trubill be quhilkis Pichtis war afflictit in tymes of Ostorius, Cesius Nasica, and Aulus Didius, Romane chiftanis; avising prudentlie yai suld nocht assist to Scottis, euer rebell and inhumane, quham ye empriour had chargit owdir be deletit, or thirllit to perpetuall *seruitute*: he suld admytt gude and hailsum counsell, in aventure he mycht suffir scharper infestacioun yan in tymes went hereto be decrete of ye public consultacioun. Ansuerit ye 40 king of Pichtis, to quham and to his nobillis ye desiris of Iulius Ff[r]ontinus war suspect: he amervellit quhareof Romanis mycht haue iust causis of weris contrare Scottis, or quhat suld move Romanis yat, not satisfyit of all ye mane land within ye warld, sa oftymes to assailze ye extreme ilis of ye occiane and iniustlie reif fra Albianis yare innative liberte; it was nocht weil done yat be desire of lordschip yai devisit be sa strang ordinance to distroy kinrikis, in contempcioun of immortall goddis, iuste revengearis of iniuris and wrangis: be yare favouris he wald with his folkis concur with his freyndis and confederatis of Scotland, in defence of yare native cuntre and liberte contrare Romanis: the maist prudent within his realme couth gif na bettir counsale to conserve salffie yare liberte and kinrik, ffor hereto war yai addettit be resoun of 50 yare band, and yai knew na law quhilk sufferit yame brek fidelite. The Romane legate, contempnyng the responsis of Pichtis, haistelie movit apon Siluria (now Kyle  $\text{C}$ ), maist

bellicois pepill of all vtheris to quham 3it come the Romane Fo. LXII.  
 armye. Galdus king, astonist be new infestacion of Romanis,  
 assembling power fra all partis, past to defend his kinrik,  
 how beit he was grevously torment be ye wound in batell  
 precedent resaut. Ffollowit iuperteis be licht bodin men,  
 with litill slauchter; the king tending for his maill eis erare  
 to cummyr yan mell planelie with ye Romane armye. In  
 60 yir barganis fortune was doutsum, Romanis sum tyme dis-  
 cumfist, vther tymes war victouris. Ffinalie ye Scottis power  
 be frequent slauchter of yare folkis vehementlie supprisit,  
 and ye maladye invalescing apoun ye king (sen he mycht nocht  
 ye dewite of ane valzeant chiftane febill in persoun and mare  
 trublit in mynde), stuffing with garnisoun mwnyciouns of  
 Siluria, departing fra ye cuntre in ane littir, with difficulte he  
 was to Argathele convoyit. Within certane dayis the power  
 of Scottis in Siluria remanyng, was assalezzeit be Romanis,  
 vincust and chaissit; iij<sup>m</sup> of yame war lost. Be this mysfortune  
 affrayit war ye Siluris, quhen all persouns abill for were war  
 owthir slane or fled ye cuntre. Quhen yai disparit to resist  
 70 ferder, to Romanis yai become randerit. Hereeftir ye vic-  
 toriois Romane armye war send to yare campe. In winter  
 following Iulius Ffrontinus incurrit ane hevy maladie be ane  
 catar, generit of ye craf and thik mysty aire be contynuall  
 clowdis in yai partis, wak and hwmyd be resoun of ye grete  
 altitude of montanis and proximite of lochis and riveris. His  
 maladie be inmoderate cald, quhareto he was nocht accus-  
 tumyt, was augmentit, quhilk be na craft fra his nek nor  
 fete mycht be expellit. Quhen yis in Rome was schawin to  
 Domyciane emprioure, for ye present, to provide ye weill of  
 ye legate and Romane armye, he causit Iulius Ffrontyne be  
 80 brocht to Italie, and put to exquisite diligence of medicinaris;  
 syne send Iulius Agricola, consul afore, of all Romane chiftanis Fo. LXIII.  
 before his tyme in Britane maist vailzeant, to vse autorite  
 of ye legate and governe ye Romane armye in Albion.

M.L.T. 143

Fo. LXIII.

How Agricola vincust ye king of Pichtis, and subiect ye Ile of Mon ; how eftir he had chaissit the king of Pichtis of newe he resauit Fiffe to fidelite of Romanis.

Ca° xij

**A**bout the tyme that sic thingis war done the Ordovicis (now Anandale) assalezit ane cumpanye of Romanis on ye bordouris of Brigancia and for ye maist parte slew yame all. Be yis avantage erectit yai solistit Pichtis, Brigantinis and Siluris to rebellion. Iulius Agricola arriving at Britan, hering yis felloun dede of Ordovicis and how Pichtis and Siluris war anarmit contrare Romanis, mare haistelie yan ony belevit, *with* his legiouns, supple of Gallis and Britouns, to repell yis appering skaith movit to Pichtland, and *without* grete difficulte having ye Ordolucis randerit (quhat pepil thir war is before schewin), he stuffit yare mwnicions *with* power 10 of Romanis. To Camelodune syne convoyit his armye. To him occurring Caranath, king of Pichtis, *with* power, and striking ye batell, was vincust and chasit *within* ye ciete. The thrid day yareeftir with power renewit, Pichtis agane feildit Romanis. Bot in yat iournay fortune was na mare favorabill yan in ye bargane precedent, ffor vincust of new, ye maist parte of all yat faucht in feild was slane. Agricola incontinent,

M.L.T. 143b be force wynnyng Camelodune and slaying grete nowmer of inhabitantis, *commandit* ye ciete *with* doubill trenschis and fowsyis suld be strenthit. Karanath, king of Pichtis, lossing his armye and be fleing salf, passing ye Watter of Forth with 20 sobir nowmer, in Otolinia (now Fiffe) was resauit. Otolinia for the tyme was ane regioun of Pichtis interiacent betuix twa firthis, Tay and Forth: the ground fertill and gude in pasturis and naturall gerß to flokkis and store maist convenient, plennyst with forestis, louchis, stankis and ryveris, in diuersß kyndis of fische abounding, and in sic vthir sorte of bestiall as is in Albion *productit*. This regioun in oure dayis contenis Fiffe, Ffotherik and Stratherne, schynnyng zit in yare first *commoditeis*. How beit be industrie of princis eftir expulsoun of Pichtis, yai ar gretelie denwde of woddis, becaus vthir

ways *yai mycht* nocht haue larouns extermynate. Fferder Fo. LXIII.  
 30 be brute of *ye Romane victorie* apoun Pichtis, *ye castellis*  
 and fortalicy within Pichtland wilfully to Agricola war randerit.  
 Ane litill *yaræftir* Agricola, conveyng his legiouns and  
 supple of vthir naciouns to mete apperand dangere, movit  
 apoun Ordovicis (now Anandale), quhilk knawing his *cuming*,  
 departing fra woddis quhare in cavernis on *yare fassoun yai*  
 war lugeit *with* wemen habill to weild wapymnis and armoure,  
 in arrayit batell resaut *ye force* of Romanis. Ffechting stude  
*ye Ordovicis*, quhill almaist *yai* war ilkane slane. Sa mony  
 as be flicht evadit slauchter, the ilk nycht *yai* returnit hame,  
 war murdris be *yare wyiffis*, vsing in *yat sorte* remove dis-  
 honoure fra *yare husbandis yat* war flearis. Agricola, glade  
 40 of *yis victorie*, knawing how he suld *conserue* his fame, and  
*yat all vthir affaris* as *ye first* suld prospir, with all pussance  
 addressit to subiect of new *ye Ile of Mon*, be Paulyne Suetonius  
 before expugnate (as said is) and of mony *zeris* rebelling, *yat*  
 fugitivis *yarein* suld haue na resett. Quhen he considerit he  
 had nocht sufficient schippis to cary *ye army*, be his prudence  
 sum parte in langfaddis, vtheris at dede nepe and lawich  
 flude sowmyng haistelic, gat within *ye ile*. Astonist war *ye*  
 Insulanis dalie awating apoun the Romane navyne, and think-  
 ing na thing *mycht* be deficill nor invinsibill to sic invasouris,  
 desiring pece, become randerit to Romanis. Agricola, stuffing  
 castellis and strenthis *with* garnisoun and resaving plegis,  
 sufferit inhabitantis of Mon *obserue yare propir lawis* and  
 50 ritis; ffra thyne to Brigancia *with* his army returnyng, sufferit  
 yame to *yare wynter schelis* depart. Thir actis for *ye maist*  
 parte war done be Agricola *ye first zere* eftir his *cuming* in  
 Albion. Quhen somer approchit, fra *ye camp* educeing his  
 armye eftir he had in *yare presens* spokin diuerß thingis  
 concernyng werelie discipline and *ye gude behavingis* and  
 constance of chiftanis, with his ordinance he vesijt *ye* regiouns  
 of Brigancia and Siluria. In *yis viage* he devisit placis con-  
 venient to luge his folkis, diligentlie explorit forestis and  
 firthis; be ordinance and multitude he affrayit sua *ye* inhabi-  
 tantis *yat*, before his *cuming*, grete parte of *yame* leiffing cieteis,  
 burrowis and villagis, to regiouns adiacent fled. Thus con-

- Fo. LXIII. tenyng mare þe pepill vincust at þe Romane fidelite, þan subiecting vtheris of new, he spendit þe somer. In þe wynter following, suffering his armye departe to þare palzeouns, convenyng Albiane nobillis obeying þe Romane senezeorie, he 60 exhortit þame vse mare civill and honest maneris: þai suld beild templis, stretis and lugeingis to þe similitude of Romanis: to men famouß in letteris and cumnyng þai suld commytt cure of þare sonnys, þat quhen all weris war pacefyit, þai mycht be instructit in eloquence, science and gude maneris: thay suld vse þare abylzementis honestlie, howbeit nocht sumptuoß nor curioß. In sic exhortaciouns, honest counsell and in pre-
- M.L.T. 144b paring his werelie ordinance passing þe wynter, he taryit the cuming of somer. The thrid þere of his expedicioun, he addres- sit to vesy new pepill, Otolonis and Vicomageis (now Fiffe and Striuelingschir), vnassalezet afore be þe Romane armye. Sum tyme þir Vicomageis war pepill of Pichtis, duelling 70 beyond Calidone Wod. Of thir writes Ptolome, Veremvnd and vtheris apprisit authouris. Eftir þir pepill and þe nacioun of Pichtis delitit, Scottis iosing þe samyn setis gaif þat regioun Striuelingschir to name. Agricola, proceding throw þe lawichest partis of Calidone Wod with his armye, come to þe Doloroß Mont, now þe castell of Striueling. It is haldin þat þis mont, bot erare þe castell, was namyt þe Doloroß Hill becaus inhabitantis on nychtis herd vocis menyng, murnyng and dolours, quhilkis doutles may be trowit, war rasit be illusioun of evill spiritis to dissaue mortall men, blindit be vane super- 80
- Fo. LXIII. sticiouns and ritis. Agricola, contemplating þe nature of þe roche and on hicht þareof þe ald castell of mony þeris ruynoß and waist, alamist inexpugnabill, lauborit with diligence and sumptuoß expensß to appoynt þe castell of newe. Attoure þe Wattir of Forth he maid ane brig and oure þe samyn had his armye. On þe morne, aduertist be exploratouris of ane castell, strang be crafty bigging and naturall situacioun, on ane heich montane, namyt Benarte; knawing þe king of Pichtis was within, to it he laid assege. The king of Pichtis, latelie before þe cuming of Romanis affrayit, leiffing þe castell, take him to þe plane, quhare assembling his folkis apoun þe nycht, he passit to brek þe brig new maid attoure þe Wattir



10 of Fforth, tending to haue Romanis betuix Fforth and Tay FO. LXIII.  
 inclusit. Agricola, to quham *nocht vnknawin* was ye devise  
 of Pichtis, omytting to assege ye castell, haistelie followit  
 ye king ; quhilk be power keping ye brig, frustrate of his pur- M.L.T. 145  
 poisß and returnyng, sone be sicht of Agricola approchit.  
 Quhare on nede Pichtis recountering Romanis, terrible yai  
 war slane downe. Nor to Romanis was yis victorie *nocht*  
 plesing, disparit inemyis stoutlie sustenyng ye bargane quhil  
 yai mycht lest ; Romanis ceissing *nocht* to chaisß ye king  
 fleing with fewe menße ourthwort montanis and hillis, quhil  
 20 yai war be ye river of Tay refrenyt ; quhare Karanath king,  
 finding botis, be extreme dangere of his liffe passing ye firth,  
 with his folkis wan sauflie ye 3ounder land. Be yis batell  
 aduersare certane Otolinis, yat yai suld *nocht* be war demanit,  
 wilfully 3eildit yame to Romanis : vtheris fleing and passing  
 Calidone Wod, come to Gald, king of Scottis, in Argathele,  
 beseking him for supple. Agricola returnyng to assege ye  
 castell, quhen lichtlie he had takin ye sammyn, vthir fortalicis  
 of Otolinia sic like war randerit. Be thir prospir iournayis  
 Agricola erectit in esperance, convoying his armye throw ye  
 boundis of Otolinia, in diuersß partis deuisit placis conuenient  
 to big castellis, yat quhen be his laubouris the province war  
 conquest, it mycht be at ye Romane fidelite mare surely  
 30 *conseruit*. Alsua he bet down sum vthir castellis, becaus of  
 yare strate entre ye power mycht *nocht ische commodioslie*,  
 quhen tyme requirit. Sua all thingis at gude poynt in Otolinia,  
 in beilding of new strenthis, and reparacioun of vtheris, auld  
 and failþete, he spendit ye wynter, of inemyis having na dreid.

How Karanath, king of Pichtis, inflammyt Galdus of  
 Scotland contrare Romanis ; of diuersß actis done be  
 Agricola ; how ye Romane navyn was brocht in  
 Argathele, and how he past oure Clide.

Cap° xiiij°

**K**aranath, king of Pichtis, yis tyme remanit at ye towne  
 of Alect, situate at ye mouth of Tay, (and now callit  
 Donde), quhare vmquhile was ane strang castell and be King

Fo. LXIII. Robert Bruse (bot eftir mony ȝeris), becaus it was *with* Ingliſſ-  
 men haldin, distroyit, as in tyme mare oportune salbe schewin.  
 M.L.T. 145<sup>b</sup> In ȝis tovn the nobillis of Pichtis maid grete confluence to  
 ȝare prince, sic in *special* as evadit ȝe cruell persute of Romanis,  
 exhorting him to consolacioun and nocht dispare him self nor 40  
 his realme: he suld haue gude esperance of ȝe *commoun*  
 weill, ffor of ȝe Pichtis blude ȝit men war liffand vnfulzeit in  
 strenth to expell fra ȝe boundis of Pichtis (gif goddis ȝareto  
 wald be freyndlie) ȝe Romane armye, dalie now decrescing:  
 quharethrow mycht follow (as oftymes is ȝe *commoun* courſs of  
 mortal estate) ȝat Romanis, insolent be sa mekill prosperite  
 and continewit avantagis, suld be deiectit fra favoure of  
 fortune quhen ȝai leist beleifit: and ȝai quhilke throw all  
 ȝe warld iniurit ȝe pepill, suld be in derisioun to the extreme  
 and vtmost nacioun of ȝe warld, for sua vsis instabill fortune  
 turne, with ane suddane cast, ȝe caiff of mortall affaris: ffor  
 like as scho beildit vtheris kinrikis *with* grete *commoditeis*  
 before ȝe ciete of Rome, sua at hir plesure scho deletit ȝe  
 samyn, tryumphing in ȝare maist felicite and glorie: it is  
 nocht to be lippynnyt ȝat ȝe Romane Impire, foundit bot be  
 pussance and devise of mortal men, mycht stand perpetualie 50  
 inmortal. Howbeit ȝir persuasions and siclike of noblis war  
 mekill *commendit* be ȝe king, ȝai mycht nocht erect his curage  
 in bettir hope, sa mekill he ferit ȝe strenth and grete brute  
 of ȝe Romane name, his ressoun euer diting ȝat ȝe Romane  
 affaris transcendit sa fer all mortall estate, ȝat be na force  
 ȝai mycht be resistit. Ffollowit mony and diuers prudent  
 consultaciouns, how ȝis instant were suld be con-  
 voyit. Ffinalie it was thocht best to direct ambassiatouris to  
 Galdus, king of Scottis, and his noblis, *with* quham amyte and  
 vthir kyndenes of lang tyme had bene extemyt, to plenȝe ȝe  
 iniuris of Romanis, and certifie ȝe king, ȝare freynd and con-  
 federate, in how grete danger stude ȝare kinrik for ȝe present; 60  
 beseking him for supple to resist this *immynent* danger. This  
 mater was nocht delayit, ffor ambassiatouris, reherssing ȝare  
 charge in *presens* of Gald, becaus ȝe postulacioun twichit ȝe  
 weill of athir kinrik, sone purchest ȝare desiris. The king  
 hevily weyit ȝat nocht alanerlie Deer, Orduluce, Pichtland

and Otolinia (now Merß, Tividale <sup>℥</sup>, Berwik, Pichtland and Fiffe), bot alsweill Brigancia and Siluria (now Galloway, Kyle <sup>℥</sup>), grete parte of his kinrik, be violence of Romanis war occupyit. Be consent of his barouns herefore he thocht bettir to concur in weris with Pichtis and offer him to dede, yā be dalie irkit *with* iniuris and weris and finalie *with* 70 dishonour, lossing native lawis and liberte, be *with* his pepill subiectit to Romanis, of all vtheris maist haltane and pridefull. Quhil apoun sic thingis devisit ye confederate kingis of Scottis and Pichtis, ye pepill of Siluria, quhilk before we said, affrayit be brute of ye Romane name, left ye cuntre, returnyng maid terribill slauchter apoun Romanis, be Agricola send to reul yat region. Castellis war takin, soldeouris slane, cornys in all partis waistit, and all victualis brynt except sa mekill as yai mycht cary. Agricola, hering yis felloun myscheif, haistelie movit to Siluria, quhare ye pepill, taryng nocht his cuming, fled to heich montanys, be intemperance of ye are intractibill. Nocht yeles be difficill and lang iournais he followit, and apprehending sum parte causit pyne yame to 80 deid. He reparellit castellis and strenthis failzete, stuffing yame *with* garnysoun, and for yare furnessing brocht fra Britan victualis. Knowng syne be skurreouris how inemyis nocht fer distant war assemblit, attempting sum iupertie apoun Romanis, he feirslye persewit, chaissing yame nocht without dangere attoure ye river of Clide, quhilk Tacitus namys Clotta in his writingis. Betuix ye flude callit Bodotria 100 M.L.T. 1465 (now Lewyn) and yis ryver is ane litill space, and almaist yai ryn baith atanis in ye sey. Within yis flude is ane castell, be natural situacioun mare strang yā be craft of hand, for ye tyme callit Alcluth, als mekill to say as all roch and crag, bot now Downbriton, quhilk signifyis ye castell or strenth of Britouns. Be strang mwnicioun and power of Scottis stuffit was yis castell, yat be na craft nor violence it mycht be expug- 10 nate yā be Romanis. In yir lauboris Agricola spendit the ferde somer. In ye fyft zere of his expedioun, in begynnyng of vere, the Romane navyn at ye Ile of Wicht, taryng ye charge of Agricola, finding prosper wynd, be his command salit to Lowchfyne in Argathele, ane sure and stabill porte for schippis,

Fo. LXIII.

Fo. LXV.

M.L.T. 1465

Fo. LXV. tending yarethrow inemyis suld be certifyit yat be nane vthir way mycht yai beleif securite, bot be protection of ye Romane Impyre; thay mycht lippin na safite in ye land, ye Romane army supprising ye samyn; nor in ye sey, be yare navyn occupyit. Agricola, fynding botis and veschell, with his armye passing ye river of Clide, be licht iupartis attemptit dant ye pepill of Selgon (now Levenax), vnknawin before yat tyme to ye Romane armye. Certifyt be writingis fra ye president of Camelodune, how sum grete men of Pichtis apper- 20 andlie wald rebell, he was coactit desist fra his purpois, and with ane legioun and sum vthir assistantis, leiffing ye remanent army still at Clide, reterit to Pichtland, quhare, having the principalis of yis trubill owder tane or incarcerate, without grete laubouris he repressit yis apperand rebellious to ye hevvy dammage of ye commyttaris. Sua all thingis in Pichtland at gude poynt and reule, returnyng to his armye bezound Clide he passit his tyme ye wynter.

M.L.T. 147

How Agricola had ye Romane army in Argathele; how the king of Pichtis in his viage contrare Romanis was slane; how Garnarde was crownit, and how Scottis and Pichtis invadit Romanis.

Cap° xiiij°

In somer quhilk began ye sext zere of his office, he comandit explore ye portis and havynnyis of Argathele and ilis adiacent, quhilk to ressaue schippis war maist commodiofs; and with his armye passing ye flude of Levin, be land take his iournayis to subiect all castellis and mwniciouns within 30 yai regions, yat yarethrow inemyis mycht vnderstand nowthir be sey nor land mycht yai haue refuge, to be vnranderit to Romanis. The hichtis of montanis, and vnder yame lochis, merressis and woddis myxt yareamang, replete of thornys, breris and thik rammell, affrayit first ye Romane weremen, becaufs apperandlie yai suld mak na litill impediment to ye armye to pas throw ye cuntre. Nochtwithstanding, Romanis, forzetting nocht yare vertew and fortitude, be laubouris

thinking na thing suld be to yame insuperabill, stoutlie oureset Fo. LXV.  
 all yai deficill wayis, howbeit nocht without cummyr and pane,  
 and speling to ye toppis of ye heich montanis, fra thyne of  
 40 men and bestiall draif ane huge pray; syne craftelie swowm-  
 and ye fludis, tuke and bett downe certane fortalicyis situate  
 amang ye woddis, devisit apperandlie for nychtbour were,  
 becaus ye cuntre men yareto war fled. Thay wan alsua sum  
 vthir strenthis and *with yare* garnisoun stuffit ye samyn. In  
 this sorte in all partis *with grete incommoditeis*, yai supprisit  
 ye inhabitantis and rurall pepill, quhilkis tarying yare cuming  
 devodit nocht ye cuntre. About ye ilk tyme, be decrete of  
 Galdus king and nobillis, the power of Novant, Morave, Lugia,  
 Marthea, Hebrides (now Lorne, Murray, Roß, Mar, Ilis) and  
 vthir regions obeying ye Scottis senezeorye, convenit in Athole  
 at ane place now distant abone v mylis fra ye castell of  
 Calidoun (now Downkeld), quhare yai taryit Caranath, king  
 of Pichtis, *with* his armye, yat ye pussance of twa naciouns  
 concurring, to ye Romane ordinance with lesß difficulte mycht  
 50 be resistit. Quhen ye king of Pichtis wyth xv<sup>m</sup> weremen towart  
 Scottis was on his viage, at ye mont callit Granzebene, quhilck  
 is extendit throw the cuntre fra ye mouth of ye river of Dee M.L.T. 147b  
 almaist to Downbritane (as said is), for ane licht occasioun  
 suddand tuleze was movit in ye oist, betuix certane wageouris,  
 quharethrow ye armye in twa partijs was dividit. Haistelie  
 yai ran to harnes; freyndis and companzeons afore, apoun  
 vtheris made grevous slauchter. To stanche yis debate ye  
 king of Pichtis, vnwiselie rynnyng amang yame nakit, *with-*  
*out* armour or princelie cognossance, vnknawin, be ane wage-  
 oure was slane. Thay faucht *yareeftir* ane quhile, nocht  
 without felloun slauchter; ffinalie knawing ye king was  
 60 slane, leving ye expedicioun, euery man to his habitacioun  
 departit. Galdus king, knawing ye caisß, regrettit hevlie ye  
 vnchancie loisß of ye king his gude freynd, and yat ye expedicioun  
 devisit contrare Romanis behuffit on nede be differrit. Con-  
 venyng herefore his barouns in counsell, *with* schort wourdis  
 detesting ye vntymouß sedicioun of Pichtis, he prayit yai suld  
 maturelie avise be quhat way ye weill of ye kinrik, sa nere  
 apperand danger, mycht be providit, sen to ye *immynent*

- Fo. LXV. batell contrare Romanis yai had na pussance. Eftir mony and diuers opinions, finalie was decretit yat be licht iupertyis and skarmwschis all ye somer yai suld impesch Romanis yat 70 yai suld nocht extend yare boundis, erare yan fecht with hail pussance in arrayit batell; and suld exhort ye noblis of Pichtis, be freyndlie and honest persuasiouns, to slokyn haistelie yis nychtboure sedicioun, vther wayis ye apperand perrell mycht nocht be evadit; and in ye nixt somer power suld be contractit throw all nacions of Scottis, Pichtis, vyer nychtboure and confederate pepill of Ireland, Orknay, Noroway and Denmark to pass with yame contrare Romanis, quharethrow peraventure be cummyr of ye ground and production of tyme Romanys suld irk and be contrinit owder to leif ye cuntre or be penurite of victualis extremelie be afflictit. This counsale was apprisit. Nocht lang yareeftir, to ye heris of Pichtis ambassiatouris directit, be ane lang proposicioun
- Fo. LXVI. detestit ye civill weris, schewing how skaithfull yai ar to 80 princis, how waik and febil ar kinrikis quhare sic sedicioun regnis, how miserabill and afflictit is ye commoun weill yarethrow, and how vnchancie is ye fyne yareof. Be mony sic persuasiouns yai brocht ye mater to sic poynt, yat all dissenciou suld be removit and be concorde votis Garnard, in place of Caranath deceissit, suld be create king: and yai suld concur with Scottis in weris to defend yare liberte. In ye samyn consell legaciouns war decretit to Noroway and Denmark, quharefra come ye origine of Pichtis, and to Hiberniens ye first parentis of Scottis inhabitant Albion. Be yare diligence was optenit yat in ye nixt somer thir nacions foresaid, in armys suld contrare Romanis supple Scottis and Pichtis. 10
- Quhil yir premis war in laubouring, Galdus king distribute his power in diuers oistis, assignyng chiftanis maist with ye grund acquentit, chargeing yai suld in sindri partis assailze Romanis. This ordinance of Galdus be brute mare than effect (as ye custume is of thingis vnknawin) made impediment yat Romanis, ye somer following, assayit nocht to pas Calidone Wod. In ye nixt wynter be stormy weddir, of quhilk nane vthir was rememberit mare scharpe in Albion before yai dayis, on athir partie fra batell was desistit. Approcheing ye
- M.L.T. 148

somer, quhilk was ye sevint zere eftir Agricola made his ex- Fo. LXVI.  
pedicioun in Britan, ane power of gudelië men fra Hibernienß  
was send in Albion, and come to ye king in Athole reddy to  
fortify yare freyndis of Scotland contrare inemyis, quhare  
alsua convenit mony fra all partis of Albion, awating quhat  
yare prince wald command. To him sic like with strang  
20 ordinance come Garnard, king of Pichtis, recentlie crownit.  
All thir naciouns, of ane mynde and intencioun to recovir yare  
liberte, to Gald referrit all cure and reule of ye weris. Gald,  
devising to pas haistelië throw Calidone Wod apoun Romanis,  
was certifyit be cuntre men how Romanis occupyit grete  
parte yareof be force of armys. Nocht yeles ye king, fering na  
thing, bot deviding his army in thre hoistis, towart inemyis  
tranoyntit. Quhen yis be Agricola was knawin, yat he suld  
nocht be circumuenit be multitude of inemyis yat knewe M.L.T. 148b  
weill ye grund and war l<sup>m</sup> fechtung men, (as oure ancient croni-  
killis haldis), with thre hoistis siclike he occurrit in yare meting.  
Galdus, aduerting quhat Agricola devisit, haistelië changeing  
purpoiß, on nycht *with* ane parte of ye armye invading ye  
maist stalwart legioun of Romanis nerrest be aventure for the  
tyme, slew yare wachis and assailzit yame half zit slepery  
30 and agast. Now was Scottis fechtand within ye Romane  
campe quhen Agricola, be scurreouris instrukkit of ye viage  
and purpoiß of Scottis, apoun yame followit, commanding ye  
maist swift baith on horsß and fute assalezë the fechtaris at  
ye bak, and incontinent raisß ye schout. Quhen Scottis and  
Pichtis fechtung, aduertist ye caiß, turnyng to ye onsettaris  
at ye bak, apoun yame maid na leß slauchter yan yai resaut.  
This bargane be cruell slauchter on athir partie to ye clere  
day contynewit, quhen ye schynyng standartis signifying the  
cuming of ye legate with all ye Romane armye, affrayng  
Scottis and Pichtis, contrinit yame remember on yare safite  
and fle to moss and merreß, thik forestis and woddis, maist  
sikkir refuge quhen yai war sarit be inemyis. Be this batell  
40 to Romanis aduersare, the confederate kingis *with* freyndis of  
Denmark taryit *with* grete esperance, defending yare persouns,  
store, bestiall, landis and townys, be frequent and licht iuperteis  
erare yan invasioun of Romanis consumyt the somer present.

Fo. LXVI.

How Agricola lugeit his army apon Tay beside Dunkeld; how Vsippus come in Scotland; of supple brocht be Gildo; how ye Romane navyn in Pichtland Fyrth was afflictit. Cap<sup>o</sup> xv<sup>o</sup>

M.L.T. 149

Romanis, cruell be frequent contynuate victoryis, thinking na thing mycht resist yare fortitude, determyt pas throw Calidone Wod, and fynalie fynd ye extreme march of Albioun. And quhen with grete difficulte be stratenes of ye ground yai had yare intent, passing ye watter of Awmond (zit sua callit), apoun ye ryver of Tay nocht fer fra ye castell of Calidon Wod (now Dunkeld) yai lugeit yare armye betuix ye wod fore-said and Athole fletis, ye flude richt depe and stark, and throw the samyn almaist in na parte may be passage. Quhare it rynnys in ye est sey, nocht fer fra ye towne of Alect (now 50 Donde), as Cornelius Tacitus in ye Life of Agricola writis, it has twa mylis or mare in latitude, deviding Horestia, vmquhile regioun of Pichtis (now Angoufs), fra Otolinia (Fiffe for ye present). Be sa nere approcheing of Romanis, affrayit war Pichtis, and brynt Tulyne, yare nobill and populouß ciete, in aventure gif it war randerit to Romanis, it mycht be to yame refuge and to yare self richt skaithfull: disturssing it first baith of inhabitantis and gudis. Sum tyme yis ciete was of large boundis apoun ye bank of Tay, lyke as zit schawis ye signys yareof. In yir oure dayis Inch Tuthil namyt. Syne to ye mont of Granzebene transferrit wyiffis, barnys and bestiall. Scottis and Pichtis in yis sort providing yare affaris, be ane suddane caisß war movit to invaid Romanis. Ffor ane pepill 60 namyt Vsippij apon ye bordoure of Germanye beside ye mowth of Ryne, quhare it fletis in ye sey, at command of ye emprioure war directit to Britane, quhare, slaying ye centurion and vyir chiftanis, be aventure finding carvellis at the river of Thamys, raissing saill, tending to seik new habitacioun, with fare wynd and prosper courß yai arrivit in Tay, ffering gif yai had salit in Germanye thay suld for yare tresoun incur ye ire of Romanis. To yir Vsipijs was grantit to duell with ye Moravis yare cuntre men, becaus yai had dedelie feid con-



trare Romanis. About ye samyn tyme, of Danys and Noro- Fo. LXVI.  
 70 wayis to ye nowmer of x<sup>m</sup> with yare chiftane Gildo, weill furnist  
 in victualis, armys and werelie ordinance, with certane schippis  
 arrivit in Fforth betuix Pichtland and Otolinia, to suple yare  
 freyndis, Scottis and Pichtis, contrare yare auld inemyis. And  
 becauſs to yare landing resistit Romanis occupying for ye  
 tyme yai boundis, yai directit yare courſs about to Tay, and  
 with yare folkis tuke land. Be danger, quharein stude ye  
 weill of Scottis and Pichtis, ye cuming of yir folkis, quham  
 on yai taryit lang, was to yame mare acceptabill. Garnard,  
 king of Pichtis, with his noblis fra Alect (now Donde) depart-  
 ing, with incredibill benevolence welcumit ye Norowayis. M.L.T. 1496  
 Convoyand to the castell the chiftane Gildo, to quham be all  
 man was done mekill honoure, the king, intertenyng him with  
 80 regall giftis and princelie chere, sufferit ye armye pas to  
 townys, castellis and villagis in ye cuntre, to refresche yame Fo. LXVII.  
 efter yare labouris be tempest of sey, nocht without danger  
 of yare livis sustenit. Galdus king, knowing the cuming of  
 Gildo with power in his supple, haistelie sped him to Alect  
 to welcum yat nobill man, Norowayis and Danys, quhilkis  
 with him come in Albion. At cuming of ye king, Gildo with  
 ane rout of gudelie men gladelie passit in his meting. The  
 king with mekill humanite and honour ressavng Gildo, " I  
 think," (said he), " it is to me richt honorable, (maist vailzeand  
 Gildo), yat I se ye with sa mony nobill and douchty men of  
 were, flurissing in youth, be benignite of goddis brocht hail  
 and sound in Albion. Herethrow yow sall expell inemyis, and  
 10 to liberte sall help to restore Pichtis, ye successioun of Agathirſs  
 of lang tyme duelling amang Danys, and now be ye Romane  
 armyis fra yare rowmys in Albion be mony iniuris almaist  
 expellit ; and sall supple me and my folkis, confederatis with  
 Danys and Norowayis of lang tyme, and now constitute in  
 manifest dangeræ to leiſs oure boundis. We haue of lang tyme  
 in mekill dout taryit cuming of ye and thy desirit cumpanye.  
 We haue oure ene and myndis fixit apou the, and yis nobil  
 chevalrie quham quhen we presentlie behald, we ar mare  
 reiosit yan may be expremit ; and with oure inwart cordiall  
 favoure thankis ye of yi cuming ; ffor treulie euery ane of ws

Fo. LXVII. has sa ferme esperance be thy thankfull *presens*, yat be yir weremen adionit with *our* power, we beleif Romanis salbe 20 defate and fra yir *our* boundis expellit: quharefore quhen *with* reiosit herte I behald the and yi gudelic cumpanye, it apperis to me yat I se *nocht* alanerlie ane stark ordinance for batell, bot als I think ye victorie is ouris." To yis ansuerit

M.L.T. 150 Gildo: he wald with his folkis fecht in batell to ye extreme in defence of his freyndis confederate to *preserue* yare liberte and native cuntre *contrare* Romanis, reiffaris of kinrikis and realmez: ffor yat cauß with his armye he come to Albioun yat ye fidelite promist be straking of handis in *presens* of inmortale goddis suld euer inviolate remane; thay suld of him lippin *nocht* ellis, for treulie in him and his folkis hereof yai suld haue experience. Eftir yir *premiss*, quhen ye confederate princis, Scottis and Pichtis, in cherissing of Gildo 30 had spendit certane dayis, at Alect in sure portis stabling yare naving, departit to Fforfare for ye tyme: ane strang castell (as zit schewis ye rewyne yareof), environyt for ye maist parte with ane braid loch, quhare Scottis princis eftir destructioun of Pichtis, deliting in ye amene situacioun of ye place, maid oftymes repare; bot now as ye courß is of mortall caisß it is ane small village, zit *observyng* ye first name. Thare convenyng ane counsell of Scottis, Pichtis and *assistantis* fra Ireland, Denmark and Noroway, how best mycht be consultit for ye *commoun* weill in sa grete *danger* constitute, eftir mony and diuers opinions, ffinalie yai condescendit yat in wynter approcheing fra batell suld be abstenit, sua ye weremen, for ye maist parte laking palzeons, 40 apoun ye plane suld *nocht* ly in cald and scharp wedder, to quhilk yat regioun mekill is subiectit: al yis tyme yai suld diligentlie *provide* all necessaris for were; hereto suld certane douchty men be walit to awate yat Romanis suld *nocht* at liberte ische fra ye campe, fra yame stop all kynde of *viueris*, and yat na briggis suld be maid *attour* ye watter of Tay, quharethrow Romanis *mycht* haue passage to the 3ounder land. Hereeftir Galdus went to Athole, quhare, with ye powere of Ireland, he remanit yat wynter. The king of Pichtis and Gildo, *with* Norowayis, Daynis and Vsipijs, in castellis, mwni-

cions and vthir strenthis in Orestia (now Anguſs), *nocht* fer Fo. LXVII.  
50 fra Thay, *with* grete desire taryit ye come of *sommer*. In yis M.L.T. 150b  
sorte fynissit was ye wynter. In begynnyng of somer, Agricola,  
vesying ye Romane navyn in sure portis all ye wynter kepit,  
chargeit yai suld wey ankeris, saill about ye remanent of  
Albion and leif nowder porte, rade, promontor, hedeland, bay  
nor ile vnconsiderit. It was manifest Agricola tuke yir  
laubouris yat during his lieutenandry, the maist extreme land  
of ye warld, seyis and ilis vnkend to yat tyme, suld knaw ye  
Romane armys. The marynaris at his *command*, about Albion  
convoyit ye navyn. In yis viage ye Hebridis (quhilkis we call  
*commonlie* the Ilis) and Orknay war sene, and sum parte of  
60 yame war heryit. Alsua yai beheld ye twa ilis namyt Tule,  
*commonlie* callit Ila and Lewis. Quhen Romanys knew Picht-  
land Firth be stark stremys rynnnyng betuix Orknay and  
Cornan (now Cathenes), *nocht* distant abone xx<sup>tj</sup> mylis,  
without skaith of ye navyn *mycht* *nocht* weill be salit becaus  
of ye contrare tydis and weltering wallis of huge hicht, yai  
causit certane hirdis of ye ilis adiacent pass with yame in  
botis, promitting yame grete rewardis to gide yame throw ye  
firth, traisting yame expert marineris, and be thare diligence  
*mycht* evaid yat perrellus passage. Bot all vthir wayis it  
70 happynnyt, ffor ye hirdis, thinking yai had weill revengeit  
yare dede gif ye Romane navyn, furnist *with* sa mony  
expert marineris and sa opulent spulezeis, *mycht*, throw  
yare industrie, togidder *with* yare self be drownyt; quhen  
for vehemence of ye tydis maist was to be abstenit fra  
ye streme, yai chargit dres yare cours towart ye samyn. Sum  
schippis haistelie war thrawin in ye depe and raschit  
apoun craggis; vtheris, to sauf yame fra ye rochis casting  
ankeris and ye samyn slipping throw force of wallis, war  
drevyn be violent seyis lowfs to sey, war syne oureset,  
sank and drownit. Ffew marineris eschapit quhilk, *cleverit* M.L.T. 151  
to burdis, war castin to land, and be the cuntre men, reput  
piratis and reiffaris, war takin and slane, or in derisioun  
80 kepit liffand. Sum part, to quham ye saling contrare ye  
vehement tydis was suspect, abhorring the firth, be exempill Fo. LXVIII.  
of yare feris affrayit, and yat be inexperience of dangeris yat

FO. LXVIII. yai suld nocht incur siclike, to Agricola, ye samyn courß yai come, returnit.

How Agricola set ane brig apon Tay ; how Galdus, cheif of Albiane armye, gaif him batell ; how the Romane navyn aboute ye ile of Albion was convoyit, and how Agricola to Rome departit.

Cap° xvj°

Quhill in sic dangere lauborit ye Romane navyn Agricola, knawing nocht yare trubill, causit craftismen cast tymmer in ye nerrest wod, and secretelie ione ane brig, attoure quhilk, sett apoun ye rivere of Tay, sonare yan ony belevit he convoyit his armye to the plane beside ye fute of Granzebene the mont, with stark mwncyioun ; syne garnyst ye brig yat nowthir be force nor slicht of inemyis it mycht be distroyit. The brute of his haisty cuming astonyst samekle ye power 10 of Pichtis, in mwncious and townys adiacent remanyng ye tyme of wynter, yat yai aduertist Galdus, beseking him concur with yame in revengeing the offensis done be Romanis. Galdus, fra all regiouns obeying his crowne, had contractit power of xl<sup>m</sup> armyt men, without 3ong childer and vtheris of age, potent 3it in strenth swairmyng in ostis. Na thing brokin be vnchance of ye recent batell, traisting owthir perpetuall seruitute or be finalie revengeit ffra thyne few dayis passing, Galdus, convoying his armye oure ye mont of Granzebene and descending to ye plane, adionit him to ye power of Pichtis, Norowayis and Danys nocht fer distant fra ye armye of 20 Romanis ; quhare eftir mony consultaciouns of kingis and princis, Galdus (to quhom ye haill gouerment of ye batell before was committit), in presens of ye multitude of ye batell desirus, spak as followis : " How oft I consider we are provokit to weris, and on nede mon fecht, I haue ane gude consate yat yis iournay and 3oure ardent curage sall yis day deliuer all Britan to liberte. ye knaw we had neuer experience of thir- age, and we may haue na securite in landis bezond ws, nor in the sey occupyit be ye Romane navyn. Herefore as to

douchty men, hard fechting and armys ar honorabill, richtsua FO. LXVIII.  
to cowartis yai ar fensabill and maist sure refuge. In batellis  
preceding, quhen be variabill fortune we faucht contrare  
Romanis, in oure awne handis stude oure esperance and  
30 avantage, ffor we, ye maist noblis yat duellis in the inwart  
partis of Britan and neuer denezeing to be subiect, conseruit  
euer our self fra domynyoun of inemyis. Be ye brute and  
fame yat we ar sa elongate and fre, we have bene to yis day  
defendit. Nocht yeles now is ye fyne of Britane patent, and  
becaus it was vnkend afore, it is thocht ane grete interprise.  
Bezond ws is na pepill nor vthir thing except haire rochis and  
welterand wallis. Within ws ar ye Romanis, refaris and dis-  
turssaris of ye warld, and to declyne yare haltane pride be  
humanitie or gude behavingis is in vane ; and quhen yai haue  
made all waist and bare, yai ceirfs baith erde and sey. Gif  
inemyis be riche yai ar avaricioufs : gif yai be pure yai ar  
ambiciofs, and nowthir be ye orient nor occident can be  
saciate. Thay only cuvate to reif elike ye riches and poverté  
of all naciouns, to mak slauchter and be fals namys avant  
40 yame as conquerouris. And quhare yai waist and makis  
desolacioun, yai say yat partis ar pecifyit. Naturalie oure  
sonnys and freyndis suld be to ws maist tendir and dere, bot  
yai ar chosin furth to serue in ordinance and weris. Oure  
sisteris and spousfs, how beit yat declyne ye luste of inemyis,  
vnder colour of freyndis and familiaris ar defoullit. The frutis  
zerelie be ye grund productit, ar collectit to yare viueris ; oure  
persons and handis in casting yare trenschis and parking yare  
forestis, ar exercit ; how beit amang yir cruell dispitis fra M.L.T. 152  
strakis is nocht abstenit. Sklavis born to seruitute ar bot  
anys sauld, and be yare maisteris but cummyr fed ; Britouns  
dalie byis yare awne servitute, and daly fedis ye samyn ; and  
sidlike as in ane houshald ony new servand nocht acquentit  
is with vthir servandis in derisioun, richtsua we, the last  
50 of all ye warld, ar socht to thirllage and as vile and new  
sklavis persewit to ye dede. Ffor nowder ar left armys,  
metallis nor portis quharein we may be exercit, and may haue  
our liffe to lauboure yareat. And ye know quhen subiectis  
has pussance or hardyment, yare maisteris ar nocht plesit

Fo. LXVIII. *pareof*: sua we *pat* ar elongate and seperate fra vthir naciouns, *ye* mare sikkir we be, it is the mare suspect. Herefore sen we dispere *ye* grace of Romanis, lat ws tak hardyment and defend *ye* wele of oure persouns. The Brigantinis be ane woman chiftane brynt *pare* plennyssing, wan *pare* camp, and gif sic felicite had *nocht* sleuthfully bene vsit, the *zok* of thirllage had bene abiectit. Herefore we, *pat* ar douchty men, haill and never dantit, sall to liberte deliuer oure self at *ye* first ionyng. And lat ws cauß fais vnderstand quhat curage is in men bezond Calidone Wod duelling. Beleif surelie Romanis sall haue na sic curage in weris as *pai* haue insolence in pece. Be oure divisioun *pai* grow proude, and ascrivis *ye* mysyding 60 of inemyis to *ye* gloure of *pare* armye, contractit of sindri gaderingis; and like as be prosperite *pai* ar vnyt, sua be aduersite *pai* salbe seperate, without *ye* Gallis, Alemannis and grete parte of Britannis, (I aschame to say sic wourdis), wald suffir sa nobill blude be subdewit to thirllage, vnder domynion of strangearis. Beleif *ze* *zour* inemyis bot sklavis in affectioun and fidelite togidder may be haldin? I assure *zow*, fere and terrour ar bot febill bandis of lufe; *yit* quhen *pai* ar removit, *pai* *pat* dred afore sall fere na mare, bot bere cruell haterent. We want na thing to erect oure esperance to victorie, ffor Romanis has *nocht* *pare* wyffis present, nor freyndis to repreve

M.L.T. 1526 *yaim* gif *pai* fle. Mony of *yame* has na propir habitacioun, or gif *pai* haue ony, *pai* ar far *parefra* elongate. Oure goddis to ws has deliuerit *pis* sobir army of Romanis, few in nowmer, 70 abasit be ignorance of *ye* grund, govin about to *ye* hevin, sey, firthis and forestis, as vnkouth to *yame* and vnkend, amang ws inclusit, and in ane parte oureset. I exhort *ze* tak na terrouris of *pis* vane glance of *pare* glittering goldin gere, *quhilk* may nowthir hurt nor cover *zoure* persons. In *ye* feild of Romanis we sall fynd freyndis and handis enewe, for Britouns sal *nocht* forzett *pare* querell, gif *pai* se tyme. Gallis on *pare* ancient liberte sall remember. The remanent pepill of Germanye sall leif *yame* as did *ye* Vsipyis. Syne *pareeftir* we sall fere na mare; ffor castellis ar empty and tvme, the townys quhare *pare* ald morpeis war cherist amang Albiouns evil obey-sant, and Romanis iniust maisteris, ar at sic daly discorde and

noy, yat on force yai mon obey ye ritis of *vyir* cieteis. Here FO. LXVIII.  
 is baith *presentlie* zoure chiftane and armye : thare on ye *toyir*  
 80 parte is proponit baith tribute and metellis and vthir panis  
 of *seruitute*, quhilkis to extend perpetualie or to revenge FO. LXIX.  
 haistelie standis in this *present* iournay. Quharefore address  
 zow apou inemyis, memorative atanis of ye honour of fore-  
 bearis and posterite." The multitude *present with* mery chere  
 resaut ye kingis exhortaciouns, eftir ye samyn vsing in yare  
 maner singing, plesand noyis and soundis. Syne ye armyis,  
 replete of douchty men, in glitterand harnes war ordorit ;  
 quhen Agricola, howbeit his folkis war ardent and impacient  
 of sa lang delay, zit as efferit ane chiftane, said in this sorte :

Ffollowis the exhortacioun of Agricola to his army  
 as writis Cornelius Tacitus.

" It is now ye aucht zere bipast, (companzeons), sen for  
 felicite of ye Romane Impire be diligent laubouris, passing  
 throw Britane, ze haue vincust ye rebell pepill of Ordowicis  
 (now Anandale), ye Ile of Mon, Siluris (now Kile, <sup>2</sup>E) and  
 10 mony vthir pepill vnkend in Albion afore, be sa mony sindri  
 expediciouns and sare batellis, yat owdir it was requirit ze  
 suld haue invincibill fortitude contrare inemyis, or ellis grete M.L.T. 153  
 laubour and pacience to debate aganis nature, of al thingis  
 ye parent. All ye tyme nowthir was I irkit to haue zow my  
 weremen, nor ze to haue me zour chiftane. Therefore sen  
 I transcendit the boundis of vthir legatis, and ze of vthir  
 armyis before zoure tyme, we haue fundin now and kepis  
 ye end of Britane. Nocht be brute or rumoure bot aluterlie  
 be force of armys Britan is fundin and subiectit. ze remember  
 quhen moß, erde, montanis and fludis made zow oftymes  
 wery in zoure travell, I herd ye maist douchty amang zow  
 say, ' And quhen sall we find oure fais ? Quhen sall we se  
 yare curage to abide ws in bargane ? ' Thay cum now chaissit  
 fra yare holis and hiddillis. Now ze haue zoure desiris planelie  
 before zoure ene, sua gif ze vincuß, all to zow ar subiectit.  
 Gif ze be vincust, all sall be aduersant. Ffor like as it is  
 plesand and honorabill yat ze haue ouresett sa lauborioß

Fo. LXIX. iournayis, evadit þe dangeris of thik woddis and forestis, and salit seyis and firthis, it was alsua richt perrellus to sett þoure 20 forett sa stoutlie to bargane, and chaisþ þoure fays. And how beit sic thingis war tedioþ for þe tyme, þai ar to day prosper and glorioþ. Fferther, we know nowther þe grund sa weil as inemyis, nor aboundis sua in viueris. Bot we haue armour and practic of were and þarein standis *our* weill. And for my parte I am resolute, þat nowþir is honest nor sikkir to þe chiftane nor armye to gif þe bak. Tharefore honest dede to vnhonest life suld be *preferrit*, and baith oure honoure and safite in ane place ar situate. It sall conduce *nocht* litill to þoure glore to de in the extreme end of þe warld; gif ane new pepill and ane armye vnknawin war ordorit in þoure contrare I suld exhorte þow be exempill of vthir armys. Herefore now reduce to mynde þoure awne honoure, and demand þour awne ene, gif þir be *nocht* þe samyn inemyis quhilkis on nycht thiftwislie invadit ane Romane legioun, and be þoure clamoure and schowtis war defate. Of all vthir Britouns thir ar 30 þe gretest flearis and þarefore þai indure sa lang. And siclike as at range of woddis, or thik forestis, the beist maist strenthy and stark is sonest brocht to dede, and vtheris, rad or affrayit be noyis of the range and tynchell, ar skarrit, richtsua þe douchtiest and maist robust of all Britan before this tyme ar slane. The remanent ar bot cowartis and abasit bodyis. And becaus þe haue fundin þame finalie, þai mycht resist na langare. And sen þai se thay ar deprehendit as disparit men þai aventure þare persouns, and has lugeit þare armye in þir partis quhare þe sall glorioslie tryumphe. Tharefore, pas fordwart, and mak ane finale end of þir expedicions, and end þis day þir weris, quhilk fifty þeris has lestit, and caus þe Romane senatouris and pepill vnderstand that to þe Romane armye mycht neuer be impute þat þai sonþete fra batell, nor þat be þare sleuth inemyis had mater to rebell." C

M.L.T. 153b

Quhill Agricola exhortit, grete fervoure of the weremen apperit in þare continence; and eftir his proposicioun was 40 endit, grete feirsneþ followit þareapoun, and incontinent was maid to harnes. Agricola ordorit his folkis weill accow-



terit in yare armoure, in sic sorte yat, howbeit inemyis excedit Fo. LXIX.  
yame in multitude, zit yai suld nowder in front nor at the  
sidis be invadit. Galdus in arraying his armye was na mare  
necligent ; ffor, having grete multitude, he ordorit his batall  
in ane lang array apoun ane hicht, tending yai suld fald and  
lukkin about the Romanis, and sua on all partis, be strang  
assailze, invaid ; syne causit proclame to ye armye yai suld  
nocht dispare bot haue ferme beleif and stoutlie indure ye  
bargane, ffor in ye samyn yai suld owder conquess inmortal  
50 lawde or perpetuale *seruitute* : and yat day suld be ye last,  
owder of honour or extreme *contempcion*. Syne gart blaw  
ye trumpet to ione ye feild. At ye first counter, ye confederate  
Scottis and Pichtis, *with* Danys and Norowayis vnder ye  
kingis baner, first schot grete nowmer of arrowis. Romanis  
eschewit ye schot be grete targis, fechtand *with* mekill con- M.L.T. 154  
stance and practik, be vse and lang exercicioun in were.  
The archearis of ye confederatis, eftir yare arrowis spendit,  
faucht with schort swerdis and litill bukclaris, mare con-  
venient for nyctboure were yan arrayit batell, as zit in oure  
dayis is vsit. Quharefore quhen yai come to strakis *with*  
yare swerdis and schort bukclaris yai did litill gude. This  
60 persaving, ye weremen yat behynd ye archearis war ordourit,  
put ye archearis by and with speris, axis and vthir fensabill  
wapynnys inflictit grevous woundis. Syne vtheris, bering  
dartis, billis and iavillingis, maid sa cruell slauchter apon  
Romanis yat almaist yai war ilkane oureset and vincust.  
Than had ye Romane armye finalie bene defate, gif haistelie had  
nocht occurrit ane oist of Germanis, quhilkis be *command* of  
ye emprioure war walit and send to Britan. Thir Germanis,  
at ane signe made be Agricola, assailzeing stoutlie quhare he  
persauit maist dangere, with ane felloun rusch strake down and  
slew, leiffing mony half vnslane, throw desire to sindir ye  
70 armye of inemyis. The recent terroure sum parte astonist  
ye confederate pepill, seand on all sydis yare feris stirkin  
downe, quhill *with* new curage, memorative of yare kinrik  
and liberte, contempnyng woundis and dede, lippynnyng na  
safite bot in yare handis, yai stude togidder, tending to fecht  
quhil yai war all slane attanis. Ffra thyne was ye batell

- Fo. LXIX. scharpe and felloun, the confederatis fechtung mare be strenth  
 gan be practik or vse of chevalrie. Than Agricola send apoun  
 yame sa stoutlie fechtand, ane new hoist quhil he held fresche,  
 vnfochtin, reddy at all aventuris. Nor be yare feirß assailze  
 mycht nocht ye confederatis haue repulß nor be deiectit, be  
 incredibill manhede sustening ye batell. This sicht was miser-  
 abill and horribill, for sum parte confederatis, sloppit *with*  
 M.L.T. 154b woundis, duschit fordwart apoun yare slaaris. Sum wilfully  
 offerit yame to be murdrist, sum eschaping violence of inemyis, 80
- Fo. LXX. planely in yare awne persoun put handis: membris of men,  
 harnes, wapynnys and dede corps, and all ye eird bludy and  
 horribill. In yis sorte was fochtin, quhil ye late nycht yat  
 sicht failzeit, quhen on athir partie blawing ye retrete, yai  
 reterit to yare standartis. The confederatis Scottis and  
 Pichtis, with Danys and Norowayis left vnslane, lossing ye  
 maist parte of yare armye, with sa mony as war sare woundit,  
 leiffand ye feild, apoun ye nycht passit to the knowis beside,  
 and kindilling bald fyris, *with* felloun rerde and noyis come  
 grete confluence of men, wemen and freyndis, demanding  
 quhat aventure happynnyt yare parentis and sonnys in batell. 10  
 Quhen yai knew sa huge nowmer of freyndis slane, wemen  
*with* zoulling and schowtis fillit all ye camp. Than ye king,  
 providing yat yare doingis suld nocht be patent to ye Romane  
 exploraturis, gif ony be aventure war nere, chagit yai suld  
 schaw yame lowde, and mak mery noyis as euery man war  
 glade of the weill of his freynd; and fra sic lowde noyß suld  
 nocht ceiß quhill the wemen fra yame sum parte mycht be  
 elongate. Syne in ye dawing consulting with his noblis, quhen  
 he knew pussance failzeit to renewe ane armye, he decretit  
 yat euery man suld paß to strenthis quhare the iniuris of  
 inemyis mycht be evadit. The king, *with* Garnard, king of 20  
 Pichtis, and ane cumpany of walit men, parte Danys, parte  
 Norowayis, and of his awne, leiffing bricht fyris in sicht of  
 inemyis, sped thare viage to Athole. Oure cronikillis schawis  
 in this vnhappy batell, of Romanis to ye nowmer of xij<sup>m</sup> war  
 slane; of Scottis, Pichtis and yare complicitis, nerrest xx<sup>m</sup>;  
 and amang yame Gildo, chiftane of Danys, be oure ardent  
 corage fechtung, *with* ye douchtiest of his folkis, was invironyt

*with* inemyis and slane. The day following *ȝis* dolly *nycht* Fo. LXX.  
 schew panelie to Romanis how *ȝe* confederatis, like flearis,  
 war departit. The feildis on all partis of liffand men war  
 denwde, and replete *with* cariouns. Na persoun nowdir on M.L.T. 155  
 hillis, valeyis, nor campe mycht be sene: all was in silence  
 30 and quiet. Diuerß Romanis, suspecting *ȝis* menynt sum trane,  
 defendit owder to seirß or persew, and chargeit certane walit  
 men range *ȝe* woddis and ceirß strenthis, *ȝat* inemyis be cowart  
 fleing suld *nocht* eschape. Sum Romanis be rage of ȝouth,  
 be *ȝis* devise, without ordoure following apoun inemyis fleying  
 togiddir in cumpanyis, suddanlie amang *ȝame* happynnyt  
 and war circumuenit and slane. Syne *ȝai* quhilk apoun  
 40 Romanis maid *ȝis* myscheif, with grete schowtis and cruell  
 hartis, to *ȝe* hicht of *ȝe* nixt montane glaidlie ran. On *ȝe*  
 morne Agricola, ioyus be victorie and spuleȝe of *ȝe* feild,  
 quhen be skurreouris fra all partis he was certifyit nowdir  
 new power was assemblit, nor nane vthir gadering of inemyis,  
 thinking becaus somer for *ȝe* maist parte was past, he mycht  
 nocht ourepas the grete mont of Granȝebene without skaith  
 of his folkis, he reterit his victorioß armye to Horestia (Angouß)  
 for *ȝe* present, quhare *with* sobir laubouris subiecting *ȝat*  
 region denvde of pussance be lang weris and *ȝe* last vnchancye  
 batell, ressavng pleȝeis and stabilling his camp he devisit  
 remane *ȝe* tyme of wynter. About *ȝis* tyme to Agricola was  
 schewin how *ȝe* Romane navyn, quhilk he *commandit* saill  
 about Albioun, was be fraude of certane pilatis, chosin *ȝidis*  
 be *ȝe* marineris, to *ȝare* awne myscheif *committing* *ȝare* life  
 50 to credit of inemyis, in Pichtland Firth war vehementlie  
 afflictit; *ȝe* best and maist parte of *ȝe* schippis ouresett, war  
 owther ourequhelmyt be seyis, or on craggis brokkin. The  
 vthir navyn, narowlie evading and evill trasellit, to Argathele,  
 quharefra *ȝai* departit, returnit. At this message Agricola na  
 thing movit, schew glader contynance *ȝan* afore, persuading  
 to him self *ȝat*, be infortunate chance of his flote, *ȝe* Romane  
 army was deliuerit fra *ȝe* tresonabill myschance of fortune,  
 quhilk for sa mony prosper *avantagis* he vehementlie suspectit. M.L.T. 155b  
 Quharefore *with* mare strenth and pussance *ȝan* afore, in  
 barkis and galions weill furnyst *with* expert marineris and

- Fo. LXX. weremen, *with* pylatis knawing quhat courß *yai* suld hald, togiddir *with* all werelie ordinance, like as he had were aganis fortune, chargeit *ye* flote suld of new about *ye* ile be convoyit. 60  
 And sone *yareeftir* *ye* schippis, finding fare wynd and weddir, saling about Albioun in *ye* Firth of Tay arrivit, quhare fynding the schippis of Danys (of quham before is remembrit), and setting *yame* in fyre, during *ye* tyme of wynter *yai* lay at ankeris. Mony and diuerß monstrouß thingis (as oure cronikillis schawis) war sene in Albion latelie or Galdus *with* Romanis faucht in ordorit batell. In *ye* are was sene rynnand glemys, like fyrie hoistis, arrayit for batell. Grete parte of Calidone Wod was sene birn apoun *ye* nycht, and vntwicht be fyre apoun *ye* day. Schippis apperandlie war sene in *ye* are. Stanys ranyt in Athole, and grete multitude of paddokis in maner of rane out of *ye* are fell in Horestia. In Inchtuthill 70  
 was borne ane monstrouß barne, having *ye* nature of membris baith of man and woman, foull and horribill to behald, quhilk was incontinent slane, *yat* it suld na langer offend *ye* sicht of man. Thir strange ferlyis astonist mekill *ye* pepill, quharethrow *yai* war devidit in diuerß opiniouns; sum part (as commonlie is vsit) interpreting *yame* to gude and vtheris to evill. Quhen *ye* felicite of the Romane senezeorie in Britan, be writingis of grete men in *ye* armye, to Domyciane empriour was schewin, he was pansife and anoyit in mynde. How beit he dissimulit ane plesand vult, ffor he weyit hevilie *yat* *ye* name of ane private man suld abone his glore and fame be avansit. Quharefore eftir diuerß honouris war decretit to Agricola be avise of *ye* senatouris, dissimyling *yat* *ye* province 80  
 of Siria was for him devisit, be deceiß of Attilius Ruffus consul vaking of ane legate, he reterit him to Rome be writingis, quhare schortlie, be tresoun of *ye* emprioure (as was *ye* brute)  
 he was be venom distroyit. Before his departing fra Britan he committit *ye* province to Cneus Trebellius, quham the emprioure had made president in Britane. To *yis* tyme the Romane affaris war in prosperite, bot eftir departing of Agricola at mare febill poynt.

How the Romane Impire in Albion be discorde of Fo. LXXI.  
 chiftanis was afflictit; how yare armye be King  
 Gald was discumfist, and chaissit fra Horestia to  
 Calidon Wod. Cap° xvij°

Trebelliane, freynd of Agricola, for ye recent memorie of  
 his cousing to ye weremen tendir and dere, with Cneus  
 Trebellius contendit quhethir of yame suld to vthir in  
 governyng ye province be preferrit—Trebellius vsing autorite  
 of ye emprioure, and Trebelliam the benevolence of ye armye.  
 10 Auarice *with* vthir evill condicions made Trebellius odioufs  
 to ye Romanis; be the contrare, liberalite, humanite and  
 gude behavingis made to thame Trebelliane best belouit.  
 Quhill in yis sorte, be mony cruell and dampnabill contencious  
 amang chiftanis, ye maneris of weremen was corruptit, it come  
 finalie to yis poynt yat ane parte of ye armye, mare be autorite  
 yan benevolence to Trebellius assisting, Trebelliane with ane  
 gudlie cumpanye of Romanis favoring his opinioun, to Gallia  
 departit. Eftir quhilk Romanis war *nocht* lang at eifs in  
 Albion, ffor King Gald, knowing yare divisioun, fra all regions  
 obeying his crowne contracting power, *with* supple of Pichtis  
 movit towart Horestia (now Angoufs), quhare for ye tyme  
 remanit ye Romane armye. Be ye suddane invasioun of  
 inemyis Trebellius astonyst, thinking gude dede was mare  
 20 necessare for ye *present* yan consultacioun, becaus ye weremen  
 zit contrare him in haterent perseuerit, he chargit yai suld  
 rais standartis, drefs yame in harnes, and recounter inemyis.  
 How beit ye weremen obeyit his charge; zit quhen yai per-  
 sauit him abasit and dolf quhilk suld plesandlie haue vsit ye  
 office of ane chiftane, thay chesit Sisinnius, broder germane to  
 Trebelliane, to thare governour. Thus contempnyng Trebellius  
 yai desirit Sisinnius in gude ordour suld convoy yame to ye  
 feild. Sisinnius refusit yis reule, allegeing gif he had acceptit  
 ye samyn, incontinent sedicioun amang ye weremen suld  
 follow, to ye grete hurte of ye armye. Quhill be sic conten-  
 cious lauborit Romanis, Galdus with his armye to sicht  
 approchit. Be haisty affray Romanis skantlie redy, occurrit

Fo. LXXI. in his meting. Be ire and hete on athir side haistely was  
 fochtyn ; Scottis and Pichtis stiflie endurit the fecht in furoure 30  
 and rage, dingin Romanis to dede. Cayus Sisinnius, grevuslie  
 woundit, fra ye feild departit ; quhom followit grete nowmer  
 of Romanis. Ffinalie ye mayn batell fled and, skalit out of  
 ordoure, tendit to ye wod beside. Quhen yai approchit to ye  
 samyn, Scottis *with* yare complicis in grete nowmer about  
 yame lukkynnyt, fering na sic persute, and but mercie slew as  
 yai mycht apprehend. This aduerting, the king causit blaw  
 ye retrete, fering his folkis be oure mekill confidence mycht  
 be hurte. Bot nowther trumpett nor autorite of chiftanis  
 mycht before the late nycht causß yame leif ye chaisß, to Albanis  
 the Romane name and impire was sa odioß. To ye victouris  
 glaid and ioyus ye nycht following was plesing, passing the 40  
 samyn in blyithnes, sangis, mwsicall instrumentis and vvir  
 iocund *commonyng*, as in yai dayis was ye custume. Preistis  
 convenit, applauding to yis victorie be devote supplicaciouns,  
 thanking yare goddis quhilkis denezit *with* ane freyndlie e  
 behald Scottis and Pichtis, eftir sa mony contrarius myschance  
 of fortune and miserabill plagis, abone ye space of fifty 3eris,  
 afflictit be the Romane armye. In yis sorte Romanis destitute  
 of ane chiftane, and expellit yare campe, thinking for cruelte  
 of inemyis yai mycht in Horestia (now Angouß) haue na  
 refuge, passit to Inchtuthill. Eftir yai had restit ane litill,  
 fra thyne departing, yat inemyis suld nocht persew yame  
 bezond Tay, yai brak down ye brig sett ye 3ere precedent apoun 50  
 ye river, and had *our* ye samyn transportit yare armye.  
 Galdus, knowing ye departing of Romanis and wynnyng yare  
 campe *with* ye pray opulent and riche, eftir meritis of euery  
 man equalie distribut amang ye hoist ye spuleze. On ye  
 morn consulting with his noblis, yai concludit yat Romanis  
 without delay suld be persewit. Scottis *with* Pichtis haistelie  
 preparing yare armoure, and in esperance erectit be inveterate  
 rankoure and lauboure, persewing Romanis, exhortit yame  
 self to bargane necessare and honest, yat yai suld nocht suffir  
 iniuris done be Romanis langer vnrevengit. And quhen yai  
 approcheit to Inchetuthill, persaving ye brig brokin, yai tuke  
 purpoiß to convoy yare armye sum vthir way, towart Down-

60 keld moving. And attoure ane tre brig apoun Tay, quhare Fo. LXXI.  
 ye streme rynnys in ane narrow trouch, betuix heich brayis  
 on athir side, ye armye passit to ye 3onder land. Romanis  
 nocht mysknawing quhat was done be inemyis in gude ordoure  
 arrayit yare folkis. And becaus yai had ado contrare Scottis  
 victouris afore, and Sisinnius was sare woundit, yai put Tre-  
 bellius in irenis and to chiftane tuke Titus Celius, ane nobill  
 Romane in werelie discipline and chevelrie richt expert, yat  
 be his convoyance all thingis in yat batell suld be reulit.  
 Syne recounterit inemyis, quhare ane cruell batell was strikkin.  
 Ffinalie Romanis war sinderit and chaissit to ye strenth of  
 Calidone Wod. Of Romanis in yis iournay v<sup>m</sup> war slane, of  
 70 Scottis and Pichtis to ye nowmer of ij<sup>m</sup>. Eftir yis victorie  
 grete confluence of Scottis and Pichtis to Galdus reparit. Ffor  
 quhen in Walis was schewin how Romanis, with grete tinsell  
 of yare armye, be Scottis and Pichtis twyis war defate,  
 commoun pepill euer bering rankoure contrare Romanis,  
 slaying all ye morpeis quhare yai war in townis distribut, or  
 in garnison keping in strenthis, capitannis and vyir vailzeant  
 Romanis myxt amang Britouns to instruct yame in chevalrie,  
 movit grete rebellioun. The heris alsua of Walis and Icenis,  
 be violence and na beneuolence obeying Romanis, deliuerit  
 to liberte be myscheif of inemyis, and erectit in bileve of  
 80 bettir fortune, send to Galdus riche presentis, applauding to Fo. LXXII.  
 him yat eftir sa grete fellonye of fortune, ffinalie be speciall  
 favoure of inmortal goddis he grew in esperance of bettir. <sup>3</sup>C

How Romanys requiring supple fra Marius, king of M.L.T. 157b  
 Britons, war refusit; how Romanys thridlie war  
 vincust; pece be kingis was to yame grantit, and  
 how King Gald deceissit. Cap<sup>o</sup> xvij<sup>o</sup>

**I**n the ilk tyme Romanis, fra Calidone Wod, directit ambas-  
 siatouris to Marius, king of Britons, plenezeing ye skaithis  
 yai had be ye armye of Scottis and Pichtis resauit, be dowbill  
 myscheif yai war recentlie afflictit, thare armye without ane  
 chiftane or governour was left, and be mekill mysfortune

Fo. LXXII. molestit, *without* ane legatē and supple to ye pussance of  
 inemyis yai mycht na langer resist : it was force to remove  
 like flearis fra ye landis of Scottis and Pichtis and vthir  
 rowmyns occupijt be Romanis, gif haistellie to yame war *nocht*  
 send reskewe. Hereto ansuerit Marius, king of Britouns : all  
 conspiraciouns occurrit atanis : he was awatit dalie and hatit  
 to ye dede, fering mekill ye weill of his regne, his awne persoun  
 and childer ; madynnys, damosellis, bardis, menstrellis, and 10  
 vulgare pepill of Britan, *with* sangis and rymys defamyt  
 Romanis, bannand yame *with* bittir maledictiouns and dis-  
 pitis : he knew *nocht* quhat Britouns war freyndis nor fayis  
 to Romanis : he couth persauē *nocht* ellis bot yai war all  
 gevin to be deliuerit fra yare thirllage and domynioun :  
 Domyciane ye emprioure for his tyrannye and cruell slauchter  
 of cietenaris and senatouris was to ye pepill odioß, and na thing  
 amang Romanis extemyt : and as be *writingis* fra freyndis  
 he was aduertist, grete apperance of civill weris was in Rome,  
 he had na beleif the empriour suld send supple to Britane in  
 tyme cuming : gude it war herefore to provide the weill of ye  
 Romane Impire and conserue ye maist parte of Albion at ye  
 faith of Romanis (sen to kepe ye haill ile yai lakit power), 20  
 erare yan *with* grete dishonoure loß ye haill senezeory of  
 Britan. This message being reportit, grete fere and raddoure  
 M.L.T. 158 was amang Romanis, pansing how the armye mycht be fra  
 skaith preseruit. This fere was augmentit be skurreouris  
 schewing how ye armye of Scottis and Pichtis was *nocht* ten  
 mylis distant fra ye Romane campe. King Gald also had causit  
 proclame throw his realme yat *nocht* alanerlie men abill for  
 armys, bot als wele wemen zong and of corporall strenth to  
 indure travell suld convene, yat he mycht habound in multi-  
 tude and expell Romanis fra Calidone Wod, Siluria and vthir  
 boundis of Scottis and Pichtis. Romanis tuke purpois erare to  
 leiff Calidone Wod yan lauboure langare in sa manifest perrell,  
 and on ye *nycht* following, solist of the *commoun* weill, leving 30  
 Calidone Wod, be grete iournayis had all yare power to Siluria.  
 Nor yare yai taryit *nocht* lang, for fering tresoun of ye inhabi-  
 tantis, to quham fra begynnyng of ye weris yai war abone  
 mesour odioß, to Brigancia yai departit. Galdus be skur-



reouris knawing to quhat partis yai diuertit, be gydis knawing Fo. LXXII.  
 ye cuntre, followit bot langer tary, thinking best for ye com-  
 moun weill and rest of all inhabitantis Albion to invaid yame  
 40 or yai had lasere to renewe yare power. Herefore, postponyng  
 to assege castellis and fortalicis haldin be Romanis in Siluria,  
 be lauborioß iournayis he went to Brigancia. To him on  
 his viage came grete confluence of cuntre men and vtheris  
 be seruitute of Romanis opprest, or fled yare tyrannye,  
 applauding to yare prince yat how beit he was cummerit be  
 sa mony infortunate chancis, and afflictit be sa grete calamyteis,  
 yat almaist his kinrik was tynt, he disparit nocht, bot contemp-  
 nyng all sic dangeris, be prudence and consolacioun he  
 reseruit his folkis and him self to bettir fortune. With blyith  
 vult the king resaut his liegis, conforting yame with gude  
 wourdis, and persuadit yai suld beleif bettir in tyme cuming.  
 He led now his armye nocht alanerlie to fecht, bot erare to  
 50 haue sikkir victorie: now almaist vincust was fortune, sa  
 cruell aduersare to him and his folkis mony zeris, vsing to  
 mak grete alteraciouns in all mortall caisß, bot maist specially  
 in weris. He beleiffit sen he had sufferit sa mony dampnabill M.L.T. 1586  
 calamyteis and displesouris, he suld within few days (sen ye  
 goddis apperit now favorabill) gloriouslie apoun inemyis  
 tryumphe. Be sic wordis conforting Scottis and Pichtis, he  
 tranoyntit to Brigancia. Be his cuming Romanis suddanelie  
 agast, lippynnyng all yare weill in yare awne handis, chargit  
 yare folkis to array, drefß yare ansenzeis, and anarme yame  
 all for batell, affermyng yat day suld owder prepare to yame  
 glorioß victorie, or perpetuall dishonoure. Quhill to sic  
 60 thingis intent war Romanis it was schewin how inemyis with  
 weill ordorit ostis war present. The Romane chiftanis yan  
 exhortit yare folkis to fecht and nocht dispare the victorie,  
 sen yai had ado bot with inemyis vincust, naturalie arrogant  
 be folie and barbare attemptatis; memorative of ye glore  
 and vassalage of antecessouris in weris, yai suld regarde erare  
 the commoun weill yan yare private proffitt; thay suld prefer  
 ye dede to dishonoure, schame and perpetual reproche, quhilk  
 be na zeris nor tyme mycht be deletit, and suld stoutlie fecht  
 to yare fynale destructioun, gif it war sua providit be goddis;

- Fo. LXXII. be this way and nane vtheris mycht yai be victouris. Quhil Romanis amang yare self vsit thir and siclike exhortaciouns and inemyis lowsit apoun yame ane schour of arrowis, ye power of Britouns send be Marius, leiffing Romanis, to ye 70  
armye of Scottis and Pichtis *departit*. This abassit mekill ye corage of diuerß Romanis bot to sum vtheris it kindillit audacite and hardyment. Romanis fechting feirslic, be felloun slauchter supprisit the left wyng of inemyis, quhare wemen faucht myxt amang ye men. Galdus, persaving ye dangere, send in thare supple ane rowt zit vnfochtin, reddy at all aventuris to awate apoun sic caisß. Be yare new supple Scottis with felloun hardyment rebutit Romanis. Quhen wemen iugeit ye victorie toward yare folkis inclinitt, yai war mare cruell yan ony men, sparing na inemyis desiring mercy, or to be randerit. Ffinalie
- M.L.T. 159 Romanis fechting in the left wyng war ourethrawin, and had be oure folkis bene environit and cumpasit, gif at yare bak 80
- Fo. LXXIII. had nocht bene yare campe. Herefore in yis vnhappy batell sum Romanis attemptit to fle, sum stifly zit indurit ye fecht, and finalie oureset; the victorioß Scottis to ye camp chaissit ye flearis, and dang grete nowmer in ye fowsyis; attoure yare bodyis *with* grete force attempting to wyn ye Romane camp. Romanis defending yare campe and yare self *with* mekill hardyment, be incredibill laubouris stoppit inemyis fra ye entre, quhilk was strate and narrow. The batell finalie be falling of ye *nicht* was sunderit. In dirknes of ye samyn, Scottis be command of ye king, passing to ye nixt forest, brocht treis haistelie yarefra, and fillit ye fowseis. Vtheris preparit diuerß instrumentis to beit downe ye *trenschis* and dykis. Sum parte alsua anarmyt kepit ye wach, stopping 10  
Romanis to ische fra yare palzeons. In this sorte, Scottis *with* mervellus fervoure taryit ye spring of day. Quhen in ye dawing all thingis war reddy to assailze ye camp, out of ye samyn was cryit with ane heich voce to ye wach, Romanis desirit *commonyng with* Scottis and Pichtis for pece, and wold accept condicions yareof, at plesoure of ye kingis, praying humlie yare messengeris mycht salfie pass throw ye armye to ye kingis to schaw yare mynde. Sum parte persuadit ye kingis grant na assurance to ye Romane messengeris, nor be

na condiciouns bynd *with* yame frendschip nor amyte, bot to Fo. LXXIII.  
 20 ye extreme vse ye victorie ; sa mony as was fled to ye campe  
 suld be slane, yat be exempill hereof vthir naciouns mycht  
 know how odioß is baith to goddis and mortall men, yat ony  
 nacioun be na iniuris provokit suld molest nyctbouris, and  
 invaid yame wranguislie *with* weris. Vtheris exhortit be ye  
 contrare, the victorie discretelie suld be vsit ; mortale men  
 for ane prosper avantage suld *nocht* grow sa haltane, and in  
 speciall sic men as war subiect to ye instabil lawis of fortune,  
 quharethrow oftymes prosperite in aduersite, and be ye con-  
 trare, is turnit ; ffor peraventure yai folkis quham apoun  
 fortune lewch in ye begynnyng, suld before ye fyne of ye  
 mater incur calamyteis and grete displese : of ye instabil  
 goddes yis was ye law, and to yir mutabiliteis subiectit of  
 mortall men ar all regnis ; quharefore ye Romane messengeris M.L.T. 159b  
 war to be admittit, yare petitions to be herd and ye law *com-*  
 30 monlie be all nacioun obseruit suld *nocht* be violate, yat yai  
 suld *nocht* incur haterent of goddis, granting to yame sa  
 honorabill victorie and revengeare of iniuris done to messa-  
 geris gif apon yame war excedit. The kingis preferring yis  
 sentence as mare humane to ye tothir, granting congie to ye  
 heraldis, chargit abstene fra assaltis of ye camp vnto ye tyme  
 ye heraldis had vsit yare office and returnit, proponyng cruell  
 punycioun gif ony attemptit ye contrare. Heræftir fra ye  
 Romane camp come foure men honorabill to sicht, accowterit  
 in Romane abilzement plesing and preciouß, to *presens* of ye  
 confederate kingis sitting collaterale in ane sete, *with* yare  
 nobillis about yame plaissit. How sone yai come in *presens*  
 40 of ye kingis, lawlie yai inclinit to ground, bot *incontinent* at  
*command* of ye princis yai war rasit. Syne ane to quham  
 was gevin ye charge said, “ Maist victorioß princis, the Romane  
 armye and chiftanis, conquerouris of ye warld, desiring zoure  
 perdoun, humlie for grace besekis zow quham sa mony zeris  
 yai haue vnfreyndlie persewit. Amang all ye glore of zoure  
 vassalage na thing may conduce mare to zoure honoure, nor  
 mare wourthy to remembrance of posterite, yan yat before  
 zoure fete suld ly prostrate the ambassiatouris of Romanis,  
 to quham all kingis and naciouns for ye maist parte ar subiectit

FO. LXXIII. and contrinit to obey. We confesß 3e haue vincust, and in  
 3oure hand standis power baith of oure life and dede be the  
 iuste ire of inmortal goddis, quham we know now contrare  
 ws, wraith ffor ȳe weris aganis 3ow iniustlie movit. Vse ws 50  
 at 3oure plesoure, sen to 3oure glore it may conduce, beseking  
 onelie ȳat 3e refrene contrare ws 3oure ire, sen 3e haue vincust  
 ȳe dantaris of all ȳe warld. Or gif 3e think bettir ȳat ire haue  
 in 3ow dominacion, sla ws at 3our plesure. We can nocht of  
 resoun denye bot oure demeritis has deseruit ȳe samyn. It  
 sall conduce na litill to ȳe honoure of 3ow, extreme nacioun of  
 ȳe warld, quhen 3e vincuß be 3our vailþeandnes all vȳir pepill,  
 M.L.T. 160 and in honoure transcendis al vȳiris that ȳe ma potent pepill  
 be 3ow be vincust, be 3oure grace the ma nobillis suld fra  
 dede be preseruit. We haue feld ȳe force of 3oure armys and  
 ȳe ire of goddis. We humlie beseik ȳat we may now persauē  
 3oure clemence. And sen we confesß ws vincust and randerit  
 we ar reddy to resaue with gude hert sic condiciouns of pece  
 as 3e pleiß." Quhen thir wourdis war sade with lamentacioun 60  
 and teris, ȳai fell prostrate before the kingis fete, praying  
 with sare siching ȳai wald haue miseracioun of ȳame, sua  
 vincust and oursett. Memorative how ȳe goddis had apoun  
 thame revengit ȳare iniuris and wrangosß weris, Galdus king,  
 be avise of athir nacioun, ansuerit : Pichtis and Scottis, extreme  
 pepil of Albioun fra first beilding of ȳare realme3, war content  
 of rowme3 grantit to ȳame be benignite of goddis, and desirit  
 nane vthir ; and without ȳai war provokit be iniuris, faucht  
 neuer contrare vthir naciouns : Romanis be insaciabill avarice,  
 reiffaris of realme3, to ȳame war neuer knawin vnto ȳe tyme  
 ȳai movit were to Britouns : and ȳareeftir be space of j<sup>e</sup> and  
 nerrest fifty 3eris, be variabill fortune during in weris, eftir  
 subiectioun almaist of ȳe hail warld and maist parte of Albion,  
 to ȳe grete skaith of inhabitantis war cumin to ȳe extreme  
 parte of ȳe ile, quhare be ane pepill repute be ȳame inhumane, 70  
 vncourtesß, barbar and febill, quham sa oftymes ȳai con-  
 tempnit and vincust, war in ordorit batell ouresett, discumfist  
 and chaissit, afflictit be felloun myscheif and disparing ȳare  
 caiß, war finalie compellit fle to ȳare campe in extreme dangere,  
 and beseik ȳare fais for grace, geving ane memorabil exempill

of ye estate of wardlie affaris and variance of instable fortune FO. LXXIII.  
to ye posterite ; he was counsalit be diuerß grete men of his  
armye (and nocht contrare resoun), yat yis fortunate victorie  
suld be vsit to ye rigoure, as ye goddis be yare speciall favours  
had grantit, and yat Romanis vincust, suld be finalie dis-  
troyit ; ffor vthir wayis mycht nocht ye wrangis of sa potent  
inemyis be vindicate nor in tyme cuming be evadit ; nocht-  
withstanding, his consell thocht nocht best to vse yame sa  
80 inhumanelie contrare Romanis, thinking sufficient eneuch to M.L.T. 160b  
yare present glore, honoure and fame future, yat yai, the FO. LXXIII.  
oraturis of the lordis dantaris of ye warld, prostrate before  
thare fete, humlie beseking yame for mercie and grace, he  
was content be yare avise, be certane condiciouns to grant  
pece, quhilk Romanis sa oftymes had refusit to Scottis and  
Pichtis, how beit yai gretelie had desirit ye samyn : thir war  
ye condiciouns : Romanis eftir yat day suld mak na rubery  
in ye boundis of Scottis nor Pichtis, and suld remove fra  
all castellis and strenthis occupyit be yare garnisoun, restore  
captivis, plegeis, fugitivis and vtheris gudis recentlie spulezete ;  
in tyme cuming yai suld nowdir apoun Scottis nor Pichtis  
move weris, bot with yame suld bynd ane perpetuall lyig,  
10 and be ye aith of fidelite obliß yame hereto. Thir condiciouns  
be ambassiatouris to Romanis reportit, gretelie to yame war  
plesand. Syne contracting pece be condiciouns foresaidis,  
and Romanis at plesoure of inemyis deliuering plegeis, yai war  
sufferit without iniuris depart with all yare gudis. Trebellius,  
latelie of his bandis lowsit, be lang iournayis convoyit the  
residewe of this armye to Marius in Kent. Quhen Agricola  
at command of ye emprioure deliuerit to his successoure the  
Romane armye, it contenit of legiouns and vthir supple to ye  
nowmer of lx<sup>m</sup>. Of all yis nowmer, eftir ye weris finissit nocht  
abone xx<sup>m</sup> fra Brigancia departit. The remanent in the  
vnchancie batellis precedent war slane. Incontinent Scottis  
20 and Pichtis resaut yare ald rowmes of Orduluce, Deer, Picht-  
land, Otoline, Vicomage, Brigance and Siluria, with castellis  
and strenthis be force of Romanis to yat tyme occupyit,  
garnisoun wilfully yarefra removing as in ye appoyntment  
was providit. Heræftir Galdus dissolving his armye, eftir

Fo. LXXIII. he had vesityt Brigancia and Siluria, and *with* strang munycion  
 stuffit *ye* samyn, he went to Epiac in Brigancia, *ye* prymacie  
 and cheif ciete of kingis, quhare certane dayis *with* nobillis  
 of his realme he passit his tyme, employing all his power *yat*  
 having weris stanchit, his liegis suld be institute in bettir  
 maneris. The weremen quhilk of wageis war dischargit (*yat*  
 M.L.T. 161 nane of *game* suld haue occasion to trubill *ye* cuntre), war  
 distribute in munyciouns and strenthis apoun *ye* bordouris of  
 Britan. Schortlie thareeftir, rewarding euey man eftir his 30  
 meritis and having all his affaris weill ordorit, removing armys  
 and werelie wedis, he vesityt all *ye* boundis of his kinrik. At  
 his cuming grete confluence of pepill to him convenit, *nocht*  
 onelie to se *pare* best belouit prince, bot als with all sortis  
 of honoure and observance to *serue* *pare* maist nobill chiftane  
 in were, schynyng in all vertewe, redemer of *ye* cuntre, restorare  
 of all liberte, quhilk fra *game* wranguislie was reft. In all  
 partis sonyt war trumpettis and schawmys, sangis and rymys  
 war rehersit, and song *with* merynes and glaid clamour of *ye*  
 pepill, menyng the lawde and glore of *pare* victorioss prince.  
 Quhil to sic iurnais *ye* king vesityng his kinrik was intent, be  
 counsell of cryminall persouns quhilkis, knowing weris war  
 endit, ferit *ye* rigoure of iustice, contencioun was movit on 40  
*ye* marchis betuix Scottis and Pichtis. To compone *pis* debate,  
 Galdus *with* ane garde of nobill men mett Garnard, king of  
 Pichtis, at *ye* Wod of Calidone, and knowing *ye* divisioun be  
 licht caussis was movit, throw debate of lymmaris of na  
 reputacioun, *with* cruell tormentis slaying *ye* trubillaris of  
 pece quhilk *yai* conquest *with* sa mekill lauboure, *yai* re-  
 pressit all debatis. The kingis syne at vtheris tuke *pare*  
 leiff and departit. Heræeftir King Galdus in grete felicite,  
 eftir *ye* fellony of fortune was ouresett, regnit mony *zeris*.  
 Ffinalie eftir weris to haue his kinrik mare honorabill and *ye* 50  
 pepill in bettir maneris institute, quhen he had lauborit mekill,  
 molestit be lang continewit maladie, and to nobillis and com-  
 mouns mare tendir *yan* *pare* corporall life, excelling all ante-  
 cessouris in glore and vassalage, at Epiac he left *pis* mortall  
 life in *ye* xxxv *zere* of his regnne, quhilk was of Adriane  
 emprioure towart *ye* thrid *zere*, ffra begynnyng of *ye* warld

v<sup>m</sup> iij<sup>c</sup> and twa, and of oure Redempcioun j<sup>c</sup> iij ʒeris. His corps FO. LXXIII.  
*with* funerall pompe, and lamentacioun of all his liegis, was  
 coverit *with* erde in ane fare valey nixt adiacent, as liffand he  
 gaif in charge, and abone it conforme to ʒe rite of forefaderis M.L.T. 161b  
 60 erectit was ane honorable tovm̄b of square stanys, and apoun  
 ʒe samyn beside his ymage gravin how fra ʒe Romane armye  
 he deliuerit his cuntre. Beside ʒe towmb war siclike erectit  
 heich stanys invirone, braid at ʒe law partis, rising narow and  
 scharpe at poynt, testifying to ʒe posteriorite of his vassalage  
 in armeʒ as ʒe custume was for ʒe tyme, and ʒat remembrance  
 of ʒis marciall prince suld neuer fra mynde of men be deletit.  
 And ʒat ʒe posterite suld of his douchty dedis haue recent  
 memorie, be ʒe counsell was decretit ʒat ʒe region of Brigancia,  
 changeing ʒe name, suld fra Galdus be callit Galdia in tyme  
 cuming, becaus in ʒe samyn he put end to ʒe Romane weris sa  
 lang afore continewit. In thir dayis ʒat regioun is callit  
 Galloway, ʒe terme sum parte alterit as in antiquiteis oftymes  
 may be sene. Of ʒir p̄remisʒ of Caratake, Corbrede and Galdus,  
 70 Scottis princis, sum parte fra oure cronikillis, bot mekill mare  
 fra Cornelius Tacitus, ar collectit, quhais sentence nocht  
 alanerlie, bot als his verray wourdis, we haue in diuerʒ placis  
 vsurpit, that ʒe redaris baith of oure historijs, and ʒe Romane  
 cronikillis, may knawe how weill ʒe tane quaderis and con-  
 venis *with* ʒe tothir ; and how cruell and lang weris, be testify-  
 ing of Tacitus (quhilk was ane Romane and to ws inemye),  
 oure forebearis had contrare Romanis. And als we thocht  
 expedient ʒat in this oure werk suld be insert the haill pro-  
 posicions made be Galdus king and Iulius Agricola to ʒare  
 armyis before ʒe batell strikkin at ʒe fute of ʒe mont of  
 Granʒebene, as writis Tacitus, becaus nane may be mare  
 elegant nor mare sententios, and few in oure dayis has ingine  
 or eloquence to excogitate or convoy sic wourdis. Fferder,  
 na man suld amervell how beit Tacitus name ws *commonlie*  
 80 Britonis, becaus to ʒat tyme we war nocht euer accustomyt  
 to be callit Scottis, and ʒe ancient Romanis vsit to name sua FO. LXXV.  
 all inhabitantis Albiane. And in *speciall* quhen ʒai first brocht M.L.T. 162  
 ʒare armye in Britan, and to ʒe parte of ʒe ile quhilk lay  
 nerrest to Gallia and was first subiectit, ʒai dedenʒeit nocht

Fo.LXXV. to gif ane new name and call it ane ile, bot namyt yat parte and ye hale ile ye province of Britane, and euer led in tryumphe ony regiouns as yai war be yame vincust. Sua quhen Romanis diuerß tymes subiectit sindri partis of ye ile, the empriouris apoun yai regiouns tryumphit, thinking honorable enewch, sen yai mycht nocht subdewe ye hail ile, to tryumphe apoun ony parte yareof, avating as yai had conquest ane grete province, ascriving to yame ye subiectioun of all Britane, how beit yai subdewit bot ane parte. Quharefore Stravo, 10 Plinius, Mela and eftir yame Ptolome of Alexandria, without ony difference writis yat Albioun, Ireland and all v<sup>ir</sup> ilis adiacent ar namyt ye Ilis of Britan, calling ye inhabitantis Britouns, and nane vthir terme.

Followis the fyfte buke of ye Scottis historyis.



## [Liber Quintus.]

Off the coronacioun of Lugthake; of his vicis and Fo.LXXV.  
 cruell slauchter; how eftir him succedit Mogall:  
 of his vertewis; how he was prouokit be Romanys  
 to weris, and how he honorit the figure of King  
 Galde. Cap° j°

**T**he memorabill senezeorie of King Gald was endit in M.L.T. 162b  
 sorte foresaid, and how mekill his gouernance was  
 apprisit, ye mysgiding of Lugthak his son eftir  
 him regnyng was als fer detestabill and odioß, ffor he  
 20 was degenerit baith in witt and maneris fra his fader,  
 corruptit be idilnes and sensuall lustis; without discrecioun  
 he spulezit diuerß grete men, be fenezeit crymes, of yare  
 gudis. He committit the cure of iustice to mysgidit men  
 quham he knew cruell and covatus, and of ye lukir and  
 importance wald gif him compt. Ffollowit throw all ye  
 realme reiff and wrang without correctioun, the kingis  
 autorite yareto resisting; quhilk was in cauß yat viciouß  
 men and of evil condiciouns war authorist and vtheris,  
 quhilk for yare dignite aucht be cherist, planelie war opprest  
 at plesour of sic vile persouns. Nobill men yat be fenezete  
 and socht occasiouns war convictit of sobir crymes, war put  
 30 to violent dede, or be vyir servile panis cruelly afflictit, to ye  
 effect he mycht haue yare gudis to his vse applyit. In con-  
 uenciouns or writingis he vsit stile sic skaffaris and rubbaris  
 his tendir freyndis and bredir, thinking him never sa weill  
 applesit as quhen he fand ony new devise of extorcioun. The  
 remanent of his wikkit dedis ar sa abhominabill to mennys  
 eris yai suld be concelit and nocht schawin, how he defoulit  
 his antis, moder sisteris, his sisteris germane, necis, and at  
 ye last his awne dochteris, repenting na thing samekill as yat

Fo.LXXV. he mycht nocht defoule all his cousyness in ye sammyn sorte. The nobillis sufferit sic horribill vicis of yare mysgidit prince towart ye space of twa ȝeris. Bot na thing commouit yame sa mekill as to se him abuse his maieste in scornynng his barons ; ffor he wald reddily myssay his agit lordis of gude mynde to ye commoun weill and administracion of ye realme, in lichtlynes reproching to yame yare age, calland yame chowpand auld fulis and vtheris sic wordis of contempcioun, syne made rutouris, 40 piparis, menstralis, ruffeanis and vȝir sic harlotis of obscure origin and evill condicions (quham he held in daynte and extemit mekill) officiaris and reularis, beleving yat be sic kynde of gouerment all suld be done to his plesure. Bot yis myschevus folie mycht nocht be lang vnpunyst, ffor at ane convencioun at Evon (now Downstaphage) ye king commandit yat diuerß grete men as movaris of rebellion suld be arrestit, becaus with mony persuasiouns yai detestit ye wikkit mysgidit of ye kinrik. Incontinent, as ye nobillis had devisit, ye king be men of armes was handillit, and regnand in ye thrid ȝere was cruelly slane with grete parte of his mynȝeouns to quham he gaif credit of his life and kinrik. Nochtwithstanding, ye nobillis, memorative of ye recent meritis of his fader, causit bery his corps with princelie pompe and honoure and ye remanent be cassin on ye feildis to be with beistis revyn. Eftir Lugthak was distroyit, Mogall (nevo to ye nobill king 50 Gald of his dochter) be consent of ye estatis tuke ye crowne. Mogall in begynnyng of his regne, memorative of the glorioß actis of his gudeschir, studyit to ensew his maneris and sorte of gyding, with diligent cure obseruyng fidelite to Romanys and Britouns as was appoyntit, to contene his liegis in pece with plesand rest and to remove all sedicion and debatís within his realme ; and quhare ony thing was neglectit during ye regne of his eme Lugthak he reformyt with besy cure ; and, comprehending his remanent mynȝons quhilk at ye last convencioun evadit, causit iustifye yame to dede, becauß yai corruptit him with sinister counsell contrare ye commoun weil. Quhare he fand ceremonis and sacrifice concernyng goddis neglectit or nocht reuerendlie tretit in tyme of Lugthak be perversit counsalouris, with devote labouris he restorit

60 yame to ye first state, as be antecessouris and haly bischoppis FO. LXXV.  
 in tyme bipast was obseruit, beleving he *providit* sufficientlie  
 ye prosperite of him self and kinrik gif he stude in benevolence  
 of his goddis, quham Lugthak be his wikkit dedis hielie had  
 provokit contrare his realme and subiectis. Scottis herethrow  
 take curage *with* esperance of bettir fortune, seand yare prince  
 addressit his life to follow ye vertuouß gyding of his gudeschir  
 and to vesy his realme, tending reforme ye *sammyn* with  
 polycye and bettir maneris. His liegis resaut him *with* als M.L.T. 1635  
 hertlie kyndenes as yai welcummyt nobill Gald quhen he had  
 expellit Romanis be lauborioß batell and weris. In ye meyne  
 tyme ambassiatouris of Pichtis come to ye king, humlie  
 70 requiring him with supple contrare Romanis and Britouns  
 quhilkis *with* power conionit had haistelie invadit Pichtland,  
 distroyand all be fyre and swerde, to ye hevvy skaith of inhabi-  
 tantis to yare force resisting. The samyn tyme ye Galloways,  
 callit Brigantis before, hevlie plenezeit ye iniuris of Romanis  
 yat eftir Anandale ourethrawin, yai oppressit Galloway  
 siclike, and fra ye samyn of men and bestiall draif ane huge  
 pray. The king having his ingine gevin nocht onelie to domestic  
 and religious actis, bot alswele to fatis of were, inflammyt be  
 glore of his gudeschir, reiosing mekill yat ye mocioun of were  
 was provokit be inemyis and yat he suld nocht begyn  
 sic wrangwis weris, he directit first ambassiatouris to Romanis,  
 80 desiring redrefß of iniuris according to ye lyig. Quhen to ye FO. LXXVI.  
 Romane legate ambassiatouris had schewin yare charge, thay  
 war ansuerit *with* grete pride and derisioun yat Scottis and  
 Pichtis, maist abiect of vthir barbare naciouns, war skant sa  
 mekle be Romanis extemyt, as sufferit mak *seruice* like vile  
 sklavis : howbeit yai wald be wilfully randerit, and gif Romanis  
 wald suffir yame liff, yai war sparit onelie to kepe yare bestiall  
 and driffe ye samyn to yare campe for yare wynter provisioun,  
 togiddir *with* yare dochteris and wyiffis to be abusit at plesour  
 of ye weremen : and gif it war anys menynt yai wald refuse  
 sic *seruice*, heviare chargis suld be to yame laid, to causß yame  
 vnderstand quhat inconvenientis mycht follow *contrare* lordis  
 of all ye warld to contend. At yis ansuere King Mogall *com-*  
*movit*, testifying goddis Romanis had violate ye pece and con-

**Fo. LXXVI.** tempnit his message, besocht yai suld apoun yat nacoun bring 10  
 ye haill myschefe of ye were, yat first yareof maid provocacioun.  
 Nocht lang eftir, preparing all necessaris for hoisting, he departit  
 fra Siluria quhare ye power of Scotland convenit, and convoyit  
**M.L.T. 164** his armye to Galloway, quhare *with* the maist nobill of his  
 folkis he vesityt the tovmb of illustre Gald, his gudeschir,  
*with* sacrifice accustomyt and vthir ceremonis. Quhen *with*  
 solempnit pompe he had completit ye funerall *seruice*, in *presens*  
 of ye kirkmen (callit Drwidis for ye tyme) *with* devote suppli-  
 cacioun and prayere conforme to ye rite of Gentilis, prostrate  
 to ground he said: "Nobill Gald, maist victorioss prince, quhilk  
 vnuquhile eftir sa mony aduersiteis of fortune be thy importune  
 laubouris restorit ye realme of Scottis and Pichtis, almaist  
 distroyit be ye Romane armye, and abiecting ye zoik of *ser-* 20  
*uitute* expellit fra ye realme potent inemyis, lordis and con-  
 querouris of ye warld, and be favoure of goddis, vincust yame  
 in bataill, now we, quhilk baith in pece and were war reddy  
 to lufe and *serue* the *with* mare ardent cherite yan may be  
 expremyt, prostrate, in presence of yi honorable towmb, per-  
 petuall refuge to all Scottis in aduersite, constitute now in  
 grete danger, *with* lamentable voce we incall yi beryit corps  
 (bot erare yi quyk and lifland spirit) to be propiciant to ws,  
 persewit be ye samyn inemyis quham yow vincust in yis  
 place; humelie beseking, gif yow has owdir divine vertewe or  
 power, yat quhen we yi posterite, molestit *with* iniust weris,  
 sall strike ye bargane, thow suffir nowder oure inemyis, brekaris 30  
 of yare faith, haue victorie, nor yi honour be fulezeit be yare  
 outrage, quhom thow before ourethrewe and of benevolence  
 sufferit depart saufflie with life and gudis, quharefore yi name  
 mon on force be to all Romanis terribill." Quhen Mogall  
 had said yir wourdis, the multitude present, *with* clamour  
 and confusit sound beseking ye goddis to ye sammyn effect,  
 enbrasit ye ymage of Gald flourit and ourefrett *with* garlandis,  
 as was yan ye custume at funerall likis, and *with* devote  
 wourdis of haly ceremonis conforme to ye maner of Gentile  
 ritis sacrificyt to haue fortune ewrofs baith in yare passage  
 and returne. Siclike ye religioss wemen present *with* ye  
 preistis at ye sacrifice, dingand yare flesch *with* skurgis to

appere mare devote, *with* bittir maledictiouns heiffing yare FO. LXXVI.  
 40 handis towart ye hevin, cruelly waryit and cursit ye empriour  
 and al ye Romane senezeory.

How King Mogall *with* ye king of Pichtis straik ane M.L.T. 1645  
 feild contrare Romanis and war victouris.

Cap° ij°

Herefter King Mogall tranoyntit to Anandale, quhare he  
 fand Vnipane, king of Pichtis, redly *with* his armye as was  
 devisit. Sua *with* power conionit yai invadit Westmarelund  
 and Cumbirland for ye tyme obeysant to ye senezeory of  
 Romanis. Herying yai boundis be fire and swerde, yai dis-  
 troyit all yat mycht nocht be eselie caryit nor removit. The  
 inhabitantis herethrow affrayit, fled to strenthis quhare yai  
 mycht haue refuge. Romanis quhilk kepit castellis and forta-  
 liscis fled to Lucius Anthenous, legate, at zork for the tyme,  
 50 to pleneze ye iniuris of Scottis and Pichtis. Lucius, contracting  
 ane armye throw all Britan, haistelie *with* strang power  
 occurrit to inemyis. King Mogall, knowing ye cuming of  
 Romanis, and fering yai suld haistelie invaid his folkis skalit  
 on ye feildis, convenyng yame be sound of trumpett, to yame  
 said as followis: "To convoy oure affaris *with* honoure  
 (maist vailzeand campiouns) with all exhortaciouns, I fynd first  
 suld be schewin to oure armye. Na thing may sa mekill avance  
 stalwart men to conquest lawde and glore as stoutlie to repell  
 ye iniuris of inemyis quhen yai persewe, and erare or yai be  
 subiect to ye zoke of vile *seruitute* and lif in thirllage, to fecht  
 in defence of liberte and native cuntre, quhill yare life may  
 lest. Hereof we haue suthfast exemplis *nocht* onelie of oure  
 forebearis bot of vthir naciouns. Be how grete force and  
 60 wisdome, traist ye, King Eder, fortifying Cassibilane, king of  
 Britan, lauborit to expell Iulius Cesare, first chiftane of Romanis,  
 invading Albion, quhen he tendit fra Britouns reif yare liberte;  
 how beit frustrate of his purpois, he departit like ane fleare.  
 Herethrow Eder to him and his posterite conquest perpetuale  
 lawde and honoure. Werelie vassalage and fortitude *with* na  
 less lawde and glore has decorit illustre King Caratake, quhilk

- Fo. LXXVI. in mony iournayis be variabill fortoun contending for his  
 M.L.T. 165 liberte, quhen be inemyis he mycht *nocht* be vincust, he was  
 desaut be fraude of his wikkit cousines, Cartwmandua, deli-  
 uerit to inemyis and led captive to Claudius, Romane emprioure, 70  
 becaus in sic aduersiteis his mynde was euer invincibill,  
 debating his kinrik to the extreme. How beit he was vincust,  
 he was *mare* extemyt yan inemyis victouris, and be benevolence  
 of Cesare deliuerit to liberte, was restorit to his realme, exem-  
 pill doutles of excellent fortitude to ye posterite. Siclike we  
 remember his broder germane, King Corbreid, of als gude  
 mynde in defending his liberte and lauboring quhil he was  
 nere consumyt be weris, to drive fra Albioun ye pridefull  
 domynion of Romanis, quhilk sa mony 3eris be cruell weris  
 molestit oure cuntre. Finalie inemyis to sic miserie war  
 brocht yat howbeit ye maist parte of his nobillis war in batell  
 slane, 3it be him ye Romane pussance was sa extenuate and  
 feblit yat, during his life, yai mycht na way surprise ye boundis  
 of Scottis and Pichtis. It sall *nocht* bene vnpleasing to remember 80
- Fo. LXXVII. in yis place the illustre prince King Gald, my gudeschir, maist  
 nobill and vail3eand of all vtheris in his days, twichit *with*  
 sa mony infortunate cais3s, in sa mony dangeris contending  
 contrare Romanis bot erare fortune, and sa oftymes be aduer-  
 site yareof vincust, sa oftymes chaissit, tynyng of hor3smen  
 and futemen, ye maist parte cummerit *with* infinite calamyteis  
 mony 3eris, be discumfiture of diuers3 armyis ilk ane eftir  
 vthir, he persewit, euer constant in his opinioun, *nocht* brokin  
 be mysfortune, sustenand stoutlie all aduersite, quhill fortune,  
 wery throw lang debate contrare vertew (gif sua be lefull to  
 speik), to yat vail3eand prince gaif place, and finalie almaist  
 was constrenit behald him with ane *mare* freyndlie e. Sua 10  
 quhen finalie he had dung Romanis with vntelland mys-  
 cheif bakwart to yare campe eftir yai war thryis3 vincust in  
 batell, and thirllit to sic subiection yat howbeit latelie nowthir  
 ye haill world nor ye out ilis to yame war sufficient, naroly  
*within* yare strenth yai mycht defend yare livis. This king  
 saw ye sicht quhilk neuer before happynnyt to mortall man  
 M.L.T. 165b (how beit in opulence and vail3eandnes excelleng) yat humelie  
 asking grace, at his fete lay ambassiatouris of yat pepill to

quham sa mony kingis, vailzeand chiftanis and governouris  
 of diuers nacions war subiectit and glaid to haue grant of  
 mercye, resaut baith lawis and condiciouns of pece at his  
 plesere; nochtwithstanding to yame all nacions for ye maist  
 parte obtemperis and obeyis. Attoure ye place quhare con-  
 20 quest was yis memorabil victorie, is callit fra him Galdia, in  
 remembrance to ye posterite of yat glorioß act quhil ye  
 realme of Scottis sall lest. Thir premisß conducis mare to  
 ye glorie of ye illustre prince Gald and to all Scottis nacion  
 that with sic force he debatit sa extremelie and sa lang con-  
 trare Romanis sa opulent and expert in weris. Now, freyndis  
 and cumpanzeons, quhilkis owdir war present or ar descendit  
 of vailzeand forebearis at weris with yis nobill prince, consider,  
 I beseik, quhat partie ze haue in yis iourneye. Trewlie ze  
 haue ado bot with sic pepill as ze vincust, chasit and discumfist  
 afore, and sufferit bot at zoure pleßour to liff. Siclike I wald  
 ze considerit quhat ze ar treulie. ze ar victouris vnfulzeit  
 30 in curage, protectouris of zour cuntre, liberte, wyiffis, childer,  
 lawis and native goddis, nocht kindillit be ambicioun of  
 senezeory to fecht, nor be covatice to reif rowmys fra vtheris,  
 bot be constant manhede to strike the bargane. Attoure  
 remembir quhat dishonoure is to think yat Romanis sa oftymes  
 vincust, may nocht now be ourethrawin. Beleif weil ze haue  
 now ye samyn vertewe and strenth, with als gude fortune as  
 in tyme precedent. Quharefore, maist valezeand campiouns  
 (to quham ye victorie is reddy at hand), pas fordwart and  
 strike doun zoure inemyis, afore be zow fulezete, and dryfe  
 yame to flicht, sen in nocht ellis yai haue esperance. Stout  
 curage onelie is requirit, and doutles be zoure manhede ze sall  
 haue zour intent." Be thir wourdis or siclike the king kindillit  
 ye curage of his folkis with grete fervoure to strike ye bargane.  
 Nor Lucius Anthenous, Romane legate, was na leß diligent  
 40 with ane vehement vrasoun to exhort his armye desirus of  
 batell, persuading yat, be exempill of forebearis, yai suld with  
 manlie curage do yare devoure, memorative be quhat laubouris  
 yai war hantit in weris to oureset, discumfiss and ourethraw  
 the strang ordinance of inemyis; als yai suld remember yai  
 had now ado bot with barbare and vndantit pepill without

Fo. LXXVII. resoun, sterit only be furie and rage; off quhilk rage the effect is to distroye the poweris baith of body and mynde, to kyndill men abone mesure, to attempt interprisis of folie, and quhen maist stranglie is to be foctin, yare curage failzeis and in ane schort moment brokin. Fferder, he exhortit yai suld haue confidence in ye innative vassalage of Romanis, and *nocht* exteme inemyis, cruell, inhumane and vnmercifull, quhare yai *mycht* be maisteris amang yame self, lauboring in *contynuall* discorde without exterioure provocation, assem- 50  
 bling now for na lufe yai haue to vtheris, bot for haterent of inemyis: howbeit amang yame self was auld fede, lurkir *with* mekill vthir rankoure and fede: quharefore be grete confidence yai suld mak for batell, fermlic beleiffing to ourethraw yare fais; for without disceptacioun yai suld wyn excellent glore becaus ye rowmys, be sleuth of Trebellius in Albiane loist, be yare manhede to ye Romane Impire suld be restorit. In yis sorte endit Lucius his exhortacioun. Syne on *ayir* partie incalling yare goddis, *with* greter hete yan may be extemyt yai ionit ye batell. Apoun oure folkis Romanis schot grete nowmer of arrowis and kest dartis, quharethrow mony war woundit. Oure archearis agane schott arrowis and *with* slungis and stanis did grete mischeif. Wemen in copiofs 60  
 nowmer faucht myxt amang oure armye, and eftir incredibill multitude of stanis warpit apoun Romanis, vsit weill yare wapynnys, turnyng yare womanlie and dolf curage in ire,  
 M.L.T. 166b fering na wapin, armoure nor perrell, and ye sarare yai war woundit, war mare egir in cruelte, excelling ye men of were. The place quhare ye feild was gevyn was avantage to oure folkis and na litill skaith to Romanis, ffor ye cuntre was to yame vnkend, quharethrow yai happynnyt, amang haggis, sewchis and vthir sic brokin gatis, yat on force yai war sinderit, contrinit almaist in rowtis and cumpanyis to fecht. The bargane on athir partie was cruell, bot maist dangerous in ye myddill warde quhare ye chiftanis faucht, ffor be grete manhede athir partie in curage was kindillit. Romanis thocht yai suld *nocht* be vincust be sic barbare pepill, maist abiect 70  
 of all ye warld, quham sa oftymes yai had contempnit: Scottis and Pichtis be ye contrare, thinkand quhill yare life *mycht*



indure yai suld *nocht* leifß ye name of victorie with sa grete Fo. LXXVII.  
 labouris conquest. Athir army kepit ye feild quhare ye  
 batell began, irkit and wery, inflicting grevous woundis,  
 saciate ilkane be slauchter of vtheris. Ffinalie eftir lang  
 fechting yai devodit swerdis and tuke knyffis. Quhen innow-  
 merabill war slane, nowthir partie apperit leif ye feild. Chif-  
 tanis, behalding sa horribill slauchter, repentit in ane parte  
 ye bargane, seand ye fall of sa mony wicht men on athir side.  
 At last Scottis and Pichtis be innative ferocite contrinit  
 Romanis remove, *nocht* as flearis bot withdrawe yame softlie  
 fra ye feild, sustenit na langare ye multitude and force of  
 80 inemyis. This aduerting Lucius, and *with* grete schowtis  
 exhorting his folkis to returne, praying yai suld *nocht* gif bak to Fo. LXXVIII.  
 yare barbaris, nor yat day defile ye glore of ye Romane maieste,  
 he was woundit with ane arrow be schot of ane fute man  
 and departit of ye feild. Apoun him followit grete multitude  
 of yame in speci<sup>a</sup>ll quhilk desirit erare behald ye bargane, yan  
 fecht. Ye remanent, persaving yare feris fle, gaif haistelie ye  
 bak and to salf yare livis to ye nixt woddis spedelie ran. Sum  
 Romanis quhilk without dangere of yare life for inemyis  
 mycht *nocht* wyn ye forest returnit, vthir wayis throw igno-  
 rance of ye ground, incertane quhare yai mycht be salf. Now  
 10 was ye son declynyng and ye victoriosß army of Pichtis and M.L.T. 167  
 Scottis at blast of trumpet left ye chaisß, returnyng to ye feild,  
 quhare *with* plesand singing, incredibill blythnes and clamour  
 yai draif the nycht to end. On ye morne collecting ye spuleze  
 and ye kingis *with* nobillis of athir nacioun consulting, yai  
 war aduertist be exploratouris, how Romanis fleing afore in  
 ane rout war assemblit within twa mylis, impeschit be igno-  
 rance of watteris, bankis, sewchis and brayis, *nocht* knawing  
 quhare to paß. To persewe yame ane cumpanye of gudelie  
 men was chosin, and quhen yai come in sicht, Romanis vn-  
 20 abasitlie drewe to ane know reddy to fecht and erare be slane  
 than be randerit. Quhen Scottis and Pichtis considerit  
 Romanis sobir in nowmer and pussance addressing for batell,  
 thay had miseracioun, perswading yame to devode wapynnys  
 and wilfully be randerit, allegeand yare chiftane was *present*,  
 reddy to gif yame grace yat yai mycht sauffie to yare armye

Fo. LXXVIII. returne. Romanis refuset, thinkand grete dishonour eftir sa  
 terribill myscheif in subiectioun to lif vnder the barbaris.  
 Sua quhen yai wald nowthir be randerit nor desire grace at  
 ye kingis bot obstinatelie wald fecht, yai war ilkane slane be  
 Scottis and Pichtis in haterent and ire, hevylie contrare yame  
*commovit*. How beit mony abhorrit sa grete crudelite. On 30  
 ye morne, conforme to ye rite of Gentilis, quhen sacrifice eftir  
 ye victorie was maid, the kingis causit yare folkis convene of  
 newe, quhare yai *commendit* mekill yare curage, rewarding ye  
 maist valezeand and vtheris as yai had *deseruit* and borne  
 yame in batell; syne consultit lang how ye remanent weris  
 suld be reulit.

How the Emprioure Adriane come in Britane and  
 extendit ane dike betuix ye west and est seyis; of  
 ye tyrannye and vicis of King Mogall; of his slauchter  
 and vthir incidentis. Cap<sup>o</sup> 3<sup>o</sup>

M.L.T. 167b  
**L**ucius Anthenous, Romane legate, in ye mene tyme send  
 Lane messagere to Rome, aduertissing Adriane *empriour*  
 of ye batall aduersare in Britane: how Romanis planlie war  
 vincust be barbaris, maist cruell pepill of all *vyiris* fechtung 40  
 in batell all atanis without excepcioun, and mare kenelie  
 wemen yan men: he besocht him send supple in Britane to  
 defend ye province, *vyirwais* it was force owder obey ye  
 barbaris or be slane, or shamefully leif ye cuntre. Quhen  
 this in Rome was schawin, Adriane *emprioure* incontinent  
 made his expedioun towart Britan and *with* grete iournayis  
 come in Gallia, and fra thyne *with* difficill saling be Calice to  
 Albion. At his *cuming* he was certifyit be inhabitantis that  
 Scottis and Pichtis, proude abone mesure of ye recent victorie,  
*with* mare power yan afore had invadit the province of Romanis,  
 distroyit all be fire and swerde, nowthir sparing zong nor auld,  
 wemen nor men, drevin bestiall away, disturssit ye cuntre of  
 insight and victualis sa mekil as yai mycht cary, and brynt  
 the remanent cornis, townys and vthir thingis, and laid all  
 waist to ye ryver of Tyne. At thir thingis ye *empriour* com- 50

movit, desirus to revenge sic iniuris to ye Romane armye, Fo. LXXVIII.  
 adionit ye power contractit of Gallis and Britan, and with  
 all his ordinance movit towart zork, quhare mare commodioslie  
 to haue his intent he restit ane litill, quhil euery man had pro-  
 vidit victualis for twa monethis. Syne tranoynting towart  
 inemyis, and *with* difficulte passing the flude of Tyne, the feird  
 day he come to feildis denwde and bare of all thingis necessare  
 to ye vse of man. Quhen he had travellit ane day and ane  
 vthir, seand nowthir bestiall, corne nor nane liffand thing,  
 60 knawand how ye inhabitantis war fled to strenthis, and  
 certijft be exploratouris and vtheris spulezete of yare gudis,  
 of ye condicions of Scottis, how yai war mare lesty and durabill  
 in weris yan ony vthiris to ly in wynter on ye plane without  
 palliouns or covertouris, remanyng in boggis and merresß as  
 in strenthis, amang frost, snaw and haill, and quhen vthir  
 pepill in wynter maid yame for rest, yai wald *nocht* skaill  
 yare armye bot fle, gif inemyis persewit, to ye montanis  
 intractibil and horribill be intemperance of weddir, and to  
 follow yame in sic strate erdis war *cummyr* abone mesure  
 without experience of ye ground, and nowthir in schort tyme  
 70 nor without grete hurte of ye Romane armye yai mycht be  
 vincust. And als he tendit vesy all ye Romane provincis,  
 maturely discussing he mycht *nocht* lang tary in Britan, he  
 left ye persute of Scottis, thinking he had done eneuch for  
 weil of ye empire and his honoure gif in his expedioun he  
 had dantit sum parte the rebelloun of Britouns and relevit M.L.T. 168  
 ye Romane provincis fra molestacioun of barbaris in tyme  
*cuming*. Quharefore yat ye invasiouns of Scottis and Pichtis  
 apoun Britan suld yareeftir be stoppit, in yat parte of Albioun  
 obeying Romanis, he was ye first yat gart big ane thik strang  
 wall of dovettis and fail, grete and heich as ony hill, with  
 ane depe and braid foussye before ye samyn ffra ye mouth  
 80 of ye river of Tyne extendit to the wattir of Esk and fra ye  
 est sey to ye west. Eleus Spartanus, famous writare of ye Fo. LXXIX.  
 Romane actis, haldis yat yis dyke had iiij<sup>xx</sup> mylis in lenth.  
 Oure croniklis schawis it was begunnyn be Adriane and eftir  
 certane zeris completit be ye Empriour Severe; quharefore I  
 beleif that ye *commoun* writaris of oure historyis has tane

**FO. LXXIX.** occasioun to call it the Wall of Severe. Bot following ye  
 opinioun of Romanis and Veremond, quhare we write of it  
 eftirwart we will call it ye Dike of Adriane, first begynnare of  
 ye sammyn. Quhen ye empriour had dressit all his affaris  
 in yai partis as ye tyme requirit he departit to Westmorland  
 and fra thyne to Walis, becaus he herd ye heris yareof had **10**  
 conspirit. Comprehending and punyssing yame with litill  
 lauboure, he repressit all sic mociouns. Ffra thyne he movit  
 toward Kentschire. Taryng at Londoun quhil ye barouns of  
 Britan conventit to ye Romane felicite to applawde, he resaut  
 yame plesandly, rewarding yame with riche giftis yat fra  
 thyne furth yai repentit *nocht* yare subiectioun to Romanis.  
 Ffra Londoun but tary he passit to Gallia (now Ffrance),  
 having with him Lucius Anthenous legate, sare *with* infirmite  
 vexit be intemperance of ye Britan are, and in his place con-  
 stitute Aulus Victorinus legate. Victorine, eftir ye emprioure  
 departit, incontinent disponit stark power in all castellis and  
 strenthis nixt ye dike, quhilk latelie is remembrit, to stop ye  
 violence of Scottis and Pichtis fra molestacioun of inhabi- **20**  
 tantis yai boundis. Quharethrow Britouns certane yeris liffit  
 at securite vnder ye Romane lawis. Scottis and Pichtis amang  
 yame dividit ye Britan landis waistit afore and assignit ye  
 est parte to Pichtis, the north and west partis to ye Scottis ;  
 syne appoyntit of new, ald falezete castellis and strenthis yat  
 war nere ye dyke, stuffing yame with garnisoun and mwnicions  
**M.L.T. 168b** to stop ye iniuris of Romanis and Britouns fra ye new inhabi-  
 tantis. Ffra thyne ye regne of Mogall was releuit fra domestic  
 and exterior weris. Bot how beit he conquest glorioß victorie  
 apoun Romanis, lordis of all ye warld, he mycht *nocht* (bot  
 erare wald *nocht*) reule nor tempir him self, abone mesure vsing **30**  
 lustis and plesuris, yat he grew to foule vicis and age baith  
 attanis ; he gaif him self to lustis and avarice in his age, yat  
 he eschamyt nowdir of plane reif nor vthir inhoneste, abusand  
 elike ye wyiffis of nobillis and commouns. He wald planelie  
 reviß and defoul wemen at his plesour, abstenyng nowder  
 fra wedois nor virginis. Attoure he pervertit all iustice, suffer-  
 ing mysdoaris quhilkis had owthir few gudis or nane, mak  
 reif and rubery *without* correctioun ; and gif men of substance

in sobir crymez war deprehendit he causit yame be slane, and confiskit all yare gudis. Ffirst of all vthir princis he decretit y<sup>t</sup> quhen ane man be ye lawe was put to dede or to ye horne, 40 his gudis, without respect of wiffe, barnys or creditouris, suld be eschetit, quhen before y<sup>t</sup> tyme, gif ane man for ane crymy-nall actioun was condampnit to dede, his wyfe and childer mycht of law bruke his landis, biggingis, insicht, *with* all his vthir gudis. This law, representing ye insaciabill auarice of yis king, is *with* diligence obseruit in yis realme to ye rigoure quhil yis day. Bot sic abhominable vicis mycht nocht be lang vnpunyst (the goddis yareto aduersant), ffor nobillis and com-mouns, be yir grete iniuris inflambit, devisit distructioun of ye king, and to perfurnis yare intent, constitute certane men in armes and devisit tyme and place convenient. The king, knowing him culpabill, suspectit gretelie ye coniuracioun. 50 Incertane gif he knew it be warnyng of wichis, mekle extemyt in yai dayis, or be aduertising of freyndis y<sup>t</sup> knew ye mater, ffering his life he devisyt fle to ye Ilis. To awate oportunitie, in ye dirk nycht he fenezit seiknes and bownit him sonare to bed y<sup>an</sup> he accustummyt. Quhen all was at rest he tuke his halkrik, bow and scheif, and convoyit with twa *servandis* passit to ye forest beside, leiffand all ye remanent, in quham he confidit litill, as *commonlie* ane crymynale conscience in creature can haue grete confidence. On ye morne ye conspiratouris, knowing ye king fled, haistelie followit. And he, tending to declyne yare scharpe persute, be aventure happynyt amang inemyis apoun him awating, be quham he was slane 60 with mony grevouß woundis, ye xxxvj zere of his regnne, quhilk was of oure Redempcioun j<sup>c</sup> xlviij zeris; Anthonius Pius brouking ye Romane Impire and Phyat Alb regnand abone Pichtis. Quhare ye king was slane yai straik of his hede, quhilk apoun ane spere be ane rebald to ye nixt village was borne, *with* derisoun and skorne, quhare ane grete multitude was taryng ye fyne of ye mater. Sum devisit his carioun suld be cassyn to wylde beistis to be rent and revyn, for his demeritis requirit ye samyn. Bot ye nobillis, memorative of ye virtuouß actis of King Gald, defendit sic crudelite, and causit the hede 70 and corps be beryit with princelie pompe, nocht forzetting

Fo. LXXIX.

M.L.T. 169

- Fo. LXXXIX. yat preclare actis of nobill men suld be honorit. Mogall in  
 yis sorte tuke ane cruell and vnhappy end, obscuring, sa fer  
 as was in him, ye glorie of Gald his nobill gudeschir. Betuix  
 deceifs of Dardan king and yis tyme mony famous men war  
 liffand, in ye quhilk tyme succedit to ye crowne thre kingis  
 liniale of ye blude of Gald. Ffor to Gald succedit his son  
 Lugthak, and to Lugthak yis Mogall, dochteris son to Gald.  
 Thir famous cunning men war Quintiliane, oratoure and  
 rhetoure maist preclare; Serapio, philosophoure apprisit  
 abone all vtheris; Philo ye Iow, philosophoure and oratoure,  
 of quham falslie is vsurpit yat owthir Plato fenezis him  
 Philo, or ellis Philo schawis him Plato; Plinius ye secund,  
 quhilk wrate ye Naturale Historyis na les trewlie yan *cun-*  
*nynglie*, contenyng xxxvij volumys; Cornelius Tacitus, his- 80  
 toriographoure, quham in yis mater we haue oftymes *with*  
 diligence followit; Cecilius Plenius ye Secund, oratour; Sueton-  
 ius Tranquillus; Ptholome ye astrolog, famous in his tyme,  
 M.L.T. 1696 quhilk as sum apprisit authouris writis ordorit with new addi-  
 ciouns the *discripcioun* of ye erde, compilit be Ptolome callit  
 Phaladelph, king of Egipt; Lucius Apuleius, Affrican oratoure;  
 Aulus Gelius; Plutharcus Chironeus, philosophoure. Sum  
 writis Egisippus, historiographoure of ye actis of Cristianis  
 and Iowis, liffit yis tyme. By thir war mony famous poetis, as  
 Iuuenale, Sillius Italiane, Marciale, and diuers vtheris *cunning*  
 men, excelling in doctryne and vertewe. About yis tyme 10  
 Romane empriouris throw all ye warld persewit cruelly all  
 Cristianis and slewe Lyne, Clete, Clement, Anaclete, Auarist  
 and Alexander papis; siclike Domicilla, Euphrosina, Theodora,  
 virginis; Hermagora bischop, discipill of Sanct Mark ewan-  
 gelist; Nichomede preist; Ffortunate Archidene; marthiris  
 and vtheris without nowmer, confessing ye name of Criste,  
 nocht aduerting of quhat strenth and vertew was ye Catholic  
 faith quhilk, how mekill it was ourethrawn be crudelite of  
 tyrannys, samekle it inressit and be persecucioun was starker.  
 Now to oure mater lat ws returne.

How Conare was crownit ; of his mysgiding ; how he was private of his croun and incarcerate ; how Argade was made gouernoure ; how for his mysgiding he was accusit and yareeftir vertuouuslie gouernit ye kinrik. Fo. LXXX.  
Cap° iiij°

20 **K**ing Mogall, as said is, in begynnynge of his regne mycht of resoun be comptit amang vthir nobill princis, bot finalie he abusit sua his goverment yat he was vnwourthy to bruke owder life or crowne and made sic end as said is. Nor his son Conare eftir him gidit litill bettir, nor had na bettir fortune, for be tresoun in his faderis persoun (persuading secretelie his slauchter) he gat ye crowne and in begynnynge of his regne dissimilit his vicis to quhilkis he was halely gevin. M.L.T. 170

30 Quhen eftirwart he had ye realme stabill, in voluptuosite he consumyt all rentis and reuennouss annext to ye crowne, gevin large possessiouns and landis to viciouss persouns quhilkis be flatterie (as oftymes is sene) commendit his corruptit maneris and detestit vertew, gif he vsit ony. Be counsell of yir persouns

40 *without* avise of his wise barouns all was reulit, tending to induce new invencioune of bankettis and delicate chere *without* regarde to ye temperate diet of antecessouris. Quhen be mony infamous vicis he had consumyt all substance annext to ye crowne, at convencioune of ye nobillis, be ane lang and tediouss proposicioun he schewe mony thingis concernyng ye splendoure, honeste and multitude of ye kingis houshold of fryant chere and ordoure yareof, and of ye honeste of his tabill, like as grete vertew had bene in sic thingis, how beit doutles yai ar grete parte of *seruitute*, and becaus ye kingis propirte mycht *nocht* sustene ye samyn, he desirit ane taxacioun be maid yat euery man eftir his faculte suld assigne ane porcioun of his gudis to his expenss. It was ansuerit be

40 ye counsell yai couth *nocht* (nor zit efferit *nocht*) decerne haistelie in sa grete mater, strange and vnknawin to ye pepill afore ; it requirit grete *consultacioun* and avisement ; yai suld convene on ye morne in ye samyn place and gif ansuere. The nycht following yai concludit secretelie to apprehend ye

Fo. LXXX. king, and denude him of princelie estate, as his vicioſſ and  
 mysgidit lyfe requirit. To yis effect yai devisit men in armys.  
 On ye morne ane was chosin to ansuere in yis sorte: "The  
 barouns and heris of ye realme amervellis how ye king regnyng  
 in pece and rest can *nocht* be sustenit be his rentis, of quhil<sup>kis</sup> 50  
 mony princis preclare baith in pece and were (how beit yai  
 war molestit be inemyis) war content afore, without exactiouns  
 of yare liegis. Gald the king, redemer of his kinrik, to quhom  
 for contynuall weris grete expenſſ behuffit ythandlie be furnyst,  
 vsit na exactiouns in extreme necessite, knawing weil how  
 odiouſſ sic thingis wer to ye pepill. And his giding was nocht  
 elike to ye vsis of Conare oure prince, ffor yat *with* mare  
 M.L.T. 1706 vigilant cure Gald *mycht* vaik to govern his realme, he removit  
 fra him and his pepill all voluptuoſſ plesuris and with grete  
 laubouris gaif him to defend his kinrik and expell inemyis  
 yarefra, debarring fra his army tavernaris, cukis, wemen of 60  
 sporte, ruffianis and all vtheris, sic plesouris as *mycht* effemy-  
 nate or soft ye curage of his folkis. Be ye *contrare*, Conare  
 oure prince, drownit in lustis, vsis cumpany of harlottis and  
 vthir vicioſſ persouns to him plesing, hevy with ws to be  
 sufferit. Be yare counsell he dressis ye grave materis of ye  
 realme, effering bettir men of wisdome, and quhen yai haue  
 conquest riches and landis, yai desire invencious to disturſſ  
 baith nobillis and *commouns* of yare gudis, and eftir mony  
 hevy chargis, has fynalie excogitate ane taxt strange and  
 odioſſ to ye pepill of Scotland; and heræof maid ye king  
 begynnare, yat of all ye realme yai may bruke ye substance.  
 Bot yai salbe finalie of yare purpois dissaut, as yai haue  
 begilit mony vtheris lang tyme afore, and sall be brocht to 70  
 sic poynt yai sall myster exactiouns na mare, ffor yai salbe  
 condampnit to ye gallouſſ and yare gudis eschete for yare  
*crimes*. The king be decrete of ye nobillis salbe in sure keping.  
 The giding of ye realme salbe assignit to sic men as ye counsell  
 fyndis maist ganand, quhil yarefore be providit, gevin exempill  
 baith to sic vile persouns how grete folie is, to abuse ye kingis  
 autorite, and als to ye king how evill is to be mysgidit  
 baith in his awne persoun and liegis." Skantlie had he endit  
 his wourd<sup>is</sup> quhen ye king *with* ane hie voce cryit: "Mis-



cheant men, how dar 3e presume to myssay me *with sic* Fo. LXXX.  
 reproche? Gif 3e haue contrare me devisit tresoun, on 3oure  
 self it sall be sene and sall be haistelie revengeit with punycioun  
 80 for cryme of leifs maieste requirit." Thareto ansuerit 3e  
 barouns, he was *nocht* wourthy to bruke 3e sete of King Fferguis, Fo. LXXXI.  
 becaus servile and vnwourthy persouns at 3are plesour  
 oppressing 3e pepill, be his sleuth and voluptuosite, had sup-  
 prisit gude men langare 3an enewch. At 3ir wordis was  
 rasis ane cry be 3e parte of 3e barouns. Syne certane stal-  
 wart men laid handis on 3e king and led him fra 3e counsell M.L.T. 171  
 to ane chalmer. His myn3eons be quhais counsell he abusit  
 3e commoun weill war bundin, and eftir diuers panys, at  
 10 command of 3e barouns hangit. Eftir this 3ai create ane nobill  
 man, Argade, cheif of Argathele, gouernoure, to vse 3e kingis  
 autorite, quhil 33ir wayis war decernit how 3e king suld be  
 gidit. Argade, in 3e begynnyng takand grete laubouris *with*  
 wisdom, autorite and avise of 3e barouns, dantit reiff,  
 stouth, slauchter and vthir *crime3*, *with sic* discrecioun, 3at  
 be sleuth nor rigour na thing was done, displesing nane in his  
 defalt, exemplare to all vthir princis, war 3ai *neuer* sa ver-  
 tuouus. Bot eftir certane 3eris (as is 3e custume of mortail  
 men) prosperite abstractit his mynde fra iustice, quhen for-  
 3etting his vertuouus maneris and postponyng to consult in grave  
 20 materis *with 3e barouns*, he reulit all sic thingis be private  
 counsell, fostering sedicioun and discorde amang 3e clannys.  
 And 3at 3e noblis to him suld euer hafe recours, he maid  
 concorde betuix partys debatabill and discorde of newe as  
 he plesit. Be chousing and affinite he drewe to him 3e heris  
 of Pichtis and tuke in mariage ane nobill woman of Pichtis  
 blude, dochter to 3e prince of Otoline (now Fiffe), sua 3at his  
 pussance and 3aris concurring, he mycht liff in mare securite.  
 The nobillis hevily weyit the vicis and dissymulacioun of  
 Argade, and scharplie accusit him in counsell 3at, how beit  
 be 3are avise he was create gouernoure for his vertewe, and  
 3e king for his mysgidit vicis was private of 3e crowne, be  
 multiplicacioun of crymes he followit 3e liffing of 3e abiectit  
 30 king, he contractit mariage with ane aliene and myxt his  
 dochteris *with 3e blude* of Pichtis, nowthir be avise of 3e

Fo. LXXXI. nobillis, nor taryand decrete of prudent barouns, best myndit  
 to ye wele of ye realme ; bot be his private counsell, in hurte  
 of ye pepill, he ministerit all grave materis ; quharethrow  
 with grete dishonour tynand his gude name he had in 3e  
 first 3eris of his goverment, to ye pepill venerabill for pre-  
 emynent vertewis, his excellent ingyne, sum tyme gevin to  
 sic vertewis as efferit ane nobill prince, was now applyit to  
 thingis quharein was nowthir honeste nor gude maneris. ∞  
 M.L.T. 171b Argade, hering yis scharpe accusacioun eschamyt, nocht  
 contenyng fra weping, quhen be na way he couth purge his  
 caifß how beit he multiplyit wourdis, besocht yai suld remove 40  
 pane corispondent to his demeritis, leif yare ire, be to him  
 favorable, and nocht punyß him as he had deseruit ; ffor  
 peraventure be his gude bering he mycht eftirwart remove  
 the dishonoure incurrit be his mysgiding, and suld reddreß  
 all iniuris sufferit be nobillis or commouns throw his culpe  
 and sleuth. Syne prostrate to grond, he referrit his persoun  
 and substance to ye will of ye barouns, to be disponit yare-  
 apoun at yare plesere. The noblis be weping and gude  
 wourdis of ye governoure, movit of piete, consentit he suld  
 vse his office as afore and his consalouris suld be removit  
 and incarcerate. Thareeftir he did nowthir public nor private  
 act *without* avise of barouns. Abstenyng fra all domestic  
 counsell, he gaif him with diligence to minister equite and  
 iustice, and put ordoure to *schireffis*, capitanis and vthir 50  
 officiaris, decreting yai suld haue power to correct onelie small  
 cryme3, and remytt correctioun of grete *crime3* to ye iustice.  
 How beit, fra ye begynnyng of ye Romane weris to yis tyme  
 the kingis sufferit *schireffis* and *vtheris officiaris* punyß all  
*crimes* indifferentlie at yare plesere ; syne ceirssand thevis,  
 reiffaris and sornaris trubling ye cuntre (of yir in ye Ilis,  
 Argathele and cuntreis adiacent war grete nowmer) quhare  
 yai mycht be apprehendit war deliuerit to ye burreoure to be  
 slane. Alsua he statute yat all officiaris and reullaris of ye  
 cuntre suld abstene fra thingis provocative to drunkynnes,  
 sua yat ye reullaris of ye pepill suld nocht myster mare keping  
 yan *vtheris* : to brekaris yareof na les pane yan dede was 60  
 proponit. Tavernaris, *common* cukis, and *vtheris* sic kynde

of folkis, devisit mare to þe voluptuosite þan necessite, in-  
 flammyng men to delicatenes aganis the temperance of ante-  
 cessouris, war banyst, thare gudis confiskit and þare biggingis  
 distroyit. The governoure, be þir and sic vthir actis of polecy  
 honorabill, lauborit parte be autorite parte be favouris to  
 caufs þe pepill abstene fra iniuris of vþiris. Quharethrow  
 within schort tyme, evill avisit persouns become gude  
 men, and men weill gevin afore daly procedit to bettir.  
 Syne þe viij zere of his autorite Conare king, quhilk (as said  
 is) be decrete of þe nobillis was in keping throw lang incarce-  
 70 racioun, molestit with seiknes gaif þe gaist, the xiiij zere eftir  
 he had tane þe crowne of Scotland, quhilk regne fell in þe  
 tyme yat Anthonius Aurelius, philosophoure, broukit þe  
 Romane Impire; and þe history followand salbe of Ethod  
 quhilk eftir deceifß of Conare regnit.

Fo. LXXXI.

M.L.T. 172

How Ethod was crownit, and Argade made lieutenant  
 of Scotland; how he recounterit Romanis in batell,  
 and quhat advantage he had; how Victoryne the  
 Romane legate was dischargit, and to him succedit  
 Calphurnius; how he inuadit Scotland and reparit  
 þe grete dike; how eftir diuerß iuperteis, Calphurnus  
 departit to Rome; how Trebellius succedit legate,  
 and of his dissymulacioun.

Cap° v°

Ethod, sister son to King Mogall, of quham lately is made  
 Emencioun, be autorite and votis of þe noblis and pepill  
 and in speciall of Argade, be lyniall successioun resaut þe  
 crowne. Quhen he was declarit king, at parliament in estate  
 royall, thanking þe barouns of his creacioun, with lawde and  
 honoure apprising the government of Argade, rewarding him  
 with landis and riche possessiouns, made him grete lieutenant  
 of his realme, to vse autorite of iustice abone all vþiris vnder  
 his crowne. The convocacioun dissoluyng, þe king, vesiad  
 80 all partis of his realme as new princis war accustumyt, salit  
 to þe Ilis. At his cuming was schewin how þe cheif clannys  
 of Insulanis recentlie be discorde of certane lymmaris war  
 drawin to partyis and grete slauchter was made. Quharefore,

Fo. LXXXII.

M.L.T. 172b

Fo. LXXXII. be advise of the barouns, he send Argade to ceirß the movaris  
 yareof and bring yame to ye law, how beit yai wald resist. Argade in botis and galiouns, sonare yan ye transgressouris  
 mycht be aduertist, tuke ye ile quhare be exploratouris he  
 knewe yai remanit. Quhen sum parte be force war takin,  
 and vtheris wilfully randerit, all war led to ye king, and quha 10  
 be ye law war fund movaris of yis trubill war put to dede.  
 The remanent war punyst in yare gudis and landis at plesour  
 of ye king and counsell. In yis sorte yis sedicion was happelie  
 repressit. Eftir ye Insulanis war pecifyit the king returnit to  
 Albion, and passing his tyme at Innerlochte in Lochabir, he  
 was aduertist be Scottis and Pichtis, bordouris, how Romanis  
 had brokin down the new dyke beildit be ye Emprioure  
 Adriane and with stark power had invadit ye landis, and  
 driving the pray, happynnyt amang Scottis and Pichtis gaderit  
 to resist yare force. On athir partie cruelly was fochtin. 20  
 Romanis war victouris, bot nocht without grevous slauchter,  
 ffor ye maist parte of nobillis recontering inemyis war slane.  
 The king at brute of yis message send ane herald to Victorine,  
 Romane legate in Britan, to ask redrefß conforme to tenoure  
 of ye pece: gif he refusit, to denunce were 3e xv day yare-  
 eftir. It was ansuerit be ye Romane: How beit Scottis and  
 Pichtis euer amang yare self lauborit in discorde, at ye last  
 forray yai confiderit for evill of yare nychtbouris, and fra ye  
 Romane province draif ane pray and siclike Romanis fra  
 yare landis: the confederate naciouns, contempnyng ye pece,  
 first brak ye dyke and biggit ane strang bastilze of tre: and 30  
 about ye samyn of stanis and dovatis ane strang barmkin,  
 and isching yarefra had oftymes invadit the Romane provincis,  
 committing thift, reiff and slauchter diuers tymes, daly  
 almaist; redrefß was askit invane fra ye wardanis, yare heraldis  
 war contempnit and evill demanit; tharefore richtuislie yai  
 had begunnyn ye brek. Be this ansuere ye king commovit,  
 be wretengis aduertist his broder of Pichtis hereof, exhorting  
 he wald concur with him to revenge ye recent iniuris done be  
 M.L.T. 173 Romanis and reproche of ye contumeliosß wordis of the legate:  
 he suld bete down ye dyke apoun his bordouris, be fyre and 40  
 swerde distroy the Romane landis, and tary ye army of

Scottis, quhilk doutles to him suld be sped. The king of Pichtis, thanking ye messagere, promyst he suld *with* gude hert vse his counsell. Quhen Romanis be exploratouris war aduertist hereof, yai preparit strang ordinance for batell. Scottis and Pichtis, sloppand ye dyke in diuers partis, first in ye Romane province maid apon commons terribill slauchter. Romanis in nycht passing ye camp of innemyis, come to Pichtland, tending yarethrow to retere and drawe inemyis fra ye Romane boundis. The kingis, of yare intencioun be wachis certifyt, *with* power conionit in ye mornyng towart yame movit. Quhen yai approchit to sicht, athir armye occurrit in meting of vthir, quhare was haistelie fochtin *with* variant victorie and equale advantage, ffor ye richt wyngis war victouris and ye left wyngis supprisit. The myddill warde sustenit sa lang ye batell, quhill myrkneß removing ye sicht, nowthir of ye armyis apperit gif place to vtheris. Quhen yus was fochtin, athir armye discumfist, lossing horßmen and vtheris in grete nowmer, on ye nycht, for fere of vtheris sinder-  
ing, fled to strenthis. On ye morne wemen quhilk followit Scottis and Pichtis to ye feild (as was ye maner) nowder having sicht of inemyis nor freyndis, at yare eis gaderit ye spuleze. Be this batell, to athir partie aduersant, pussance and strenth was sa fulzete, yat ye zere following yai desistit fra batell.

60 In ye present tyme Victoryne legate wrate to ye Emprioure Marcus Anthonius Aurelius how Scottis and Pichtis, inhumane and wylde pepill, agane ye vertewe of trewis had bett downe ye dike, be Adriane biggit to debar yame fra ye Romane provincis, and oftymes had made invasiouns, slauchter and hereschip with grete crudelite apoun yare subiectis; the Romane armye had new mellit *with* yame in batell, grevouß slauchter was made on athir partie, euery armye as discumfist gave place to vthir; thay war departit to Pichtland and Galloway to renewe yare power; litill confidence mycht be gevin to Britouns, elike myndit as Scottis and Pichtis to be at liberte gif yai mycht se tyme; beseking herefore ye  
70 emprioure for supple to yir grete weris; giff he refusit, Romanis mycht nocht lang sustene the force of inemyis. The emprioure resaving thir writingis, suspecting yat, be sleuth and dolf

Fo. LXXXII.

M.L.T. 173b

- Fo. LXXXII. curage of Victorine in batell and his necligence, ye Romane affaris prosperit nocht in Britan, dischargeing him of authorite, he providit in his place ane nobill man Calphurnius Agricola, quham he directit with ane armye in Britan to contynewe ye weris contrare ye barbaris as afore. This Calphurnius (as sum men writis) was nevo to Iulius Agricola, maist nobill chiftane of Romanis yat euer come in Albion, as said is. Quhen Calphurnius come in Britan, *with* power of Britouns ionit to his armye he tranoyntit to debell ye barbar pepill quhill he come to zork, ffra quhilk eftir sacrifice maid in ye rite of Gentilis for prosper expedioun, he movit towart ye river of Tyne. Quhen he had passit baith ye flude and ye grete dyke of 80
- Fo. LXXXIII. Adriane he fand all waist, without corne or bestiall, and nowthir village nor towne, bot all distroyit and birnt be Scottis and Pichtis, that inemyis in yai partis suld fynd na refuge. Calphurnius persewand ferder *with* his armye come to Ordoluce and throw Dere (now Merß, Berwik and Tividale) to Pichtland. Quharefra eftir he had waistit ye cuntre and birnt ye cornys, *with* townys and villagis, knawing wynter approchit and his army was to be send to yare wynter schelis he returnit to zork, quhare with his armye he passit his tyme ye wynter following in ye campe. The somer nixt, eftir strang ordinance contrare Scottis and Pichtis was made reddy, Calphurnius on his viage to Scotland was certifijt how ye inhabitantis of Walis *with* nychtboure naciouns had movit rebelloun con- 10  
trare Romanis; cieteis and townys war dispulzeit; officiaris, capitanis and soldeouris quhilkis war distribute in garnisoun to defend ye pepill obeying Romanis, war dispituouslie slane. At yis message Calphurnius, fering gif he had employit all his cure to subiect ane parte of Albioun, he suld to ye skaith of ye Romane Impire loß greter parte conquest be antecessouris
- M.L.T. 174 be sa grete labouris, leiffand ye persute of Scottis, gaif him to repare and big ye dike be yame and Pichtis for ye maist parte sloppit and bet down. He causit ye fowsyis be clengt of newe and towris with strenthis be biggit to stop inemyis fra incursiouns apoun provincis obeying Romanis. To perfurnis ye werk, he causit craftis men fra all partis be brocht. Quhen samekill was biggit as was distroyit before, levand 20

power to defend the towris, with his armye he passit apoun Fo. LXXXIII  
Walis. His *cuming* was terribill to ye inhabitantis. Ffinalie  
yai reconterit him in batell and without sare fechting war  
nocht vincust. This rebelloun was nocht weill repressit quhen  
ane vthir be inhabitantis ye Ile of Wicht begouth of newe, ye  
maist parte of Britan noblis to yame assisting. Nocht ye less  
be grete laubouris of Calphurnius yai war ouresett and begyn-  
naris of ye rebelloun to dede punyst. Quhill Calphurnius  
in this sorte was molestit be sedicioun and batell intestyne,  
Scottis and Pichtis at hame remanit, abstenyng to iniure  
30 Romanis. For having consideracioun of ye tyme, yai wald  
nocht provoke the Romane armye, fering mekill ye grete  
name of Calphurnius Agricola, memorative how his gudeschir,  
Iulius Agricola, eftir subiectioun of Orduluce, Deer (now  
Berwik, Merfß, Tevidale <sup>2</sup>), Pichtland, Galloway, Siluria (now  
Kyle, Carrik, Cunynghame) with boundis adiacent, and dis-  
truction of yare armyis in batell, had past throw Calidone  
Wod and brocht ye Romane armye to Horestia (now Angouß).  
Sua fering siclike fortune in his nevo, yai abhorrit nocht litill  
during his autorite to reconter Romanis. Quhen Cal-  
phurnius was certifijt how Scottis and Pichtis had skalit yare  
folkis, like as yai had renuncit the weris and bene subiect,  
40 he was glaid yat the barbaris, as he belevit, without blude  
war stoppit be ye wall and fowsyis to molest ye provincis of  
Romanis, and tuke cure to mak vnyte and concorde amang  
Britouns at divisioun for ye tyme. Ffinalie, ye legate having  
all rancoure amang ye grete men mitigate and the province  
in gude reule, he was callit to Rome be Anthonius *Commodus*  
emprioure, quhilk to Marcus Aurelius Anthonius in the impire M.L.T. 174b  
succedit. Sua fra Britane he departit to Gallia, and fra thyne  
be land iournais to Italie. Eftir him at command of ye  
emprioure, Publius Trebellius in Britan was maid legate,  
quhilk gaif him to follow ye goverment of Calphurnius, vsing  
ye avise of Britan nobillis in graif materis, and sua he gidit  
him mydway in yare plesere in ye begynnyng; referring his  
honouris to ye King Lucius, quhilk be autorite and favoure  
50 of ye emprioure, regnit in Britan *with* lawde and honoure,  
*commending* him to ye empriour and senatouris, affirmyng

**FO. LXXXIII.** him of gude mynde to the Empire, and na thing to him was sa thankfull as ye prosperite of ye samyn ; inemyis of Romanis war to him odioß ; he had punyst diuerß in the realme contrare him conspiring. Eftir thir and vthir grete lovingis of Lucius to ye emprioure and senatouris, quhen be sic flattery he had maid him to yame gracioß, he began to opin his lang dissimulit mynde, schewin him gevin to vicis and insaciabill auarice, and within schort tyme, in *presens* of ye pepill, accusing men of substance be fenezzeit causis, and to satisfy ye rankoure of vtheris, gart yame be put to dede. Vtheris he 60  
 exilit ye cuntre, and at his pleßour but respect to honeste or schame intromettit *with* ye gudis of yame and vtheris quham he couth nocht accuse be ressoun. Ffinalie yis oppressioun made ye legate odioß to the pepill, quharethrow sedicioun had bene movit gif Lucius king, quhilk favorit Romanis, be supple and counsell had nocht fortifyit his affaris.

How Scottis and Pichtis be batell supprisit Trebellius ;  
 how the *commonis* of Britane contrare Romanis conspirit,  
 and war vincust ; how Trebellius was remouit  
 and Pertinax made legate ; off ye humanite and  
 vailzeandnes of Pertinax ; how he was coactit to  
 accept ye impire. Capo° vj°

**M.L.T. 175** **S**cottis and Pichtis knawing how Britouns war myndit to ye legate, thinkand tyme approachit (sen Calphurnius was removit) to revenge ald iniuris, gaderit yare folkis, with grete force brak down ye dike and on ye Britoun landis maid spreith and spuleze. Thir novellis inflammyt ye legate to paß *with* stark ordinance contrare sa cruell inemyis, aganis quham in batell fechtand he was destitute in ye feild be Britons and 70  
 Gallis, quham he trowit suld fortify his partie. Sua ye legate with armye discumfist tynyng ye feild, naroly evadit slauchter. This felloun plaig distroyit grete parte of Romanis and na litill nowmer of Scottis and Pichtis. Trebellius collecting ye residew movit to zork, tending to renewe his power. How beit grete nowmer of Scottis and Pichtis war slane, zit throw



ye recent victorie yai grewe mare cruell to revenge slauchter of yare freyndis, and salfit na presonere in handis. Thareeftir at yare ple<sup>sour</sup> thay opprest Westmorland, Kendale and Cumbirland, and spulezeing ye cuntre abstenit fra na cruelte, yat ye rurale pepill war sa agast, yai lippynnyt nocht ellis bot dede. Nochtwithstanding yat ye legate with hie indig-  
 80 nacioun was hereat commovit, he durst nocht recounter inemyis in plane batell, thinking it mycht hurt ye Romane senezeory, becaus he crynit mare ye tresoun of Britouns yan ye manifest invasioun of Scottis. Sua declynyng ye batell, quhare without cummyr he mycht apprehend inemyis skalit in ye cuntre he put yame to dede, and within mvnyciouns and wallit townys contenit him self and his armye. In ye ilk tyme ane servile conspiracioun, movit be ye commouns of Britan, perturbit mekill ye Romanis. Ffor ye commouns, almaist daly ouresett be Scottis and Pichtis, disparing of reddres, be assistance of diuers<sup>s</sup> grete men failzete fra ye emprioure, in furoure and ire  
 10 making for weir, thay cheissit Caldor chiftane, ane native Picht, becaus he had amang yame diuers<sup>s</sup> zeris conversit, accustomyt with yare maneris and dispitefully hatit ye Romane name. Sua with haiste expedicion yai movit contrare Trebellius and his armye. Trebellius, knowing ye failze of Britouns, and yat yis were was mekill mare dangerus yan contrare Scottis and Pichtis, avisit sadlie with freyndis be quhat way he mycht evaid the appering dangere. Eftir mony consultacions he devisit first mell with Britouns, fereng gif Scottis with yame concurrit, without grete slauchter yai mycht nocht be ouresett. Quharefore he movit contrare Britons. At ye first sicht ye name of ye Romane legate was  
 20 terribill to ye confusit multitude collectit of divers<sup>s</sup> regiouns; and als ye constans of Romanis, the glance of yare glitterand armoure, reft fra yame almaist baith curage and hardymment. Bot be persuasioun and diligence of yare chiftane, to quham the rebellioun of Britouns was plesing, yai war kepit in array and cruelly ionit ye bargane quhilk ye Romanis provokit. Cruell and hardy was ye first counter, doutsum ane quhile to quham the victorie suld inclyne. Britouns finalie be Romanis (stoutlie doand yare devoure) with grete slauchter war

Fo. LXXXIII.

Fo. LXXXIII.

M.L.T. 1756

Fo.LXXXIII. defate. Caldoure, chiftane, *with* vthir complicis of his counsell,  
 haistelie fra the feild fled to Pichtland, reiosing nocht litill yat  
 be his industrie sa grete slauchter was maid apoun Romanis and Britouns.  
 Sum Britan noblis in sobir arrayment as rude pepill, feynzeing yame  
 boyndis, quhen yai persauit Romanis abstenit nocht fra slauchter of  
 commons, fering yai suld be siclike in yat furoure slane, ffynalie  
 revelit yare dissymulacioun, how yai war grete men, quharethrow  
 evading slauchter, yai war takin be Romanis. Trebellius, knowing  
 yare dissymulacion and how yai began all yare faction, in *presens*  
 of ye armye gart draw yame on ye gallous. This crudelite abone  
 mesure inflammyt Britouns contrare Romanis. On ye nycht following,  
 Britouns war tane downe and elike nowmer of Romanis hung apoun  
 ye gebatis, be quhat persouns incertane. The legate be certane  
 coniecturaciouns knawand danger on all partis apperand, wrate the  
 tressoun of Britouns to ye *empriour* and iniuris of Scottis and  
 Pichtis, requiring him to provide haisty remeid, to mete ye dissate  
 and felony of all thir nacions ffailzeing. It mycht aventure yat  
 Romanis, tynyng yare conquest in Britane, suld on force be expellit  
 ye ile. The *Emprioure* Anthoun, weying in how mekill dangere ye  
 Romane affaris war constitute in Britan, send Partinax, ane nobill  
 man and consul afore, quham ye weremen mekill extemyt, and *with*  
 grete lawd extollit be ye *senatouris* (as Iulius Capitolinus writis)  
 to dresß all materis in Albion. Trebellius removing fra authorite  
 at his *cuming*, he schew him meik, sobir and humane to ye pepill.  
 Ffirst to Lucius, king, he was acceptabill, danting ye rebelloun of  
 Britouns mare be benevolence yan violence, slaying sum parte  
 conspiratouris of litill estimacioun, be iugement of euery persoun  
 deserving weill ye dede; syne assalezeing Scottis and Pichtis  
 with mekill slauchter, draif yame beyond ye grete dike to remane,  
 persewand yame na ferder. He was contirmandit to Rome be ye  
*senatouris*, and eftir ye *Empriour* Commodus be familiare tresoun  
 murdris, he was coactit to accept ye impire, quhilk to him wilfully  
 was offerit. Sua Trebellius creat legate of newe in Britan, Partinax  
 to Rome returnit.

How to dant the mocion of Insulanis, Argad with FO. LXXXIII.  
 ane armye was directit ; how he was slane and to  
 quhat poynt of miserie Insulanis yarefore war brocht ;  
 how King Ethod institute lawis of hunting ; how be  
 ane menstrale he was slane. Cap° vij°

**Q**uhill thir actis war in doing, Ethod, king of Scottis, had  
 trubill in his realme. Insulanis hevily weyand ye slauchter  
 of yare freyndis be Argade, as afore is remembrit, with stark  
 power invadit Argathele, cruelly dispulezeing ye cuntre,  
 60 sparing nane estate, man na woman, bot indifferently vsing  
 cruelte apoun ye pepill. To stanche yis trubill, Argade *with*  
 power was send in Argathele. The king with ane army taryit  
 nere the grete dike, reddy to resist gif inemyis wald assaleze.  
 Insulanis knawing ye *cuming* of Argade, occurrit in his meting.  
 Ane litill afore yis tyme ij<sup>m</sup> Ireland men war arrivit in Argathele  
 to forray ye cuntre. Thir Ibernienß, to fortify the Insulans M.L.T. 1765  
 contrare Argade, hid yame amang thik rammell and buskis  
 in buschment, and how sone Argade *with* his folkis war passit,  
 haistelie ye buschment with terribill schoutis invadit Scottis.  
 70 Argade, persaving him environit in front and at the bak be  
 inemyis, changeing all fere and raddoure in ire, walkynnit  
 the curage of his folkis to ye bargane on nede to be sustenit,  
 sen he mycht nocht deliuer yame fra inemyis on all partis  
 assalezeing. Quhen amang yame inclusit he mycht na langer  
 sustene the force of yat sare bargane, nocht *without* strang  
 fechtung he was oureset and slane, and with him to ye nowmer  
 of ij<sup>m</sup> Scottis. The remanent affrayit and skalit, be flicht  
 salfit yare livis. Tythingis of yis infortunate batell movit  
 ye king abone mesure contrare Insulanis, and schortlie chesing  
 ane armye of xx<sup>m</sup> throw all ye realme, *with* lauborioß iornais  
 he passit in Argathele to dant yare rebellioun. Be vehement  
 stormys of seyis Insulanis, impeschit of yare passage, war  
 80 *contrynit* tary his *cuming*. The king, providing the weill of  
 his folkis, be licht iupertyis and wisdome mare than force did FO. LXXXV.  
 grete skaith to inemyis. Ffinalie be oportunitie of tyme and  
 place, knawing how Insulanis within ane forest war hid, he

Fo. LXXXV. parkit the samyn with fowsyis, and schortlie brocht yame to  
 sa scharp poynt yat eftir victualis consumyt, be branschis and  
 chattis of treis, herbis and rutis certane tyme yai sustenit ye  
 miserabill life. At last ouresett be hunger, with difficulte yai  
 impetrate at ye king he wald pleiſß gif eris to ye messagere,  
 quham yai war to direct ; at quhais cuming the king grantit  
 pece, be condicioun yat ye chiftane and vtheris ij<sup>e</sup> quham he 10  
 wald cheiſß, suld be deliuerit to punycioun as ye counsell wald  
 devise ; the remanent denwde of wapynnys and armoure suld  
 M.L.T. 177 departe salffie to ye Ilis. To ye multitude afflictit be extreme  
 penurite, thir condiciouns war plesing, and haistelie ij<sup>e</sup> war  
 deliuerit cheif of ye rebelloun with the principale chiftane,  
 and at command of ye king and counsale war all put to dede.  
 The Insulanis, hevily weyand sic crudelite, furiouslie (becaus  
 yai wantit wapynnys and armoure) warpit stanis as men in  
 rage apoun ye oist, quhilk weill anarmyt eschewit ye stanys,  
 and slew of Insulanis grete nowmer. The residew evading,  
 fled to ye montanis. Ffra thyne the brulezeis of Insulanis  
 pecifyit and Romanis *with* difficulte at fidelite conserving  
 Britons, certane 3eris Scotland was mare peciabill, without 20  
 were amang yame or be inemyis. During this tranquillite  
 the king vesijt all ye regiouns in Scotland and constitute  
 officiaris and iugis to gyde ye cuntre be equite and iustice.  
 And yat in his age he suld *nocht* grow dolf be idilnes he gaif  
 his studye to hunting, as ye rite is of oure cuntre, and as in  
 barneage he was exercit, diligentlie providing yat na thing  
 concernyng sic gammyn vsit be antecessouris suld be omittit.  
 He decretit yat be nettis, girnys or vthir sic thingis, nane fra  
 thyne furth suld tak ane hare nor 3it *with* staff, schot of arrow  
 or vthir instrument, vnwerly sla hir in hir sete ; and gif scho  
 evadit the houndis throw spede or war wery forrvn, scho suld 30  
*nocht* be ceirsit ferder to be slane, sen ye hare is euer in  
 continuall raddoure, scho rynnys ithandle and may sone be slane  
 be sic wayis ; alsua yat na stalkaris suld sla ane hart be schot,  
 nor hound ane baggit hynde, bot abstene fra yare persute  
 all ye wynter and grete parte of verze, sa lang as depe snaw  
 coveris ye erde, quhen on force be penurite and hungir yai  
 mon draw fra forestis and montanis ; and yat ye hynde calf

and fowne suld euer be self fra ye huntaris. Thir actis the king causit be obseruit, detesting na thing mare pan be sic murthure to defraude him and men of gude of sic plesand solace. Quhen he vakit fra hunting he gafe him to vthir  
 40 honest plesouris as ye tyme requirit, and luffit weill honest musicianis and plesing singlaris, specially schawmaris and trumpettis. Bot finalie be tresoun of ane menstrale of ye Ilis, his secrete cubiculare, he was murdrist on ye nycht. The wachis, hering ye schout in ye kingis chawmer, comprehendit the tratoure, and accusing him of ye kingis slauchter, how beit he gaif to him credit of his liffe. Quharefore suppois he was comptit amang ye kingis traist familiaris afore, he behuffit now like ane tresonabill inemye be pynyt with exquisite tormentis, in exempill till vtheris, how wikkit cryme is to pollute yare handis in ye sacrate blude of ye king. To yis ansuerit ye menstrail: "The king be extreme rigoure in  
 50 Argathele distroyit grete parte of my freyndis, and now be vengeance yareof I haue satisfyit my furiois mynde, as I devisit mony dayis before. Be this folie interprise I haue now swageit ye vehement affectioun quhilk sa hevilie troublit my mynde. I am satisfyit and in my mynde the vehement desire of vengeance is mytigate. I covate nocht to lif. Wirk on me zoure plesure with all crudelite and tormentis. My mynde is now als constant to sustene ye dede, as it was afore to murdris zoure king. I sall nocht be sa sare torment, bot in ye extreme poynt of dede I sall reiose yat I haue revengit the iniuris done be yat wikkit king to my freyndis and kynnyismen."

60 Quhen sic wourdis war said, at command of ye barouns his fete war knyt to sindry horss quhilk, drevin in contrare partis, raif his body in pecis. Eftir Ethod take ye crowne he regnit xxxiiij yeris. His corps with princelie pompe (as was ye maner) was beryit in ye feild of Evon. His regne durit to the tyme of Septimius Seuerus, Romane empriour. Mony nobill men, excellent in vertewe and cunningg, war liffand quhen Ethod brukit ye crowne: Galen medicinare, decoring ye werkis of Hippocracẽ, of grete fame in his dayis bot mekill mare famous to ye posterite. In oure tyme diuers bukis of medicine ar sene be him intitult. Apollyne ye famous oratoure, quhilk

Fo. LXXXV.

M.L.T. 177b

Fo. LXXXV. becaus in *commendacioun* of ye name of Cryst he made ane 70  
 M.L.T. 178 plesand harrang, was crownit be marthirdome, ffor sic thingis  
 amang Gentilis was na leß pane na dede. The bischop Dionise,  
 of Corrinthie native, quhilk wrate mony thingis to ye vse of  
 oure faith, *with* diuersß *vyir* nobill men. The Catholic faith  
 and name of Criste was mekill augmentit and spred, ye samyn  
 tyme Cristianis in all partis having rest and pece. In sindri  
 regions and provincis mony detesting ye *error* of Gentilis,  
 war to ye trew faith convertit. This tyme Eleuther, ye xiiij  
 fra Sanct Petir, occupijt the sege of Rome. With him ye  
 king of Britouns, Lucius, was contemporane (as beforè is said),  
 quhilk, certifijt be Romanis in ordinance with Trebellius and  
 Partinax legatis, of ye mirakillis and godlynes of Cristianis,  
 optenit be writingis fra ye Pape yat *with* his folkis he mycht 80  
 Fo. LXXXVI. be ascrivit to yare nowmer. The Pape directit in Scotland  
 twa haly men, Ffugace and Damyane, quhilk baptist ye king,  
 his houshald and ye maist *parte* of his realme. Sua eftir  
 ydolatri and sacrifice to devillis war removit, the faith of  
 Criste was inducit amang Britouns in ye *zere* of oure Redemp-  
 cioun, as ye cronikillis rememberis, j<sup>c</sup>lxxxvij.

How, eftir Ethod was betrasit, Satraell tuke the  
 crowne; of his mysgiding and slauchter; how  
 Donald to him succedit; of his vertuofß gouernance;  
 how at request of Ffulgence Donald of Scotland  
 suppleit him contrare Romanis. Cap<sup>o</sup> viij<sup>o</sup>

A fter King Ethod<sup>o</sup> was betrasit in sorte foresaid, Satrahell  
 his broder germane, be consent of ye nobillis and votis  
 of ye pepill, was salust king, *nochtwithstanding* yat Ethod  
 had ane son within zeris nocht zit abill for ye crowne. Quhare-  
 fore conforme to custome of the realme it come to Satrahell  
 his eme. This new prince was of subtile and falsß ingyne; 10  
 sone eftir his coronacioun, was notit in dissymulacion and  
 crudelite. How sone he had the kinrik stabillit, be sey and  
 land he slew all familiaris of his brother Ethod, as thay mycht  
 be apprehendit, tending (as ye brute was of ye cuntre) to

defraude ye son of Ethod of his heretabill realme. He was als vnhumane towart ye *commouns*, spulezeing yame of landis and gudis. He punyst yame be diuerſ tormentis. Herethrow to athir state he was odioſ : ffollowit factiouns, discordis and intestyne sedicioun, tulezeis, slauchter amang kynnyſmen and freyndis to ye incredibill hurte of ye pepill. Quhen be  
20 his sleuth grete danger was apperand to ye *commoun* weill, and knawing his awne culp he durst nocht cum in *presens*; on nycht *servandis* strangillit him in bed, ye ferde zere eftir his coronacioun and in his place be consent of ye *estatis* Donald, ane vthir broder germane to Ethod, resauit ye crowne. Donald in *maneris* was mekill different fra Satrahell his broder : liberall, knawing na dissate nor fraude, indewit and cled with clemence, vsing ye law be iustice mare yan rigoure, ffor in begynnyng of his regne he tuke grete laubouris to remove all discorde and feid amang his pepill, memorative quhat hurt is to ye *commoun* weill to lauboure in discorde and debate. Eftir with grete diligence he had stancheit all fede and rankoure  
30 and parte be autorite and beneuolence, sum tyme be rigoure, had brocht his realme to tranquillite, he vesyit al the cuntre, passing his tyme quhilis in cheif *castellis* with his barouns, and execute iustice to euery complenzear, regarding na thing ye partie, causing theiffis, revaris and resettaris be punyst, as did antecessouris afore. He was ye begynnare yat zong men be negligence of correctioun, abhorring humanite and almaist growin wylde, suld be reformyt in bettir maneris and be with him self in ordinance, exercit in dedis of armys yat with leſſ difficulte yai mycht resist invasioun of inemyis, and had of yame ane garde at all tymes reddy to do sic thingis as occurrit be domestic sedicioun and vthir wayis. About  
40 yis tyme quhen Lucius, king of Britouns, (of quham before is rememberit), was deceissit, Romanis aduerting yat ye kingis had bene oft tymes begynnaris of rebellion, and yat ye Romane Impire suld in tyme cuming be mare peciabil, yai concludit eftir him na Britan blude suld regne. Ffulgence of ye Britan blude royall, hevily weyand yis decrete, *convenit* grete parte of ye nobillis and be ane lang *proposicioun* regrettit ye iniuris of Romanis; how Britouns war thirllit to *seruitute* and

Fo. LXXXVI.

M.L.T. 178b

Fo. LXXXVI. subject to Romane lawis withoute regarde to ye ritis and  
 M.L.T. 179 liberte of progenitouris; matrons, wedois and dochteris war  
 defoulit at plesoure of ye weremen; thay intromett with  
 euery mannis gudis; new tribute daly was excogitate and 50  
 rasit; new proclamaciouns and actis war maid to compell  
 the inhabitantis be reddey to yare weris; and *with* vthir  
 infinite iniuris Britouns day war supprisit; ffynalie fra yame  
 was reft princelie dignite, apperandlie menyng nocht ellis bot  
 destructioun of ye blude royall and nobillis; quharefore with-  
 out Britouns *providit* haiste remeid ye anciant blude and  
 nobilite suld at plesere of inemyis be exilit in strange landis  
 and nane inhabit ye cuntre except ye sympill *commouns*. Be  
 thir and siclike resouns ye counsell present was sone inflammyt  
 to falze fra Romanis, and makand Ffulgence cheif of ye  
 conspiracioun, assignit ane day to convene in armes. Here-  
 eftir Ffulgence be writingis aduertist Donald, king of Scottis,  
 how Britouns for ye maist parte war conspirit contrare 60  
 Romanis; gif he wald fortify him with supple aganis ald  
 inemyis, yai suld with dishonoure be sone expellit Albioun;  
 this war *nocht* difficill, becaus ye maist parte of all provincis  
*within* Gallia (now Ffrance), Allemanze and ye Orient, wery  
 of yare pridefull senzeorie, as he was sikkirly aduertist, had  
 contrare yame conspirit; the emprioure was ageit, indegent  
 of counsell and sa involuyt amang *curis* he couth nocht provide  
 quhat best war to be done, and with sa grete *dammage* was  
 supprisit, yat yarfore he mycht furnyfs na ma armyis to be  
 send in Britan. Glad was King Donald quhen he was requirit  
 to be exercit in weris, knawin yat without *exteriour* weris  
 his pepill *mycht* nocht be dantit fra ciuil discorde and sedicioun.  
 He promyst herefore ye power of Scotland suld be reddey 70  
 quhat day and place yai wald assigne. Ffra yis ansuere of  
 King Donald the ansuere of Pichtis varyit litill, to quham Fful-  
 gence siclike had writtin. Britouns quhilk assistit to Ffulgence,  
 knawing how Scottis and Pichtis to yame war weill myndit,  
 thinking sa grete *materis* requirit na tary, siclike chargit yare  
 folkis to be with diligence in reddines, syne wele furnist  
 M.L.T. 179b *with* victualis, tranoyntit to the west parte of Adrianis Dyke.  
 With grete force yai brak ye wall to prepare ane gate, yat



Scottis and Pichtis to game mycht haue passage. Siclike Fo. LXXXVI.  
 Scottis and Pichtis beyond ye dike with besy cure war na leß  
 80 diligent. Quhen schortlie ye fowsy was fillit *with* dovettis and  
 fail brocht yareto, and grete parte of ye dike was bet down, thay  
 wan lichtlie oure ye samyn. Syne adionit to Britouns, ane Fo. LXXXVII.  
 terribill hoist to ye cuntre all in front tranoyntit towart zork,  
 be sa haisty iournais yat yai preventit ye brute of yare *cuming*,  
 and war *present* or novellis of yare *cuming* war herd. Herethrow  
 the cietenaris of zork war suddanlie affrayit. Thay tendit  
 first wyn the towne of zork, sua yat Trebellius legate, and  
 vthir capitanis quham yai knew within ye towne, being com-  
 prehendit, the remanent army of Romanis mycht be mare  
 eselie expellit Albioun. Bot knawing how ye legate and  
 capitans war departit to Kent to assembl power, yai left  
 10 ye assege, and at yare pleßour distroyit ye cuntreis adiacent  
 obeysing Romanis, with grevouß slauchter and hereschip.  
 The *commouns*, affrayit be yis strange multitude of inemyis,  
 to quham yai durst nocht resist, with gude contenance occurrit  
 in yare meting, resaving Scottis, Pichtis and Britouns with  
 game accompanyit. The armye about ye boundis of zork  
 taryit sa lang as yai mycht fynd viueris to be sustenit, syne  
 to vthir placis departit, vsing na leß destructioun and hereschip  
 quhare yai declynit, ceissing nocht of sic felony quhill wynter  
 approachit and weremen quhilk war convenit fra sindri regions  
 mycht *nocht* apoun ye plane suffir ye cald schouris and frostis,  
 bot on force behuffit sindir and remove.

How the Emprioure Seure come in Britane and  
 persewit Ffulgence ; how Ffulgence at ye emprioure  
 requirit pece and was refusit ; how Ffulgence *with*  
 his supple of Scottis and Pichtis was vincust and  
 chaissit, fleand to Scotland, and how the Emprioure M.L.T. 180  
 Seure deceissit. Cap° ix

20 **T**rebellius, weyand hevily the *damage* of Romane prov-  
 incis in Britan, be writingis aduertist Septimius Seuerus  
 emprioure of ye felloun sedicioun movit be the barbaris in

Fo. LXXXVII. Britan, waisting all ye provincis be incursiouns and hereschip :  
 quharefore starkare power was necessar, or ellis his personal  
*presens*. The emprioure (as writis Herodiane) glaidlie resauit  
 yis message becaus he was naturalie desirous of glore, thinking  
 to wyn als grete name apoun Britouns, as he had conquest  
 lawde in ye north and orient afore : attour he thocht to remove  
 his sonnys fra ye ciete of Rome in zouthede, to be exercit  
 in weris and scharpnes, seperate fra ye plesuris and delitis of  
 ye ciete. Thus he preparit his expedioun apon Britane, weill 30  
 ageit, lauboring in maladye of ye gut, bot with sic vertew  
 and manhede, yat neuer zong man *with* mare curage past to  
 weris. In yis iournay he was for ye maist parte caryit in ane  
 littir, taryng na thing bot ye way ; sua, completing his viage  
 and saling ye oceane sey *with* greter haist yan ony belevit,  
 arriving in Britan assemblit his armye and starklie providit  
 for batell. Ffulgence with his Britouns, conspiratouris,  
 astonyst be haisty *cuming* of ye empriour, knawin with him  
 sic nowmer of Romanis, Gallis, Spanzeartis and Britouns, to  
 him directit ambassiatouris, quhilk suld mak yare purgacioun  
 and trete for pece. Bot ye empriour, be polecy prolonging 40  
 ye tyme, and yat his travell fra Rome suld *nocht* be in vane,  
 desiring victorie apoun Britan and to be stilit yareeftir,  
 depeschit ye ambassiatouris without ansuere, to yare plesure  
 and diligence preparit his ordinance for batell. Ffulgence, per-  
 saving him frustrate of pece, turnit to ane vthir cast, consulting  
*with* ye gretest of his complicis, and with schort persuasions  
 schewe how yare liberte was to be defendit, ald iniuris to be  
 M.L.T. 180b revengit, thare princelie dignite to be restorit and in few  
 wourdis comprehending mekill in effect, said he had nane  
 vthir querell to attempt sa hie interprise, full of dangere  
 aganis ye lordis dantaris of ye warld, bot yat ye noblis and  
 ald blude of Britan, quhen strangearis war expellit, mycht  
 be restorit to yare ald honoure and dignite : and how beit  
 ye Romane army was copiofs in nowmer, it was bot collectit 50  
 of gaderingis, diuerfs in maneris, condiciouns and langage,  
 and yarefore ye lesf to be crynit : and gif ye grete brute  
 of ye empriour and werelie ordinance had *nocht* obsistit, the  
 Romane armye lichtlie mycht be vincust : *nocht*yeles becaus

sa mony grete men was nocht to be aventurit to ye chance Fo. LXXXVII.  
of ane batell, he thocht best to cummyr and tary Romanis  
be licht iuparteis, and nocht recounter yame planelie in batell,  
and tary ye cuming of Scottis and Pichtis, to Romanis per-  
petuall inemyis: giff goddis wald schaw yame freyndlie, be  
yare supple Romanis finalie suld be discumfist, and disparing  
of senezeorie in Britane, to yare grete dishonoure mycht  
perpetually be exilit yarefra. To this effect Ffulgence convoy-  
60 ing his wourdis, drewe to him the favoure and hartis of the  
pepill. Sone eftir yai brocht yare wyiffis and childer vnabill  
for were, with yare bestiall, and plaissit yame bezond ye grete  
dyke in desert forestis and montanis. Ffulgence, contracting  
his army of ye douchtiest, gaif his besy cure to defend his  
cumpany erare yan invade inemyis. Sone eftir come to yame  
ye power of Scottis and Pichtis, reddy to be exponit to all  
perrellis for the commoun weil. The emprioure, nocht ignorant  
quhat inemyis tendit, addressit to mete all yare castis, omytting  
na thing yat mycht be commodioß to his army and skaith to  
inemyis. Quhen he vnderstude all his ordinance was dressit  
70 at poynt, he left his sone Geta in ye parte of Britan obeying  
ye Romane senezeory, to exerce iustice and instruct ye inhabit-  
antis in gude maneris, assignyng to him counsalouris of his M.L.T. 181  
maist tendir freyndis, and tuke his vyir son, Anthon, to ye  
weris. Sua with ordinance reulit, to 3ork he tranoyntit. At  
quhais cuming ye cietenaris and barouns of ye cuntre adiacent  
occurrit with glade vultis and chere, resaving ye emprioure  
with lawde and honoure, exalting his vassalage, fortitude and  
ewroß fortune. Eftir ye emprioure had made his entres and  
sacrifice to goddis deuotelie in his maner, he went to ye toure  
quhare remanit ye Romane garnisoun. Quhen yare he had  
ane quhile passit his tyme, and devisit how inemyis mycht  
80 best be expugnate, at last he chargit yai suld with diligence  
towart yame move. Quhen ye chiftanis and grete men with Fo. LXXXVIII.  
Ffulgence war certifyit of yare cuming, thay consultit gif  
bettir war to gif place to inemyis or recounter yame in bargane.  
Euery man sayand his opinioun, finalie yai concludit yai wald  
fecht and nocht cowartlie fle, cryand with ane voce owthir  
yai suld de in defence of yare liberte or liff with honeste.

Fo. [LXXXVIII]. Bot quhen Romanis in gude array war in sicht, terroure and  
 fere scalit ye curage of mony. Incontinent yai ionit ye batell  
 with force and hete during lang, incertane to quham the victorie  
 suld inclyne. Ffinalie Romanis, be multitude and experience  
 in weris, fulezit ye maist parte of inemyis, syne put thame  
 to flicht. 3e remanent, obstinatelie sustenyng ye batell, war 10  
 ilkane cruelly slane. Ffulgence was environit with grete  
 danger, and persaving his folkis behuffit owder fle or be slane  
 and he mycht mak na succouris, attempting to ryn amang the  
 thickest route of inemyis, offering him honestlie to dede amang  
 vthir douchty men quham he saw fall before his ene, he was  
 restrenezeit be his folkis and on force was had fra ye feild.  
 Apoun him followit sic multitude yat Romanis had fynale  
 victorie, persewing the discumfist armye of Ffulgence quhilk  
 fled at stragill attoure ye feild, yat yai suld haue na tyme to  
 renewe ye bargane. Scottis and Pichtis persaving yare pussance  
 falezit, denudit yame of wapynnys and armour and with  
 yame Ffulgence, throw ye flude of Tyne passit ye grete dike 20  
 M.L.T. 1815 to yare propir boundis. Britons quhilk evadit slauchter and  
 for impediment of Romanis mycht nocht follow Ffulgence, with  
 lamentabill complanetis wariand ye cursit aventure of batell  
 returnit hame. In this vnchancye batell, of Scottis, Pichtis  
 and Britons to ye nowmer of xxx<sup>m</sup> war slane. Be sa grete  
 myscheif quhen Scottis war surprisit, yai send in Ireland for  
 supple. Pichtis send to Noroway and Scithia (now Denmerk),  
 quhare fra come yare progenitouris. Ffulgence conduit  
 wageouris to appoynt ane army of new. The emprioure, with  
 grete laubouris comprehending the nobillis and heris of  
 Britouns failzeing fra Romanis, torment yame with cruell 30  
 panys, and benignelie sparit the commonis, affermand yai  
 maid na failze bot followit yare maisteris, like as his men  
 apoun him awatit. Thareeftir he vesityt the maist parte of ye  
 Romane provincis, quhare he reformit diueris thingis corruptit  
 be sleuth of ye legatis, granting yat euery man mycht before  
 him call quhatsumeuer persouns for iniuris and haue iustice  
 as law requirit. Sone eftir stabilling his armye in thare wynter  
 placis, with ye gretest of his folkis and Britouns during ye  
 wynter passit his tyme at 3ork. Scottis in vane sekand supple

fra Hibernienß, decretit ye somer followand erare defend yare Fo. LXXXVIII.  
 boundis at hame, na to feild Romanis in arrayit batell vnder  
 40 sa expert ane chiftane. Memorative of ye myscheif recentlie  
 resauit, Ffulgence and his Britouns awating tyme mare oportune,  
 contenit yame with Scottis and Pichtis. Romanis passing ye river of Tyne  
 and oure ye parte of ye grete dike opposit to Scottis and Pichtis,  
 extreme marchis of Romane boundis, made sum parte of iupartis,  
 sum tyme Romanis, sum tyme Scottis having victorie. To Scottis and  
 Pichtis, montanis, forestis, boggis and strate erdis, quhare yai wer  
 weill acquentit, war sikkir strenth and refuge quhen Romanis  
 invadit. Quhen persute of Romanis or dangere apperit, yare wald  
 yai lurk and ly, and yarefra wald ische apon inemyis  
 50 quhen yai saw advantage. This was impediment to Romanis and  
 made ye were mare deficill. This tyme the emprioure, consumyt  
 with age, was be hevvy maladie molestit yat he behuffit remane  
 at hame and send his son Anthone to ye M.L.T. 182  
 weris, in his place to be chiftane. Anthone extemyng inemyis  
 bot litill, ceissit fra yare persute and passing his tyme apoun ye  
 river of Tyne, diligentlie causit repare and big samekill as was  
 distroyit of ye grete dyke, and raifß heich towris of stane werk,  
 endlang ye heicht of ye samyn ilk toure distant sa mekill fra  
 vthir as ye blast of trumpett mycht be herd fra athir toure,  
 how beit ye wynd war in ye contrare. In every toure trumpettis  
 60 war devisit to blaw gif inemyis approchait, quharethrow ye  
 cuntre suld rise, and with armoure, dartis, arrowis, sloungis  
 and vyir sic wapynnys, occur to defend ye dike. Grete nowmer  
 of werkmenn war socht and depute to ye werk. The cure and  
 bigging of the towris was referrit to maist cunnyng craftismen  
 and maisteris to complete ye samyn. This tyme Anthon gaif  
 him to wyn ye favoure of ye armye, and mak ye weremen to  
 him sikkir, tending yai suld all obey him onelie, ascriving to  
 him self onelie, ye Impire, regarding na thing Getha his  
 broder. Attoure ye prolixit maladie and tarye of his faderis  
 dede anoyit him mekill, sua yat oftymes he persuadit  
 baith medicinaris and servandis to remove his agit fader  
 be ony mene fra yis life. Quhil finalie Severe, mare be  
 displeseræ yan infirmite consumyt, deceissit,

Fo. LXXXVIII. in fatis and practik of were maist vailzeand of ony vyir 70  
emprioure.

How, eftir deceiſs of Emprioure Seuere, betuix his  
twa sonnys the Impire was deuidit, and how with  
the Romane armye thay departit to Rome; how  
Anthon be ambicion of the haille Impire slewe his  
broder; how King Donald and nobillis of Scotland  
resaut ye faith of Criste, and how Donald began  
ye first cunze of money in this realme; <sup>1</sup> how he  
deceissit and how Ethod was crownit. <sup>1</sup> Cap° x°

**S**euere the emprioure ending his dayis, his son Anthon  
be gift and promittis persuadit ye chiftanis to solist the  
armye to declare him onelie emprioure, in ye meyne tyme  
devising castis of tresoun contrare his broder. How beit,  
be na persuasiouns he <sup>2</sup> mycht induce ye armye to favour  
his purpois, memorative how athir broder fra yare barneage  
was cherist elike and honorit be yare fader, quharethrow  
M.L.T. 1826 thay favorit and to yame baith did equale reuerence. Anthon  
knawing his intent apperandlie couth nocht haue effect in ye  
armye, appoynting pece *with* Scottis and Pichtis and siclike,  
with Ffulgence and Britons favoring his opinioun, eftir plegeis  
war askit and ressaute he departit, speding to his moder and 80  
broder, remanyng for ye tyme at Londoun. The moder  
Fo. LXXXIX. employit all hir cure to reduce hir <sup>3</sup> sonnys to concorde; the  
cheif counsalouris and freyndis of yare fader dressing at  
yare power ye samyn. Anthone persaving his ambicioun  
nocht favorit, was inducit mare be force than favoure to  
concorde and dissymulit freyndschip. Sua athir brother be  
equale honoure brouking the impire, thay departit fra Britan,  
tending to Rome *with* yare faderis vrne or boist of alabast,  
quharein was ye powder of his body brynt afore, inclusit  
*with* fyne odoramentis and spicery, to be placit in Rome  
among the sacrate monvmentis and towmbis of princis; and  
als tuke *with* yame the victorioſs armye quhilk had discumfist  
Ffulgence and conspiraturis of his partie, passing the 10

<sup>1</sup> Crowded in, in slightly later hand.    <sup>2</sup> MS. *his*.    <sup>3</sup> MS. *his*.

oceane sey yai arrivit at ye coist of Gallia. Ffra thyne makand Fo. LXXXIX.  
 haisty iournayis thay enterit finalie in ye ciete of Rome,  
 quhare within schort tyme Anthone, desirosß of ye haill impire,  
 be diuersß castis of tresoun imaginitt destructioun of his  
 broder. Ffinalie, quhen he ferit na danger, this vnmercifull  
 and cruell Anthone ruschit *with* violence in ye chalmer and  
 slew his broder Geta abone his moderis breist, filing and  
 sparking ye samyn be grete effusion of blude. Sua be fraternale  
 slauchter he broukit allane ye haill Impire.

Thir actis of Septimius Seuerus in Britane ar collectit sum  
 parte fra Herodiane, Greik historiographour, parte fra Spar-  
 tianus and vthir parte fra oure cronikillis. Now lat ws returne  
 to ye remanent gestis of Donald, king of Scottis.

This nobill king reformit the realme to bettir state yan  
 afore, be modest and temperate giding having rest and pece,  
 20 quhilk with grete cherite he kept to ye end of his life. This  
 gude mynde was gevin him be oure Saluatoure Ihesus Criste,  
 Prince and makare of pece, becaus schort tyme afore, detesting  
 Gentile ritis and sacrifice of idolis, he had resaut the trew faith  
 of Criste. Ffor in the tyme of Seuere he optenit be ambassia- M.L.T. 183  
 touris at Pape Victoure ye xv eftir Sanct Petir, that vertuofs  
 man of gude liffe and doctrine suld be send in Scotland, to  
 purifie him, the quene and his childer, with ye sacrament of  
 bapteme, becaus yai wer of gude mynde to confesß the name  
 of Criste. The nobillis of Scotland, be exempill of ye king  
 converting yame fra vane idolatrie, and imbrasing the trew  
 faith of Criste, war sic like purgit be the fontane of bapteme.  
 30 The 3ere in quhilk Scottis be speciall grace of Almychty God  
 war callit and ressaut to ye faith was fra ye begynnyng of  
 oure Redempcioun ij<sup>c</sup> iij 3eris, eftir Scotland first inhabit  
 v<sup>c</sup> xxxiij, and fra begynnyng of ye warld v<sup>m</sup> iij<sup>c</sup> nynety and  
 nyne 3eris.

And how beit Britouns before ws war callit to ye faith,  
 3it betuix ws and yame was sum diuersite. Ffor Britons  
 first weill instrukkit in ye faith, eftirwart be persecucioun of  
 tyrannys, persuasioun of Gentilis and heratikis, sum tyme  
 war peruertit fra ye sammyn. Scottis admitting na maner  
 of errouris, has perseuerit, and obseruit ye ilk faith, quhilk

Fo. LXXXIX. yai first resauit, inviolate to yis day. Attoure as is rememberit  
 in oure cronikillis, this nobill prince was ye first Scottis king  
 quhilk strake ye cunze and prent of ye goldin penny, siluer 40  
 or vthir metall; gravin apoun ye tane side, the image of ye  
 crucifix, with ye figure of his awne visage on ye tothir, signify-  
 ing to ye posterite the gude remembrance of him quhilk first  
 of vthir Scottis princis resauit ye Catholic faith. Scottis  
 before yat tyme vsit na cunzete money in marchandice, bot  
 owther ye cunze of Romanis or Britouns in all yare change,  
 quhilk verifis the auld thesauris and hurdis fundin in diuers  
 placis replete of strange money, like as in ye zere of God  
 j<sup>m</sup> v<sup>c</sup> xix zereis. Nocht fer fra ye mouth of Levyn in Fyffe was  
 fundin be ye hirdis grete nowmer of pennynis hid in ane veschell  
 of brafs: parte gold parte siluer. Of sum ye prent was ane  
 doubill porte, representing ye doubill zett in Rome, quhilk  
 in tyme of weris was patent and closit in tyme of pece. In  
 vtheris was gravin the figure of Mars, Venus, Mercurius, or 50  
 sum vthir idole. Apoun sum was prentit ane wolf femell,  
 M.L.T. 183b gevand sowke to Romulus and Remus. Euery cunze had on  
 the ta side the figure of ye emprioure, with scripture abone  
 ye samyn, or *lettres* gravin in this sorte, S P Q R, quhilk is  
 to say, Senatouris and Pepill of Rome. Alsua in ye zere of God  
 j<sup>m</sup> iiij<sup>c</sup> lx, in Murray be ye hirdis apoun ye sey coist amang ald  
 wallis of ane failzete castell, ane veschell of marbill was fundin,  
 quhareapoun ane ganer fechtand contrare twa edderis was  
 gravin and replete of siclike money. And als oure authoure,  
 Maister Hectoure affermys, he herd be trew famous men  
 yat ye veschell was to ye behaldaris als mervellus as ye  
 cunze, ane clere argument yat sum tyme amang oure fore-  
 bearis ye Romane cunze was in vse. Ffynalie King Donald, 60  
 excellent in gude maneris and godlines, deceissit ye xxj zere  
 of his regnne, and be suffrage of kirkmen *with* devote orisoun  
 and prayer was beryit in ane grene vaillay dedicate to ye  
 sepulture of Cristianis. About yis tyme ye Romane Impire  
 was governit be *Alexander*, quhilk tuke ye name of Severe,  
 to be repute yarethrow mare honorabill. During ye regnne  
 of Donald, famous men cunnyng in science, specially in ciuile  
 law, war liffand, and be command of ye Emprioure Alexander



maid mony nobill lawis. Of yame principall was Domicius FO. LXXXIX.  
 Vlpianus, cheif of iuristis for ye tyme; Origines, of grete  
 cunningg and godlines, quhais ingyne was repute sa agill and  
 70 doctrine sa prompt and redde, yat vij wretaris successiue  
 mycht skantlie suffice to resauie his dytement, nor write  
 with sic expedicioun as he wald indite. This Origene be  
 Mammea, moder to ye emprioure, was brocht fra Antioche to  
 Rome, quhare he cunningglic schewe mony thingis concernyng  
 oure faith, and throw his doctrine scho resaut bapteme.  
 The empriour nocht alanerlie sufferit Cristianis to be vnmolestit,  
 bot als had ye ymage of Criste in ye maist secrete parte of his  
 chalmer, and be decrete defendit yat Cristin men suld be  
 persewit or iniurit, how beit yai war comprehendit. In  
 ye samyn tyme Plotine, of singulare vertew, erudicion and  
 cunningg, was contemporane with Origene, with mony vtheris  
 excellent in science and doctrine, of quham sum parte was  
 Cristianis and vtheris of ye Gentile opiniouns. Than begouth M.L.T. 184  
 oure nacioun first to be exercit and haue diuynie scripture in  
 reuerence, instructit be ye haly preistis quham Pape Victor  
 80 send in Albioun to teich ye faith of Criste. Nocht yeles diuers  
 supersticiouns and rytis of idolatrie remanit, quhilkis King FO. XC.  
 Donald be na persuasiouns nor exhortaciouns, nor be nane  
 vthir way, mycht remove. Nor zit King Ethod, son to Ethod  
 before rememberit, eftir deceif of Donald brouking ye crowne.  
 Of him now is to be writtin. He was nurist in ye Ile of Mon,  
 under reule of his maisteris, as for ye tyme was ye maner.  
 Quharefore weill couth nocht be iugeit to quhat condiciouns  
 he was gevin quhill he had sum resoun and experience of his  
 awne liffe. Ffor eftir he was fra cure of maisteris deliuerit  
 and declarit king, without regarde of maister or discipline,  
 10 his behavingis made his mynde manifest, yat is to say, of dull  
 and sleuth ingyne, nocht abill to gide ane kinrik, to na thing  
 gevin sa mekle as to gaddir and kepe money in depouis. Quhen  
 his condiciouns to ye nobillis war knawin, yai causit ye realme  
 without his avise be reulit, committing ye samyn to certane  
 regentis be ye counsell yareto chosin. During yare gouernment  
 ye cuntre was at gude poynt. To euery province and schyre,  
 schireffis and officiaris war depute quhilk with diligence and

Fo. XC. vigilant cure saw yat ye *commoun* weill was gidit, and mysdoaris punyst, quharethrow mony brokin men war dantit. By ordoure of law na man yat tyme was punyst, and gif ony war notit in public cryme it was inhibit yat ony *vyir* be armys suld defend him before ane iuge. Giff sedicion was movit in ony parte, incontinent ye regentis war send to put reule 20 yareto and punys ye *committaris*. All yis tyme Britouns war sa subdewit vnder ye Romane *procuratouris* and *officiaris*, yat nane durst attempt to mene rebelloun, ffor Severe ye empriour, before his dede, had put all thingis to sic reule and ordorit all sa wiselie, having plegeis of all ye Britan nobillis for ye maist parte, and had send the samyn to Rome. Nor during the regne of Ethod, nowdir Scottis nor Pichtis durst iniure Britouns or Romanis, nor be Romanis war yai molestit. Ffinalie, becaus King Ethod was oure mekill gevin to auarice, be suddane tuleze movit amang his awne garde, depute to ye speciall keping of his corps, he was slane ye xvj zere of his regne ; at quhais deceið yis fifte buke is brocht to end. 29

M.L.T. 184b

Followis the vj buke of the Scottis historyis.

## [Liber Sextus.]

How Athirco was crownit ; of his vertuoß begynnyng,  
and finalie of his mysgidit liffe and slauchter.

Capto j°

30 **E**fter dede of Ethod the kinrik was nocht lang destitute FO. XC.  
of ane prince, ffor at *comuencioun* of ye estatis princelie  
maieste was gevin to Athirco, son to Ethod, be his  
mynorite nocht zit of *zeris* to gide ye kinrik ; how beit he had  
naturalite to supple his leß age and tendir *zeris*. He resaut  
ye crowne be congratulacioun and esperance of ye pepill,  
schewing continence of vertewe at begynnyng of his autorite.  
Ffor he schew him humane, plesand and laulie in presence ;  
40 he gaif him to honest studyis, vsing cumpany of men expert  
in haly scripture, or ancient historijs of progenitouris. He  
hantit wersling mekil, or vthir siclike exercicioun of ingine  
or persoun. Be liberalite he drewe to him lufe and favoure  
of his liegis. Be yir and siclike signis of wourschip, *within*  
schort tyme he conquest ane grete name. How beit sic vertewe  
increscit nocht with *zeris*, ffor in ye viij *zere* of his regne, vsing M.L.T. 185  
him auster and cruell, how fer he grew in *zeris* he was mare  
reddily gevin to iniquite. Ffinaly abstracting his mynde fra  
all gude and honeste, he was dedit to insaciabill auarice, and  
be anger and greif did all his affaris sua yat, mare be boist  
nor lufe, mare be fere yan favoure, he kepit ye freyndis  
50 conquest aforè be liberalite and lawte. Nocht alanerlie was he  
involuit in sic vicis, bot siclike he gaif him haill to voluptuosite  
and all plesour yat mycht be excogitate to effeminate and  
abaß ye curage, effering na man of honeste. Daly he gaif him  
to greter delitis and lustis, vsing cumpany of riotouris, waist-  
ouris, menstralis, piparis, dansaris and sic kind<sup>1</sup> of licht men ;  
neclecting thingis concernyng the *commoun* weill, and all to  
harlotry and vilite gevin, ffull of licherye and sensuall plesouris,

<sup>1</sup> MS. *king*.

- Fo. XC. with ane garde of ruffeanis and menstralis playand apoun quhissillis, without regarde to honoure or princelie maieste he passit his tyme. The nobillis detestit thir wantoun latis, togiddir *with* ye viciofs liffe of yare prince, sen sic maneris efferit bot licht wantoun men, and repugnit to princelie gravite. Thay dedenezit to obey sic ane monstroofs man, preferring to vse him self as ane fidlar erare yan ane prudent weill avisit prince. Attoure *with* grete pane yai sufferit yat 60  
 30ung men corruptit be sic exempill grew sa vndantit and wyld, yat regarding na thing iustice nor equite, yai daly iniurit ye pepill; and ye king, coverit with al sorte of vice, liffit sa delicatelie yat he comptit nocht ye common weill nor throw vnwourthines and sleuth discernit nocht betuix ye weill and evill yareof. Daly sic enormyteis increscit to hurte of ye cuntre. Herefore for ony licht occasion yai coniuirit in his contrare. Ane nobill man in Argathele, Nathalok to name, of grete autorite in yai partis, had twa dochteris plesand of persoun and farehede. Eftir the king had deflorit yame baith, he deliuerit yame to his myn3eouns to be abusit in ye samyn 70  
 sorte. Quhen this disple3our was schawin to Natholok, revoluyng in mynde be quhat way he mycht revenge sa hie iniuris, his dochteris come with mony teris plene3eing yai war nocht anerlie defoulit be ye king, bot als violate and deforcit be vile rebaldis and lownys. Thare fader kepit sad sylence ane quhile, syne conforte his dochteris, excusing yame
- M.L.T. 185b of the cryme, reiecting ye fail3e to ye committaris. Herefore weyand ye cai3 mare pacientlie, how beit yare bodyis war pollute, he knew yare myndis clene and fra all culp vakand. The nixt day he aduertist ye heris of Argathele and Novant (now Lorne) yai suld spede to him with haist, for ane hevvy cai3 was happy3nit him and his folkis. At yare cuming he
- Fo. XCI. plenezit the iniuris of ye king, his dochteris war deforcit, 80  
 cruelly strikkin, and at ye kingis command prostitute and defoulit be fidlaris, cukis, rebaldis and vthir sic vile persouns, gif ony mare vile war in ye courte. His freyndis vphalding yare richt handis swore yai suld revenge yai grete iniuris be ony way yai mycht; yai suld persew ye king, causare yareof, and nocht suffir him regne in Scotland. Thareftir murmuring

amang yame self he and his freyndis suld haistelic haue experi- Fo. XCI.  
 ence quhat trubill apoun his foull lustis suld follow, turnyng  
 herefore yare displeſour in ire, to ye cheif clannys of ye  
 cuntreis adiacent yai reherssit ye displesand caiſ, togiddir  
 with ye vthir vicis of ye king, and drew yame to conspiracioun ;  
 syne made to harnes aganis ye tyran quhilk durst attempt  
 10 sa mony crymez. The xx<sup>tj</sup> day thareeftir the nobillis of Scotland  
 fra all partis *convenit* in armes, reddily offering yame to all  
 aventuris for weill of ye kinrik. Quhen devocioun was done  
 yai movit toward Evon (now Dounstaphage), quhare yai war  
 certifijt ye king for ye tyme remanit. The first sicht of ye  
 hoist was grete terroure to ye pepill with admiracioun. Bot  
 knawing ye caiſ, yai made ane haisty gadering and fra all  
 partis drew to Natholok for distructioun of ye tyran king.  
 In ye army was concludit ye king *nocht* alanerlie was to be  
 degradit of ye crown, bot als suld be extremelie punyst with  
 exquisite tormentis to ye dede. Quhen ye brute hereof was  
 20 *cumin* to ye king passing his tyme beside Evon, in ye bordale  
 he brynt in ire, and with sa mony as with him wald rise, passit  
 fordwart to skaill yat convocacioun, thinkand be his onelie  
 presence yai suld declyne ye batell. And quhen he knewe  
 be exploratouris yai crynit him na thing, nor his folkis extemyt  
 him *nocht*, bot erare reput him ane myscheant and infamous M.L.T. 186  
 man, dolf of curage, *nocht* wourthy to haue superiorite abone  
 nobill men, throw fere he grewe pail and wan. Quhen he  
 considerit na parte quhare he mycht declyne, providing he  
 suld *nocht* cum captive in handis of inemyis, denwding him  
 of princelie cognissance, with few *servandis* and visage silit to  
 be vnknawin, he gaif him to fle to ye Ilis and yare to declyne  
 30 ye persute of inemyis. His folkis quhilkis preparit to fecht  
 in his defence, persaving him abasit and fled leiffand yame in  
 grete danger, thinkand foly to aventure yare lifis for sic ane  
 myscheant man, become randerit to Natholok his inemye.  
 Natholoke without langer tarye send to persewe ye king, quhilk,  
 convoyit be sey to ye ile callit Ila, be contrare wynd and tydis  
 was impeschit, like as be ye weddir he had bene repellit, and  
 abiectit to suffir punycioun, contrare his will behuffit returne  
 to land, quhare quhen he knewe inemyis awating, yat with

Fo. XCI. his life he suld *nocht* be taking to lif in derisioun, he put violent handis in his awne persoun, eftir he had regnit xij 3eris in Scotland. His regne come to ye tyme of Gordiane, ye thrid 40 *emprioure* of Rome; or as vtheris writis, to ye impire of Valeriane, quhilk, howbeit he was *cunnyng* in doctrine and valezeand in armys, had ane vnchancye end, for in batell he was takin be Sapor, king of Peirß, and lossing his armye, in miserabill *seruitute* spendit his dayis, and was sua abusit yat euer quhen Sapor was to ride, he vsit his bak as ane stabell vnder his fete to lepe in his sadill. Athirco endit in sort foresaid, semyng weill sic ane prince, with all iniquite and filth *mysgiding* his liffe. Quhen his broder germane Door knew his dede, thinkand he couth *nocht* lippin his liffe to ye slaaris of his broder, in pure arrayment, with thre sonnys of ye king, Ffindok, Carance and Donald, in secrete maner fled 50 to Pichtland, fering ye caiß quhilk eftirwart occurrit, that be Natholok he and ye barnis suld be ceirssit to ye dede. Ffor eftir dede of ye king, in secrete maner Natholok send freyndis, of all his secretis participant, to ceirß Door in Pichtland, chargeing yat suld sla him and ye kingis sonnys, gif yat mycht be apprehendit. Servandis quhilks resaut this credit slew in place of Door ane vthir man resembling him in clething, visage, age and all vthir corporall behaving, quhareof Natholok was *nocht* litill reiosit. Syne makand convocacioun of the nobillis and heris, invironit within his folkis in armys, said to yame in this sorte :

60

How Natholok be wordis and armys inducit the nobillis to gif him ye crowne, and be tyranny regnit; how he persewit the blude royal; and how be ane Morave he was slane. Cap<sup>o</sup> ij<sup>o</sup>

“ I am reiosit, my hartlie freyndis, that be ye recent slaucher of Athircon, quhilk, knawing his awne vicis, he iustly made apoun him self, 3e haue nowdir incurrit haterent nor dishonoure. I beleif *nocht* ane of 3ow mysknawis the cauß of 3oure failze fra yat tyran. 3e sall iuge *wit* me gif it be *nocht* richtwis

and *necessare* erare to revenge his innowmerabill iniuris, Fo. XCI.  
 to be daly liffand vnder his boist; and ze knaw *pat* to the  
 myserie of zone tyran murdrissing him self, infamite of vthir  
 infinite vicis *concurris*, without blude hurt, or menze of zoure  
 persoun ze ar victouris, and avancit be gloure and fortitude  
 seildin to *pis* tyme sene. How mekill skaith he ymaginit  
 70 aganis zow, me and *pis* kinrik, is to zow knawin, as to me.  
 It nedis *nocht* *pat* be *vvir* witnes ze be resonit in *pis* caiff. Ffor  
 sa mony cryme; *committit* contrare the *commoun* and private  
 weill he has be zoure iugement *deseruit* exquisite panis. Be  
 his awne boucheory he brocht him self to dede as he *deseruit*,  
 and has revengit sic iniuris apoun himself with mare dis-  
 honoure *yan* we devisit. Treulie it is resonabill, and amang  
 ws consuetude, to be revengit apoun inemyis, for oure fore-  
 bearis sufferit *nocht* ye dissate of King Durst. Siclike King  
 Evne, ane degenerit son fra his nobill fader, tholit condigne  
 punycioun for his demeritis; na man schewin him *pareat*  
 displesit. Nor ye vicioß life of Lugthak was *nocht* lang  
 vnvindicate. I pretermyt mony vthir princis and grete men  
 quhais iniuris contrare the public and private wele, the  
 80 *commvnite mycht* *nocht* suffir. Now ze sall gif loving to M.L.T. 187  
 Almychty God, quhais benygnite has deliuerit zow, zoure Fo. XCII.  
 wyffis and childer fra the felony devisit be Athircon, memo-  
 rative how in tyme *cuming* ze may without danger evade the  
 furye of tyrannys. I exhorte zow be war with the freyndis  
 and allya of Athircon, euer bettir aplesit of his crymes than  
 of *zour* vertewe; and God defend ze suld owder *command* or  
 suffir ony sic men to zoure destructioun regne, or gif *game*  
 credit of zoure livis and gudis, contynualie bering contrare  
 zow rankoure and displeßour. Gif ye do, it is force to me and  
 zow fra thir regiouns remove. We mon seyk newe habitaciouns  
 or ellis (quhilk is mekill mare myserabill) expone ws to loiff  
 10 oure gudis and lyiffis at pleßour of inemyis." In *pis* sentence  
 Natholok schewing his wordis, drewe to him ye kyndenes and  
 favoure of mony. *Nocht* yeleß sum noblis to quham ye subtell  
 cast of his ingyne was *nocht* vnknawin, weyand hevily *pat*  
 ye kingis blude suld be defraudit of ye kinrik, in secrete maner  
*commouit* *pat* the successioun of Athircon (how beit of ane

Fo. XCII. wikkitt fader descendit) had faltit na thing contrare ye kinrik. The samyn to yame or to sum vthir kynnysman, abill for gyding yareof quhil tyme of yare age, of resoun pertenit, as fra the begynnyng was devisit. Natholok, wyly and fraudulent, with grete slicht and craft spak sic thingis as he traistit mycht be to his vse or proffit. Vtheris, be giftis of Natholok corruptit 20 (as he mycht weill for ye tyme), declarit ye sonnys and freyndis of Athirco inemyis to ye commoun weill, and with mery and glaid clamoure commandit Natholok to regne. The nobillis, obeyand erare to necessite yan verite, be dissymulit glaidnes did ye samyn. To yis consent conducit mekill ye terroure of men in armes, quhilk invironyt ye barons without wapynnys or armoure. Sa mony as war present swore fidelite to Natholok, as was ye maner. Eftir divyne service, the nobillis preceding and ye multitude following, he was convoyit to Evon, ye kingis palace for ye tyme. Fferder quhen he was salust king, thinking he wald haue ye kinrik stabillit to his blude, be giftis he recounsellit sa mony as he had suspect, exhorting 30 yai suld to him kepe gude parte, and how mekill danger was apperand gif Athirconis blude suld regne yareeftir. Quhen certane dayis he had intertenyt yame with princelie rewardis and bankettis accustomyt for ye tyme, to euery man he gaif licence to departe. Syne gave him to be modest and temperate and schew him ane gracioss prince, debarring nane fra his presence, with diligent cure he dantit nychtboure feid gif ony was walkynnyt, ffering gif it increscit, it suld kendill ane grete bleiss, to ye hurte of ye commoun weill; to nane iniurioss; to all plesing, humane and benigne; to the nobillis he distribute the thesauris and riches be diligence of vthir princis kepit mony zeris, avanting him to haue tane ye cure of ye 40 realme, to effect yat men of grete birth suld in substance, honoure and lawde precell ye commouns, and quaha war procedit of sobir blude, suld of ressoun be compellit to ken yare self, of quham yai come, quhom to yai aucht service, and how yai spendit yare gudis. In yis maner certane zeris (few resisting to his plesuræ) he brukit ye kinrik. Thareeftir instabil fortune, vsing hir ald lawis, turnit sic prosperite of the king to finale aduersite. Be aventure, fra ane woman



of Pichtis blude quhilk secretelie aduertist certane nobillis Fo. XCII.  
 in quhat state war ye sonnys of Athirco, he tuke writingis  
 50 how Door the kingis broder, quham he belevit slane, was  
 intertenyt in Pichtland with ye kingis sonnys, fare 3ong men,  
 and aspiring to the crowne, maist vnknawin to ye pepill, and  
 scho was chargit to schaw ye samyn to yare assistantis be  
 writingis. Natholok, taking ye writingis and reding ye samyn,  
 gart drown the woman, and in grete silence kepit ye mater.  
 Quhen certane tyme was past, he convenit ye nobillis quham  
 the writingis made suspect, as to consult *with* yame apoun  
 graif materis, and causit yame all be put in presoun. Nor  
 his furour was nocht mitigate vnto ye tyme yai war all in  
 presoun stranglit. How sone ye slauchter of the nobillis was  
 divulgate, all ye cuntre was replete with lamentacioun and  
 60 regret. Thare freyndis ran as men in rage, incertane quhat  
 in sa grete myscheif best was to be done. Quhen ye bruleze  
 was sum parte mitigate, thay determit to be of yai iniuris  
 revengeit. Sua quhen Natholok beleiffit to stabill the kinrik M.L.T. 188  
 to him and his posterite be destructioun of Athirconis blude,  
 he made it maist instabill, becaus grete nowmer contrare him  
 conspirit. Quhen he vndirstude how his aduersaris war  
 contracting power of Galloway and Argathele, quham he  
 knewe had him in grete haterent, be counsell of freyndis with  
 stark power of wageouris and vthir gaderingis he passit to  
 Murray to assembl ane armye fra Lugia (now Rosß), Murray  
 and vthir regions adiacent. Quhen he persauit ye mater  
 prosperit nocht as he desirit (becaus mony secretelie detestit  
 70 his senzeorie) he lauborit diligentlie be divinouris, spamen  
 and witchis to affray his inemyis, or be illusioun to mak  
 yame impediment to move na forther in his contrare, and to  
 knawe quhat fyne suld be of ye batell, or gif be ony familiare  
 he suld be betrasit. To ye effect he suld soner haue his purpois,  
 he walit ane man of Murray, in yai partis of mekill autorite,  
 beleiffing him maist traisty of ony vtheris, to quham he had  
 gevin credit of all his secretis, and directit him to Colmkill,  
 quhare he was aduertist ane ageit woman remanit, richt  
 famous in sic craftis. At his cuming to Colmkill the witch,  
 makand hir invocaciouns, callit hir spiritis, at yame demanding

Fo. XCII. the fyne of the instant batell, be quhat devise inemyis mycht 80  
be impeschit to recounter King Natholok in batell, and quhilk

Fo. XCIII. of yame maist speciall devisit ye kingis dede. Syne returnyng  
to ye Morave, scho schew to him as be hir spiritis appering in  
shadowis, scho was teichit, sayand ye senezeory of Natholok  
suld haue vnhappy fyne; his familiaris war mare than con-  
spiratouris to be crynit; be na way mycht he evade, bot be  
tresoun of ane familiare in quham he had maist affiance he  
suld within schort tyme be slane. Quhen ye Morave askit  
be quhais handis, "Be thyne," said scho: incertane gif hir  
spiritis had said say in verite, or gif scho suspectit it vthir  
wayis. Than ye Morave wariand ye witch, "God gif ye sorowe,"  
said he, "with all thy decepciouns and fallace, yat gevis all  
thy ansueris owder be haterent or flatterie. I sall erare resauē  
all kynde of dede, or I put my handis in sic detestable cryme." 10

M.L.T. 188b Hereeftir the Morave with haisty iournais sped him to the  
king to schewe ye hethingfull ansuere of ye witche, bot erare  
the orakill and responß of ye devill. Or he come to Murray,  
changeing purpoiß he thocht best to kepe the ansuere quiett;  
in aventure gif ye king gaif credit to ye wourdis of ye witche  
he suld incur grete damage, and ferit alsua ye king be sum  
vthir messagere suld of his responß be certifijt. Quharefore  
certane tyme he was perplext quhat in yat doutsum and  
perrellus caiß suld be done, knawand weill ye crudelite of  
Natholok. He thocht finalie he wald erare attemp sum hardy  
aventure yan euer in dout fere punycioun. Quhen he come to 20  
ye king he was had to ane secrete chawmer, and the remanent  
removing he fenezeit subtelly mony thingis, as he herd of the  
witche be responß of ye spiritis, and in speciall sic thingis  
as he traistit wald pleiß ye king. The king for the tyme was  
trublit be flux of wame, abone mesure be moving of ane  
colike, quharethrow to obey necessite passing to satify nature,  
the Morave followit to ane secrete parte of ye chalmer as to  
mak him seruice. Quhen he persauit all servandis removit  
and ye king him allane, with ane daggare hid in his sleif he  
straik ye king in ye breist, beleiffing na thing leß yan to be  
at yat tyme betreisit; syne kest him in extremis of dede in  
the closet with ye knyffe stikkand in ye wound. Ffra thyne

30 departing at ane posterne, he tuke his horß quhilk he had Fo. XCIII.  
 reddy for ye sammyn cauß, and convoyit with ane servand,  
 be fleyng salfit him fra persewaris, schewand first novellis to  
 ye conspiratouris of the kingis slauchter. The 3ere quhen  
 Natholok was slane was ye xj eftir he tuke ye crowne of  
 Scotland, about ye ij<sup>e</sup> lij 3eris of Criste, quhen ye Romane  
 Impire be Galiene was rewlit, quhilk be sic sleuth gydit his  
 sene3eorie yat nane before him was sa vnwourthy, ffor in  
 his tyme xxx<sup>tj</sup> tyrannys be mony incommoditeis supprisit ye  
 commoun weill.

How Findok was create king ; of his humane con- M.L.T. 189  
 dicious ; how he dantit ye Insulanis ; how be  
 tresoun of his broder Carance and Donald Insulane  
 he was slane ; how his broder Donald tuke ye crowne,  
 and be Donald Insulane was ouresett, tane and  
 woundit in batell, quharethrow he deceissit ; and of  
 vthir incidentis. Cap<sup>o</sup> *tercio*

Efter slauchter of Natholok the nobillis, convenyng, con-  
 sultit be quhat way suld ye kinrik be governit. In  
 40 opiniouns thay war sum parte dividit. Ffinalie in yis sorte  
 yai war resolute, that ye thre sonnys of King Athirco (of  
 quham before is rememberit, how in Pichtland yai declynit  
 ye persute of Natholok) suld be haistelic brocht hame and  
 ye crowne to Ffindok, eldest broder, suld be gevin. This  
 mater was *nocht* deferrit. The Morave quhilk had vndone  
 ye tyran, be ye nobillis was directit to Pichtland, and fra  
 thyne *with* grete pompe and tryne brocht ye kingis sonnys  
 to Argathele, quhare Ffyndok, sitting in ye marbill chyare  
 (as was ye rye), be the nobillis and commoun pepill, to yare  
 grete ioy and plesere, was declarit king. Ffyndok was of perfite  
 50 age and extemyt of grete vertewe, in persoun ye farest man  
 in his tyme. Quharefore his flurissing 3outh and pulcritude  
 of persoun according togidder *with* vertewe yareto annex,  
 he was iugeit to excell all vthir princis, war yai neuer sa  
 preemynt and gude. Off this opinion yai war *nocht* dissaut.  
 In all his havingis he schewe continence of wourthynes and

**Fo. XCIII.** nobilite. In *presens* he was modest and manerlie, hantit in honest studyis and gentill exercitacioun; he did na thing with angir nor crudelite. He desirit to be and als appere ane cherissare of tranquillite, iustice, honeste, sobir and vertuoufs gouernment. Be beneuolence he conquest freyndis, and nowder be fere nor schore. Reuerendlie he obseruit ye lyig of pece, bundin *with* Pichtis, Britouns and Romanis.

**M.L.T. 1896** Bot as oftymes happynnys amang Scottis, lang contynewit pece *with* strangearis preparit sedicioun amang yare self. Ffor Donald Insulane brocht ane power of men apoun Lugia (now Rosß) and Murray. Eftir he had made grete heræschip 60 nocht without slauchter of inhabitantis, he draif ane riche pray for ye samyn to ye Ilis, allegiand yat ye pepill of Murray and Lugia had assistit to ye Argathelis and vthir pepill, quhilk contrare Natholok had conspirt. He aucht and als wald revenge ye slauchter of Natholok, nocht zit condinglie punyst. Quhen King Ffyndok be fugitivis yat evadit slauchter knewe sic thingis, he contractit ane armye and without tary went to ye ile namyt Ila; quhare, recountering Donald in batell, *with* felloun myscheif he straik ye Insulanis; syne ceissit nocht to persew ye flearis quhill all yai inemyis, presumptuoslie to him resisting, wer owder be sey or swerd brocht to dede. Quhen Donald considerit he was vincust 70 and his folkis lossing ye feild, be flicht socht refuge, tending to evade the dangere he ran to ane lang fad, quhilk at all aventure he had reddy apoun the coist. Infinite of his folkis followit and abone mesure clam in ye bote. Quhen be na way yai mycht schute hir fra land, scho was sa wechty and chargit, Donald with all yat cumpany was sonkin and drownit. The king tryumphing with his armye to Albioun returnit. Bot howbeit the Insulanis *with* sa grete plaig war afflictit, yai restit nocht lang, bot collecting *lymmaris* and brokin men fra Ireland, having Donald to chiftane, son to Donald latelie slane, with reiff and slauchter infesting Argathele and Novant (now Lorne), provokit ye king to raiß his armye of newe, 80

**Fo. XCIII.** and with galiouns and barkis returnyng to ye Ilis, quhare he fand ye *lymmaris*, gart hang yame on ye gebet; destroyand castellis, mwnicious and strenthis be garnison of elder Donald

occupyt, he slew ye keparis of ye samyn. This 3ong Donald, Fo. XCIII.  
 declynand ye persecucioun, with his complicis salit to Ireland,  
 quhare he taryit quhill he knew ye king fra ye Ilis depart to  
 Albion. Of new syne he returnit to ye Ilis to mak ruberie  
 at his pleserø. Bot knawand how his pussance was feblit,  
 ffreyndis discumfist, bestiall store drevin away, and cornes M.L.T. 190  
 brynt, he devisit in tyme cuming do be slicht and polecye,  
 quhilk he mycht nocht be force. Dissymuling yat he detestit  
 10 ye weris and luffit tranquillite ; his feirß mynde was dantit ;  
 humelie be ane herald he besocht ye king he mycht to fidelite  
 be ressaut. Be yis condicioun pece to him was grantit, yat  
 denwde of armour and wapynnis he suld cum to ye castell of  
 Evon, bringand *with* him ye cheif movaris of ye rebelloun,  
 to submytt him to sic thingis as ye king wald command.  
 Donald refusit ye appoyntment, preferring to iupert all to ye  
 aventure of fortune, erare to ye kingis pleßour. To tresoun  
 applying his mynde, to Evon he send twa men, subtell and  
 sle, quhilk suld dissymyll yame nobillis and fenze yame fugitivis,  
 and be sum occasioun suld slay ye king. At yare first cuming  
 yai gat na credit, nor entre to the king vnto ye tyme yai gatt  
 familiarite of Carancius, the kingis broder, in yare flatterie  
 20 and fare wourdis ourø mekill deliting. Quhen yai war convoyit  
 to ye king yai fenezeit and glosit mony thingis twiching  
 rebelloun of Donald, reveling his counsalouris and favouraris,  
*with* writingis secretelie fra ye noblis of Scotland to Donald  
 send (as yai dissymulit), quharethrow finalie faith to yame  
 was gevin. Schortlie yareeftir yai war sa authorist *with*  
 ye king be convoyance of Carance, yat yai war admittit to  
 secrete counsell, and to Carance and yame was committit  
 the reule of public and private materis. Ffinalie, knawing  
 be diuerß signis Carance was gevin to tresoun in ye kingis  
 persoun throw respect to ye crowne, thay opynnyt to him  
 yare intent. Carance, fering gif ye mater be ony licht signe  
 war manifest yai suld incur fynale destructioun, chargit yai  
 30 suld contene yame secrete. Be promittis and rewardis  
 induceing yame to his purpoiß, he persuadit ye slauchter of  
 his broder quhen yai mycht haue oportunitie. Quhat throw  
 promittis of Carance, quhat throw charge and command

Fo. XCIII. of Donald, thir twa tratouris promyst glaidlie to bring all to gude purpoiß, *commovit* be slauchter maid be ye king apoun ye Insulanis afore. Within fewe dayis ye king, fra Evon departing, with sobir tryne went to ane schaw quhare

M.L.T. 1906 be hirdis he was aduertist the wolfis resortit, and amang yai tratouris subornit in his slauchter, apoun ane litill know bade at ye setis, suspecting na fraude nor tresoun. Ffra yat hicht he mycht mare *commodioslie* behald ye houndis and se ye courß. The tratouris, as yai war accustomyt, taryit beside ye king, bering in handis scharp grundin dartis to sla ye wolf, as yai allegeit, gif he occurrit, awating eury 40 moment to bring yare tresoun to end. Quhen at clamoure of ye tynchell and call of rachis, *servandis* to se the courß war ane litill removit fra ye king, the tane tratoure persaving him nere denwde of folkis, on purpoiß began ane taill of ye haterent contrare him of ye Insulanis. Quhen ye king, intent to ye tratoure, towart him turnit his face, the tothir with dispite and force straik ye darte in his breist. Syne leiffing it fixt in ye wound, athir tratoure tuke ye flicht. Sum parte of *servandis* ran to ye king, liand in ye extreme of dede; vtheris be speid of rynnynge comprehendit ye tratouris. The schout raiß; the kingis garde and all ye huntaris convenit, 50 with pietuous weping: beseking ye nobillis present yai suld *nocht* suffir ye tresonabill slauchter of ye king vnpunyst, nor be in derisioun with inemyis; thay suld be torment with exquisite panis, quhilk be colorit tresoun durst attempt sic ane wikkit cryme. Incontinent the tratouris war put to pyne bank, quhare reveling ye tresoun of Donald and Carance, quhilk on purpoiß had elongate him self for ye tyme, yai war hedit. *Nocht* lang eftir, yai ceirssit Carance to ye dede. Bot he knawing ye slauchter of ye king and punycioun of ye tratouris, wilfully he left ye cuntre erare yan he suld be convictit of tresoun and be confoundit before ye pepill, to quham herethrow he made him self odioß. Passing his tyme ane quhile in Britan, ffinalie with ye Romane weremen he 60 passit in Italie, quhare in ordinance of ye Empriouris Aurelius Probus, Carus, and Diocesiane he conquest of chevelrie ane grete name. The zere quhen King Ffyndok be yis slauchter

endit his dayis was ye x of his regne, Fflorian brouking ye Fo. XCIII.  
 Romane Impire. With lamentacioun of ye pepill, his corps  
 was beryit in ane fare grene, beside ye castell of Evon (now  
 Downstaphage), to ye sepulture of Cristianis dedicate, quhare M.L.T. 191  
 eftir suffrage and funerall pompe according ye rite of oure  
 faith, the nobillis and pepill at his attyrement present, com-  
 mandit Donald, the thrid son of King Athirco, suld be crownit.  
 This Donald detesting ye tresoun of Donald Insulane, incon-  
 70 tinent anarmyt him to revenge ye slauchter of ye king his  
 broder. Quhill he was throw ye cuntre cheissing ane armye,  
 he was aduertist how Donald Insulane *with* stark power was  
 cumit in Lugia (now Rosß) and in all yai partis had vsit felloun  
 tyrannye. He tuke on him princelie estate; with exquisite  
 tormentis he afflictit all refusing his senezeorie, distribute  
 yare landis and bestiall to sic as to him assistit. At this  
 message ye king, departing fra Evon with ye fokis he had in  
 reddines, garte proclame yat all men habill to bere harnes  
 suld follow him to Murray, quhare placeing his campe, he  
 80 tendit tarye ye remanent. Quhen the Insulane knewe ye  
 king in Murray with small power and had yare stentit his Fo. XCV.  
 palzeouns, tending to mak on him haistelie invasioun in gude  
 ordoure, committing all his querell to yat ane batell, occurrit  
 in ye kingis meting, and on ye nycht with his armye was  
 present, or his cuming to the kingis folkis was knawin. King  
 Donald in ye dawing, on force to recounter the Insulane,  
 brocht his armye fra ye campe and *with* grete ordoure arrayit  
 yame for batell. The Insulane at first sicht of ye king, be  
 command of yare chiftane, made ane scharpe onset, with sa  
 haisty ane rusch yat ye kingis archearis had na space to  
 louß yare arrowis. Ane feirß bargane followit, and *with*  
 swerdis athir partie facht in front. The kingis folkis be  
 10 multitude of inemyis almaist war vincust, sua yat on force  
 yai behuffit draw yame in rowtis and cumpanyis fra the  
 plane feild, tending to renewe ye bargane. Bot quhen yai  
 had fochtin lang and war of leß pussance than inemyis, dis-  
 paring of helpe or reskewe, sum parte gaif ye bak, vtheris stiflie  
 stude quhil yai war slane, and sum to inemyis war randerit.  
 Of ye kingis folkis to nowmer of iij<sup>m</sup> war slane. Of yis infor-

Fo. XCV. tunate bargane ij<sup>m</sup> takin, and amang yame xxx<sup>tj</sup> men of excellent  
 nobilite with King Donald, quhilk on ye thrid day, mare be  
 m.l.t. 191<sup>b</sup> malancoly and disple<sup>sour</sup> than be ony wound or hurte, deceissit  
 ye samyn zere he ressauit ye crowne. Efter deceif<sup>s</sup> of King 20  
 Ethod foresaid, to yis tyme men of singulare erudicioun and  
 ingyne war liffand: Quintus Tertuliane, quhilk wrate mony  
 volumys contrare ye infidelis and aganis yare ydolatrie,  
 mawmentis and native goddis, be ye fulich gentilite anournit;  
 Policrate, bischop of Ephe<sup>s</sup>, the viij eftir Iohnne Ewangelist,  
 of grete studie and doctrine, in quhais tyme rais<sup>s</sup> hevy con-  
 tencioun amang bischoppis of ye orient twiching ye solempnite  
 of Paif<sup>s</sup>, quhilk eftirwart was discussit be mony sindri opiniouns  
 as has remanit inviolate of lang tyme; Cipriane, quhilk of  
 ane heithin oratoure grewe to ane profund theolog, and be  
 persuasioun of Preist Cecilius was first maid preist, syne 30  
 bischop of Cartage, vsing his conversacioun according the  
 office of ane haly pasture of ye kirk; attoure he wrate diuers<sup>s</sup>  
 thing<sup>s</sup> nocht litill decoring eftirwart ye kirk of God. About  
 yis tyme the state of ye Cristianite had grete perturbacioun,  
 be persecucioun of Dioclesiane begynnyng, and be crudelite  
 of Valeriane and Aureliane, empriouris, augmentit. During  
 yare senezeory devote men and wemen that confessit ye faith,  
 be hevy iniur<sup>s</sup> war persewit, like as Sixt, Cipriane, Laurence,  
 Hipolit, Barbara, Cecilia, Agatha, virginis, with vtheris  
 innowmerabill confessing the name of Criste, war condampnit  
 to dede, ressavng ye crowne of marthirdome. The samyn  
 tyme Scottis began diligently to authoris and embrace ye 40  
 faith be exhortacioun and exempill of certane kirk men callit  
 Culdeis, ithandly vaking to preaching and teiching mekill  
 in vrisoun exercit. Amang ye pepill this name Culdeis was  
 sa extemyt, yat almaist to yir oure days all preistis indefferent  
 war namyt Culdei, quhilk is to say, the woureschipparis of  
 Almy<sup>chti</sup> God. Be electioun thay chesit amang yame ane  
 bischop, of thing<sup>s</sup> concernyng dyvine seruice to haue power.  
 This bischop mony zere was callit Bischop of Scotland, as in  
 oure cronikillis is rememberit. Now to King Donald lat ws  
 returne, for like as his senezeorye was schort sa it was litill  
 ewro<sup>s</sup>.



How Donald Insulane vsurpit ye croun and con- M.L.T. 192  
 trynit ye nobillis consent *yareto* ; of his tyrannye  
 and crudelite ; how be Craithlint he was slane and  
 to Crathlint ye croun was gevin, and of his humanite  
 towart ye king of Pichtis. Cap° iiiij°

50 **N**or Donald of the Ilis, quhilk eftir deceifß of King Donald, Fo. XCV.  
 be force vsurpit ye crowne, had litill bettir fortoun. Daly  
 he schorit all his presoneris yai suld be slane, gif ony freyndis  
 to yame pertenyng devisit displesour contrare him or his  
 senezeorie. Herethrow ye nobillis of Scotland be force in  
 ane parte obeyit ye Insulane and *seruit* him with dissimulit  
 beneuolence. Howbeit secretelie yai devisit his distructioun.  
 The Insulane, knawing yare mynde and gevin to nane of  
 yame mekill credit, schew him to yame terribill, fering euery  
 man, suspecting euery cumpanye and convocacioun. Sua the  
 kinrik, evill conquest, was mekill wer gouernit. Ffinalie he  
 had sic fere yat he come neuer to *presens* without ane rout  
 of men in harnes, and be ane bustuous *proclamacion* chargit  
 yat nane except his *servandis* suld bere wapynniss. Giff ony  
 60 war sclanderit of rebellioun he causit yame be slane, without  
 respect to equite or resoun ; syne to his assistaris distribute  
 all thare gudis. Be yat way this bludy boucheoure, distroying  
 grete parte of nobillis, tendit *conserue* ye kinrik with sic  
 bludy handis and crudelite as he conquest it afore. Of sobir  
 and obscure origine he exaltit mony to riches, reiosing in  
 nychtboure feid, quhilk be his mervellus slicht was oftymes  
 kendillit amang ye nobillis, beleving be sic ciuil weris to haue  
 ye kinrik stabillit ; and gif yai had levit in concorde, he suld  
 neuer haue securite. He was glaid and leuch quhen he knewe  
 70 ony debate amang ye nobillis, and was ye mare reiosit quhen  
 mony war slane ; syne persewit ye *committaris* to ye dede,  
 and put hand to yare gudis yat war iniurit, oftymes sayand  
 amang his mynzeouns, he mycht haue na mare plesing sicht  
 yan to se men fecht and slop *vperis* with woundis ; the  
 slauchter of grete men and of pussance suld neuer be scharplie  
 reprevit be ane prince, becaus sic kynde of men war euer M.L.T. 192b

- Fo. XCV. noysum to kingis and the kinrik. Quhen in this sorte he schew him oure crewell to his liegis and to yare hevy skaith had prolongit his regnne nerrest xij yeris, abhorrit be yame as ane tyran, he passit to Innerlochte, tending to ye Ilis, quhare be conspiratouris on the nycht he was slane. The chefe of yir conspiratouris was Craithlinth (son of King Ffindok foresaid), quhilk nocht lang eftir was made king. This Craith- 80
- Fo. XCVI. linth be counsell of his foster fader, dissymuling his kyn, was accustomyt in cumpany amang the kingis *servandis*, be lang consuetude acquentit *with* the king and to him familiare. Ffinalie he had of him sic credit yat keparis at his plesure war chosin to awate apoun his persoun. Quhen be mony giftis Craithlinth had drawin diuerß of ye garde to his purpoiß, he tuke occasioun to conspire. Sua having oportunitie, quhilk he awatit lang, on ane nycht be caiß *present* with ye conspiratouris, alanerlie drawand nere ye king, as to *commoun* with him familiarlie, in chyare straik ane dagare throw his body. Departing syne 10
- with* the conspiratouris fra ye chalmer, closing the portis as ye king had bene left at rest, he went to the nobillis beside, to quham he knewe ye domynacion of ye tyran was abone mesure odioß, schewing how be his hand the mischeant prince was secretelie slane ; tyme was (gif yai wald schaw yame men) to remove the tyrannye of Donald, resaue yare liberte and eselie revenge ald iniuris. The barouns, memorative of surprisis resaut during ye regne of ye tyran, made yame sone to harnes. Syne in ye dawing persewand the mynȝeouns and counsalouris of ye king, beleiffing na thing les yan ony mocion of ye pepill, quhare parte war nakit, parte makand for defence, thay brocht yame sone to dede. Off counsalouris to yis tyran 20
- M.L.T. 193 to ye nowmer of ij<sup>e</sup> war slane in yis bruleȝe. The remanent in myddis ye reill, to evade perrell, fled to Athole. Bot quhen the kingis slauchter was divulgate thay war all slane be inhabitantis and vtheris, quhilkis, declynand ye tyrannye of ye king, remanyt in Athole for the tyme. In yis sorte be ȝong Craithlinth, to quham the kinrik heretably pertenit eftir ye tyran was removit, ye crowne to ye blude of Athirco was restorit. Ffor quhen his foster fader be ye grete aith and patent signis had declarit him the son of King Ffindok and

be him secretelie nurist, incontinent ye honorable confluence, Fo. XCVI.  
 30 be autorite of ye nobillis, with gude harte causit him be  
 salust souerane. Craithlinth, of yis *present* fortune glaid,  
 thanking ye nobillis and pepill, be ane lang proposicioun  
 rehersit ye giding of Donald the Insulane, be quhat wayis  
 he gouernit ye kinrik, evil conquest be reif, dissate, slauchter  
 of nobillis and *vpir* crymez, gif ony war mare detestabill ;  
 reduceand alsua to mynde how to ye kingis blude he restorit  
 the kinrik, quhilk wrangwisly fra yame was reft, and nocht  
 without dangere of his liffe, he had destroyit ye tyran maist  
 cruell of all vtheris, and with sobir nowmer of complicis had  
 perfurnist the mater, quhilk nane vthir durst attempt, as to  
 slay the chiftane in myddis his folkis ; exhorting yame all  
 40 *present* at ye convocacioun yai suld remove fra ye rute all  
 successioun of ye tyran, gif ony was, togiddir *with* all his  
 freyndis, and suld na langer foster yat bald bleifs of fyre  
 kindillit be sleuth of King Donald, quhen withoute avisement,  
 nocht taryng his folkis, he reconterit the tyran in batell,  
 quharethrow the realme of Scotland had brynt xij zeris, to  
 ye hurte of ye *commoun* weill ; it *mycht nocht* be slokynnyt,  
 bot was defoundit and spred amang ye housß of ye nobillis,  
 nowzir sparing ye kingis houß nor blude royall ; thay suld  
 fermelie address yare mynde to amend ye gyding of ye kinrik,  
 quhilk be iniquite of ye tyran tendit to rewyne ; giff yai  
 wald schaw yame of gude mynde to ye *commoun* weill, yai  
 suld schortelie think yame satifyit and applesit. This exhorta- M.L.T. 1935  
 cioun of ye king, togiddir *with* his plesand corporall pulcritude,  
 50 movit ye pepill to mak ye aith of fidelite. Ffollowit amang  
 ye pepill grete ioy. Sone eftir the childer and freyndis of ye  
 tyran Donald in all partis war comprehendit and brocht to  
 dede, without respect to age, youth or eild, male or femell.  
 Craithlinth, ordanyng iugeis of ye nobillis yat war best gevin  
 to *minister* iustice in ye realme, him self with zong nobillis  
 plesing of condiciouns, exercit hunting, as was ye custume  
 quhen ye kinrik was at pece. Hounding ye dere in the mont  
 of Grangebene, plennyst with forestis and strandis, con-  
 venient for courssis of hunting, to him come ambassiatouris  
 fra Thelarg, king of Pichtis, schewing how the king and ye

Fo. XCVI. nacioun of Pichtis had glaidlie resauit novellis that the tyran 60  
 Insulane was distroyit; the slauchter of his eme King Donald  
*with iniuris* done to ye blude royall was revengit, and ye  
 kinrik restorit to successioun of King Donald the First, *with*  
 quham yai had lang and familiare kyndenes; thay thocht  
 best yat conforme to ye rite of antecessouris, auld amyte  
 betuix athir prince and pepill *with* gude mynde suld be con-  
 tinewit; quharefore in name of yare prince yai exhortit ye  
 zong king stand constantlie at ye gude mynde of his forebearis,  
 becaus it conduit mekill to ye rest and eifß of athir pepill.  
 The king ansuerit to ambassiatouris (quham thankfully he  
 had resauit): It was resonabill yat ye king of Pichtis and  
 his pepill war comptit in ye nowmer of freyndis, becaus he  
 knewe yare study and gude mynde towart him and his pro-  
 genitouris; herefore he suld employ all his cure to kepe the  
 auld pece inviolate in tyme *cuming*, be sa mony ligis, allyais 70  
 and weris roborate, in defence of ye kinrik and liberte contrare  
*commoun* inemyis, and to ye end of his life he suld persevere  
 yarein. Ambassiatouris depeschit war rewardit *with* horsß,  
 M.L.T. 194 halkis, houndis, rachis and kennettis to present yare king, to  
 intertenye among yame amyte, as was ye custume, and to  
 Pichtland returnit.

How betuix Scottis and Pichtis for ane hound raiß  
 debate, and of athir iniuris done to vthir with fellony  
 and slauchter. Cap° v°

Quhen diuersß dayis war run certane zong gentill men of  
 Pichtis come to King Craithlinth to hunt with him in ye  
 mont foresaid. Pichtis, as yai war accustomyt, sett nettis  
 about strenthis of woddis, strate erdis or watter, syne with  
 rachis chaissit ye dere yareto. Gif yai evadit ye nettis yai 80  
 Fo. XCVII. followit coverit with levis and branchis to be vnpersauit be  
 ye beistis, and schot yame *with* dart or arrow, wery, forrvn  
 or at rest. Scottis detestit yis sorte of hunting, becaus fra  
 yare auld institute it was strange. Quharefore Pichtis, abiecting  
 nettis, bow and scheif, gaif yame to hunt eftir ye fassoun of

Scottis. Quhen thay considerit yare awne houndis in spede, Fo.XCVII.  
 fairnes, lang rymnyng and audacite war mekill behind ye  
 Scottis, yai desirit houndis of ye samyn kynde of doggis.  
 Scottis gaif yame frelie baith bikkis and doggis. The hunting  
 endit, and the king to Athole departing, thay prevelie fra ye  
 keparis tuke with yame certane houndis, amangis quham  
 10 was ane quhite as snawe, weill made, of spede and audacite  
 abone ye commoun cast of vtheris, and to ye king maist  
 plesing. This ye kepare of ye kingis houndis hevilie weying,  
 ffollowit ye stelaris, and quhen in vane he had desirit ye hound  
 to be restorit, attempting to tak him be force, be Pichtis  
 present he was slane. The servandis at slauchter of yare  
 maister raissing ane schout, certane Scottis baith nobillis  
 and commouns, quhilk at ye kingis command had convoyit  
 ye tynchell, returnit ; howbeit yai war on yare viage hamewart.  
 Quhen yai wer commovit be ye cruell slauchter, tending to  
 be vindicate, Pichtis on the tothir parte assemblit, addressing  
 to resist. On athir partie was slauchter, and mare cruell yat  
 20 yai faucht without armoure, nane fechtare knawing ye caufs  
 of bargane. In this haistie infortunate tuleze, of Scottis  
 sixty noblis war slane, with grete nowmer of commouns :  
 off Pichtis abone ane hundreth. The rumoure of yis cruell  
 bargane, be felloun slauchter on athir partie, kindillit yare  
 freyndis sone eftir to ane vthir batell, mekill mare cruell.  
 Ffor Scottis commovit be iniuris done, nocht tarying command  
 of the king, bot contracting power, invadit ye landis of Pichtis. M.L.T. 194b  
 Be na leß diligence, Pichtis in hete and ire anarmyt yame  
 contrare Scottis. Off new yai recounterit without chiftane,  
 standartis or ordoure, fechting quhil almaist yai war distroyit,  
 athir nacioun desiring abone mesure to be revengeit. Ffynalie  
 30 Pichtis had victorie. How beit of yare folkis to ye nowmer of  
 ij<sup>m</sup> was slane : off Scottis abone iij<sup>m</sup>. The remanent multitude  
 was chasit. Thir twa naciouns fra tyme of King Rewtha  
 ye vij eftir King Ffergus, to yat day freyndlie and confederate,  
 be licht occasioun (or ellis nane) war afflictit be sic myscheif,  
 yat be ye samyn yare myndis increscit euer in mare haterent  
 and rankoure. Apperandlie nocht ane without distructioun  
 of ye tothir was to desist. Sa mony skaithfull iupertis war

Fo.XCVII. made on nychtis and dayis with sa mekill slauchter and  
 fellony, that na man in his houß mycht be sure fra his nycht-  
 boure ; thare fellony and cruell malice spreding sa rife with  
 slauchter of vtheris that men and wemen, zong and auld,  
 indefferent, war slane. Thelarg, king of Pichtis, molestit 40  
 with age, and almaist consumyt be zeris, knowing be quhat  
 damage athir pepill had of suddante supprisit vtheris, be  
 wilfulnes of certane evill avisit persons, regretting na leß  
 ye skaith of Scottis yan his awne pepill, to King Craithlinth  
 send ambassiatouris, quhill softlie suld schaw he was sory  
 for ye dammage done in ye bargane latelie strikkyn, to ye  
 hurte of athir pepill ; he consentit neuer to sic wikkit dedis ;  
 na thing was done be avise of ye counsel bot all be private  
 ways ; na cryme aucht to him be imput, becaus quhare will  
 consentis *nocht*, na culpe suld be allegeit ; the pepill sum  
 tyme sa freyndlie was afflictit anewch and mare ; ffra iniuris  
 of vtheris, gude war to be abstenit in tyme *cuming*, and  
 to avise apoun ye *commoun* weill, quhen it mycht be surelie 50  
 knawin yat doutles throw sic debait Scottis and Pichtis  
 suld be sua supprisit, that Romanis mycht conqueß athir  
 kinrik, gif in yat wikkit weris yai perseverit ; he suld employ  
 his cure yat iniuris done to Scottis suld be haistelie remedit ;  
 he askit pece and gretelie desirit the samyn, and thocht bettir  
 yat ye first wrang be condigne punycioun suld be deletit, and  
 concorde made for weill of athir nacioun, erare yan persevere  
 M.L.T. 195 in cruell weris with dishonoure and skaith, to haue mony  
 douchty men distroyit. The ambassiatoure with difficulte  
 first impetrate yat to ye king yai mycht be admittit, he was  
 sa kindillit in ire be slauchter of sa mony Scottis nobillis. 60  
 Ffinalie hering yare petitions, be wise men of ye secrete counsell  
 he was teichit and gaif ansueræ : Na thing to him nor pepill  
 of Scottis was sa displesing as ye suddane perturbacioun of  
 ye pepill recentlye before sa freyndlie, and be inportune  
 wilfulnes of evill avisit persouns had debatit amang yame  
 self ; na man couth deny bot pece offerit bettir his realme  
 yan were ; *nocht*theles the recent iniuris war sa fixit in myndis  
 of his folkis, yat ye *commoun* consent was *nocht* to haue pece  
 (howbeit it was necessare), to ye grete displeßour of inemyis ;

quharefore sen he mycht nocht gif pece, mony of his folkis Fo.XCVII.  
 impreving ye lyig betuix him and Pichtis, he wald consent  
 to trewis for thre monethis ; in quhilk tyme suld be lefull  
 70 to ye nobillis of athir nacioun paß and repaß without hurt  
 to consult quhat best in sic grave mater was to be determyt.  
 Quhen be ambassiatouris this ansuere at hame was schewin,  
 the king of Pichtis be avise of his nobillis thankfully resaut  
 ye trewis, tending employe his diligence to haue ye present  
 debate mytigate amang ye twa naciouns, sa lang togiddir  
 confederit, yat greter inconvenientis mycht be eschewit.  
 Nocht yeles be na lauboure, *proclamacioun*, *command*, *terroris*,  
 nor punycioun, he mycht nocht provide, bot oftymes iupartis,  
 slauchter, reiff and thift war maid, athir pepill for destructioun  
 of ye tothir lauborit sa mekill.

How Carance dispulezeit Romanis of Britane ; how  
 be ambassiatouris he exponit to King Craithlinth  
 his desiris ; how yai appoyntit ane meting, and  
 how Carance recouncillit the kingis of Scottis and  
 Pichtis. [Cap<sup>o</sup> vj<sup>o</sup>]

Quhill in this sorte Scottis and Pichtis war intent to yare  
 80 *Lawne* perdicoun, Quintus Bassiane, Romane legate in  
 Britane, had mekill trubill. Ffor Carance (quham Ewtropius  
 callis Cawras) quhilk latelie before (as said is), fering punycioun Fo.XCVIII.  
 and for tresoun in his broder wilfully exilit the cuntre, reft M.L.T. 195b  
 fra Romanis the domynioun of Britane, expelling yare garnisoun  
 and putting yame to grete pyne. Howbeit he was repute be  
 Romanis of obscure origin (for he dissymulit his kyn), zit in  
 ordinance of wagis, in Illiric, Gallia and Italie he conquest  
 grete renoune ; he was with emprioure and senatouris sua  
 extemyt, yat for his vassalage yai thocht he mycht of resoun  
 hafe ane province in reull. And (as writis Ewtropius) he  
 was chargit be ye Empriour Dioclesiane *with* garnysoun  
 defend ye coist of ye occiane sey about Armorik (now Litill  
 Britanze) and Gallia fra iniuris of Ffrankis and Saxons,  
 10 infesting ye sey in yai partis. Thus admirall to ane stark

Fo. XCVIII. navyn, weill furnist *with* weremen, be policie he wald nocht  
 recounter inemyis quhil he knewe yare schippis chargeit with  
 ryches, yat quhen he had reft ye samyn fra piratis and reiffaris,  
 he mycht brook ye pray; syne nowthir restoring it to ye  
 cuntre men, nor sending it to ye empriouris, he grewe to  
 grete riches. Be certane signis knowing how Maximiane,  
 president of Gallia, had devisit his slauchter and had revelit  
 sum parte yareof to certane persouns, and knowing he had  
 failjete, with navyn, weremen and gudis evill wyn, directing  
 his courß throw ye occiane sey by ye coist of Ireland, he  
 arrivit in Britane, at Westmorland obeying ye Romane  
 senezeorie for ye tyme. At yis coist landing his army without 20  
 difficulte, inhabitantis making na interrupcioun, he tuke ye  
 province to Craithlinth, king of Scottis, his nevo of his broder  
 King Ffindok; syne directit ambassiatouris quhilkis suld  
 schewe how Carance, for slauchter of his broder suspectit,  
 wilfully exilit the realme, had bene lang tyme destitute of  
 help, vagabund and indigent. Ffinalie amang vthir wageouris  
 he was chosin to pas in werfare apoun Peirß with ye Emprioure  
 Carus, quhare schortlie be wichtnes of handis and gude langage,  
 be ye empriour, of quham he had credit, he was create capitane  
 to j<sup>c</sup> speris, and yareeftir lieutenant, schew sa preemynt  
 exempill of vassalage yat be votis of all his cumpanzeouns  
 he was made admirall to ye Romane navyn, to defend ye  
 coistis of Gallia and preserue the flote fra danger. He was  
 M.L.T. 196 directit fra ye Emprioure Diocleciane contrare Saxouns and 30  
 Frankis, pepill of Almanze, piratis and reiffaris, quharethrow  
 he augmentit mekill his riches and glore of his name. Bot  
 before the emprioure he was be invy accusit of tresoun, for  
 cryme of lese maieste, and declynyng ye accusacioun devisit  
 contrare him be Maximiliane, as be ye weremen he was assurit,  
 directing his courß throw ye Ireland seyis with navyne, sub-  
 stance and weremen, he arrivit at Westmarland. He had  
 resauit yat cuntre to fidelite, ffor inhabitantis, wery of ye  
 Romane senezeorie, had distroyit ye garnisoun and become  
 wilfully randerit. He had sure esperance, gif Scottis and  
 Pichtis wald fortifie him *with* supple, he mycht eselie fra  
 Albion expell Romanis, aganis quham he had rebellit in ane



parte contrare his will. He knewe weill ye Romane power Fo.XCVIII.  
 40 in Britan daly decrescit. Diocleciane, empriour, be rebellious  
 was almaist opprest, Achilleus conspiring in Egipt, the  
 quinquegencians infesting Affric and Narseus wering in ye  
 orient, yat be na way he mycht fortifie yame with supple.  
 It mycht conduce mekill to ye honoure of Scottis and Pichtis,  
 gif Romanis be yare pussance war drevin fra Albioun. It  
 was commodioß and honest to se ane native man of yare  
 awne blude bruke superiorite in Britane. Thay mycht eselie  
 cum yareto gif yai wald slokin all haterent and rankoure  
 quharein yai daly laborit and wald returne to concorde,  
 quhilk he desirit maist. He suld to yat effect employe his  
 pussance and cure. In quhat place yai wald appoynt he suld  
 convene. He suld commoun of pece. Sua yai wald yareto  
 50 condiscend yat be acceß of athir power yai mycht be mare  
 robust and strenthy to end ye weris at yare plesoure. As  
 twiching ye slauchter of King Ffindok, he was innocentlie  
 defamyt of yat detestabill tresoun. Quhen he wilfully absentit  
 himself he declynit erare invy yan punycioun. The tresoun  
 was movit be ye tyran Donald Insulane and be nane vyir,  
 like as be his miserabill end was schewin. In presens of the  
 nobillis and pepill he wald mak his purgacioun of that cryme.  
 The king, hering ye name of Carance, how valezeant he was in  
 chevelrie, how opulent, quhat navyn he reulit, how mony  
 weremen apoun him awatit, awondering certane tyme, and M.L.T. 1966  
 thinking sic oportunyte was nocht to be contemptnit, ansuerit  
 to ye ambassiatouris: He had forzett all iniuris gif ony before  
 60 war done to his fader; he reiosit in ye present felicite of his  
 eme; Carance to him was maist acceptabill; his offeris to  
 him war plesing; with his folkis he suld fulfill his desiris, gif  
 it plesit Pichtis remove all rankoure and appoynt pece of  
 newe; gif yai thocht vthirwayis he suld prepare ane armye  
 of his pepill, in supple of his eme; bot he behuffit tarye at  
 hame; in aventure quhen he werit contrare Romanis, he  
 suld expone his liegis, yare wyffis, childer, and gudis to be  
 dispulezete be nychtbouris inemyis. The ambassiatouris of  
 Carance war ansuerit conforme to this effect be ye king of  
 Pichtis, to quham sonar eftir yai passit as yai had in charge.

- Fo. XCVIII. Quhen Carance be ambassiatouris knewe he was in favouris of Craithlinth his prince, he was na litill reiosit. Incontinent departing fra Westmarelund, stuffing mwnicious and strenthis 70  
*with* garnisoun, and leving ye armye in ye campe, *with* ane gudeliie cumpanye at ye ryver of Esk, nocht fer fra ye Dyke of Adriane, he mett ye king, at quhais presence, falling to ground, be mony resouns he schewe him innocent of ye cryme obiectit contrare him, twiching the slauchter of King Ffindok his broder; praying with mony wourdis myxt *with* teris he suld nocht suffir him be deffamyt *with* sic dishonoure; in tyme *cuming* he suld remove al suspicioun consaut in his contrare; it conduit na leß to the kingis honoure þan to his glore, quhilk, exilit amang strangearis fer fra his native cuntre, be vassalage conquest sa mekill glore, and *with* sa stark ordinance had returnit to his cuntre. The king, with glaid continance enbraissing Carance and conforting him with 80
- Fo. XCIX. freynd[*l*]ie wourdis, exhortit he suld of him haue gude consate, of quhilk doutles he suld haue experience; he suld omytt na thing of his purpoiß, quharethrow (gif God war freyndlie) be his laubouris he suld prepare na litill proffitt to his freyndis; nane suld be to him mare *dere* in tyme *cuming*; he suld concur with him contrare inemyis with ane gudeliie armye, gif ye
- M.L.T. 197 civil weris betuix him and Pichtis made nane impediment; ffor *propin*[*q*]ute of blude he suld beleif of him thir premisß and mekill mare. Carance expert of ye kingis clemence wox glaid, and in presence of ye king opynnyt his intent, as he had schewin afore be am[*ba*]ssiatouris: how Romanis fra Britan mycht be inhibit, how Britouns mycht be subiectit, how þare kinrik mycht be conquest and transferrit to ye crowne of Scotland; to perfurnis yir premisß gif Scottis and Pichtis wald assist, 10  
 he had pussance eneuch; quharefore gif it plesit the king, he wald *commoun* of pece *with* ye king of Pichtis, that, conforme to ye auld consuetude Scottis and Pichtis adionit, with his weremen mycht mare eseliie expell thare ald inemyis. The offeris of Carance to ye king war plesing. Nocht lang eftir, be wayis of Carance, athir prince with sobir tryne and nobillis of athir nacioun, to *commoun* of pece *with* gude hert convenit. Carance, standing betuix ye kingis and be mony resouns

detesting ye vnkyndelie discorde betuix freyndis and con- Fo. XCIX.  
 20 federate pepill, wyislie gaif him to induce yame to concorde,  
 affermyng ald affinite oftymes to ye *commodite* of ye pepill,  
 betuix princis and nobillis is renewit ; lygis and bandis (howbeit  
 inemyis wald impell) ar nevir violate without grete hurt of  
 ye prince and pepill : thay suld remember how frequent weris  
 yai had togiddir vsit apoun Britouns and Romanis in defence  
 of yare liberte, sua yat iniuris to athir pepill done war repute  
*commoun* to vthir ; and how euer to yat tyme amang yame  
 was sa mekill cherite, sic bandis of kyndenes and sa gude  
 mynde baith at hame and in weris, nane of thir premisß  
 suld draw yame to sedicioun, bot erare to concorde and pece,  
 30 quhilk *nocht* alanerlie he, bot siclike euery gude Scott and  
 Picht regarding ye *commoun* weill, suld desire ; ffor suddane  
 slauchter movit be ane haisty bruleze, yai suld nocht con-  
 tinewe in weris, quhen *nocht* alanerlie it menit distructioun of  
 ane clan of regioun, bot ye haill rewyne and fall of athir kinrik ;  
 herefore owthir pece was to be renewit or haistelie to be  
 exponit to extreme perdicion ; nocht alanerlie men bot vthir  
 beistis of gentill and meik ingyne abhorrit fra sic discorde ;  
 to pece baith humanite, beneuolence, faith, all lawis baith  
 of God and man vehementlie persuadit ; quharefore all M.L.T. 1976  
 iniuris suld be freyndlie amendit ; pece be the princis, nobillis  
 and pepill suld be cherist, without yai war determit to vndo  
 and *annull* baith public and private glore and honoure. Be  
 40 the wordis of Carance and vtheris *present* at ye meting, the  
 kingis war persuadit of athir pepill to cheiß foure, at quhais  
 plesere ye auld pece, be artikillis as afore be ane new band,  
 suld be roborate and yareeftir fermlic obseruit. Quhen this  
 was done, throw all the multitude viij men of authorite and  
 wisdom war chosin, quhilk sone eftir be menys and prudence  
 of Carance decernyt as the princis had devisit.

Fo. XCIX.

How Carance slewe Bassiane, Romane legate, in batell and tuke the croune of Britane; how be Alect, legate, Carance was betrasit; how Alect, rebelling contrare the empriour, vsurpit ye realme of Britan; off his slauchter; of crudelite of Dioclesiane contrare Cristianis; of his deceif; how Constance, empriour, come in Britane and contracting mariage with the dochter of Coele quhilk had invadit the croun, sufferit him regne, and how grete Constantyne, empriour, was borne. Cap<sup>o</sup> vij<sup>o</sup>

Quintus Bassiane, Romane legate in Britan, this tyme be writing aduertist how Carance had conspirt of rebelloun and failze of Westmareland, and of the slauchter of Romanis in yai partis keping strenthis. Nocht litill grevit hereat, 50 he chargit prepare ane armye and renewe ye were contrare Carance, testifying be ane grete aith he suld with all his pussance revenge the tressoun and dissait of yat vagabund. Quhen certane dayis war rvn, he come in Westmareland, quhare knawing be exploratouris how inemyis in thre oistis of Scottis, Pichtis, and weremen of Carance war cumin to zork, had takin the ciete randerit, and abstenit fra iniuris of inhabitantis, quharefore to ye commouns yai war richt acceptabill, he chargit his folkis with stout corage tranoynt toward thay conspiratouris. Howbeit he suspectit the fortune of Romanis, be sa mony rebellious attanis lawboring, and knew weil the implacabill rancoure of Britouns contrare him and his folkis for yare tyrannye, zit hevely suffering yat tratoure 60 Carance (as he allegit) manesworne, fals, fenezeing him of ye blude royall, quharethrow he mycht drawe Scottis and Pichtis, for the tyme at dedelie fede, to contempne the pece made with Romanis and to persewe yame be batell abone mesure. Herefore he desirit to haue his attemptatis punyst. In ye nycht following, at ane strenth environyt with moß eird, he lugeit his armye. Carance nocht abone x myle distant, knawing ye caifß be skurreouris, rasing pallzeouns, secretelie gidit be certane larouns expert of ye grund and rewardit yarefore,

M.L.T. 198

movit towart Bassiane his armye, to quham in ye dawing Fo. XCIX.  
 70 entering, at ye halfs of ye strenth in gude ordoure occurrit.  
 Bassiane, knawin to haue ane sare bargane, *with* schort wourdis  
 exhortit his folkis to ye feild: yai suld be memorative thay  
 faucht for ye richt contrare fugitivis and conspiratouris aganis  
 yare princis; thare chiftane was ane boucheoure of his awne  
 blude, dissymuling his origine and cuntre, fals and full of  
 dissate, ane dissymulit theif, vnleil and vnworthy, contrare  
 quham ye goddis for his crymez mycht nocht be vncommouit;  
 thay suld before yare ene statute the manhede of Romanis,  
 quhilk now baith be goddis and mortall men was extemyt  
 and prisit; the rewarde of yare victorie by ye opulent and  
 riche pray suld be flurissing lawde and fame, of perpetuall  
 glore to ye posterite. The chiftanis of inemyis war na leß  
 80 diligent to exhorte yare folkis to behaue yame stoutlie in ye  
 bargane, allegiand the armye of Bassiane, in ane cummyrsum Fo. C.  
 place for batell, behuffit fecht; grete parte of yame war  
 Britouns hating Romanis na les yan did Carance, and yarefore  
 quhen yai persaut ye chiftane in dangeræ yai suld leif ye  
 bargane; the victorie was reddy yare awne gif be fortitude and  
 hardyment yai wald assailze inemyis. Syne sounding ye  
 trumpettis to ione ye feild, quhen inemyis baldlie straik downe M.L.T. 1986  
 Romanis, the Britouns in the army of Bassiane turnyng fra  
 the feild, and falezeing fra Romanis, nocht like flearis bot in  
 gude ordoure movit softlie to ye knowis beside. Thare feris  
 nixt yame ordorit, knawing ye skirtis of yare armye denwde  
 10 and bare, memorative mare to salf yare livis than of victorie,  
 failzeing in curage, made to flicht. Victouris persewing ye  
 flearis impeschit be boggis and marreß, slewe yame crewelly,  
 abstenyng fra slauchter of nane, howbeit humelie yai requirit  
 mercye. Carance, persaving sa vntelland murthir, gart sound  
 ye trumpett to ye retrete, quharethrow ye weremen, leiffing  
 ye chaisß, returnit to yare standartis. In this bargane Quintus  
 Bassiane, legate, and Hircius, procuratour of ye emprioure,  
 war slane, and with yame by Romanis grete nowmer of  
 wageouris and gadering. Fferder, Britouns, quham we said  
 20 to Carance war subiectit to his command. Carance held with

Fo. C. him ye noblis of Britouns nocht abone lx ȝeris nor na leß ȝan  
 xx<sup>tj</sup> ȝeris in plege of ȝare fidelite, suffering ȝe remanent departe.  
 Syne conforme to ȝe lawis of weremen deviding ȝe pray  
 amang Scottis, Pichtis and ȝe armye of Carance, moving his  
 ordinance to Londoun, quhare, ressavng ȝe towne and toure,  
 he tuke ȝe purpure and crowne of Britane, reiffng ȝe seneȝeory  
 ȝareof fra Romanis in ȝe iij<sup>e</sup> xlvj ȝere eftir, be Iulius Cesare,  
 it was to Romanis made tributare. Of Scottis and Pichtis  
 to ȝe nowmer of ij<sup>m</sup> remanit with Carance to awate on ȝe 30  
 sure keping of his persoun; the remanent, with copioß pray  
 and richeß departing to ȝare awne, togiddir with ambassi-  
 atouris of Carance to schew his ewroß fortune to ȝe twa  
 princis of Scottis and Pichtis, to quham he deliuerit West-  
 marland, Cumbirland, with all ȝe boundis betuix ȝork and  
 ȝe Dyke of Adriane. Quharefore, nocht alanerlie to Romanis  
 bot als to Britouns, he was odioß. Carance hereeftir be mony  
 M.L.T. 199 sare barganis of Romanis was persewit, bot in all he was victor  
 and be mervellus prudence stabillit to him the realme of  
 Britan. Ffinalie vnder coloure of amyte he was slane be tresson  
 of Alect, Romane legate, quhilk of subtile and wilye ingyne  
 come in Britane, feneȝeing to be sociale with Carance in all 40  
 his affaris. Quhen in ȝis sorte he was betraissit, Alect, nocht  
 of pussance to restore Britane to Romanis—inhabitantis all  
 way refusing ȝare seneȝeorie—to wyn the favoure of ȝe  
 cuntre contempnyng ȝe Romane maieste, he attemptit  
 tyrannye and tuke ȝe crowne of Britane. He liffit nocht  
 lang ȝareeftir, ffor in the thrid ȝere eftir he had slane Carance,  
 nocht onelie of domynion bot als of life he was dispuleȝete,  
 be wayis of Asclepiadot, quhilk (as writis Eutropius) was  
 president in ȝe Romane ciete. Carance brukit ȝe crowne of  
 Britan vij ȝeris, employing all his laubouris ȝat betuix Scottis  
 and Pichtis pece suld be obseruit. Alect iij ȝeris onelie regnit. 50  
 Sua ȝe tent ȝere eftir Britan was occupijt be tyrannys, it  
 returnit to Romanis. In ȝis tyme Craithlinth, king, with  
 diligent cure did mony actis to ȝe vtilite of Scottis, and  
 obseruing pece with Pichtis, conquest honorabill lawde and  
 name to ȝe posterite. During his regnne, the Emprioure  
 Diocleciane taking twa collegis, Constanc Maximiliane and

Galery, eftir mony weris perfurnist be variabill fortune, Fo. C.  
 pecifying ye maist parte of ye warld, ffirst of all vthir Romane  
 princis wald be adorit with kinglie estate, quhen before yat  
 tyme princis war bot salust alanerlie. To princelie ornamentis  
 he gart eik preciofs stanis of diuerfs kyndis, in his abilzementis  
 60 and schone, coloring yis pompe with honeste, howbeit it  
 mycht erare be ascrivit to insolence. Before yat tyme ye  
 cognissance of ye emprioure was sett in his mantill, rob of  
 purple or cote armoure. All vthir abilzement of ye prince  
 was commoun with ye pepill. Dioclesiane be na les tyrannye  
 persewit ye name of Criste oure Saluatoure, yan be insolence  
 he vsurpit sic pompois cognysance. Be sic felony he afflictit  
 Cristianis yat within few dais in ye oryent (as writis Eutropius)  
 abone xvij<sup>m</sup> be diuerfs tormentis war slane, and in ye occident  
 mony ma. By thir was grete nowmer exilit and condampnit  
 to lauboure at myneris and metellis, or wyn stanys in querell.  
 Bukis contenyng ye Ewangell, Epistillis and Actis of Apostillis,  
 70 with vthir haly historyis, quhare yai mycht be fundin, war  
 brynt be his command, to haue ye name of Criste deletit. M.L.T. 1996  
 This furie nocht alanerlie in ye orient and occident was spred,  
 bot als in Britan (callit ye tothir warld), quharethrow ye Catholic  
 faith, be exquisite tormentis excogitate be yis wikkit tyran,  
 fury of tormentouris and lang contynuacioun of panys, was  
 almaist aluterlie eiectit fra Cristianis. Haly devote persouns  
 throw fere of persecucioun fleing to desertis and cavernis of  
 wylde beistis, evading his iniuris, leuit ane haly religious  
 life. Fferder, yis ilk Emprioure Dioclesiane, eftir at Rome  
 80 he had tryumphit apoun diuerfs naciouns, as Almanze, Gallia,  
 Egipt, Peirfs, Poill, and be grete wisdom had providit ye Fo. CI.  
 Romane Impire, quhilk he governit xx<sup>tj</sup> zeris, was molestit  
 be diuerfs maladyis, vnknawin to yat tyme, and wilfully  
 refusit ye Impire, chesing ane private life; and destitute of  
 mynde, grew in rage and furye be ye iuste iugement of Almychty  
 God, yat he quhilk sa proudefully iniurit gude and iuste persouns  
 suld nocht glore mare in wrangis done to vpiris than to him  
 self, at Salon quhen he grewe in age, he put violent handis  
 in his awne persoun. And sone eftir, be decrete of ye Senatouris  
 (as writis Eutropius), he was first and onelie of all private

Fo. Cl. persouns iniustlie ascrivit to ye nowmer of inmortal goddis, ane evident argument yat na mortall men be flattery of warldlie 10 vanyte suld haue esperance of perpetuall blifß. About ye tymes thir premisß war done, Coell, of ye ald blude royall of Britan, of grete nobilite, wisdom and authorite amang vyiris in Albion, dispiting the tyrannye of Asclepiadot, Romane legate, rebellit with all Britan, and contracting stark power, persewit ye legate and Romanis; quhilk knowing ye purpois of Coell, had before assemblit grete power; and melling in batell, Coell without grete difficulte was victoure, slaying ye legate with Romane garnisoun and diuers vtheris heris of Britan assisting to Romanis. Eftir ye feild tynt, quhen the remanent Britouns war resauit to fidelite, the pepill, tending to haue ye crowne restorit to the blude royall, ffra quham 20

M.L.T. 200 wranguislye it was reft, be consent of ye nobillis with glaid hartis ordanit Coell to regnne. And he, thankand ye nobillis and pepil of beneuolence to haue ye kinrik stabillit, causit proclame yat all Romanis, and Britons to yame assisting, suld be ceirsit and slane quhare yai mycht be apprehendit. Quhen yis proclamacioun was divulgat, ye Empriour Constance fra Gallia (now Ffrance) with ane copioß armye be Calice, sonar yan ony belevit, arrivit at Britan. At his landing Coell, king of Britan, was present with power, reddy to defend his cuntre and liberte. Bot without grete difficulte he was vincust, his army discumfist, and disparing to renewe ye 30 batell, tuke ye flicht. On ye morne the emprioure, be captivis of Britanis certijft quhat man was King Coell, of quhat kyn he was descendit, and be quhais persuasioun he had attemptit ye batell, be nobilite of his lynnage movit of his mysfortoun, devising to bynd with him amyte and pece, be ane herald freyndlie send for Coell, promitting faithfully he suld devise nane evil contrare him in tyme cuming, sa he wald pleiß remove the obstinacioun of his mynde, and, as did antecessouris, be randerit to Romanis. Coell for ye tyme was molestit be infirmite, contractit of cald in ye nycht and lang walking, to quhilk he was nocht accustomyt quhen he had ado contrare Romanis. Quhen Constance, emprioure, past 40 to gif him consolacioun, he band with him ane lyig and sufferit



him bruke his crowne as afore. And that to þe public band Fo. Cl.  
 ane vthir private of newe suld be adionit, he tuke in mariage  
 Helene, the onelie dochter of King Coel. Be þis affinite Romanis  
 and Britons has esperance þat þe lang weris suld be endit.  
 Sone þaræftir þe emprioure vesijt þe Romane castellis and  
 mwnicions in Britane, be ciuil weris owthir failzeit or dis-  
 troyit, quhilk appoynting of new he stuffit *with* strang  
 ordinance. Quhen he enterit in townys or burrowis, resaving  
 inhabitantis of new to þe Romane opinioun, he *commandit*  
 þame obey Coel during his regne, becaus to þe empriour and  
 Romane pepill he was maist freyndlie of ony vtheris. Schortly  
 50 heræftir, of þis newe mariage ane fare man chylde was pro- M.L.T. 2006  
 ducit, be his parentis namyt Constantyne. Quhen þis childe  
 grew to mannys age, he was decorit with excellent *cunning*  
 and fatis of chevalrie. Syne eftirwart bruking þe Romane  
 Impire, kendillit be the halynes and gude persuasiouns of  
 Siluestir, Pape, to resaue þe Catholic faith, he was þe first  
 emprioure quhilk grantit pece and quiet to þe kirk, decoring  
 þe samyn with mony tempillis, ryche giftis and rewardis.  
 Ffra thyne the Cristianite throw all þe warld was leß molestit  
 be infidelis. Bot lat ws returne to the actis done be þe  
 Emprioure Constance ane litill afore thir premisß. ∞

How Constance, emprioure, returnit to Britane, and  
 tending to invade Scottis and Pichtis, deceissit ;  
 how King Craithlint foundit the bischoprik of  
 Sodorenß (now Ilis) ; how he deceissit and gaif the  
 croun to Ffincormak his cousing ; how Herculeus,  
 legate, be Octavius was discumfist ; how be Trahere,  
 legate, Octavius was chaissit to Scotland, and how  
 Trahere tharæftir be King Ffincormak and Octavius  
 was chaissit fra Britane. Cap° viij°

**C**onstance pecifying the province of Britan as is before  
 rememberit, saling to Gallia and eftir Dioclesiane spilt,  
 made emprioure, quhen eftir certane 3eris he had maist  
 60 clementlie gouernit the Impire in the occident and done mony

- Fo. CI. preclare actis, having Gallia (now Ffrance) and Spaneꝛe pecifyit, he returnit to Britan; quhare, be persuasioun of ye nobillis, contracting ane copioſſ armye, *with* grete diligence he *preparit* ane expedicioun contrare Scottis and Pichtis, to chaisſ yame fra ye boundis of Westmareland, inhabit be gift of Carance, king of Britan, eftir Romanis and Britouns yarefra war expellit. How sone he had brocht his armye to zork and was certifyit how Scottis and Pichtis with power conionit, war *cumin* in Westmarland to resist ye power of Romanis, thinking he wald abstene certane tyme fra his
- M.L.T. 201 viage, be productioun of tyme to *cummyr* and tyre inemyis, quham he knewe mycht nocht in sic multitude sustene lang ye weris, he send ye Romanis to yare campe, suffering Britouns 70 skail and returne hame, *commanding* yat at charge of heraldis yai suld be reddily bodin to pas with yare chiftane to batell. Him self tarying oportunitate, passit his tyme at zork, quhare, quhen be mony persuasiouns send with secrete messengeris, be *promyttis* and giftis, and sum tyme be terrouris, he had assayit in vane to brek ye king of Pichtis fra Scottis, yare ald inemyis, and assist to ye Romane partie, be hevy seiknes he was vexit, and ye maladie invalescing, deceissit ye vij day yareeftir. The powder of his brynt carioun (as was ye maner) was put in ane veschell of gold and swete odouris of spicerie, to be placit amang ye honorabill towmbis of princis, and *with* lamentable pompe throw Britane, Gallia and Italie, was caryit to Rome. This Constance was of excellent 80
- Fo. CII. and notabill civilite, and for singulare humanite acceptabill to all pepill vnder his domynioun. *Nocht* yeles his fame (how beit vthir wais gude) was obscurit to ye posterite becaus he persewit Cristianis as did Diocleciane ye tyran. Quharefore grete nowmer of Cristianis, to declyne ye cruell persecucioun, fled to Scottis and Pichtis. Craithlint, king of Scottis, resaut yir fugitivis with gude hart, granting licence yai suld remane in ye Ile of Mon; erecting first in ye samyn, apoun his expensis, ane kirk dedicate in name of oure Saluatoure, auerting ye ald templis of Gentilis, distroying ye Drwidis and ceremonis, quhilk to yai dayis in yat ile had cours. In yis sege ane Britan namyt Amphibale, of singulare deuocioun, was first

create bischop. This haly man, sawand the doctrine of Fo. CII.  
 10 ewangell throw ye regiouns of Scottis and Pichtis, writing  
 and teiching mony thingis aganis ye ritis of Gentilis, liffit  
 to perfite age, and maid ane glorioß and happy end, as efferit  
 ane gude Cristin man. Attoure Craithlinth, king, anornit  
 yis new sete with mony riche iowellis, chalicis, patenis,  
 chandelaris and vtheris siclike necessaris, to ye vse of haly  
 kirk, of fyne gold and siluer, togiddir *with* ane altare, closit  
 about *with* coppir and braß, assignyng rentis of landis adiacent  
 to ye vphald of yir premisß. This tempill was ye first dedicate  
 20 amang Scottis, quhare ye bischop or prelate in rite of Cristianis  
 had his sege and prymacie, as oure cronikillis rememberis. M.L.T. 201b  
 Now it is namyt the Kirk of Sodorenß, quhilk we call ye Ilis.  
 To write quharefore it was namyt Sodorenß, lang tyme and  
 age has obscurit ye ressoun, like as of mony vthir thingis  
 and placis. Ffinalie King Craithlinth, be policie of religioß  
 and domestic actis, conquest ane nobill name to ye posterite,  
 and in the xxiiij 3ere of his regne deceissit ; in quhilk 3ere  
 Ffincormak, son of Cormak, eme to King Craithlinth, resaut  
 ye crowne be ye handis of Craithlinth apoun his dede bed,  
 euery man beseiking his gouerment suld be ewroß and happy,  
 and sitting in ye marbill chyare conforme to ye ryte of pro-  
 genitouris, was salust souerane. In ye tyme of Craithlinth,  
 or litill before his regne, men of singularæ erudicioun war  
 liffand : Iulius Capitolinus, Vopiscus of Siracus, and vtheris  
 30 before yame sum parte, Trebellius Pallio, Elius Lampridius,  
 Elius Spartianus, and Herodiane, Greek, all writaris of Romane  
 historijs, nocht alane<sup>r</sup>lie be writing of yare grete actis, bot  
 als be grete eloquence, decoring and magnifying ye Romane  
 Impire, as did diuerß vthir cunnyng men afore. Of oure  
 nacioun ye samyn tyme schynit in doctrine of Haly Scripture  
 Amphibale, bischope, Modok ye first, Calane, Fferane, Ambiane  
 and Carnok, trew *servandis* to Almychty God, callit Culdej  
 be oure ald vulgare langage, throw all regiouns of Scottis  
 with grete laubouris preiching ye doctrine of Criste our<sup>1</sup>  
 Saluatoure. That ilk tyme war mony vtheris, bot yir war  
 ye speciall yat yare namys come to knaulege of ye posterite.

<sup>1</sup> MS. of.

Fo. CII. Ffincormak began to regnne in *ye* iij<sup>c</sup> xxij zere of mannys 40  
 Saluacioun, eftir first beilding of *ye* Scottis kinrik vj<sup>c</sup> lv,  
 ffra begynnyng of *ye* warld v<sup>m</sup> iij<sup>c</sup> xc, and of Constantyne,  
 emprioure (quhilk for his preemynent vertewis was callit  
 Grete Constantine) *ye* first zere of his senezeorie. Mony  
 mocious and changis war in Albioun fra tyme Ffincormak  
 begouth to regne. Ffirst Britane was molestit be the *com-*  
*mouns, commovit* at *ye* tyrannye of Cayus Hercules (cousing  
 to Maximianus Augustus), quham *ye* Empriour Constantyne  
 had made legate in Britane. Octavius, prince of Tegenis,  
 was made cheif of conspiracion, becaus he was begottin be 50  
 ane Britan apoun ane Romane woman,<sup>1</sup> and be mony incom-  
 moditeis afflictit Romanis within Britan. Quhen Hercules,  
 M.L.T. 202 legate, *with* his folkis without ordoure dressit to dant this  
 mocion, he was be inemyis environit and *with* all *ye* Romane  
 horsmen and certane futemen, cruelly slane. Octavius, think-  
 and he wald vse his victory, with power passing to Londoun,  
 preventit *ye* novellis of *ye* legatis slauchter, quhare corrupting  
 the keparis of *ye* toure, he haistelie tuke *ye* samyn, and  
 cruelly slewe all *ye* grete men of Romanis in Britane for  
*ye* tyme in *ye* toure convenit to consult how *ye* instant were  
 suld be gidit, with diuers Britan nobillis favoring *ye*  
 partie. Syne adionit his power to *ye* heris of Walis, quhilk  
 abone mesure dispitit *ye* Romane senezeorie, exhorting *ye* 60  
 in all partis of *ye* ile *ye* suld distroye Romanis. Syne be  
 force wynnyng castellis, munycions and cieteis, he tuke princelie  
 estate to be callit king of Britons. To dant *ye* grete rebelloun  
 the Emprioure Constantyne send Trahere, ane nobil man  
 consul afore, wicht and robust in weris, and in pece richt  
 constant. With him Octavius melling in diuers iournayis,  
 finalie was vincust, and lossing his armye, to evade captiuite  
 fled to Scotland. Be *ye* victorie Trahere mare insolent and  
 proude, be ane herald chargit Ffincormak of Scotland send  
 to him bundin Octavius *ye* tyran, contrare *ye* Romane maieste  
 conspiring, vthirwayis he suld repute Ffyncormak inemye 70  
 to *ye* emprioure and Romane pepill. The king be avise of  
 his counsell hereto ansuerit, he had freyndlie ressaut Octavius

• <sup>1</sup> MS. *women*.

seking him with succoure, *nocht* yarethrow to offend ye Fo. CII.  
 Romane pepill, bot be resoun of ald amyte, be ye pepill of  
 Tegenis euer to him obseruit: and gif he suld betraifß his  
 freynd in his lawte affying, imploring his humanite, freyndlie  
 in his palace resaut, and neuer to him offending, it suld  
*nocht* litill obscure princely maieste gif he suld *nocht* abiect  
 him alanerlie, bot als suld deliuer him to inemyis to slauchter:  
 fferder, gif he was decernyt to move were wrangwisly, becaus  
 he wald *nocht* aganis ye law of nature betraifß his freynd,  
 he suld stoutlie resaue ye were, and debate his kinrik:  
 80 *nocht*theles he exhortit yat or he folelie denuncit the samyn, Fo. CIII.  
 he suld diligentlie consider quhiddir Romanis had conquest M.L.T. 202b  
 mare proffitt and glore, yan incommoditeis and dishonoure,  
 in ald weris movit contrare his progenitouris. Trahere  
 eftir yis message differring *nocht* his purpois, passit apoun  
 Westmarelant, and ye nixt vj day the power of King Ffincor-  
 mak, weill ordorit for batall, war in sicht of Romanis. Ffincor-  
 mak had vnder his baner to ye nowmer of xxx<sup>m</sup> Scottis (as  
 writis Veremwnd) and of Pichtis xx<sup>m</sup>, quhilk be resoun of  
 ye lyig with Scottis come in werefare contrare Romanis.  
 Of Britons war x<sup>m</sup> favoring ye partie of Octavius. By yir  
 10 grete confluence come daly fra all partis of Scottis and Pichtis,  
 augmenting ye armye. Of all yis copioß nowmer the legate  
 na thing agast, chargit his folkis desirus of batell pas fordwart  
 apoun inemyis. Quhen on athir partie all was dressit for  
 bargane, the king, or he wald ione the feild, be ane herald  
 demandit ye Romane legate quhy he had brocht his oist apoun  
 realmez of alienis na thing to him pertenyng, provokit be na  
 iniuris, and done sic *dammage* to freyndis and confederatis  
 as to inemyis, or gif he desirit erare iupert his armye to ye  
 chance of ane batell and wrangwisly invade his *nychtbouris*,  
 20 than be content of ye conquest made in Britan and leif at  
 plesand rest and eifß; desirit he zit assay ye pussance of pepill  
 situate in ye extreme partis of Albion, of na leß curage yan  
 quhen *with* King Gald yai stoutlie dang Romanis fra yare  
 boundis; and how beit Romanis to skaith of yame self and  
 inhabitantis had sum tyme victorie, yai *mycht* neuer regne  
 peciably yarein. The legate at yir wourdis *commovit*, gaif

Fo. CIII. nane ansuere, chargeing alanerlie be ye herald yat Ffincormak  
*with* his armye of Scottis and Pichtis suld leif all yare gudis  
 in pray to Romanis and remove fra ye provincis wranguisly  
 be yame occupyit : euery zere yai suld pay sa mekill tribute  
 to ye Romane procuratour as be the senatouris was *commandit* : 30  
 thay suld deliuer Octavius, tratoure *contrare* ye Romane  
 maieste, to be punyst : vthir wayis yai suld sone haue  
 experience quhat presumptuous folie is to sic barbare pepill  
 inexpert in weris, confiding in crudelite and furie, duelling  
 M.L.T. 203 in extreme partis of ye warld (bot erare *without* the warld),  
 and be wise nature fra all humane nacioun elongate, to con-  
 tempne ye charge of Romanis, lordis of all the warld. The  
 king, refusing ye peticiouns of ye legate, with arrayit batell,  
 and banar displayit, ionit with Romanis. Scharp and kene  
 was begvn ye batell : slauchter of athir partie by innoumerabill  
 woundis was almaist equale : ffinalie ye victorie apperit  
 inclyne towart Romanis, and yai had tryumphit gif yai had 40  
*nocht* bene affrayit be multitude of hirdis apoun ye nixt  
 montane, drifand yare gudis to *preserue* yame fra inemyis.  
 Herethrow Romanis affrayit fled but tary, quharethrow Scottis,  
 Pichtis and Britouns, wery for batell, had victorie. As oure  
 cronikillis writis, the victouris had abone xv<sup>m</sup> slane, nocht  
 all Scottis and Pichtis bot grete parte of yame Britons.  
 Romanis had abone xvj<sup>m</sup> lost. In myddis ye stoure the legate  
*with* ane sobir route removit, desisting *nocht* fra flicht quhil  
 he come to zork. Ffincormak and Octavius followit and 50  
 devising assege ye ciete, the legate fled to greter strenthis,  
 and yai war gladelie within ye ciete ressaut. Quhen ye  
 brute hereof was divulgate throw Britane, the nobillis become  
 randerit to Octavius and band *with* him pece of newe ; and  
 be yare assistance he was restorit to ye kinrik. King Ffincor-  
 mak *with* riche giftis and grete promittis was rewardit, according  
 his princelie maieste. Octavius be consent of his nobillis  
 made to him ye grete aith, neuer in tyme *cuming* to desire  
 fra him Westmareland with vthir Britan regions, gevin be 60  
 Carance to King Craithlinth of before. Trahere knowing  
 ye caiff fled to ye Ile of Wicht, to tary ye ansuere of ye  
 Empriour Constantine, quhat he thocht to be done towart

ye giding of Britane ; bot yarefra be Octavius he was expellit, Fo. CIII.  
and to Gallia departit.

How Octavius decretit Scottis and Pichtis suld be expellit the boundis of Britane assignit to yame be Carance ; how his folkis send to inhabit yai rowmys war slane be Scottis ; how Octavius was chassit to Denmark ; how the legate Trahere was murdrist ; how Octavius was thridly restorit to his realme, and how finalie he was tributare to Romanis ; how Ffincormak deceissit, and of diuers erroris in ye counsell of Nicea condampnit. Cap° ix°

M.L.T. 2035

At 3ork hereeftir ane convencioun of Britons was made, quhare eftir diuers materis proponit, it was concludit and with ane aith roborate yat with al pussance the commoun liberte fra iniuris of Romanis suld be defendit, the mony displesouris yai had resauit suld be revengit, and na strangearis suld bruke princelie autorite in Britane. Thareeftir in yis samyn convencioun was decretit, ye kinrik of Britane suld be extendit to ye ald marchis be3ound ye grete Dike of Adriane, and fra ye ald landis of Britan all alienis of vthir naciouns suld be expellit and new inhabitantis suld ioifs ye samyn. It was clerely knawin that yir actis war made be peruasioun of Octavius, vehementlie affecting ye haill sen3eorie of Britane. Thir actis war in caufs yat be command of Octavius (aganis his grete aith made afore) sone eftir were was movit contrare Scottis and Pichtis lauboring ye landis of Westmarland and regions adiacent of Britane, be gift of Carance vmquhile king of Britons ; ffor in begynnyng of his regne skantlie pacifyit he send in Westmarland x<sup>m</sup> men, charegeing the inhabitantis suld be slane, thare gudis dispule3it and Britouns owdir occupye yat regioun, or be contynuale invasiouns suld hald it waist. Scottis and Pichtis, noch mysknawand the mynde of Octavius, assemblit and with sare bargane resauit ye Britane power in Westmarland. Quha evadit slauchter returnit hame, wariand the dissymulance and dissate of yare

Fo. CIIII.

Fo. CIII. prince. About ye ilk tyme, Trahere, legate, resaving twa  
 legiouns and xx<sup>m</sup> of vthir supple, at *command* of ye *emprioure*  
 fra Gallia departit to Britane. Octavius thridlie in batell be  
 him vyncust, lossing ye maist parte of his armye, fled quhen  
 he was thus discumfist. Knawand him self culpabill, he durst  
 nowthir to Scottis nor Pichtis *commytt* credit of his life, 10  
 and *cuming* to ye mouth of Humbir, nere destitute of all his  
 M.L.T. 204 folkis, fynding veschell, and for wage conduceing ye samyn  
 to abide bettir fortune, salit by Denmark to Noroway. Eftir  
 Octavius vincust and chaissit, Trahere, increscing in strenth  
 and pussance be resorte of diuers Britouns for fere of tormentis  
 obeying Octavius, and before the bargane to him fled, with  
 all seuerite persewit the assistantis to Octavius, and finalie  
 subdewing ye province, to ye Romane senzeorie restorit the  
 samyn. Eftirwart brouking all ye cuntre peciabilly, he gaif  
 him to avarice; and birnyng in covatice, be insolence of  
 prosperite, of all Romane legatis before him in Britane  
 he was maist wikkit. Quhen nane repugnit to his corruptit  
 maneris, be diuers sortis of crudelite he eschamyt nocht  
 be fenezeit caussis to persew *commouns* and nobillis in yare 20  
 persouns and gudis. Quhilk was in caufs yat sum freyndis of  
 Octavius and vtheris, dispiting ye crudelite of ye legate,  
 quhilk distroyit all gudemen quham he suspectit, haistelie  
 brocht him to dede, beleving gif yat tyran be ony way mycht  
 be removit, Britouns mycht be to yare first liberte restorit.  
 Eftir ye dede of Trahere divulgate throw ye ile, crudelite  
 apoun Romanis was vsit. In na girth nor hallowit place was  
 securite, howbeit yai socht refuge, sa mekill was yare mynde  
 sett for extermynion of Romanis all atanis. Of sic thingis  
 done in Britane Octavius certifiyt be freyndis, with wageouris 30  
 and parte of Danys saling fra Denmark, quhare to yat tyme  
 he exul remanit, weill intertenyt *with* ye king, returnit to  
 Albioun, quhare, ye Britane nobillis to him resorting, he was  
 the thrid tyme restorit to his tynt kinrik; syne create officiaris  
 to *minister* iustice and resist to ye force of Romanis. Thare-  
 eftir without dissymulacion he grewe ane manswete, virtuofs  
 prince. How beit it is seildin yat men expert in aduersite  
 growis nocht mare insolent quhen yai haue fortune prosper.



Ffor to Ffincormak of Scotland sending precioß and riche giftis, he besocht him be ambassiatouris yat, forzetting all  
 40 offence, he wald stand in amyte *with* Britouns, quhilk had  
 expellit Romanis and abiectit the 3oik of thirllage; and he  
 suld bruke as afore Westmarland, Cumbirland and ye vthir  
 rowmys in Britane, be Carance vmquhile to King Craithlinth  
 gevin. In ye samyn sorte rewarding ye king of Pichtis,  
 according his magnificence, be ambassiatouris persuadit him  
 siclike. Quharethrow for ye mony preclare vertuoß vsit  
 eftirwart, and for diligence to hald pece amang ye pepill, he  
 was comptit amang maist nobill princis. Quhen be diuers  
 iupertyis of Romanis he had bene invadit and fochtin be  
 50 variabill fortune, ffinalie brokin and wery of batell, *with*  
 difficulte optenyng pece at Romanis, and deliuering to yame  
 castellis and mwniciouns, to liff at rest in his age, he pait  
 the tribute accustomyt to ye Romane procuratoure, and  
 be ye emprioure was sufferit perseuere in his dignite. Sua  
 quhen all was peciabil, Scottis, Pichtis, Britouns and Romanis  
 liffit at rest in Albion, quhil ye xvij zere of Constance and  
 Constantius, empriouris. Quhen Ffincormak, decorit be  
 mony vertwis, vailzeand in fatis of were, be lang contynuate  
 maladie ouresett be ane rewme and catar, deceissit, eftir  
 he had regnit in grete felicite xlvij zeris, in ye zere of mannis  
 Saluacioun iij<sup>c</sup> lvij. In yis tyme ye Catholic faith increscit  
 60 weill and was augmentit. How beit Arrius, preist of Alex-  
 andria, of grete cunnyng (bot elongate fra vertewe and godlines),  
 be wrang interpretacioun of ye Scripture movit doutis in  
 ye samyn, denyand yat Criste oure Saluatoure was verray  
 God, equale Son and coeterne with ye Fader, tending he  
 suld be seperate fra his eternale substance. The bischoppis  
 of Egipt and Palestine resistit lang to his peruersite. Ffinalie  
 Cristianis, fering this venom suld spreid (ffor sum parte for  
 ye present to his doctryne assistit), optenit fra grete Con-  
 stantine yat at Nicene suld be appoyntit ane generall counsell.  
 In quhilk, eftir lang disputacioun and deliberacioun mature  
 70 of ma yan iij<sup>c</sup> bischopis, be yare autorite yis cursit heresy  
 was condampnit, and decretit yat the Son suld be haldin  
 coeternale and coomnipotent to ye Fader. In ye samyn

- Fo. CIII. counsell ane vthir opinioun of ye Ebionitis, affermyng the glorioſſ Virgine naturalie consauit Criste, and of Sabellianis haldin ane persoun onelie in the Trinite, with diuersſ vtheris tending to fuleze the trewe faith of Criste be corruptit doctrine, war condampnit of heresie. Mony nobill decretis in yat counsell war maid, conduceing nocht litill to ye augmentacion of *our* faith. It is haldin yat Ireland (quharefra begouth ye
- M.L.T. 205 origine of Scottis) about ye ilk tyme resauit the faith and had bot ane sobir begynnyng, inccessing with mirakillis, as sum of oure writaris haldis. Ane Cristin woman of Pichtis blude in familiare seruice with ye quene preichit to hir 80
- Fo. CV. mervelluslie the name of Criste, and causit hir haue it in reuerence. The quene instructit ye king, and he teichit all ye pepill.

How amang the breder sonnys of King Craithlinth was questioun of the croun; how Romak and Angusiane contendit for the samyn; how Angusiane, vincust, fled to the Ilis; how Romake was create king; off his tyrannye and slauchter, and how Angusiane returnit and resauit ye crowne.

Cap° x°

**D**iuersſ naciouns in the orient and occident gladelie resauit oure faith during zit the regnne of Ffincormak. Eftir his deceiſſ as said is (to continew oure purpoisſ), twa of his sonnys war liffand, Eugenius, of xvij zereis in age, and Ethod, zongere be ane zere. As ye custume was fra the begynnyng, thir twa war diligentlie kept vnder cure of wise preceptouris, yat before perfite age yai suld nocht aspire to ye kinrik. This 10 was in caufſ yat be barouns of ye realme ane convencioun was made in Argathele for election of ane king. Quhare all ye nobillis convenyng, amang Romak, Angusiane and Ffethelmak, nevois to King Craithlinth, of thre sindri brethir, was hevy contencioun for ye crowne, ffor almaist yai war equale in age, freyndis, kynnyſſmen and substance. Romak by his faderis lynage begottin was apoun ane lady of Pichtis nacioun, and

yarefore throw athir parent of grete blude. Quharefore how Fo. CV.  
 beit he was 3onger yan ye vthir twa, he alleget ye crowne suld  
 be to him gevin, becaus he was descendit of ye eldest broder  
 nixt ye king. At ye convencion diuerß favorit his desiris.  
 Angusiane be richt of him self and Ffethelmak desirit ye  
 20 crowne, becaus in 3eris he preferrit Romak and be lang  
 experience was mare abill to reule ye kinrik. The disceptacioun  
 certane tyme indurit. Ffinalie quhen the mater be debate was  
 , attemptit, and certane men of arme3 war be Romak subornit  
 to sla his twa emys,<sup>1</sup> and empeschit of yare purpoiß, ane  
 brule3e was begunnyn; bot be autorite of ye noblis it was  
 sum parte repressit, and ye barons dissoluyng the conuencion, M.L.T. 205b  
 concluding na thing, departit. Hereeftir Romak and Angusiane  
 dalie debatit, devising castis of tresoun, be quhat way the  
 tane mycht bring the tothir to distructioun; be writing  
 30 and solistacioun of freyndis, promitting infinite giftis to the  
 nobillis, attemptit to drawe euery man of dignite, autorite  
 or office to yare way. Ffinalie, quhen be mony castis and grete  
 labouris tane to this effect, the maist parte assistit to  
 Angusiane, becaus he abstenit fra fraude, and schew gude  
 apperance of worthines, quhare he was kend, debarring nane  
 fra his *presens*, vsing honest studyis, and elder yan Romake,  
 he had mare experience of novaciouns and diuerß *mennis*  
 maneris. Romake be the contrare, of sle and subtill engyne,  
 to ye pepill vnpleasand be asperite and doure contynance,  
 40 doing all his *affaris* be angir and ire without gude persuasions,  
 sum tyme *with* bost, confiding in na *mannis* witt bot his awne,  
 be fere and terroure he conquest freyndis erare yan beneuolence.  
 Quhen ye nobillis had in vane lauborit to draw tendirnes  
 (for vtelite of ye *commoun* weill) amang thir thre contentent  
*cousingis*, sum thocht expedient that the kinrik suld be equalie  
 dividit. This devise was panelie imprevit, ffering gif the  
 kinrik war dividit, quhilk was at ane afore, it suld raisß per-  
 petuall were. Ffinalie Romake, *nocht* suffering ye lang tary,  
 inflambit be desire of ye crowne, with power of Pichtis and  
 Scottis favoring his partie contrare Angusiane and Ffethelmak  
 denuncit were. Angusiane, to quham Ffethelmak had *com-*

<sup>1</sup> L. *patruelles* = cousins.

Fo. CV. mittit the autorite, thinking na thing was to be barnelie 50  
 attemptit, maid instance to ye king of Pichtis he suld nocht  
 fostir civill weris betuix Scottis and yare auld confederatis,  
 Pichtis, bot erare reduce athir in grace of vthir, and exhorte  
 Romake his cousing to concorde erare yan to wrangwis weris  
 contrare freyndis, in hurte of the commoun weill, sen Romake  
 plesandlie without debate mycht haue ony thing, be resoun  
 to him pertenyng, within ye realme of Scotland. The king  
 of Pichtis tendit contirmand his folkis to Pichtland fra invasioun  
 of Scottis, bot be persuasioun of freyndis favoring Romak,  
 M.L.T. 206 fering gif he war denwde of power he suld throw tresoun  
 of Angusiane be slane, changeing purpois (extemyng mare 60  
 affinite and allya yan fidelite), ansuerit to ye petition of  
 Angusiane vthir wayis yan he desirit. This was in caufs  
 yat ye barouns of Scottis to Angusiane and Ffethelmak  
 assisting, be implacabill haterent brynt contrare Pichtis  
 yareeftir. Angusiane, be secrete exploratouris knawing ye  
 actioun concernit nocht ye vulgare pepill bot erare ye weill  
 of his persoun, and yat he onelie and nocht ye nobillis to him  
 assisting was to ye dede persewit, assembling power to sauf  
 his persoun at ye leist, recountring Romak in bargane he was  
 vincust, and with discumfist armye constrenit to fle; syne  
 with Ffethelmak his eme,<sup>1</sup> salit to the Ilis. Ane quhile yare  
 passing his tyme, quhen be diuerß signis he knewe ye Insulanis  
 towart him evill myndit, and devisit his slauchter, warying 70  
 yare tresoun he fled to Ireland. In yis sorte quhen Angusiane  
 was vincust and expellit ye cuntre, to Romake resortit grete  
 confluence of nobillis, be fortifying of quham he tuke ye  
 crowne. Bot as ye maner is of tyranis, he governit evil  
 ye senezorye wrangwislie conquest. Ffor knawing ony  
 persouns commovit contrare ye houß of King Ffincormak  
 (of quham is latelie made mencion) he tuke yame in familiarite,  
 and was sa weill applesit of yare frendship yat he chesit  
 of yame ane stark garde to kepe his corps. Thareeftir dis-  
 symuling rankoure contrare freyndis of Ffincormak he tendit 80  
 Fo. CVI. to vesy regions of Scottis, in all partis decreting and pro-  
 nounceing sentence at his plesure (how beit richt fewe war

<sup>1</sup> L. *patruelis*.

of his opinioun). aganis ye constitucions of antecessouris, Fo. CVI.  
 and tharethrow dispulzeit grete men (quham he plesit) of  
 yare gudis. In ye menetyme Ethod and Eugenyne, sonnys of  
 King Ffincormak (of quham before is rememberit), yat be  
 persute of Romake yai suld nocht be betraissit, be avise of  
 freyndis fled to Westmarland, and fra thyne to ye Ile of Mon. M.L.T. 206b  
 Thareeftir all nobillis and vtheris quhilk war belevit favoure  
 ye partie of Angusiane war banyst, and ithand slauchter made  
 without regarde to estate, kynde or age. The nobillis of  
 Scotland quhilkis be ye kingis dissate war nocht circumuenit,  
 10 provokit be sic extreme crudelite, amang yame be secrete  
 messengeris devisit to helpe ye state of ye kinrik yat was sa  
 waik and febill, and yat yai mycht effectuislie perfurnis yare  
 intent, diligentlie yai contractit ane power of folkis with sic  
 expedioun, yat or Romak knewe ony rebellioun yai war  
 nocht x mylis fra him distant. Romake ye tyran tending  
 declyne ye perrell, fleand to Pichtland, be persute of inemyis  
 comprehendit, resaut condigne fyne according ye crudelite  
 of his begynnyng and liffe. Apoun ane spere his hede with  
 grete dishonour was borne throw all ye route, to yame ane  
 plesand spectakill and sicht. In yis bruleze be Scottis was  
 distroyit grete nowmer of Pichtis, be quhais persuasioun  
 20 yis schrewit tyran without mercye vsit felony apoun Scottis  
 nobillis and yare gudis, to ye thrid zere of his regne, without  
 respect to honeste envagein contrare all yat obeyit ye name  
 of Scottis. Angusiane, hering ye tyran distroyit, returnyng  
 to Albion, be favoure of nobillis, votis of ye pepill and consent  
 of all estatis, was declarit king.

Fo. CVI.

How Britons rebellit contrare Romanis and restorit Octavius of new to ye crowne ; how ye legate Maximus come in Britan and dantit yare insolence ; how Angusiane, king of Scottis, be Nectane, king of Pichtis, was molestit with weris ; how Nectane refusit appoyntment of pece and was vincust, bot perseuering in weris gaif batell contrare King Angusiane, quhare athir prince was slane.

Cap° xj°

M.L.T. 207
30
40

Quhill ye realme of Scottis stude in this estate, ye gallandis of Britane, be lang pece insolent and proude, slew ye Romane legate and garnisoun, and to Octavius, than weill ageit (of quham we recentlie rememberit), restorit supreme dignite, strenthis, fortalicy, castellis and gude townys of Britan, as to yare iuste superiour and lorde. Skantlie was the zere rvn quhen fra ye Emprioure Constantius, son of grete Constantyne, quhilk, eftir his breyir and vthir tyrannys be diuerß castis distroyit, broukit onelie ye Impire for ye tyme, Maximus was directit legate in Britane, to resae the province, conserue it at fidelite of Romanis and stanche ye bruleze of Octavius, as ye cronikillis of Scottis and Britons affermys. Maximus ye legate, landing mony thousand weremen, sone yareeftir mellit in bargane with Britouns, falezeit fra Romanis afore, and had victorie. Herethrow he tuke esperance to subdew ye haill province of new to ye Romane senzeorie. Octavius, king of Britouns, at novellis of yis vnchancye batell, the thrid day following, be displesour mare yan infirmite deceissit, ffor he was ageit afore, and be hevy seiknes vexit for ye tyme. Eftir him he left Octavius, his onelie son, and he to evaid persute of Romanis fled to ye Ile of Mon, quhare, with Eugenyne and Ethod, he was certane zeris exilit and vnknawin. How beit Britouns be ane vnchancie bargane war afflictit, yai restit nocht, ffor vnwyislie ane litill yareeftir, fechting contrare Maximus, be ye thrid plaig yai war defeat, and of yare folkis mony thousandis slane, to ye innocentis within age and zeris. Maximus, to

50 subiect all to Romanis, passing throw ye cuntre ressaute Fo. CVI.  
 castellis, mwnycious and townys, wilfully randerit to fidelite  
 of Romanis. Quhare yai obstinatelie refusit his command,  
 he cruelly dispulezeit yame and vthir placis of litill estimacioun  
 and brocht all to sak. Quhill to sic studyis Maximus was  
 gevin for felice of the Romane Empire, Angusiane, king,  
 was trublit in Scotland; ffor Nectane, king of Pichtis, inflammyt  
 contrare ye slaaris of Romake his cousing, be mony incursiouns  
 waistit ye landis of Scottis. Quharefore Scottis be diuers  
 barganis and variabill aventure attemptit to resist his force.

60 Ffinalie Pichtis, be fortifying of certane Scottis quhilk hevily  
 weyit the distructioun of Romake, daly provokit Scottis to  
 batell. Howbeit Angusiane, king, be ambassiatouris lauborit  
 mekill for pece, and schewe him gevin abone all thing to  
 tranquillite and rest, praying ye king of Pichtis and chiftanis  
 remove all haterent, sua yat Scottis and Pichtis, content  
 of yare auld rowmys, mycht liff as did yare eldaris, defend  
 yare liberte, mak redrefß and stanche all debate and weris.  
 Quhen he knewe he desirit pece in vane, that his folkis suld M.L.T. 207b  
 nocht note him with cowardise, and yarethrow gif occasioun  
 to enbald inemyis, he contractit power and in gude ordoure  
 contrar yaim movit. Quhare eftir prekingis and licht skar-

70 muschis, thay fynalie with handis mellit, and striking ane  
 scharpe batell, the victorie to Angusiane inclinit, chaissing  
 Pichtis and slaying mony nobill men. Nectane, king, fra ye  
 vnchancye stoure be flicht seking safite, ceissit nocht quhil  
 in his ciete of Camelodune he was resaut. Quhare eftir  
 certane dayis, to be revengit apoun yis dishonoure, convenyng  
 his barouns, quhen with grete noye and angir be ane prolixit  
 harrayng he had complenzeit ye iniuris of Scottis done,  
 first to Romake his cousing, syne to himself and his pepill,  
 he proponit to move new expedicion apoun Scottis, be mony  
 argumentis schewing yat sic iniuris aucht with armys be

80 revengeit. Sum parte of nobillis, mare affectit to pleifß the  
 king than to regarde ye commoun weill, appreving his inten- Fo. CVII.  
 cioun, said he aucht with diligence pas apoun Scottis, and  
 at all his mycht, revenge the displesouris tane afore. Vtheris  
 thocht best to tary ane litill, yat be productioun of tyme

Fo. CVII. finding mare oportune, he mycht without grete hurt of his  
 liegis eselie be vindicate, as he vehementlie desirit. Nocht yeles  
 litill cure to yir wourdis was gevin. Quharefore Nectane,  
 king, largelie rewarding nobillis and vtheris of his opinioun,  
 decretit yat throw all Pichtland, Otolinia, Vicomage, Ordovice,  
 Deer (now Fiffe, Striuelingshire, Anandale, Merfs), and vthir 10  
 regions obeying his senezeorie, ane strang armye suld be  
 chosin. Be grete haist he assemblit copiofs nowmer, quham  
 he chargit move stoutlie fordwart, and he with strang ordinance  
 tranoyntit to ye Wod of Calidone. Quhil in yis sorte Pichtis  
 devisit yar ordinance, Angusiane, diligent to provide all his  
 affaris, suspecting yat Britouns be persuasioun of ye Romanis  
 suld be comionit with Pichtis to harme ye Scottis, tendit  
 collect ane stark armye throw his kinrik, to resist inemyis,  
 and draw King Nectane to concorde gif he mycht ony way.  
 Quharefore be ane herald he send him writingis ful of humanite, 20  
 beseking he wald be memorative of auld amyte betuix athir  
 M.L.T. 208 nacion and wald put end to sa perrellus weris or he passit to  
 batell, and on his folkis tuke skaith; wald propone ye samyn  
 condiciouns of pece at his plesour quhilk he was to desire,  
 gif he war victoure; it was expedient to haue consideracioun  
 of ye weill of athir kinrik; attoure gif Scottis and Pichtis  
 be civill weris lauborit yare awne destructioun, thay aucht  
 mekill fere the strang ordinance of Romanis, with ye legate  
 Maximus devising new castis apoun Britan, quhen be benevo-  
 lence and violence he had restorit ye samyn to ye Romane  
 senezeorye; gif he extemyt ye commoun weill, he wald aduert  
 yir premisfs; vthir wayis he suld be assurit yat he lauborit  
 his avn destructioun. The Picht, contempnyng yir resonabill 30  
 offeris and curing na thing lefs yan pece, chargeit his capitannis  
 convoye ye armye contrare Scottis. Angusiane on the tothir  
 parte with glaid curage was reddy for ye feild, mekill sonare  
 yan inemyis belevit, knawand weill it was force owder fle  
 with perpetuall dishonoure, or assay ye chance of batell.  
 Quhen inemyis approcheit, he schortlie exhortit his folkis  
 yai suld remove all fere and drede, ffor abone all thingis  
 stout corage was requirit to fechtaris; memorative of ye  
 vassalage of forebearis, yai suld tak gude hert; gif be fortune



aduersare yai suld be slane, thay suld *nocht* be vnrevengeit; Fo. CVII.  
 40 it suld *nocht* abas yare curage yat yai wer to fecht contrare  
 ye nacioun to thame vmquhile sa freyndlie; the failze was  
*nocht* in yame yat yai continewit *nocht* in kyndenes as afore;  
 thay had omyttit na thing yat mycht induce yame to pece;  
 herefore yai mycht beleif yat Almychty God, makare of pece,  
 fra sic men suld abstract his help as luffit *nocht* concorde nor  
 vnite. Angusiane, vsing thir wordis and sic like, put his folkis  
 in ordoure. Nor ye king of Pichtis abstenit *nocht* to exhort  
 his armye, schortlie persuading yai suld *with* cruel hartis  
 strike ye bargane. Quhen yis was said, athir archearis began  
 ye batell. Apoun yame followit ye futemen in licht harnes,  
 schot dartis and *with* slungis kest grete quantite of stanys  
 apoun inemyis. Thareeftir *with* speris, pikkis and swerdis  
 yai mellit. Scharp and feirß was ye assaleze of Pichtis;  
 50 Scottis stiflie resistit, and ye victorie lang tyme was doutsum.  
 Ffinalie quhen Angusiane sawe fortune planelie frawart him  
 inclyne, abiecting princely cognisance, ran amang ye fute  
 men, quhare, maglit *with* mony woundis, he was slane. Grete  
 parte of Scottis, beleving yat be sum debate of ye nobillis the  
 king was erare departit fra the feild yan slane, abiecting  
 M.L.T. 2085  
 armoure and wapynnys, fled to salf yare lyiffis. Vtheris,  
 obstinatelie sustenyng ye fecht, makand terribill slaucher,  
 fell finalie amang vtheris. Pichtis in yis sorte had victorie.  
 Bot to nowdir partie it was plesing, sen ye kingis *with* grete  
 parte of nobillis in athir armye war loist in batell. Sua yai  
 departit hame *with* bittir maledictionous, wariand sic vnkyndelie  
 60 weris and all yame yat inflammyt yare princis and pepill to  
 trubill vtheris, sa mony zeris conionit in *nycht*bourhede,  
 affinite, benevolence, kyn and allya, sa lang increscing *with*  
 concorde and vsing euer to repute the inemyis of athir pepill  
 commoun to vtheris. The estate of Scottis and Pichtis, fulezeit  
 in yis sorte be batell, was mare peciabil certane zeris following.

Fo. CVII.

How Fethelmak in thrid 3ere of his regne, eftir he had inuadit Pichtis and slane ȝare king, was murdrist on ȝe nycht ; how the Abbot Reule brocht ȝe relikis of Sanct Andro to Fyffe ; how King Heregust causit of his palace ane kirk be dedicate in honoure of the apostill, and of his deuocioun to the sade relikis, and of vthir incidentis. Cap<sup>o</sup> xij<sup>o</sup>

M.L.T. 209

Fo. CVIII.

Efter Angusiane had regnit *with* litill prosperite twa 3eris and slane in batell, Ffethelmak, collecting ȝe residew of ȝe Scottis armye, nane almaist repugnyng, occupyit ȝe kinrik. Bot be na bettir aventure it was governit be him than be his twa emys afore, ffor in the secund 3ere of his regne, with ane army invading Angouß and tyrantlie heryng ȝe cuntre, 70 sparing nane estate of Pichtis nacioun, *with* felloun dispite [he] oppressit ȝe inhabitantis. Pichtis, certifyit hereof, as men in rage rynnynge to hernes to revenge sic iniuris, movit haistelie toward Scottis. Nor Scottis son3ete nocht ȝare cuming, bot scharplie recountering, ouresett first ȝe wyngis of the Pichtis armye, syne invironit ȝe myddilward denwde of wyngis, and lichtlie ourethrawin ȝe samyn, sinderit ȝame *with* kene wapynnys. Quhen ȝai war devidit ȝai fled, quhare apoun flearis felloun slauchter was made. Be schot of ane arrow Nectane, king of Pichtis, broder to this vthir Nectan foresaid, was woundit, and throw dolour thareof the thrid day deceissit. Scottis, be this present victorie proude, eftir ȝai had heryit 80 Angouß, passit ȝe river of Tay to dispule3e Fiffe in ȝe ilk sorte. Bot Pichtis, obstinat to defend ȝare landis, vsing mature deliberacioun and counsell, how beit it was late, be *lycht* iupartiyis *cummerit* Scottis, ȝat ȝai suld nowder wyn castell, towne, nor fortalice. Syne ȝat ȝare pussance suld nocht be oure gretelie supprisit, bot ȝai suld haue ane prince to defend ȝe samyn, ȝai chesit Heregust, of subtell and sle ingyne, to be ȝare king. Heregust, disparing to vincuß Scottis planelie in batell (sen ȝe pussance of Pichtis was mekill fule3eit), to ane vther cast turnyng his ingyne, subornit secretelie twa 10 men of Pichtis, fene3eing ȝame Scottis, to bring Ffethelmake

to dede. Thir Pichtis war expert in casting ye darte (and Fo. CVIII.  
tharethrow war intertenyit be ye king, to yat gam mekill gevin),  
daly awating oportunitie to slay ye king. On cace Ffethelmake  
at Carictoun in Galloway remanyt, devising *with* sumptuofs  
expenss thingis necessare for ye instant were. Quhen *with*  
the barounis, for ye tyme *present*, he had consultit in materis  
concernyng ye *commoun* weill to ye late *nycht*, removing all  
he went to his quiet chalmer, chargeing ane clareschaw (as  
was ye maner of nobillis) softlie play ane dulce sang, quhare-  
throw he mycht sonare sleip. Quhen he slepit sound, the  
20 tratouris be ye clareschaw (as was convenit) war convoyit  
to ye chalmer, and cuttit ye kingis thrott zit sleping, at ye  
wound sarelie murnyng. The wachis before the chalmer  
dure, hering ye lamentabill regrett of ye king, knawing ye  
caiss, followit haistelie the tratouris fleing to ye nixt montane,  
and yai, *incontinent* turnyng in ire all yare drede, *tummyllit*  
doun grete stanys apoun yare persewaris, quharethrow diuerfs  
war hurt and drevin downe bakwart to ye vaillay. Ffinalie  
yai war apprehendit be ye wach with grete force clymmyng  
the montane. Quhen be tormentis yai had confessit this  
treson, thay war bundin to horfs, quhilkis, drevin in diverfs  
partis, raif yare membris, yat yare curssit spiritis fra yare  
tresonabill bodyis war chaissit. The clareschaw siclike was  
takin, and convictit of tresoun, sustenit sic like punycioun. M.L.T. 209b

30 The slauchter of Ffethelmake fell in ye fyft zere of Constantius,  
Romane emprioure eftir deceiss of Constance his broder,  
and of ye kingis regne ye thrid zere. Towart thir tyme;  
cunnyng men of diuerfs faculteis war liffand, by mony vtheris  
erudite in Haly *Scripture*, as Donate, *grammariour*, maister  
to Sanct Iherome, Victorine, rethoure, Alcyne and Delphide,  
philosophouris and oratouris maist ornate. With yame the  
haly men Eusevius native of Eueseue, was contemporane,  
maist scharpe perseware of infidelis and Iowis; Eriphile, quhilk  
first made the Coment apoun ye Cantikillis of Salomon; Sanct  
40 Anthon, monk in Egipt, about yis ilk tyme in wildirnefs  
deceissit; he liffit, as Iherome writis, j<sup>e</sup> v zeris. The gude  
memorie of him is divulgat throw ye vniuersale warld to the  
posterite. Amang ws was Damyane, preist, Gelass, Thebacull,

Fo. CVIII. Merynat, dekyns and brethir germane to Damyane, Neryus, Elusenius, Merinus, Maccabeus and Silv[en]eus, monkis, with diuers vtheris of grete halynes. Sum parte of yir come with ye abbot Sanct Reule, quhen be command of Almychty God he brocht ye relikis of Sanct Andro ye apostill to Otolinia (now Fyffe), ane regioun of Pichtis for ye tyme. This haly man Rewle was ane monk of Grece, of Achay native, abbot to mony devote persouns in ye ciete of Patras, and maist speciall quhilke kepit ye relikis of Sanct Andro throw 50 command of Constance, emprioure, to yame mervellusly affectit. Quhen at his towmb he maid his deuocion and vigil, he was admonist be ye angell to tak ye bane of ye haly arme with thre fingeris and als mony tais of athir fute, and caissing yame reuerendlie in ane veschel, suld seik ye ile of Albioun, in ye extreme partis of ye warld, becaus it was providit yat ye pepill in thay partis, throw deuocioun to Sanct Andro, be his suffrage and beneuolence of Almychty God suld ressaue baith *spirituall* and temporall giftis. Rewle be yis new revelacioun certane tyme was stupefact; syne incontinent obeying ye command of God, taking with him the venerabil relikis of ye apostill, and reuerendlie placeing yame in ane feirtir, accompanyit with men of haly liffe, twichit be ye spirit of God, on nycht departit fra ye porte to the 60

M.L.T. 210 ciete of Patras nixt in ane barge preparit (as is belevit) yareto be Almychty God. Saling syne lang tyme be the sey Mediterrane, he arrivit at Portugale, be diuers contrare wyndis devayand apoun ye Spanze, Ffranche and Germany seyis. At last schipbrokin, with tynsell of all except ye haly relikis and complicis, he arrivit at ane porte beside ane towne in Otolinia foresaid, fra name of ye apostill now callit Sanct Androß. How sone ye brute hereof was divulgate throw the regiouns of Pichtis, mony war inflammyt to vesy the haly relikis. Fra all partis ye pepill thidder resortit, offering 70 to ye apostill oblaciouns and riche rewardis. Heregust, king, desirus to se ye verite of thingis to him schawin, come in propir persoun, quham Sanct Reule with his complicis revestit, in processioun singin devote hymnis and vrasouns, resaut. The king, falling on kneis, with reuerence kissit ye relikis.

Quhen divyne *seruice*, to *quhilk* ye king was mekill gevin, Fo. CVIII.  
 was done, to Sanctandro, his *servand* Rewll, and preistis,  
 to serf Almychty God, he gaif frelie his palace decorit *with*  
*ryche biggingis*, and sic vthir policie as for ye tyme was vsit.  
 Nocht fer fra ye palace he beildit ane place in honoure of  
 80 the haly apostill. It is haldin yis is ye samyn fare kirk zit  
 standing in ye convent 3arde, *with* diuerß monwmentis and Fo. CIX.  
 ancient sepulturis (as in oure tyme may be sene) without  
 ony *inscripcioun* or namys. In eldaris dayis this kirk was  
 namyt Kilrewele, yat is to say, the Kirk of Reull, or erare ye  
 kirk quhilk be persuasioun of Reull was beildit. Bot in oure  
 tyme it is callit ye Auld Kirk of Sanctandros. Fferder, he  
 anornyt yat kirk with cowpis, chalice, lawaris, crowatis of gold  
 and siluer and vthir precioß *ornamentis*, for ye vse of divyne  
*seruice*, infesting preistis to *serue* God perpetualie in ye samyn.  
 Kingis of Pichtis and siclike of Scottis, eftir Pichtis deletit,  
 lang tyme *yareeftir* followit ye exempill of Heregust, and  
 10 tuke Sanctandro for *speciall* patroun. Malcolme, pronevo  
 of Sanct Mergarete, quhilk becaus all his tyme he abstcnit  
 fra *veneriane actis*, was callit ye Madyn, and Robert Bruce,  
 kingis of Scottis, drowryit yat kirk (now callit the Abbay, M.L.T. 210b  
 with landis, townys, rentis, *biggingis* and annexacioun of  
 benefice ample and large. In *our* dayis the samyn Abbay,  
 be policy of ane vertuoß nobill man, Prioure Iohnne Hepburne,  
 is mekill anournyt. Quhilk reparing the auld, falezeit *biggingis*  
 and beilding vtheris of new, anournyng the grete kirk *with*  
 precioß *vestmentis* and vthir sumptuoß *ornamentis*, plesing  
 to ye honoure and *seruice* of Almychty God, has invironit  
 20 all ye Abbay with ane wall of stane, and grete parte yareof  
 assillare batellit, quhare apoun turettis and kirnellis ar devisit.  
 Within yis wall the college of Sanct Leonard is includit,  
 quhare religiosß novice and vthir 3ong studentis with yame  
 contemporane, vnder preceptouris deponis yare rude primativis,  
 instructit in institutis of religious obedience, *with* vthir  
 divine and humane disciplinis. Quharethrow the said Abbay,  
 as be ye propir sonnys weill instructit be foster faderis, is  
 plennyst and decorit. This abbay was first inhabit be the  
*servandis* of God namyt Culdej, syne be regulare channons

Fo. CIX. of the ordoure of Sanct Augustyne, and of athir war famous men, *nocht* alanerlie in erudicioun and science apprisit, bot 30  
als weill in vertewe and haly life, 3it in thir dayis gevin cure to na thing mare ȳan ȳat diuine *seruice* be ordourelie and religiously done, and to se ȳat all thing concernyng ȳe honoure of God be weill dressit. Quhen fra sic thingis may be vakit ȳai employ ȳare haill diligence to study of litterature. Quharefore quha wald to exercitacioun of science haue respect, ȳai may find ȳe 3ong studentis vnder ȳare ancient preceptouris and chiftanis of litterale chevelrie sua exercit, ȳat it may be callit the honorabill vniuersite of all mwsis and science. Giff ȳai wald contempill diuine observance be nycht and day, ȳai sall afferme ȳat vniuersalie ȳai religious men ar gevin to nocht ellis bot to loif and thank Almychty God devotlie; in maner of hevinly melodie thay do all ȳare observance sa plesandlie and weill. Fferder, gif ȳai wald turne ȳare ene to ȳe ample and sumptuoſ biggingis, ȳai sall vnderstand ȳat in Italie, Ffrance, Germanye nor Albion, nane vthir may ȳareto be preferrit, becauſ ȳe splendoure of regale magnifice, *with* deuocion and preclare virtewis, schynis ȳarein 40  
M.L.T. 211 sa mekill. *Nocht*yeles, in the 3ere that thir historyis war first compilit Priour Iohnne (begynnare in ane parte of al thir nobill actis) deceissit, to the hevy skaith of ȳe realme and litterature. Amang his vthir actis he is *commendit* ȳat, or he *departit* fra ȳis liffe, he substitute successoure Patrik, nevo of his broder, ane man of singulare erudicioun and *cunnyng*, quhilk, as we haue esperance, sall happelie complete all actis be him sa nobilly institute and begunnyn. Quhen ȳe relikis of ȳe Apostill Sanctandro war fra Patras, ciete of Achay, transferrit in Albioun, it was in ȳe iij<sup>e</sup> and lx 3ere eftir birth 50  
of ȳe glorioſ Virgine.

How Eugenius was made king, and how Maximus, Fo. CIX.  
Romane legate, to haue Scottis finalie deletit,  
confederit *with* Pichtis ; how, nocht *withstanding*  
the clement ansuere of King Eugenius, he invadit  
him with weris ; how Eugenius *with* ye Scottis  
armye, at ye flude of Cre, faucht *with* Maximus,  
and how yareeftir Scottis apon ye landis of Pichtis  
vsit felonye. Cap° xiiij°

Nocht lang afore thir *premiss* of Sanctandro, eftir deceiße  
of King Ffethelmak, be decrete of nobillis, Eugenius,  
son to Ffincormak (in ye Ile of Mon declynyng the crudelite  
of Romake, Angusiane and Ffethelmak, tyrannys, was  
brocht *with* Ethod his broder to Albion, and be consent of  
ye estatis declarit king. About ye ilk tyme, Maximus, Romane  
legate in Britan, knawing quhat rankoure was amang Scottis  
and Pichtis, to haue athir nacion deletit, to extend ye Romane  
Empire, and deliuering Britouns fra yare invasiouns mycht  
contene yame mare facilly at his opinioun, excogitate ane  
60 policye to fynd sum occasioun to distroy first Scottis, and  
yareeftir Pichtis, and send ane ambassiatoure to Heregust,  
king of Pichtis, to schaw how, nocht *without* indignacioun,  
he had herd how ye inhumane brutall pepill of Scottis, euer  
fra yare begynnyng noysum to nyctbouris, had molestit  
Pichtis, freyndis of Romanis, be contynuall weris ; he desirit  
na thing mare yan to renewe and ratify ye ald pece be ane  
new band with ye freyndlie nacioun of Pichtis, euer acceptabill  
to Romanis, quarethrow doutles, be acceß of Britouns and  
Romanis, yai suld be mare wicht and strenthy to subiect M.L.T. 211b  
or erare (gif yai *thocht* expedient) to aluterlie delete yai auld  
inemyis ; herefore the ald societe was to be renewit and at  
ye *sammyn* fermlie to stand, becaus he was assurit yat ye  
destruction of ye cruell nacioun of Scottis mycht conduce  
70 nocht onelie to eiße of ye impire of Britouns, Pichtis and  
Romanis, bot of all ye remanent warld. Heregust, thanking  
the ambassiatoure, ansuerit, the legacioun to him and Pichtis  
nacioun was acceptabill, and louit Almychty God quhilk be

- Fo. CIX. his gudenes had providit þe wele of him and his kinrik, sa oftymes assailþete be maist schrewit inemyis; in sic sorte þat, having þe pussance of þe lordis of all þe warld wilfully offerit, thay mycht owder repell or ellis dant the iniuris of Scottis in tyme cuming; it plesit him and þe nobillis of his nacioun bynd amyte *with* Romanis and be ane new lyig ratifie þe auld pece, with sic condiciouns as he thoct, gif þai war honest; beseking onelie the legate he wald *nocht* think hevvy to supple him with power, quhen he had ado aganis þe felloun, truculent pepill of Scottis, to revenge the iniuris sa 80
- Fo. CX. oftymes be þare wikkit weris inferrit. To þe petitions of Heregust consentit Maximus, reiosing mekill he had drawin þe Pichtis to his desire, belefing be þat way to provide the feliceite of þe Romane Impire in Albion. And quhen few dayis was rwn the legate convenit with King Heregust at *commonyng* in ane place beside 3ork, quhare to Heregust having ane lang sermon of the lawte and kyndenes of Romanis obseruit to þare marrois and confederatis, of þare grete riches, excellent vassalage, and of þe falsett of Scottis, thift and iniuris (as he glosit) contrare Pichtis and Britouns; without difficultye he impetrate þat ane new lyig was maid, quharein þe pepill of Scottis suld be reput *commoun* inemyis to Pichtis, 10 Britouns and Romanis in tyme cuming. Quhen in þis sorte the lyig was contractit and pece be certane condiciouns as thay convenit was appoyntit, athir departit. Heræeftir the legate Maximus be ane herald chargit King Eugenyne of Scotland haistelie redrefß iniuris done to Pichtis, restore þe
- M.L.T. 212 gudis spulezeit fra þare boundis, and send the *committaris* of þe iniuris to King Heirgust to be punyst, vthirwayis the emprioure and Romane pepill suld repute him as inemye to þe Impire þareeftir. To þis ansuerit þe king: He had in na sorte iniurit Romanis nor Britouns, obeying þare senezeorie, sen he was made king of Scottis, and þarefore na thing was 20 mare iniust þan þat Romanis suld molest him or his folkis with weris; nor þe meritis of Pichtis aucht *nocht* be sa extemyt in sicht of Romanis þat be þare persuasioun and fenezeit causß þai suld iniustly contrare him move þe were; and gif redres war maid betuix him and Pichtis, he was content þat



iniuris of athir partie suld be amendit and quha yat falezete Fo. CX.  
 thareeftir suld be punyst as ye qualite of ye cryme requirit,  
 according to ye auld vse of yare cuntre ; fferder, gif Romanis  
 conionit with Pichtis war determyt invade Scottis be iniust  
 batell, he wald commend him and his realme to Almychty  
 God, iuste revengeare of all iniuris ; affermyng he suld  
 pretermytt na thing quhilk mycht attene to ye liberte of  
 him and his liegis, sen he saw clerelie Romanys devisit na  
 30 leß ye hurte of Scottis yan of Pichtis. Maximus, resaving  
 yis ansuere of the king, contracting of Romanis, Britouns  
 and supple of Gallis ane copioß armye with ye pussance of  
 his confederate Pichtis, be felloun slauchter and hereschip  
 supprisit Westmæreland ; be force wynnyng castellis and  
 fortalicy, with strang garnisoun of Romanis stuffit ye samyn.  
 Ffra thyne *with* all his power proceding to Ordoluce (now  
 Anandale), waisting ye cornys, chaissing or ellis slaying ye  
 inhabitantis, reiffing yare gudis, birnyng yare townys, and  
 leiffing feildis nakit and bare ; he movit to Galloway quhare,  
 exercing all kynde of tyrannye, he put grete terroure to  
 ye inhabitantis. Affrayit war Scottis seing sa mony inemyis  
 of Romanis, Pichtis, Gallis, and mekill ye mare yat in yare  
 40 dayis yai had neuer sene sa mony douchty men in ane armye  
 attanis assemblit. Nochttheles at yir extreme vrgent dangeris  
 King Eugene, throw all his kinrik collecting power, with  
 stout curage and manhede occurrit in meting inemyis. At  
 ye flude of Cree first ye batellis recounterit, quhare Scottis,  
 of mekill les power than inemyis, war incontinent sinderit  
 and chaissit. M.L.T. 212b  
 Grevous slauchter was about ye brayis of ye  
 flude, and the rivere stoppit be multitude of cariouns ; Romanis  
 chaissing Scottis fleand at ye stragill, happynnyt in ane  
 new bargane, quhilk yai belevit nocht, ffor ye Argathelis  
 yat zit war *nocht cumin* to ye king, knawing na thing quhat  
 was done, bot preparing to ye feild, persaving Scottis at ye  
 50 flicht, *with* thrawin luke, cruell continence, and terribill  
 schowtis ruschit apon Romanys, makand huge slauchter.  
 Quharethrow Scottis, latelie vincust, returnit to bargane,  
 and Romanis victouris war constrenit to flicht to salf yare  
 livis. Ffyndalicy be falling of ye nycht, quhen sicht was removit,

Fo. CX. fra ye batell and chaisß was ceissit. Be this chance of fortune, the batell contrare inemyis ye first day was strikkin. And howbeit grete nowmer of Scottis war slane, Romanis *nocht* knowng yare purpoiß, gif be supple of new power yai wald mak ony iupertie in ye nycht, or gif yai wald tary the day or fle, diligentlie yai garnyst yare campe at all aventuris, to haue defence reddy contrare yare invasioun. On nycht ye king convenyng ye chiftanis, quhen he considerit his armye be ye recent plaig fulzeit, and mycht *nocht* sustene ye strang ordinance of inemyis, lifting palzeons and all vthir werelie 60 ordinance, *with* ane fewe noblis and yare houshaldis, suffering ye remanent departe to tyme mare oportune, differring the batell he went to Carictoun, quhare, consulting apoun all chancis of were, richt solist he taryit ye fyne of ye mater. Quhen on the morne, at spring of day, Maximus with felloun force made to persew Scottis, divisioun amang ye inhabitantis of Britan, as be writingis fra Kent he was assurit, tending to hurte of ye Romane Impire, impeschit his purpoiß. Quharefore leiffing in Galloway stark garnison, and ane parte of ye armye weill providit in necessaris, be grete iournayis he returnit within fewe dayis to Kent. Thir war ye actis done for ye maist parte be ye lagate Maximus ye first zere of his expedicioun 70 contrare Scottis. The secund zere, be diuersß iupartiyis of Romanis and Scottis was endit, debatabill materis in Britan

M.L.T. 213 distracting ye legate fra expedicioun contrare Scottis. Ffor eftir Scottis be diuersß attemptatis had in vane assayit to deliuer Galloway fra ye tyrannye of Romanys, and restore yat region to thare senezeorie, invading Vicomage and Otolinia (now Striuelingshire and Ffiffe), Pichtis regions, and distroyng all be fyre and swerde, beting downe castellis, birnyng townys and cornez, and slaying ye maist parte of ye pepill, thay made yai cuntreis denwde of inhabitantis and substance. Quharethrow be our grete insolence mony of yame, mare cruell, beleiffit yat all vthir affaris suld prospir as did thir premisß.

How Maximus movit his expedioun in Scotland Fo. CX.  
 of newe ; how King Ewgene assembling his armye  
 made to yame ane vehement vrasoun, and how  
 finalie yai straik the bargane, quhare the king with  
 maist parte of his nobillis and pepill war slane.

Cap° xiiij°

80 **B**e brute hereof the legate Maximus fenezzeit him *commovit*,  
 how beit he herd na thing mare plesandlie than of iniuris Fo. CXI.  
 done be Scottis to Pichtis. The nixt somer, all thingis weill  
 dressit in Britane, with stark power he tronoyntit towart  
 Galloway, tending yarefra to invade Siluria (now Kyle) and  
 vthir Scottis regiouns, quhare siclike Ewgene was *present*  
 with his armye, tarying quhil power daly increscit, and apoun  
 inemyis to awate. To ye king come grete confluence of men  
 and women abill for were, warnit yareto quhen extreme  
 dangere apperit, as the rite was of ye cuntre. At last ye king  
 had in his armye the nowmer of l<sup>m</sup>, with cruell hartis desiring  
 ye batell, and rasing grete schowtis, testifyit yat day suld  
 10 yare maist odioß inemyis owder be vincust or ellis, starklie  
 fechtand, yai suld de all atanyis. Romanis ye *present* tyme  
 heryit Galloway, makand terribill slauchter apoun the rude  
 pepill, ageit men and wemen, quhilk owdir be febilnes of  
 strenth or fragilite of kynde, mycht *nocht* fle yare ire. Bot ye  
 legate, knawing ye kingis ordinance for batell, left Galloway  
 and brocht his armye to Siluria. King Eugenius was nere  
 the bra of ye ryver of Dwne, quhen haistelie he was certifyt  
 be skurreouris Romanis, be greter multitude and ordinance M.L.T. 2136  
 than quhen yai straik ye last bargane, war nocht abone five  
 mylis distant. At thir novellis diuersß war agast ; vtheris,  
 preferring ye dede to thirlage, detesting na thing mare yan  
 the pridefull tyrannye of Romanis, tuke ye mare hardyment.  
 20 The king, with constant vult resembling gude hope and chere,  
 as he crynit na thing leß yan ye Romane armye, ordoring  
 his power, devidit yame in thre oistis. To ane wyng he  
 made his broder Ethad chiftane, and Doale, cheiff of Argathele,  
 to ane vthir. To him self he tuke ye myddilwarde to rewle,

Fo. CXI. syne placit ye thre hoistis in sic ordoure yat in ye evynnyng, quhen he belevit yai suld ione, yai suld haue Phebus declynyng, with ye depe ryver at yare bak, and quhen inemyis approchit, be glance and glemys of ye son thare ene suld be sa obfuscate and dymmyt yat yai suld se litill or nocht, and tharethrow ye batell suld be to yame mare difficill. Syne apoun ane hicht spak his armye in this sorte: "Oure progenitouris, quhilk first beildit and be grete laubouris and lang continewit lynage of kingis conseruit yis kinrik to yis day, liffand and 30 deand gaif yare posterite in charge, yat be armys yai suld defend yir rowmys and liberte to ye extreme, and quhen yai war provokit be batell, suld in na thing haue sa grete confidence as in yare handis. To ye nobillis and heris of ye cuntre the remanent suld be obeysand, becaus be yare fortificacioun thare armye, substance, liberte, kinrik and all vthir ancient ritis, suld be keptit haill and sound. Sa mony as amang oure nacioun (invincust to yis day) has precredit ws *with* all yare study, obtemperit euer happelie to ye command of ye nobillis quhil ye *present*. Heirthrow suppose be variabill fortune yai contendit *contrare* lordis of ye warld to yis heure, zit fynalie ouresetting inemyis yai triumphit. Now, maist douchty champions, ze se ye batell instant is 40 inferrit iniustlie be ye ilk inemyis quhilk movit weris *contrare* oure forebearis, and yarefore owder mon we contempne all fere of dede, and strike ye bargane *with* hardyment, as did oure eldaris, or loiff oure kinrik and liberte, and at plesure of oure fayis be perpetuall bondis and sclaffis. Oure inemyis, of all vtheris maist felloun, ar now *present* to reif fra ws oure senezeory, liberte and all gudis, gif be *speciall* protectioun of Almychty God we fynd nocht defence in oure awne handis and armys. Thir inemyis, of sle and subtell ingyne, with Pichtis *contrare* ws has confederit onelie to yis effect (as apperis), yat we twa nacioun be iniuris of vthir cawsing oure awne rewyne, thay may haue all ye ile of Albioun subiect to yare domynyoun as nane vthir Romane chiftane had afore 50 this day. Pichtis *concurris* with Romanis, yare manifest inemyis (quhilk vehementlie desiris reif yare kinrik and liberte), *contrare* ws, protectouris of ye samyn, sen ye first

begynnyng all way desiring þar weill, gif þai wald awise and Fo. CXI.  
 consult þareapoun. Bot I know nocht be quhat spirit þai  
 ar impeschit, þat þai wey nocht quhat sorow þai induce apoun  
 þame self be þis iniust were, or in quhat danger þare realme  
 is constitute, or how beit þai know þai will nocht consider.  
 Fferder, as to thingis concernyng maist oure affaris, I wald  
 þe vnderstude þat oure inemyis, be na iniuris of ws provokit,  
 60 has contrare ws denunciit wrangwislie weris, imprevit be  
 Almychty God, as we may weill suppose, quhilk euer at  
 iniuris is offendit ; and þat 3e ar to repell iniuris, and to fecht  
 for 3our cuntre and liberte, and descendit of þe blude quhilk  
 with grete glore fra thir boundis draif þe Romanis. Sen sua  
 is þe caifs þat owder we mon be vincust and subiect to extreme  
 myserie, or vincuifs and conqueifs honoure, glore, liberte, and  
 possede perpetualie oure propir rowmes, I beseik and prayis  
 70 3ow, be þe ancient gude mynde of oure eldaris towart þis  
 cuntre and liberte, be þare spiritis went, þare fortitude,  
 vassalage and fidelite, be sa grete laubouris to þis day, con-  
 serving salfie þir boundis, þat sen 3e ar successioun of þame,  
 sum tyme schynyng in sic vailþeandnes, þe suffir neuer to  
 be dispulþeit of 3oure kinrik, liberte and gudis, at plesere  
 of inemyis to be harlit to panys, or keptit quyk in derisioun,  
 to be denwdit of substance, thirrlit to schamefull seruitute,  
 nor with 3oure liffe tocum randerit in þare handis. Giff be  
 aduersite of fortune it be force to fall in batell, luke þat 3e M.L.T. 214b  
 employ 3oure strenth and fortitude to de vailþeandlie, as  
 vtheris 3oure forebearis, and stoutlie apoun inemyis revenge  
 3oure dede ; memorative it is mare wirschip to fall in feild  
 with honoure þan with dishoneste to liffe. Think 3e ar be  
 lyniall successioun descendit of 3oure eldaris, quhilk war  
 80 decorit be incredibil vassalage in weris, and þat 3e ar als wele  
 heretouris of þare doughtines, as of þare landis. 3e ar nocht Fo. CXII.  
 contractit of gaderingis, bot all of ane nacioun, vsing euer  
 to authoris iustice and equite, heretabill servandis of  
 Almychty God, quhais faith 3e wourschip and anorne. And  
 be his iustice he sall neuer grant victorie (the reward of  
 vertewe) to oure tresonabill inemyis contrare ws, his propir  
 servandis. Addres 3ow herefore be 3oure native fortitude

Fo. CXII. to ye bargane, and beleif weill 3e sal have victorie, quhilk of resoun to 3ow pertenis; and constantlie fere na thing except schamefull fleing; and prei3 3ow to ourethraw 3oure inemyis with na le3 myscheif yan 3ai devise bring apoun 3oure armye." Eftir be 3ir wourdis or vtheris to ye samyn effect, Eugene had erectit the curage of his oist in grete beleif to strike baldlie ye bargane, it was schewin to ye grete terroure of ye armye yat Maximus with his armye approcheit; ffor be exploratouris knawing how ye king ordorit his batellis, 10 *with* mare haist yan he ordanit, moving contrare Scottis ane litill eftir ye son rising, sonare yan ony belevit, he brocht his armye to sicht of Scottis, quhilk throw multitude of inemyis and excellent name of ye Romane ordinance war gretelie agast. Thay thocht best finalie in yat vrgent necessite to assay quhat 3ai mycht do in armys. Sua cheissing ane new place for ye feild, and turnyng fra the son, yat 3are ene be fulgure and bemys 3areof suld nocht reill nor *glymmare* quhen 3ai suld fecht, the batellis, skantlie weill ordorit, ruschit fordwart. This feir3nes was na litill impediment to ye Romane legate to do ye devoure of ane vail3eant chiftane. 20

M.L.T. 215 Herefore contrinit be penurite of tyme and invasiouns of Scottis, haistelie he put his folkis in array, schortlie exhorting 3ai suld remember 3are ancient vassalage and nocht in mynde be perturbit, bot stoutlie sustene the first counter and nocht fere ye barbaris quhilk latelie war discumfist. And becaus inemyis was na ferther distant yan within schott of darte or arrow, he soundit ye trumpett to ione ye bargane. *With* feir3 curage Scottis war sa reddy to fecht, yat skantlie had 3are archearis schott quhen ye remanent, following with vthir wapynnys, rusching fordwart erare be furie yan ordoure of were, with felloun ratling of harnes, dyn of fete and hidduou3 schoutis, incalling ye name of nobill King Gald, quhilk, vincussing ye Romane armye, brocht ye samyn almaist to 30 extreme perdicious; be sic wourdis to inflamb 3are curage, throw exempill of his vail3eandnes to ye batell, with ye Romane armye mellit. At ye first countir it was fochtin with sa ardent hete, yat it was nocht facill to decerne quhilk parte did mare myscheif to vthir. Diuer3 chancis of variabill fortune followit.

The power of Cornane, Lugia and Marthan (now Cathnes, Rosß and Mar) and yare complicis in ye richt wyng, quhare Ethod was chiftane, tending to conquest glore to yame and yare chiftane, fulzeit Pichtis yare partie, and with grevous woundis draif yame bakwart to ye flude of Dwne. Quhen yai attemptit paß ye furde, Scottis following slew of yame grete nowmer, impeschit be slike and glar of ye river. Hereof  
 40 avancing yame pridefully, as ye victorie had bene clerelie wyn and all had bene in securite, returnyng to ye spuleze, be ane Romane legioun send fra Maximus to supple Pichtis in sa extreme dangere yai war invadit at ye bak and almaist ilkane slane. The Argatheles, Thelegonis, Siluris (now Argile, Lennox, Kyle) and Gallowayis yat come to batell, be Britouns, Gallis and Almanis *with* quham yai facht, eftir mekill slauchter on ayir parte, baldly ane quhile sustenyng ye stoure, fell honestlie in feild in defence of yare liberte and kinrik. Than ye hail Romane armye in ane grete rout ruschit with all yare ordinance apoun ye myddilwarde, denwde of wyngis, quhare the king was fechtand with his nobillis almaist be  
 50 werynes oureset. Sa lang as strenth remanyt Scottis resistit, thinking yai suld nocht prefer schamefull fleing to vertew and honoure. Be sum parte of nobillis the king was counsalit fle and salf his persoun, quhill bettir fortune occurrit, and sum parte (quhen he obstinatelie refusit) attemptit tak him fra ye feild be force. Nochttheles, abiecting princelie cognissance he past amang ye futemen, quhare with sare woundis he was brocht to dede. The maist parte of all Scottis nobillis fell in yis vnchancie iournay, be exempill of yare prince contempnyng ye dede, and obstinatelie detesting ye pridefull senezeorie of Romanis. In yis sorte King Eugenie loist his liffe and kinrik, quhilk he broukit thre zeris, neuer inexpert of the aduersite of fortune. Ffra yis felloun plaig few men  
 60 evadit, and almaist na wemen. Quhil in yis wise ye armye of Eugene was but mercy strikkin downe, the commouns depute to kepe ye palzeouns with licht harnes and wapynnys alanerlie in yare handis, as was ye ald custume of *our* nacioun, seand samony wicht men slane, had in yare hartis miseracioun, thinking yai suld nocht liff eftir sa grete calamyte and myscheif;

- Fo. CXII. bot determyng de all atanis, left ye tentis, and anarmyt in furie and rage gaif ye bargane contrare Romanis, quhare cruell murthure, mare be wilfulnes yan fortitude, was maid. Ffinalie yai war ouresett, chaissit and slane. The cariage was wynnyng and devidit amang Romanis, as was yare custume. Quhil Romanys war 3it chaissing sum parte at ye stragill fleand, yai incurrit ane new kynde of bargane, ffor ageit men 70 and wemen vnabill for batell, left at hame, suspecting ye mysfortune of yare sonnys, ffollowing euer the armye on dreich, quhen yai saw sa terribill bouchrie of yare freyndis, forjetting baith age and fragilite, ran to swerdis. Of quhilk grete nowmer was skalit in the feild, and in ane rout maid ane cruell assailze apoun Romanis. The wemen with terribil schowtis and clamoure bannyt ye Romane armye, syne rummysing like wylde beistis, straik yare inemyis. Nocht yeles yai ald febill persouns war sone ouresett, and quhen yai wald nocht fle bot wilfully obiect yare persouns to woundis, thay war ilkane slane. Romanis, eftir yis trublus victorie, with grete terroure passyt ye nycht. Thare campe nedit na 80
- Fo. CXIII. mwnicioun, sen na inemye apperit, nor the weremen war *nocht* commandit kepe ordoure, ffor in montanis, vaillayis, planis, all ye nycht was nocht ellis bot reirding of regrete and murnyng; horribill grankis of men in extremyte of dede mycht be herd, cursing the impire and senzeorie of Romanis; vtheris waryit the weris; vtheris accusit and blamyt fortune; and nane was of yame all yat quhen he was deand, detestit nocht the dissate of Pichtis and Romanis, be quhais tresoun sic myscheif was maid apoun ye innocent nacioun, quhais demeritis had never towart yame *deseruit* sic crudelite.



Of the humanite of Maximus towart the kingis Fo. CXIII.  
 broder and vthir captiuis; how he causit ye king  
 be princely beryit; of crudelite of Pichtis apon  
 Scottis nocht satisfyit, quhil Scottis war expellit  
 Albion; how to ye Quene Cartandis he assignit  
 ane liffing in Galloway, and how ye deuote persons  
 yat war exilit foundit ane abbay in Colmkill.

Cap° xv°

**M**aximus on the morne dividing ye spuleze amang his  
 weremen, conforme to ye Romane rite, quhare he  
 fand ony Scottis liffand in feild, he sufferit yame be curit  
 be leichis, to dekey na way fra ye auld clemence of Romanis,  
 and causit ye dede cariouns be ingravit. Syne with sumptuous  
 10 pompe causit ye corps of King Eugene be beryit, commending  
 him mekill for his exhortacioun made to his armye, and  
 stark affectioun to his native cuntre. Ffinding alsua in ye  
 feild Ethod, ye kingis broder germane (off hym lately before  
 is schewin), almaist in ye extreme houre magillit *with* mony  
 woundis, he causit him with diligent cure be leichit. Thare-  
 eftir passing throw Siluria, Calidon Wod and vthir regions  
 of Scottis adiacent, he tuke yame all randerit, clementlie  
 resaving ye inhabitantis to his faith, restoring yare gudis  
 and suffering yame lyff in quiet and eiss. Heregust, king of  
 Pichtis, and his nobillis, weyit hevily his clemence towart  
 Scottis, desirous alway to haue yat nacioun exterminate.  
 20 The legate, knowing yare mynde, ansuerit: It was euer familiare  
 to ye Romane maieste to spare yare subiectis and supprise  
 rebellis, and erare be favouris than armys vincus inemyis;  
 na thing mycht mare obscure ye Romane glorie as, *without*  
 regarde to piete, be newe excogitate tormentis to afflict ye  
 pepill be force expugnate, resautit to fidelite, and imploring  
 ye lawte of ye emprioure and senatouris; Romanis and  
 yare confederatis war eneuch revengit apoun ye iniuris of  
 Scottis quhen yai had slane yare king, discumfist yare armye,  
 ouresett yare pussance and ressautit sa mony of yare regions  
 randerit as yai desirit: he wald supprise yame *with* nane

Fo. CXIII. vthir kynde of tormentis yan Almychty God had strikkin yame in ye recent batell, becaus he belevit yat his mercye had now piete of yare myserie ; herefore he suld molest yame na ferther, gif yai movit nane attemptatis of newe. Be yis ansuere the heris of Pichtis, mare provokit to ire yan mitigate, be ane lang proposicioun and mony persuasiouns exhortit the legate yat gif he had ye weil of Pichtis in cure, he wald throw all ye ile of Albioun cauß distroy ye Scottis pepil, inhumane, intractibil, plane inemye baith to lawte and gude 30 maneris, reiosing in na thing mare yan in damage of ye Romane Impire, reiff and hereschip of nyctbouris, be ald prophecycis productit be nature for distructioun of Pichtis ; be yis way and nane vthir, Romanis and yare confederatis mycht haue rest in Albion. Quhen thir desiris mycht nocht first be impetrate, to ane vthir cast yai turnit yare mynde, corrupting the legate be giftis and buddis (be sic thingis men ar reddy and facil to cryme), and finalie optenit yat all Scottis blude in Albioun desiring to be exilit erare yan 40 slane, suld be bannyst, leiffand yare landis and regions to be lauborit be Britouns and Pichtis, yan content to obey the Romane senezeorie. Eftir yis decrete mony Scottis wilfully devodit ye cuntre at day prefixt be ye legate to depart fra Albion. Of yame sum parte past to ye Ilis, Ireland, Orknay, Denmark, or Noroway. Vtheris with Romanis fled to Gallia, and fra thyne to Italie, to serf in ordinance for waxis. About yis tyme certane nobill wemen quhilk had

M.L.T. 217 yare lordis slane in ye recent batell, abilzeit with blak, in dule habit lamentably besocht ye legate he wald of his benignite suffir yame in maner of bondis and servandis (sen yai mycht 50 na bettir) remane in Albioun, yare native cuntre, to ye end of yare miserabill life, quhare yai mycht be beryit beside thare lordis ; affermyng yai desirit nocht ellis yan to consume yare remanent dulesum dayis in regret and murnyng, as yai war addettit, for yare husbandis, childer and freyndis, in defence of yare liberte slane. Quhen this pietuouß complante of ye gentill wemen be ane herald, at command of ye legate, was referrit to ye Pichtis, to haue experience quhat yai thocht to be done in yis lamentabill caiß, it was aluterlie refusit.

Quharefore yai nobill wemen wer exilit, as vtheris banyst of Fo. CXIII.  
 before. This was in caufß yat the legate yareeftir detestit  
 ye maneris of Pichtis as inhumane and cruell. Fferder, eftir  
 60 ye day to ye proscricioun appoyntit was birvn, quhare ony  
 of ye Scottis blude was fundin in Albion, be scharp tormentis  
 as Pichtis had *commandit* war cruelly slane, sparing nowther  
 man nor woman of na state nor age. Be diligence of  
 inquisitouris ye samyn tyme ye quene of Scottis Cartandis,  
 with twa domycellis and ane *servand*, alanerlie was fundin  
 at ye sepulture of King Eugene, all begrett and fadit, almaist  
 consumyt be sorowe. And becaus scho was of Britan blude,  
 dochter to the prince of Walis, scho was convoyit but harme  
 to the legate. Maximus, memorative of ye variance of mannys  
 estate, and having miseracioun of ye displesing caiß of yis  
 nobill woman, occurring in hir meting, laulie falling before  
 his fete, liftit hir fra ye ground, and *with* gudc wourdis exhortit  
 scho suld be of conforte, promytting he suld interteny hir  
 as his carnaill sister; syne arraying hir in riche abilzementis,  
 70 gaif to hir Carictoun, quhilk in auld tymes was ane cheif ciete  
 quharein was ye *kingis* palace, suffering hir resaue sic rentis  
 as scho plesit of landis adiacent to hir expenß. The quene  
 nocht mysknawand fra quhat estate and honoure scho was  
 deiectit, submytting hir to ye zoik of seruitute, taking hir leif  
 at ye legate, tending hir viage to ane village nocht fer fra M.L.T. 217b  
 Carictoun, separate fra sicht of Romanis be larouns of Pichtis  
 scho was awatit, quhilk slew hir *servand* and rouchly  
 demanyng hir chalmereris, dispulzeit hir of horsß, money,  
 clething, and all attyrement according the honeste of wemen.  
 How sone this outrage done to ye quene was schewin to  
 ye legate, apprehending ye rubbaris, he causit yame be  
 pynit to dede, and chargit yat ye Quene Cartandis suld bc  
 80 honorably to him convoyit, quhare restoring hir ornamentis,  
 he intertenyit hir certane dayis, and assignit to hir keparis, Fo. CXIII.  
 defending yat ony suld attempt to fuleze hir honeste. On  
 ye morne ye heris of Pichtis before ye legate hevillie regrettit  
 yat be persuasioun of ane captive woman and public inemye  
 thare *servandis* be his *command* war slane. At Romanis  
 Pichtis had *nocht* dcseruit sic rewarde, exponyng yame self

Fo. CXIII. to finale perdicion, fechtig contrare Scottis to yat tyme  
 almaist to yame euer freyndlie, for nane vthir cauß bot to  
 haue ye Romane Impire maid mare ampill and large. Herefore  
 yai besocht yat Cartandis suld be exilit to Britan quhare  
 scho was borne, and of all hir gudis conforme to ye decree  
 be denwdit. At thir wourdis the quene cryit scho was ane  
 captive creature, quhen scho was dispulezeit of hir lorde and  
 freyndis; bot scho suld be mekill mare miserabil gif fra hir 10  
 dignite scho suld be sa deiectit, yat scho was nocht sufferit  
 lif in thirllage amang inemyis, bot *with* schame and dis-  
 honoure, dalie *conuers* amang hir freyndis: it war mare plesing  
 to hir in murnyng and regret, beside ye sepulturis of ye douchty  
 Scottis, spend ye residew of hir miserabil liffe, yan aganis  
 ye lawis of fortune with ane statelie tryne (lyke hir forebearis)  
 schaw hir in *presens*; scho desirit in tyme *cuming* ane private  
 and *servile* liffe, and nowder ryches, precious clething nor  
 vthir ornamentis. And quhen with mekill weping and teris  
 scho had heissit hir handis before ye legate, beseking scho  
 suld be owder put to dede, or sufferit liff in ye sorte scho  
 desirit, Romanis, movit be misfortoun of the nobill lady and  
 M.L.T. 218 having miseracioun, imprevit planelie the counsell of Pichtis.  
 Sua licence was grantit to Cartandis to liff at plesere quhare 20  
 scho lykit best, assignyng rentis for hir expensß according  
 hir dignite. About ye samyn tyme preistis and kirkmen of  
 Scottis blude war exilit, of quham grete nowmer passing to  
 ye Ilis, foundit ane abbay in Colmkill, to thir dayis decorit  
 be mony vertuofß persouns, *servandis* to Almychty God, and  
 in dout gif men or women excellis vtheris in sanctitude, ffor  
 athir state in diuers cellis seperate liffit ane religious liffe.  
 Be proceß of mony 3eris this abbay was augmentit, baith  
 in nowmer of devote persouns and rentis *lymmyt* to yare  
 expensß, and eftirwart richelie drowryit be princis. How beit  
 ye begynnyng of it was bot sobir. Sone yareeftir it was made  
 the *commoun* sepulture of Scottis princis. This proscriptioun  
 was sa *vniuersale* yat nowthir sparit was the kingis broder  
 Ethode (of quham latelie was rehersit), nor nane vthir captivis, 30  
 be benygnite of ye legate *committit* to cure of *medicinaris*.  
 Ffor yis Ethod oftymes be Pichtis was amang ye handis

of chirurgianis invadit to ye dede, contrare ye lawis of all fo. CXIII.  
naciouns, and finalie quhen he was restorit to hele, with all  
vtheris of his nacioun yat had bene woundit, be ye legate  
Maximus was dischargit Albion: promitting first be ye grete  
aith he suld *nocht* pass to ye Ilis, Ireland, Orkney, nor nane  
vthir place nere the ile of Albion, quhare he *mycht* eselie  
supprise or noy the Romane subiectis. Quharefore conducing  
ane barge, he salit to Denmark. Quhen Scottis war thus fra  
yare kinrik be ye armyis of Romanis eiectit, it was fra ye  
40 begynnyng of ye warld v<sup>m</sup> v<sup>c</sup> xlvij zenis; eftir ye Incarnacioun  
of Criste iij<sup>c</sup> lxxix; ffra begynnyng of ye Scottis kinrik vij<sup>c</sup> xij  
zenis; the secund zere of Iuliane, emprioure, quhilk onelie  
of all *vyr* Romane princis eftir grete Constantine, renunceing  
ye faith of Criste, was callit Apostate. In ye zere yat King  
Eugene facht *with* Romanis, diuerß ferlyis war sene in ye  
extreme parte of Albion, to ye pepill inferring grete terrouris. M.L.T. 218b  
On nycht birnyng swerdis war sene, and wapynnys glymmering  
on lenth in ye are: syne meting togiddir in ane grete bleiß  
of fyre, all evanyst. The wattir in ye flude of Dvn ran myxt  
50 with blude. The brayis schynyt in glemys of fyre. Certane  
small foulis in maner of rane fell fra ye hevin be incredibill  
multitude. How sone yai war at erde, grete nowmer of crawis  
apon yame lichtit and swellyit yame but langare tary. Quhen  
dyvinouris and wichis schew yat sic prodigious thingis signifijt  
subuersioun of ye Scottis kinrik, be kirkmen yai war scornyt  
as vane supersticioß persouns, and inhibit be yare folie to  
presume schaw sic thingis.

How the Insulanis, tending to recouer the realme,  
inuadit Argathele, and be Pichtis war slane; how  
be solistacion of Scottis ye Hibernienß brocht ane  
army in Pichtland, quhare yai war discumfist and  
slane, and how finalie Hibernienß band pece with  
Romanys. Cap<sup>o</sup> xvj<sup>o</sup>

**A**fter Romanis had in this sorte happelie endit ye weris,  
all Scottis nacioun within Albion owder exylit or persewit  
to dede; quhen inhabitantis of ye Ilis knew Ethod ye kingis

- Fo. CXIII. broder, evading *ye handis* of inemyis, had salit to Denmark, disparing his returne to Albioun, desirous to haue *ye kinrik* of Scotland restorit, thay collectit power vnder ane chiftane 60 of *zare awne blude* namyt Gillo and invadit Argathele; quhare, behaving *yame vnwarlie* at the stragill, intent to hereschip, be grevouß slauchter *yai war ilkane slane* be Pichtis, thidder send to defend *ye inhabitantis*; syne wan thare galiouns, herbrying *yame in sure portis fra tempest of weddir*, to be reddey contrare Scottis in tyme *cummyng*, gif *yai movit weris*. Insulanis be doubill myscheif afflictit, disparing *zare pussance*
- M.L.T. 219 to repare ane armye of new, abstenit fra brulezeis thareeftir. Scottis quhilk, declynyng ire of *ye victouris*, fled to Ireland (for grete nowmer *yat war be decrete of ye legate expellit* Albioun thidder reparit), with lamentabill regrete, weping and teris before *ye king and nobillis complenezzeit ye fall of* *zare prince and his liegis* (to quham in douchtines nane *vyr* 70 *nacioun mycht be preferrit*); how be Romanis, Britouns and Pichtis *yai war invadit be iniust batell, ye maist robust and strenthy of yat nacioun war brocht to extreme miserie, and slane be swerde*; be sic fellony the remanent was persewit *yat na kynde of state nor age, zong nor auld, was sparit*; sa mony as be flicht or vthir wayis euadit persecucioun, war exilit to vthir kinrikis fra *zare native cuntre, indigent of all thingis necessare to ye vse of man, to liff vnder thirllage and indure the residew of zare dolly dayis, sen yai mycht do na bettir*; the nobill, potent and ancient kinrik of Scottis, be sa mony vailzeant princis, *with sa grete laubouris, conseruit* 80
- Fo. CXV. salf and haille to *yat day fra ye insaciabill auarice of Romanis* (how beit it was oftymes invadit be weris of inemyis), now eftir inhabitantis war owder eiectit or deletit, was bot pray to tresoun of inemyis; thay besocht herefore (sen in maist extreme necessite *yai socht yame as plicht ankir with* supple and refuge) *yat, memorative of kyndenes and proximate of blude* (quhilk naturale progenitouris suld haue to *zare successioun*), *yai wald supple yame contrare zare maist vnmerciful inemys, sua yat ye nacioun of Scottis, vmquhile fra Ireland to Albion deducit, and eftir in yat ile yai had beildit ane kinrik, had abone vije zeris stoutlie broukit ye samyn, suld*

nocht now be brocht to fynale exterminacioun, how beit it Fo. CXV.  
 10 was ouresett be ye Romane armyis and to all nacions odioß.  
 The barouns of Ireland, havand compaciencie of ye vnchancye  
 caiß of yare freyndis, decretit yat x<sup>m</sup> Hibernienß suld be  
 send with Scottis contrare inemyis to recovir yare realme in  
 Albioun. Sone yareeftir yis armye with ye bannyst Scottis  
 come to Siluria (now Carrik), and with grevoß slauchter  
 distroyit Britons and Pichtis, yat eftir expulsoun of Scottis  
 inhabit yare boundis. At brute hereof diuerß poweris of M.L.T. 2196  
 Pichtis come to Siluria to repreß ye force of inemyis, having  
 Heredorstane, broder germane to Heregust, king of Pichtis,  
 chiftane. Nochtwithstanding, this power sone be Scottis  
 and Hibernienß was discumfist, and sa mony as evadit nocht  
 20 throw flicht, be ye swerde war slane. The victouris war  
 counsalit nocht attempt ferder ye aventure of fortune, bot  
 eftir yis chancye avantage, fra Siluria yai suld drife ane pray  
 of men and bestiall, tharewith returne to Ireland, defer ye  
 caiß quhil tyme mare oportune, and nocht tary the cuning  
 of ye Romane armye, becauß euery man having vse of resoun,  
 thocht folie to recounter yame in bargane, sen yai excellit all  
 vtheris in experience of chevelrie and weris. Vtheris counsalit  
 assay ye chance of fortune and invade Galloway or Vicomage  
 (now Striuelingschire), quharefra Scottis war expellit, dyng  
 yarefra ye new inhabitantis and occupy yai boundis, for sen  
 yare begynnyng was ewroß, doutles the residew of yare affaris  
 suld haue als chancye fortune; ooftymes had bene herd yat  
 grete power of inemyis, inferring iniuris, war be sobir pussance  
 30 of fechtaris discumfist; herefore yare myndis suld be erectit  
 in esperance of bettir fortune, affermyng thare native kinrik  
 was owder to be recoverit or ellis to de all atanis in batell.  
 The multitude, following yis opinioun, postponit ye first counsell  
 and gaif yare myndis to occupye the landis of Siluria, Galloway  
 and Vicomage in Albioun. Nocht yeles yis mater procedit  
 na mare chancelie yan be Insulanis afore, ffor in the tyme  
 yai devisit yis cast, yai war invironit and ouresett be ye army  
 of Rorage and Pichtis, quhilk be brute of yare iniuris war  
 inflammyt to revenge ye harmes latelie resaut. At novellis  
 of yis plaig, all inhabitantis Ireland gretelie war affrayit. Bot

Fo. CXV. quhen yai knewe be fugitivis all thingis, how yai war be ordoure 40  
done in Albioun, the king with his barouns consultit in place  
yareto assignit, ffra rising of Phebus to declynyng of ye samyn,  
be quhat craft or way to ye Romane army mycht be resistit,  
and ye kinrik in Albioun mycht be restorit to Scottis, yare  
M.L.T. 220 auld cousingis and freyndis. Quhen yai couth devise na sikkir  
way nor remede, ffering mekill ye skaith of yare persouns and  
realme, thay thocht best to trete for pece with Romanis and  
forzett all iniuris bipast. To perfurnis this mater, ambassia-  
touris war direct to Maximus in Albion, and yai war first be  
him scharplie blamyt that contrare Romanis and yare con-  
federatis yai had send supple with inemyis to invaid Albion ;  
and specially becaus onelie Ireland amang all vthir realmys 50  
in ye warld, to yat day was vnfulzeit be the Romane armys ;  
syne clementlie grantit to yame pece be thir condiciouns, yat  
yai suld resauce nane inemyis of Romanis within ye realme  
of Ireland in tyme cuming, nor suld fortify na nacioun yat  
wald molest ye Romanis nor yare confederatis with weris ;  
attoure yat nane Hibernienß suld in merchandice cum in  
Albioun yareeftir. Quhen pece be yir condiciouns and ane  
sikkir band was made, the Hibernienß, moving na trubil in  
Albioun, thareeftir contenit yame self in quyet. 56

Followis the vij buke of the historyis of Scottis.



## [Liber Septimus.]

How throw humanite and liberalite of Maximus, Fo. CXV. the army consentit he suld vsurpe the Impire; how he broukit the monarchie of Albion; how he slewe ye Emprioure Graciane; how be the Emprioure Theodoce he was slane; how Octavius inuadit ye croun of Britane, and was persewit be Romanis, and be quhat condicions he appoyntit pece.

Cap° primo.

60 **M**aximus, Romane legate, having pece and rest M.L.T. 220b  
 and all materis debatabill repressit, quhen he had  
 nane inemye in Albion nor ferit nane fra vthir  
 partis, yat ye pepill mycht haue ane consate and opinioun  
 of his nobilite, he gaif him to be manerlie and curtesß in cum-  
 pany, debarring nane fra his *presens* nor *commvnicacion*,  
 desiring erare be repute gude and vertuofß be the pepill, yan  
 to haue vertewe in effect. He intertenyit ythandly the heris  
 of Britan and schew him plesand to euery man, drawand  
 mony to benevolence and freyndschip be the singulare gloure  
 of his fame. And quhen he wakit fra bissy curis, he gaif him  
 to wersling or vthir plesand exercitacioun *with* ye nobillis  
 70 of Britan, vsing amang yame and Romanis mervellus liberalite,  
 ffor apou ane day he wald distribute litill lesß yan all Britan  
 payit of tribute to ye emprioure be zere. Be sic liberalite  
 and giftis he wan favouris of ye armye, quhilk, awating apoun  
 him as emprioure and souerane, gaif yare band and aith  
 vnrequirit to pas with him to quhat iournais he plesit. Quhare-  
 fore ye legate, in yame gretelie affying for his liberale giftis,  
 convenit ane consale at zork, quhare of new he distribute  
 ye landis of Scotland to Britons and Pichtis, and stuffing al ye

- Fo. CXV. castellis and strenthis of Albion *with* mwnciou, he commonit in quiet *with* certane complicis of his secrete consell and schew how he consauit to vse tyrannye and conspire contrare *ye* 80
- Fo. CXVI. emprioure. And *yai*, vnderstanding *ye* mater, lete *ye* remanent armye in ane parte haue knaulege *pareof*. Ffinalie, it was among *yame* panielie divulgate, and becaus *yai* knewe he was of *ye* blude royall, of *ye* houfß of grete Constantine, emprioure, and decorit be marciall actis and liberalite, (quharethrow men ar sone drawin to favouris), thay gais him *ye* purple and declarit him emprioure. Vthir apprisit authoris writis *yat* Maximus, constrenit be his armye, was create empriour in Britan. Bot in *yis* caiß, as in diuersß vtheris, I suld be perdonit to follow oure auld cronikillis and famous writaris erare *yän* vthir alienis gif I vary *nocht* fra verite of the historie. 10
- M.L.T. 221 Valentyniane, empriour, knawand how Britane was occupyit be tyrannye of Maximus, causit him oftymes be invadit be Romane capitaneis rewling Gallia. Howbeit Maximus, ourethrowin Valentyniane and his chiftanis in batell, mycht on na wise be vincust. Quharefore he lichtlie impetrate pece at the emprioure. Thareeftir he gouernit Albion xvij *zeris* with ane vantage and speciall prerogative, quhilk nane vthir legate had fra tyme *ye* ile was first inhabit, *yat* he broukit *ye* onelie monarchie, all *ye* realmez of Albioun obeying atanis his senezeory. Attoure be mervellus humanite he wan the favouris of Pichtis. Ffor of *yare* maist gudelic men he chesit ane garde to awate on his persoun, or ellis disponit *yame* in garnisoun to kepe *ye* strangest castells in Britan. Quhen he plesit vesy Pichtland he devodit *ye* Romane abilze- 20  
ment and cled him in *ye* habit of Pichtis, with mantill, brusit *with* gold, silk champe of treis and plesing flouris. He sufferit Heregust regne at liberte, and tuke bot sobir tribute fra *ye* pepill in signe of subiectioun, collectit of landis in the extreme partis of Albioun, to verify *yat* all *ye* ile sum tyme obeyit *ye* Romane Impire. Be sic gratitudis of *ye* legate, the pepill war sa glade, (beleving *yame* relevit fra fere of inemyis), *yat* *yai* luffit him attoure all vtheris. Alsua *yai* war reiosit *yat* Scottis, ever invious to Britanis and Pichtis, war eiectit and the maist parte of *yame* extermynate. Quhen Maximus in

30 yis sorte baith stoutlie and plesandlie had reulit the senezeorie Fo. CXVI.  
 in Albion certane yeris, and be the pepill was tho<sup>cht</sup> wourthie  
 to brouk ye haill Impire, throw naturall ambicioun, (quhareto  
 ye mynde of men oftymes is inclinit), nocht yareof satisfyit,  
 bot desiring domynacion of ye haill warld, he preparit ane  
 strang armye to pas in Gallia, ffirst garnissand ye fortalicis  
 in Britan *with* strang mwnicioun. *With* na litill benevolence  
 he was resaut be ye armye of Graciane, emprioure, quhilk  
 was to his armye odioß becaus he tretit ye barbare pepill  
 mare yan Romanis. Be convoyance of weremen Maximus  
 be ane suddand iupartie slew Graciane, quhilk before was  
 affrayit, tending to returne to Italie. Theodoß, empriour,  
 (as writis the Dekin Paule), knawing how Maximus supprisit M.L.T. 221b  
 baith Italie and Almanze, with stark power persewit him,  
 for ye tyme in Aquileia making residence; and Andragace,  
 his college, tuke all reule of ye weris. Quhen yis Andragace  
*with* strang power of weremen subtelly had stuffit ye passage  
 and entres of all fludis and Alpis, callit ye montanis, devising  
 with his flote be suddante to assalezè inemyis apoun ye sey  
 and distroye yame or yai mycht be warnit, wilfully he left  
 ye werk he had cloissit afore. Sua Theodoß, emprioure,  
 without knaulege of ony persoun, enterit in ye montanis,  
 and, or euer Maximus was aduertist, assegeing ye ciete of  
 Aquileia, without contrauersie he inclusit, tuke and slewe  
 Maximus ye tyran, cruell inemye to ye Impire, be onelie  
 terroure of his name, astrenezeing ye inhumane pepill of  
 Germanze to 3erlie tribute. This perdicioun of Maximus  
 afore be Sanct Martyne was prenosticate. Andragace his  
 colleig, knawing yis slauchter, haistelie fra ye schip lap in ye  
 sey and be welterand wallis was ouerquhelmyt; and Theodoß,  
 maist Cristin emprioure, be aid and supple of Almychty God,  
 without blude had victorie. Quhen this slauchter was divulgat,  
 40 Romanis in Gallia *with* his 3ong son Victor (new made  
 emprioure) sufferit him lif na langare. Quhil ye Romane  
 princis lauborit in sic civil debatis, Octavius, son to ye last  
 Octavius, king of Britouns, declynyng ye tyrannye of Maximus,  
 fugitive to ye Ile of Mon, to Ethod and Eugenius (as before  
 is rememberit), returnyng to Britan fra Gallia, (now Ffrance),

Fo. CXVI. quhare he socht refuge quhen Albion be *Maximus* was subiectit,  
 desirit his heretabill realme of Britan, vacant of ane prince  
 for the tyme ; becaus be liniale successioun he was ane Britan, 50  
 borne of ye blude royall and of the eldest brothir, be ressouns  
 preving yat Britan be na way pertenis to Romanis, of quham  
 the senezeory was tending to rewyne, as mycht be clerelie  
 sene. Gif yai wald vse his counsell, na strenegere suld  
 among thame regne in tyme cuming, bot ane prince of the  
 M.L.T. 222 ancient Britan blude as afore, and ye Romane name was  
 to all Britouns baith odiofs and pridefull, oft tymes reduceand  
 to remembrance the labouris and vailzeand actis of diuers  
 Britan kingis, the woundis and blude sched for yare liegis  
 in batall contrare Romanis, exhorting yai suld zitt attempt  
 to redeme yare liberte, sa oftymes fra yame reft and sa oft  
 tymes recoverit, and abiect ye hevy zoik of *seruitute*, schawing  
 be mony resouns how the tyme was convenient to haue eselie  
 yare intent. Britouns, wery of ye lang domynioun of Romanis,  
 desiring to be at fredome, refusit *nocht* ye peticioun of Octavius,  
 quhilk *nocht* alanerly be his nobill lynage, bot als for his humane  
 and plesing behavingis, wan yare favouris, and be yame was  
 crownit souerane. Hereto resistit Romanis, keparis of the 60  
 Britane strenthis ; quharethrow apperit factioun and troubill,  
 the maist parte of Britouns favoring the parte of Octavius,  
 and ane vyir parte fortifying ye opinioun of Romanis, tending  
 at yare power to conserve the province obeysant to ye  
 empriour. This division gave the emprioure occasioun to  
 send ane army in Britan to conquess it of new to ye Romane  
 Empire. Thareeftir Octavius on all sidis was invadit be  
 Romanis ; and eftir mony batellis, invane attemptit contrare  
 yame, sa expert in armys, finalie pece was made be yir con-  
 dicions, yat Octavius, observing fidelite to Romanis, suld  
 brouk ye crowne for his tyme : the Romane garnisoun suld  
 kepe castellis and strenthis in Britan : iustice suld be ministrit 70  
 be sic men as ye empriour wald assigne : Britouns suld pay  
 sic zerelie tribute to ye emprioure as yai payit to *Maximus*,  
 tyran, afore. Thareeftir ye realme of Britan, deliuerit fra  
 tyrannye of *Maximus* and restorit to ye Romane Empire,  
 remanit certane zeris at opinioun of ye emprioure.

How the legatis Victoryne and Marcius be strate FO. CXVI.  
 lawis supprisit Pichtis; how King Heregust for  
 melancolie slewe him self; how Romanis send the  
 new king of Pichtis bundin to Rome; how Pichtis M.L.T. 2225  
 war constrenit to extend ane wall betuix Abircorne  
 and Dunbritane, and how Pichtis regrettit the dissate  
 movit contrare Scottis. Cap° ij°

Quhen this to the Emprioure Theodos was schewin, to  
 kepe Albion at his fidelite he directit twa legatis, of quham  
 ye tane, Victorine, remanit at zork, the tothir, Marcius, at  
 Londone, to aduert yat al lawis of ye emprioure war obseruit.  
 80 This sorte of giding was nocht plesing to Albanis; ffor Pichtis,  
 vsing yare ald ritis and extemyng litill ye Romane lawis, war FO. CXVII.  
 summound compere before the legate, Victorine, and scharply  
 war reprevit yat, contempnyng ye Romane name, and iugeis  
 depute to reule ye cuntre, without regarde of yare ceremonis  
 or lawis thay obseruit yare auld barbare ritis, to equite and  
 policie baith repugnyng, like as yai had na thing *commoun*  
*with* ye emprioure nor his lawis; chargeing yai suld yareftir  
 abstene fra yare ancient consuetude in *ministring* of iustice  
 and obey ye lawis, actis and iugis of Romanis, in all actiouns  
 of liffe and dede having power; thay suld nowther vsurpe  
 nor covate to haue vthir iustice yan was *providit* be ye Romane  
 10 lawis: na les pane yan dede *proponit* gif ony attemptit ye  
 contrare. Heregust, king of Pichtis, now weill ageit, febill  
 and seiklie, knawing ye decrete of ye legate and yat he behuffit  
 on nede spend his age in schamefull *seruitute*, repenting ye  
 iniust weris movit contrare Scottis be his causing, quhareby  
 he knewe ye intollerabill myscheif and sorow to follow on  
 him, posterite and pepill, to liff perpetualie like bondis, yat  
 he suld na langar be abusit he went to his quiet chalmer and,  
 removing all *servandis*, (like as he had sum secrete mater  
 ado), closit ye porte and with violent handis spilt him self.  
 Eftir this vnchancye end of Heregust, the legate, be opin  
 decrete, inhibit Pichtis to cheiß ony officiare or reullare of  
 yare nacioun yat mycht vse authorite, in tyme *cuming*;

Fo. CXVII.  
M.L.T. 223

na persoun of Pichtis blude suld be decorit with princelie 20  
 maieste ; nane of yame suld minister iustice, how beit yai  
 war requirit, except he quham the emprioure depute yareto,  
 as was *providit* in ye lige maid betuix King Heregust and  
 Maximus in name of ye emprioure, quhen for weill of ye  
 Pichtis he expellit Scottis. Quharefore ye auld lawis of  
 Pichtis suld be rescindit and yare kinrik suld be maid ane  
 province, as Britane ; Romane lawis suld be institute ;  
 barbare ritis suld be abrogate, na leß pane yan dede proponit  
 gif ony attemptit ye contrare. Sum Pichtis, thinking yir  
 actis to scharpe and contrare resoun, obeyit nocht, bot, with  
 indignacion weyand yat government of ye realme suld be reft  
 fra ye blude royall, in parliament declarit yat Durst, secund  
 son of King Heregust, suld tak ye crowne. Victoryne, com- 30  
 movit hereat, to dant haistely sic rebelloun or Pichtis mycht  
 provide new supple, convoyit his armye to Pichtland, vnwitting  
 the king or his zong consell, passing yare tyme in bankettis  
 and plesere at Camelodune, quhil ye skry raiff of ye commons  
 rynnynng fra the feildis for refuge to ye ciete. Romanis sa  
 suddanlie environit ye ciete yat Pichtis mycht haue na place  
 to evade, bot, providing sic defence as for ye skarff tyme yai  
 mycht, or ever yai aduertit ane strang sege was *confemyt*  
 about ye town. The assege continewit certane dayis. Finalie  
 ye towne was takin and ye spuileze distribute amang the 40  
 Romane armye. The new king *with* ye cheif conspiratouris,  
 bundin, was send to Londoun, fra thyne to Rome, to be  
 demanit at plesere of ye emprioure and counsell. Sa mony  
 grete men of Pichtis as *commovit* the pepill to contempne  
 ye actis of ye legate, war first skurgit throw ye strete, syne  
 hedit. Sua yis bruleze was stancheit. Thareeftir ye legate  
*commandit* yat Pichtis to ye Romane procuratour suld pay  
 ye ferde penny of yare bestiall and victuale for zerelie tribute ;  
 gif yai refusit, it suld be punyst *with* dede ; allegeand yat  
 Pichtis grewe to sic insolence sen Scottis war eiecit ye ile  
 yat, *without* yai war dantit be autorite of Romanis, yai  
 M.L.T. 223b suld, to the hurte of mony, kindill grete divisioun in Albion. 50  
 Attour thir chargis he ekit diuersß kyndis of vile *seruice* and  
 laubouris, sending yame fra yare native cuntre to Britane,

or vthir partis, to wirk at ye myndis for wynnyng of metall, Fo. CXVII.  
to lauboure at ye querrell for stanys, and to mak materialis  
for sa mony tyildis as was *commandit*. To thir iniuris adiectit  
was ane vthir invenciou, to be weyit mare displesandlie,  
excogitate for ye finale exterminacioun baith of ye realm  
and pepill. Ffor, sone eftir thir scharp decretis, thay war  
chargeit vnder pane of dede with wyffis, childer and gudis,  
remove bezond ye ryvere of Forth and leif ye boundis of  
Ordoluce, Dere, Siluria, Vicomage, (now Berwik, Merfs,  
Tevidale <sup>2</sup>℄, Carrik, Kyle <sup>2</sup>℄, Striuelingschire), Galloway,  
Pichtland and grete parte of Calidon Wod, to be inhabit  
with Romanis and Britons, obeying yare senezeorie. Attoure  
yai war *commandit* to cast ane brade and profound foussy  
and bezond ye *sammyn* big ane strang dike, extendit fra  
60 Abircorne endlang be the boundis of Glasgw to ye castell  
of Alclud, (now Dounbritane), situate betuix ye mouth of  
Levin and ye river of Clyid, fra ye est sey to ye west sey, to  
devide ye kinrik of Britouns fra Pichtis. Gif ony Picht  
transcendit the dike without licence of ye capitanis, it suld be  
punyst as cryme of leifs maieste. This decrete was proclamyt  
at *command* of Victorine throw ye realme. Be sa mony  
intollerabill iniuris and vile seruitute Pichtis war sa anoyit,  
yat vniuersalie thay plenezete ye hard chance be yare avne  
culpe incurrit, liftand yare ene towart ye hevin, besocht  
Almychtj God he wald fra the pridefull domynioun of Romanis  
deliuer ye pepill following his doctrine and lawis, iustlie for  
yare demeritis punyst.

Fo. CXVII.

How Ffergus the Secund was productit; of the successioun of Ethod, broder to King Eugenius; how he was at the taking of Rome; how yarefra he brocht ane schryne replete with bukis to Comkill, and of quhat mater yai bukis apperandlie tretis; of vthir incidentis and of singulare laude of Sanctis Augustine and Iherome. Cap° iij°

M.L.T. 224

Quhill Pichtis war skurgit be Romanis and subiect to 70  
 yare legatis in sic sorte of thirlage, Scottis, exilit with yare wyiffis and childer, sum parte fra yare native cuntre remanit in strange regiouns, sustenyng yare life be sare labouris; vtheris in diuerß partis of ye warld servit in ordinance of chiftanis for wagis. Ethod, broder germane to King Ewgene, (of quham before is schewin), eftir be decrete of Maximus he was exilit the cuntre, fleing to Denmark and be the king yareof benygnely resaut, with him certane tyme remanyng he gat goverment of ane cuntre in Denmark, resaving ye rentis yareof to his expensß. Quhare he gat apoun his lady, following him fra Albioun, ane son, namyt Erth, quhilk, eftir deceiße of his fader, gat apoun Rocha, his spouße, (ane nobill lady of ye Denys blude, dochter of Rorich, maist potent prince in Denmark nixt the king), ane fare son namyt 80  
 Fferguß, quhilk eftirwart, (as in place conuenient salbe schawin), deliuerit Scottis fra thirlage. Quhen in ye flurissing youth of yis Ffergus throw all partis of Scithia, Poill and Germanye ane strang army was collectit to distroye ye Romane Impire, odioß for the tyme to all ye warld, and be fataill courß of weirdis it tendit to myscheif, be persuasioun of ye king of Denmark preparing his ordinance to weris, birnyng in ire contrare Romanis, becaus his progenitouris with the maist parte of Scottis nacioun be yame war owder in batell slane, expellit yare rowmys or chaissit to vthir regions, with ane gudelic cumpanye of Danys and Scottis exilit in yai partis he went to Alarik, king of Gothis, governoure of all ye weris. Fferder, eftir mony iournayis be variabil fortune 10  
 strikkin contrare Romanis, grete plaig resaut be athir partie,

Fo. CXVIII.



Radagaß of Scithia with infinite multitude of pepill slane Fo. cxviii.  
 and ye Romane pussance be mekill damage brokin and  
 supprisit, the ciete of Rome was assegeit be Alarik and his  
 Gothis, be fortune favorit for the tyme. Romanis, quhat  
 throw assaltis of inemyis, quhat throw penurite of viueris  
 almaist consumyt, certane tyme sustenit ye assege. Ffinalie, M.L.T. 224b  
 be sa extreme hungir and indigence the miserabill ciete  
 lauboring, abstenit nowder fra mennys flesch nor vthir abho-  
 mynabill metis. "My voce quakis," (sais Sanct Iherome,) 20  
 "and my wourdis be sichin ar brokin. The ciete now is  
 takin quhilk tuke all ye warld, and almaist sonare distroyit  
 be hungir þan be swerde: few war þarein to be takin. The  
 rage of þare hungir ruschit to euery sorte of vile metis, amang  
 þare self ryfand þare propir membris. The moder sparit  
 nocht ye son, bot was glaid to resaue in hir wame agane,  
 quham scho latelie had deliuerit." Be ye army of Gothis  
 Rome was expuguate and takin ye first day of ye moneth  
 of Aprile, in ye þere eftir it was beildit be Romulus j<sup>m</sup> j<sup>c</sup> lxiii,  
 of mannis Redempcioun iiij<sup>c</sup> xij. Eftir ye ciete wynnyng,  
 be command of Alarik fra al slauchter and violacioun of  
 templis, dedicate to the Apostlis Petir and Paule, was abstenit ;  
 quharethrow grete nowmer of pepill, sekand ye sammyn,  
 with refuge be þare maieste was salfit. Eftir be crudelite of  
 30 Gothis Rome, (sum tyme maistres and souerane of all naciouns),  
 was wynnyng, quhen ye spuleþeis brocht fra all partis of ye  
 warld war bereft, þai war deuidit nocht equalie, bot conforme  
 to ye ritis of Gothis, having consideracioun of meritis of ye  
 weremen. It is haldin þat, by vthir sacrate iowellis and  
 mony precioß arraymentis, Fferguß, be cavill, gat ane  
 schryne, full of bukis, to his parte, keping ye samyn *with*  
 incredibill diligence, incertane be quhat inspiracioun, and,  
 eftir mony lauborioß iournayis with ye Gothis, brocht ye  
 samyn bukis vntwicht throw Germany to ye Ilis, plaißing  
 yame finalie in Colmkill, and, with diligent cure, gart big  
 fare housß quhare perpetualie mycht be obseruit the honorabill  
 memorie of antecessouris, as he belevit, togiddir with ye  
 vailþeand actis of his nacioun ; and assignit þarto apprisit  
 40 writaris in volwmys and bukis to collect þai historyis. Sum

Fo. cxviii. allegis, (as we have oft tymes herd), that Eneas Silueus, of  
 singular erudicion, (quhilk eftirwart Pape was namyt Pius),  
 directit fra Pape Eugenius ye Ferde to King Iames ye First  
 M.L.T. 225 in Scotland, was inflammyt be fame of thir bukis to pas to  
 Colmkill and explore gif he mycht fynd ony volumys of ye  
 Decadis made be Titus Liuius, be weris and crudelite of  
 inhumane pepill tynt, (ffor weris may do mare skaith than  
 procesß of tyme to distroye antiquiteis). Be suddane slauchter  
 of ye king, he desistit fra his purpos becaus without grete  
 convoyance, (sen all ye cuntre was on flocht), he mycht nocht  
 pas throw the kinrik. Fferder, to vnderstand quhat bukis 50  
 ar in Comkill yat ar sa mekill namyt and of quhat mater  
 yai trete, we tuke purpos to knaw, and at the religios men  
 of ye place, be ane messagere, thryis to yame send; finalie  
 be speciall diligence of Schir Iohnne Campbell, Knicht,  
 thesaurare to oure Souerane Lord, we optenit yat five ald  
 bukis, writtin with Romane lettres, be ane faithfull serwand  
 suld be send to ws to Aberdene. Quharefore in ye zere of  
 God j<sup>m</sup> v<sup>e</sup> v zeris we resaut of ald bukis certane rewyne quaris,  
 of quham sum excedit nocht ye palme of ane hand in breid,  
 writtin in hard, inflexibill parchement, mervellus craftelie,  
 as be ye plesand forme of ye lettir may be considerit. Bot  
 yai war sa consumyt and worne be procesß of zeris or erare be 60  
 necligence of keparis, yat with difficulte euery tent worde  
 mycht be red. Nocht ye les quhidder yir bukis, (of quhilki's  
 thir ar the fragmentis and remanis), war writtin in Albion in  
 Romane hand, of ye Romane actis, or brocht to Albion fra  
 ythir partis, we knaw nocht clerelie. Bot be iugement of  
 euery man yat on yame lukit, yai erare resembill the eloquence  
 of Salust than the ditement of Liuius. Be ye samyn berare  
 to me was brocht the historie of Veremwnd, archidene of  
 Sanctandros, writtin of oure actis, quhilk, (how beit ye style  
 be rude), comprehendis haboundantlie all thingis done fra  
 begynnyng of ye Scottis name to ye tyme of King Malcolme  
 Canmore. And becaus we fynd this Veremwnd without  
 dissymulacioun reherß oure actis, we haue in yis oure werk,  
 (as clerelie may be sene), writtin eftir him and the reuerend 70  
 bischop, William Elphinstoun of Abirdene, quhilk diligentlie

in historijs of oure nacioun follois Veremwnd, sen maist clerelie as apperis yai schaw the verite thareof. Bot lat ws returne to oure first purpois. Ffergus, son of Erth, departing *with* his chiftane Alarik fra Rome, thre dayis eftir it was expuguate be Gothis, was at spuleze of Champanze, Lucanie and Bruce, and, preparing at *command* of Alarik to saill to Cecill *with* ye weremen, in myd vyage tynyng parte of schippis and *with* difficulte evading drownyng, be contrare wynd and storme was drevin bakwart to Italie. Quhare, eftir Alarik suddanly deceissing, Gothis, be laubouris of certane captiuis, setting the ryver of Basent by ye iust courß quhare it ran, in myddis the grund yareof beryit Alarik with infinite riches and, restoring ye flude to ye first passage, slew the presoneris,

FO. CXVIII.  
M.L.T. 225b

So yat of his sepulture na persoun suld haue knowlege. Athaulph syne be Gothis was create king, and, continewing Fferguß in his office, lufit him with hartlie kyndenes. Quhen all Italie be the Gothis was opprest, Ffergus, opulent be riche pray, tuke congie fra King Athaulph, and with his gudelie cumpanye of Danys, be grete iournayis returnit to Denmark. In this tyme, or *nocht* fer distant yarefra, men of excellent ingyne war liffand, as Claudiane, poet, native of Egipt, writing in his poetry mony thingis wourthy be notit, and among his werkis ar diuerß grete actis of oure nacioun; Appollinare of Laodiensß, scharp persewar of ye Porphiriane heresie; Martine, bischop of Turon in Gallia, of Vngarie native, of  
10 *commendit* sanctitude and fame; Brice alsua, bischop of Turon, *with* diuerß vtheris confessing the name of Criste; among ws the Bischop Niniane, excellent in halines and myrakillis, first foundare of ye bischoprik of Quhitherne in Galloway, (quhare alsua he beildit ane kirk in honoure of Sanct Martyne his eme), famous preichoure to Scottis, Pichtis and Britouns, and extemyt of grete veneracioun be inhabitantis Albioun to this day. Bot of all vtheris the haly bischoppis Ambroiß of Melane, and Augustine his spirituall  
20 son, war maist excellent. This Augustyne first institute the reule of *channons regulare*, quhilk within schort tyme increscit to honorabill *conventis* and in diuerß regiouns possedis mony fare abbayis sumptuoslie biggit, and drowryit be liberale

FO. CXIX.

M.L.T. 226

Fo. CXIX. magnificence of devote princis. Off þis reule, by grete nowmer of devote, cunnyng men and haly bischoppis, has bene xxx<sup>tj</sup> Papis, and of nane vthir reule is red sa mony. The religioun namyt heremytanis, brocht be Augustine fra the desertis to duell in townis and burrowis to obserue þis reule, ar als devote and cunnyng as ony vthir religioun, and howbeit the heremytanis has bene oftymes supprisit be persute of infidelis, 30 famous outhouris writis mervellis of þare incrementis, that þir dayis abone ij<sup>m</sup> iij<sup>c</sup> abbayis of þare ordoure ar in Europe, by þame in Affrik, quhare þis ordoure was institute; and in þat parte of Ethiop abone Egipt ar mony vtheris, and sa mony new foundit þat of þame may be na certane nowmer. This divine Augustine, nocht alanerlie be þir religios institutis, bot alswele be erudicioun, almaist of all discipline and science reput egill and souerane of all doctouris, ffor in sic thingis fra his barneage he was exercit, and scantlie had xx<sup>tj</sup> þeris in age quhen he teichit rethoric in Carthage; and without instructioun of ony man studying astronomye and philosophie, 40 he teichit first þe samyn in Rome, syne in Melane, quhare be Ambrois, bischop þareof, detesting the Manicheane heresy, (in quhilk he was corruptit fra tendir þeris), and resaving þe lavature of bapteme, he take oure faith; in þe quhilk, be diligent laubour abone þe commoun cast of vthir men, he proffit sa mekle to þe vtilite of Cristianis, þat abone j<sup>c</sup> sindri sectis of heresyis be him war impugnit, as Possidonius writis. He wrate and red sa mony volumys þat þe onelie age of ane man apperandly may nocht suffice to write nor rede sa mony. His bukis of Haly Scripture writtin to þe posterite ar extemyt of sic authorite and reuerence, þat theologis in scolastic 50 discipline, conuersing with all circumspectioun, employis þare studyis to his conclusioun and determynacioun. Of lxx þeris, he randerit his spirit to þe celestial gloure, eftir he had xl þeris governit þe pastorall cure of Ipponen, þe vij þere of þe Emprioure Theodos, zonger. About þe sammyn tyme, but sum parte before, Basile, bischop of Cesarien, begynnare of þe reule of monkis, was liffand. Cunnynglie and devotelie he wrate mony thingis, conduceing nocht litill to þe augmentacioun and lawde of oure faith. Alsua Cirill, bischop of

Ierusalem, suffering mony displeouris of ye Arrianis, fynalie Fo. CXIX.  
 60 apoun yame tryumphit, and made ane gracios̄ end. Attoure,  
 the famous doctor Sanct Ierome, cardinal, yat wrate mony  
 thingis of vtilite of the Cristin faith. He turnit ye Bibill  
 fra Hebrew to Latyne. He translatit diuers̄ volumys of  
 ye Scripture in Latyne out of ye langage of Calde and Greik.  
 The Pape Damais̄ resauit his writingis and causit yame be  
 authorist to be red in ye kirk of God. Now is to be returnit  
 to ye historie of Scottis, quharefra we haue made degressioun  
 for reuerence of Sanctis Augustine and Ierome, ferder yan  
 peraenture efferis oure purpois̄.

How Pichtis, opprest be Romanis, solistit Ffergus̄  
 to cum in Albioun; of the dede of Marcius and  
 Graciane, Romane legatis; how Constantyne, new  
 legate, rebellit contrare the emprioure, and how be  
 Constance he was slane; how fra all partis Scottis  
 conuenit to Ffergus cum in Albion; how he  
 confederit *with* Pichtis; how he was crownit;  
 how he recounerit Victorine in sare batell, and of  
 the Hieland Pichtis. Cap° iiij°

**B**e iniuris of Romanis, Pichtis, (as said is), daly mare  
 skurgit with seruitute, and persaving it apperit euer to  
 be wer, of sic lang and importabill thirllage wery, secretelie  
 70 yai appoyntit with Scottis, exilit yare cuntre in the Ilis,  
 Noroway and vthir partis of ye warld, thay suld returne to  
 Albioun, recovir yare kinrik and revenge the dispitis done  
 be Romanis, promitting be [ye] grete aith yat owder be yare  
 supple the kinrik of Scotland suld be restorit, or yai suld all  
 de atanis in batell contrare Romanis and Britouns. Ffergus, M.L.T. 227  
 resaving this message in Denmark and commonyng the mater  
*with* the king, send incontinent to Noroway, Orknay, Ilis  
 and Ireland, to explore how Scottis, in yai partis exilit, war  
 toward him myndit. Quhen he vnderstude *with* ane consent  
 yai desirit ye restauracioun of yare kinrik in Albion and to  
 80 vindicate ye outrage of Romanis and Britouns, part furnist

Fo. CXX. be ye king of Denmark, parte of his awne substance, and als his gudeschir, maist opulent baroun of yat realme, making supple, he contractit grete nowmer of weremen and schippis to recovir in Albion ye kinrik of his progenitouris. About yis tyme Graciane, of Britan blude, be consent of Marcius, Romane legate, contrare ye tenoure of his aith, vsurpit tyrannye in Britane. Bot yis bruleze was sone repressit, athir of game be suddane debate slaying vthir. The Romane armye, weyand hevily yis infortunate chance, yat yai suld nocht want ane chiftane in Britane, nocht taryng ye authorite of Honorius, emprioure, create Constantine legate in place of Marcius. Constantine, nowder extemyt in nobillite of blude nor in 10 weris, having na vertewe except onelie ane fare name, tuke ye purple and salit with ye armye to Gallia, for the tyme patent to iniuris of Vandalis and Sweschis, tending to occupie the province gif he mycht be ony way ; quhare be nobill and stout Constance, faithful colleig of Honorius, emprioure, he was discumfist and slane. Victorine, the vthir legate of Britane, eftir distruction of Marcius and Constantine tyrannys, departing fra zork, movit to Londoun, employing all his cure at fidelite of ye emprioure to contene, and fra invasiouns of barbaris, preserve Britan, almaist denwde of garnisoun, becaus latelie afore the army was past with Constantyne to Gallia, and ye Romane senezeorie in all partis for the tyme was infestit. 20 Herethrow Pichtis erectit in esperance of bettir fortune, thinking, sen Britane be extreme and exact circumspectioun of Victorine with grete pyne mycht be conseruit obeysant to the empriour, that be supple of Scottis yai mycht mare eselie recouer yare liberte, be frequent legaciouns yai certifijt Ffergus in quhat state stude ye kinrik of Britan ; how Marcius, M.L.T. 227b legate, for his falset was slane ; Constantine, of obscure origine, create in place of Marcius and, takin the purple, with stark power of Romanis departing to Gallia, for tyrannye be Constance, colleig to ye empriour, was yare brocht to dede ; Victorine had left zork and with grete parte of ye armye remanit at Londoun, quhare with grete pane he kepit Britouns trew to Romanis ; sua ye tyme was convenient to recovir the realme of Scottis without grete impediment ; praying 30

herefore he wald haistelie returne to Albion, quhare he suld Fo. CXX.  
 be assurit be ye grete aith to haue ye pussance of Pichtis  
 reddy to debait, gif nede war to ye dede, contrare inemyis  
 for ye weill of Scottis. Be yir legaciouns of Pichtis, (bot  
 mare to recovir ye kinrik of progenitouris), Fferguß was  
 movit, *nocht* mysknawing how be ye iustice of God Pichtis  
 war punyst for yare tresoun; having all necessaris for ye  
 vse of weremen at ye saill, *with* stark power departit fra  
 Denmark, and be *prosper* courß the viij day arrivit at Murray.  
 40 Be brute of his *cuming* in Albion all Scottis in Ireland, Ilis,  
 Orknay, sped thame thidder haistelie with wyiffis and childer,  
 like as inemyis than had bene vincust, that yai *mycht* per-  
 petualie at eiß remane in yare native cuntre. Be confluence  
 of ye pepill Pichtis had grete esperance to recover yare liberte.  
 The heris of Pichtis frequentit mekill ye cumpany of Fferguß,  
 thanking him yat, to recovir his native realme and drife  
 yarefra outragioß inemyis, he had arrivit in Albioun in  
 wynter, contempnyng all *danger* of seyis quhen maist expert  
 marineris wald *nocht* aventure to saill; humilie syne beseking  
 he wald forzett ald iniuris and inveterate rankoure betuix  
 ye twa naciouns, sen he *mycht* eselie dreß yat mater; he  
 50 suld of new confedir *with* Pichtis; thay suld glaidlie resaue sic  
 condiciouns of pece as he wald offer, and obey quhat euer  
 he chargit; he suld *nocht* to yame ascrive ye culpe of ye  
 last batell, strikkin be Heregust contrare King Ewgene,  
 bot to yare forebearis, quhilk, nowder expert in ye fraude of M.L.T. 228  
 Romanis, nor considering quhat harme *mycht* follow throw  
 iniust batell contrare freyndis, war seducit be ye slekit adula-  
 cioune of Romanis and Britouns, sen vnder sic persuasiouns  
 yai *mycht* weill haue vnderstand, (giff fortune had sufferit),  
 fraude was lurking; ffor, quhen yai belevit fecht ffor weil of  
 yare awne kinrik, yai subdewit maist yame self; thay had  
 now sufferit sa condigne panys for yare iniquite, that yai  
 thocht all kynde of dede was to be preferrit to the pridefull  
 60 impire of Romanis, be quham yai war subiect, thare servitude  
 augmentit and be excogitate panis dalie afflictit. Hereto  
 ansuerit Fferguß be avise of his counsell: He wald, as did  
 antecessouris, having consideracioun of ye tyme, confedir

- Fo. CXX. *with* Pichtis be sic condiciouns as yai war vmquhile astrenezeit, and contrare Romanis and Britouns, auld inemyis, wald pas in batell to be vindicate ; sua Pichtis *with* wyffis, childer and gudis wald glaidlie devoid ye landis of Scottis, wrangwislie fra yame rest ; as twiching auld iniuris, Pichtis be wraith of Almychty God eneuch was punyst quhen of yare rowmes 70 yai war dispulezeit and like vile sclaffis send to vncouth regions, thirllit to all kynde of *seruitute*. To Pichtis his desiris war plesing. Nocht mekill tyme was rvn quhen Pichtis, be esperance of King Fferguß, create ane new king quhilk, eftir freyndlie *commonyng* with Fferguß, betuix athir nacioun and prince band ane new lige, and be ye aith of fidelite roborate ye samyn. Quhen done war thir premisß, restorit war ye regiouns quharefra Scottis be the Romane armye war eiectit, as in ye lyig was providit. Fferguß, *with* honorable tryne convoyit to Argathele, in ye marbill chyare of pro-genitouris, *with* magnificence according princelie maieste, was salust souerane. This was ye xliiij zere, (vtheris haldis xlv zere), eftir Scottis be Romanis fra Albion war excludit ; 80
- Fo. CXXI. of ye Virginis birth iiij<sup>c</sup> xxij ; ffra ye first beilding of ye Scottis kinrik vij<sup>c</sup> lv, and of Honorius empriour ye xvij zere. The
- M.L.T. 228b mwniciouns be Pichtis occupyit in Scotland war to Scottis restorit. The remanent stranglie war defendit be the Romane garnisoun. Nochttheles Scottis compellit yame be lang indigence, hunger, force of armez and all vthir distres to randereng. King Ffergus, vsing na crudelite apoun ye Romane wageouris bot resaving the strenthis, sufferit yame departe. At novellis hereof Victorine, legate, gretelie *commouit*, 10 assembling power, haistelie sped him to zork. Eftir his *cuming*, quhen be mony pollicitaciouns and giftis he had in vane be ane herald attemptit to devide Pichtis fra societe of Scottis, waryng Pichtis as fals, manesworne and vnwourthy to be in gude cumpanye, he maid opyn were apoun athir nacioun. Sua haistelie invading yare boundis, having vnder anseynzeis to the nowmer of l<sup>m</sup>, and passing zork, Candale, Ordoluce, Deer, Pichtland, nocht fer fra Camelodune he lwgeit his army. Ffergus and the king of Pichtis, certifyit 20 of ye *cuming* of Romanis in Pichtland, with ane fare armye



siclike contractit passing ye ryver of Forth, on nycht movit Fo. CXXI.  
 to ye campe of Romanis, tending strike ye batell in the  
 dawning. Romanis, nocht mysknawing ye purpois of inemyis,  
 at command of Victorine in the thrid vigill of ye nycht, ordorit  
 yare batellis. Apoun ane plane adiacent to ye flude of Caron  
 yai recounterit, be na leß strenth yan haterent pretermytting  
 na crudelite. At begynnyng the batell was sare and grevouß.  
 Sic multitude of men was slane and castin in ye flude of Caron,  
 yat the river be ane lang space flowit in rede blude myxt  
 with cariouns. Ffinalie sa mekil murthure was maid, yat  
 30 almaist in tymes bipast neuer greter was sene. Quhill ye  
 bargane was doutsum zit and perrellus, ane scharpe schoure  
 myxt *with* hail disseuerit athir armye, erare wery yan sacyate  
 of batell, and sa cummerit yat skantlie yai mycht discerne  
 thare feris fra vtheris. To athir armye this iournay was  
 sa myschevous, yat certane zeris following thay desistit fra  
 bargane. The Romane chiftane on ye morne thinking to  
 renewe the feild, knawing his pussance fulezeit, reterit to  
 Kent, his armye evill afflictit and trafillit, leiffing garnisoun  
 in Pichtland to defend the province contrare inemyis. The M.L.T. 229  
 confederate kingis, suffering the residewe of yare cumpanye,  
 left vnslane, departe, and studeing mekill to renewe ane armye,  
 40 quhen eftir lang meditacioun yai couth nocht fynd be quhat  
 craft nor pussance yai mycht oureset Romanis, thare  
 substance was sa brokin, concludit defend ye rowmys yai  
 had in possessioun and desist fra weris quhil tyme mare  
 convenient: pansing how yai mycht defend yare liberte,  
 evaid iniuris of inemyis, and how thare pepill in fatis and  
 practik of were mycht be instructit, and to yis effect made  
 frequent convencions in Otolinia, (now Fiffe), and Argathele.  
 Fferder, quhen ye nacioun of Pichtis, mekill mare copioß  
 yan yai mycht be contenit in Horestia, Otolinia, Vicomagia,  
 (now Angouß, Mernys, Fiffe, Striuelingschire), Stratherne,  
 and ye inferior partis of Calidonewod, (of all vthir regions  
 yai war dispulezit be Romanis), yai gat licence to duell in  
 Athole *with* landis adiacent bezond ye mont of Granzebene,  
 50 vnto ye tyme yai mycht recovir yare regions wrangwisly  
 fra yame rest. Within schort tyme ye pepill of Pichtis

Fo. CXXI. mervellusly multiplyit in Athole, bigging castellis and fortalicis, yarethrow decoring mekill ye cuntre and landis adiacent. Sum belefis yir ar ye Pichtis quhilk Bede, Veremwnd and certane vtheris apprisit writaris of ye Pichtis actis, namys Hieland Pichtis; how beit sum vthir diffinis yame to be Hieland Pichtis quhilk bezond Pichtland Hillis had habitacioun.

How the werkmen, depute be Victorine to complete the dike, war slane be Scottis; of ye commendacioun and lynage of Grahame; how Ffergus with his barouns consultit apoun the weris; how Victorine rebellit contrare the emprioure and be Heracliane was slane; how Placidus was create legate and discumfist be King Ffergus; and how he confederit with Scottis and Pichtis.

Cap<sup>o</sup> v<sup>o</sup>

M.L.T. 229b

In the mene tyme Victorine, legate, chargit Britouns complete the dike, extendit in lenth fra Abircorne to the mouth of Clide, apoun the hicht having lang treis and scharp stakis sett vp to be refuge to Romanis and Britouns aganis invasiouns 60 of Scottis and Pichtis. Quhen werkmen fra all partis to the werk war brocht and men in armys assignit to defend yame fra inemyis, be ane nobill man, gude fader to King Ffergus, namyt Graham, with power of Scottis and Pichtis, with all yare men in armes yai war opprest and slane. Huge prayis of men and bestiall fra ye nixt landis of Britouns war drevin to Scotland. Grahame, (as writis Veremwnd), was descendit of ye ancient stok of Lennox and of ane Scottis man and ane lady of Denmark productit; quhen Scottis, exilit, fled to Denmark for refuge, he maryit ane nobill virgine of ye samyn blude. Apoun hir he begat ane madyn chylde, quham be 70 persuasioun of ye Denß king, (for scho was his cousinace), Ffergus tuke in mariage. Ane litill or Ffergus come in Albion, he gat apoun yis lady thre sonnys, Eugene, Dongar and Constance, of quham in yare rowme salbe maid mencion. Vtheris haldis Graham was of Britane blude and, declynyng the tresoun of Romanis, first fled with Scottis to Denmark, syne

to Albion, becaus he said *yai vsit yare senezeorie with out-* Fo. CXXI.  
 rageoß pride and auarice abone *yare* subiectis. Bot of quhat  
 nacioun he was descendit, it is manifest be oure writaris he  
 was ane man of bald spirit, valzeand in pece and were, and  
 80 euer had Romanis and Britouns at fede. Sum allegeis ye  
 surname of Grahame, (honorabill in thir dayis), fra this man Fo. CXXII.  
 had begynnyng. Britouns, be this *present* myscheif done be  
 Scottis and Pichtis miserably afflictit, defending *with* difficulte  
*yare* awne boundis, certane zeris durst nocht agane attempt  
 ye werk. In ye *present* tyme to Ffergus come grete confluence  
 of Scottis fra Spanze, Gallia, Almanye and Itallie, in ordinance  
 vnder diuers chiftanis during *yare* proscricioun, inflammyt  
 be kyndenes to *yare* native cuntre, to haue it restorit to ye  
 auld liberte, becaus *yai* saw oportunitie hereto quhen sa mony  
 tyrannys, pepil and naciouns war rasit aganis the senzeory M.L.T. 230  
 of Romanis. King Ffergus *with* *yis* new power invadit  
 10 Siluria (now Kyle, *℥*) to forray and disturß the regioun.  
 To him occurrit the Romane armye, with quham melling in  
 batell, Scottis tuke na leß skaith than *yai* inflictit to Romanis.  
 Quharefore contrynit to leif Siluria, in auenture gif be  
 augmentacioun of the Romane power he suld be war trublit  
*yare*eftir, he skalit his armye and throw ye Lennox passit  
 to Argathele, to remane the tyme of wynter. He was counsalit  
 in ye *somer* following to recounter Victorine, quhilk was cumin  
 in Galloway, and assay ye finale end of fortune in batell  
 erare than to be contynualie molestit *with* sa mony harms  
 of inemyis. Vtheris, be ye contrare, thocht nocht expedient  
 to mell presumptuoslie *with* Romanis, aganis quham *yai* had  
 20 twyiß vnchancelie fochtin, bot erare tary and renewe *yare*  
 pussance, quhilk was fulzete and brokin; in aventure gif  
*yai* war the thrid tyme oureset, thay suld be patent to ye  
 iniuris of Romanis, and wald thay diligentlie wey be how  
 mony supprise the Romane estate was perturbit throw all  
 ye world. ze legate Victoryne mycht nocht tary lang in  
 Britane, quharethrow, sen ye Romane maieste planelie failzeit  
 and dekeyit, *with* the Romane garnisoun and army, like as  
 ane fleare, he suld disluge and departe fra Britan, and Scottis  
 and Pichtis resaving *yare* auld rowmys mycht without grete

Fo. CXXII. dangere be restorit to yare first estate. Be interchangeing  
 of mortall chancis, fortune be patent signis had promist ye  
 samyn, nocht onelie to Albanis, bot als to vthir nacions  
 subdewit to yare impire. This counsell was apprisit, and  
 Scottis following ye samyn, dalie making incursiouns apoun 30  
 Romanis and Britouns favoring yare opinioun, abstenit fra  
 sett batell. Sone eftir, be detraction of inemyis, Victorine was  
 accusit before Honorius, emprioure, of tressoun, allegiand  
 he had imagynit contrare him new invencions of tyrannye.  
 Quharethrow was suspectit the emprioure suld discharge  
 him of sup[e]riorite in Britane. Be brute hereof, Victorine first  
 devisit secretelie fle fra Britan and pas in sum vthir partis  
 to inemyis of Romanis. Nochttheles, be persuasioun of his  
 weremen (to quham be liberalite he was tendir and dere),  
 M.L.T. 230<sup>b</sup> he contempnit the pussance of the emprioure, and breking  
 his aith, attemptit tyrannye quhilk skantlie he had precogitate; 40  
 syne cled *with* purpure, be incredibill favoure of the armye,  
 was salust emprioure. Sum inhabitantis the ile, apprising  
 ye rebellious contrare ye emprioure, gladelie to Victorine  
 as to superior maid obeysance. Vtheris, declynyng ye trubill,  
 convenit with Dioneth, son to Octavius, king of Britouns  
 latelie rememberit, yat he suld occupy ye crowne of Britan,  
 sen his fader was deceissit afore. At last Britouns manifestlie  
 refusit the societe of Romanis, and grete apperance was of  
 sedicioun quhen Honorius, emprioure, to mete yir brulezeis,  
 send Heracliane, ane nobill man and consul afore, to Britan. 50  
 At his arriving yai war affrayit yat had create Victorine  
 emprioure, and quhen bot few of ye Romane armye followit  
 his oppinioun, to do sum plesour to Honorius and Heracliane,  
 fenzeing yame haistelie penitent, tuke Victorine and brocht  
 him denude of purpure to ye legatis. Vtheris alsua *with*  
 Victorine bundin to him war brocht, in speciall yai quhilk  
 maist favorit the partie of the tyran. Sone eftir yai war  
 all condampnit and, harlit as tratouris to the emprioure,  
 was iustifyit to ye dede. Sua Heracliane resautit the Romane  
 armye and contenit the ile at opinioun of Romanis. Herecliane,  
 taryng na langare in Britane, returnit at command of Honorius  
 to Rome to pas with ane army in Affrik to dant rebellious 60

of ye tyran Athale. To Placid, of dolf and covatus mynde, Fo. CXXII.  
nocht convenient for goverment nor reull, he left the Britan  
armye. King Ffergus, knawing how vnabill Placid was to  
stere grete meteris, thinking he had oportunitie to recovir  
his rowmys, inducit Durst, thrid king of Pichtis, be reson of  
ye lyig, to failze fra Romanis, and with stark power movit  
to Siluria (now Carrik, Kyle <sup>rc</sup>). There was present the  
power of Pichtis to ye weris *with* Scottis. The confederate  
pepill, passing throw Siluria and Galloway, be terribill slauchter  
70 oppressit all obeying ye Romane name. Sua crynyng nathing, M.L.T. 231  
returnyng to Pichtland, thay subdewit yat regioun togiddir  
with Deer, Orduluce (now Merfs, Tevidale and Berwik), and  
with force draif yarefra Romanis and Britouns. Be displesing  
novellis hereof, Placid, legate, with copiofs multitude, fra Britane  
past to Pichtland. Scottis and Pichtis sonzeit nocht for  
yare cuming, bot cruelly melling with yame in bargane, ffirst  
lowsing arrowis, syne with speris, swerdis and vthir wapynnys,  
be grete hardyment to thame resistit. Romane horfsmen  
war discumfist: incontinent ye futemen, denwde of yare  
refuge, almaist ouresett *with* schott of arrowis, and sinderit,  
tuke the flicht, gevin to Scottis plesing victorie. Grevous  
slauchter apoun flearis was maid. Placid, fleing, narrowly  
returnit to zork *with* ane rout ordanit to awate apoun his  
80 persoun. The confederate Scottis and Pichtis, proude of this Fo. CXXIII.  
*present* avantage, convoying yare armye to Britan, tendit  
assege zork. Bot yare pussance was sa brokin and armye  
sa fulzete, yat fra yare purpois yai desistit. Placid *commovit*  
nocht alanerlie be yis infortunate iournay, bot be mony vthir  
vnchancy afflictions of ye Romane armye, be barbaris in  
Almanye, Gallia, Spanze, Italie and Affrik, fering Britane  
suld be loist gif rebellious war movit, and he *with* his Romanis  
mycht be abusit and brocht to perdicion, he *commonit* of  
10 pece *with* ye kingis of Scottis and Pichtis. Nocht lang tyme  
was rvn quhen ane lyig was made betuix Scottis, Pichtis and  
Romanis, be certane artikillis that Scottis and Pichtis suld  
resaue and brouk yare ald rowmes, and invaid nane vthir  
in tyme cuming; thay suld mak nane irrupcion in ye Romane  
provincis; Romanis suld stand content of ye boundis of

FO. CXXIII. Britan and suld mak end of all weris aganis Scottis and Pichtis.

M.L.T. 231b

How King Fferguß, having pece, institute new namys of diuerß regions; how he was gevin to policie and foundit ane abbay in Colmkill quhare princis sulde be beryit; how eftir deceiße of Placid the legate, Castius be King Ffergus in batell was slane and how Dioneth was choissin king. Cap° vj°

A fter Scottis and Pichtis had resauit yare ancient regions and rowmes (Britouns wilfully departing yarefra) at rest and eiß in yare first liberte, yai gaif diligence yat, sen ye pepill war deliuerit of seruitute and thirlage quhare to Pichtis, be yare awne culpe subdewit, hevely war oppressit, thay suld be institute in maneris of antecessouris. King 20 Ffergus yareeftir distribute townis, regions and landis of his kinrik to Scottis, vthir fortifiaris, and wageouris in his weris that wald remane in Albioun to be conionit in ane pepill with his folkis, suffering ye remanent departe. At this tyme the namys first was changeit, and ye auld in tyme of King Fferguß ye First, be ye ancient chiftanis inducit, war deletit, and new nameȝ owder be ane new pepill, chiftane, notabill lowch, ryver, flude, hedeland, promontoure, vaille, or ony vthir ressoun, be procesß of tyme and consuetude of ye pepill war assignit. Be yis way ye regioun namyt Cornane in ye extreme partis of Albioun, fra ane vailzeand chiftane namyt Cato and ane hedeland callit Nefß, the ald name abrogate, 30 is callit Cateneß. Alsua certane weremen callit Rosß, yat come fra Ireland in support of Scottis to recovir ye kinrik, gaif ye regioun callit Lugia, Rosß to name, of quhilk ye maist parte contrare Romanis in ye recent batell was distroyit; and ȝit certane pepill in Ireland broukis yis surname. The lawich parte of Thezalie adiacent to ye sey, was callit Buchquhane, be resoun of ye kane ȝerelie payit to the kingis chawmerlanis, becauße it haboundit in multitude of flokkis and store. In oure ancient Scottis tong "quhayn" is callit

"kane," and "bowcht," "ye congregacioun of schepe." The FO. 0XXIII.  
 vthir parte of Thezale, fertill and birthe of corne and gerß  
 40 for pasture of beistis, fra ye ryver namyt Boga rynnynge  
 throw ye samyn, is namyt Straithbogie. Ffra ane louch M.L.T. 232  
 quharein rynnys ye ryver of Quhabir, copioß in salmond,  
 the inhabitantis callit ye schyre Lowchquhabir. Be sic like  
 causis in diuerß placis namys war changit. How beit ye  
 resoun and cauß thareof may nocht all way be adducit. Of  
 sum regiouns the first nameȝ lestis ȝit vnalterit, as Athole,  
 Murray. Diuerß vtheris fra the first institucioun varyis in  
 sum parte, as Argile for Argathele, Galloway for Galdia.  
 Mar for Marthea. Alsua King Fferguß reparit and appoyntit  
 kirkis, falezeit or neclectit be sleuth of ye pepill, with  
 annexacion of benefice to Goddis *servandis* for yare susten-  
 50 tacioun. With grete humanite he resautit haly men exilit  
 afore, and biggit to *ȝaim* certane cellis, conforme to ye ald  
 ritis, and gaif rentis to yare necessaris. In Colmkil he foundit  
 ane abbay, quhare he devisit ye *commoun* sepulture of kingis  
 in tyme *cuming*, and institute certane devote ritis and cerymonis  
 to be done at ye beryng of princis, assignyng yareto expensß  
 of landis adiacent. Nocht alanerlie desirit Fferguß be *com-*  
*mendit* be ye posterite for devote and religious actis, bot  
 als be vthir civill policie. Ffor wyislie *without* regarde to  
 expensß he reparit of new castellis and fortalicyis, in special  
 apoun ye marchis of Britouns, quhare yai war owdir failzeit  
 be lang tyme or fulzeit be violence of inemyis in yai strenthis.  
 Alsua he placit his agit soldeouris in garnysoun to remane  
 60 apoun ye *commoun* expensß during yare dayis. Fferder, quhill  
 King Fferguß be grete laubouris attemptit to ye first dignite  
 restore his kinrik ourethrawin besa mony variant revoluciouns of  
 fortune, Honorius, emprioure, deceissing, Theodoiß, empriour,  
 son to Archaid, in place of his eme substitute Valentiniane,  
 emprioure, thrid son of Constance begottin apoun Placidia,  
 sister of Honorius, directing him in Italie to helpe ye *commoun*  
 weill, in grete distres for ye tyme. About the samyn tyme  
 Placid, Romane legate, deceissit. This sterit Scottis and Pichtis  
 to invaid Britane, tending recovir Westmæreland and Cummyr-  
 70 land wranguislie reft be Romanis, allegiand yai war nocht

- Fo. CXXIII. oblist to ye band made with the legate langare than his life  
 M.L.T. 232b endurit. Quharefore with mekill hereschip thay distroyit  
 Westmarland, and *with* grete force ouresett the regions of  
 Britouns, bereft wedois and deflorit tendir virginis, schamefully  
 rebuting men and wemen waik and febil, schortlie apoun  
 yame leiffing na crudelite vnexercit. Sum Britouns fled to  
 Castius, eftir dede of Placid be ye weremen maid chiftane to  
 ye armye, fering thir terribill novellis. Castius crynyng ye  
 mater as it happynnyt, yat Dioneth, son of Octavius, king  
 of Britouns, suld aspire to ye kinrik, and yat be affectioun 80
- Fo. CXXIII. of his wife he wald favoure ye opinion of Scottis and Pichtis  
 (ffor in begynnyng of ye weris he sposuit the sister of King  
 Ffergus), he was inclinit mare to pece yan were, and be ane  
 herald requirit Ffergus he suld abstene to iniure ye Romane  
 provincis; gif he desirit pece, he suld be content of ald marchis  
 and persew na ferder, vthirwayis gif he bettir likit were, he  
 suld be assurit to haue zit ye samyn inemyis quhilk sum  
 tyme vincust, discumfist and expellit Scottis fra Albion,  
 sen vyir wayis yat cruell pepill couth nocht be dantit, and  
 Pichtis for yare fraude suld be in perpetuall thirllage. Eftir  
 ye herald had reportit yir wourdis, with grete ferocite yai 10  
 cryit all atanis thay wald here na thing of pece quhil West-  
 mareland and Cumbirland war purgit of ye Romane garnisoun  
 and frelie deliuerit to yame, as yai brukit afore. Ffra Durst,  
 king of Pichtis, to quham ye herald signifijt siclike, the legate  
 gat na bettir ansuere. Herethrow Castius inflammyt *with*  
 ire, collectit his power, tranoyntit towart inemyis, and passing  
 ye Romane boundis, quhen he approchit to Westmarland  
 he was certifyit how Dionethe *with* power contractit of Icenis  
 and Walis was movit to Westmarland to supple Scottis and  
 Pichtis. Hereat astonyst war Britouns, knawing ye audacite  
 and baldnes of ye Welschmen in batell. Nocht yeles be exhorta-  
 cioun of chiftanis yai tuke curage, and with ane consent desirus  
 of batell movit towart Scottis, to quham ye thrid day Romanis 20
- M.L.T. 233 cum in sicht, quhen Dionethe to yame adionit his power  
 with gude hert to fortifye King Ffergus, broder germane to  
 his lady. Athir armye hoverit preparing for ye feild. The  
 confederate kingis cheissit ye douchtiest of Walis, Scottis



and Pichtis qu<sup>h</sup>ilk best couth weild yare wapynnys, quhare Fo. cxxxiii.  
 yai and Dioneth war to fecht in ye myddill warde, and stuffit  
 the wyngis with archearis and ye remanent multitude.  
 Haistelie ye schout was rasis, and be schot grete nowmer  
 of athir partie was slane. Syne with speris and vthir wapynnys  
 the batell grewe perrellus and doutsum, vnto ye tyme the  
 30 wyngis lichtlie bodin lukkynnyt about ye Romane armye.  
 Herethrow Romanis war astonist, and mekill ye mare be  
 slaucher of Castius thare chiftane. Incontinent ye myddil-  
 warde tuke ye flicht, rynnyng wanderand ourethwort ye  
 feildis, quharethrow ye residewe tuke occasioun to fle. Certane  
 Scottis, Pichtis and Welchmen followit without ordoure,  
 (as in chaisß oftymes is sene), and resauit mare harme yā  
 yai did to inemyis. Vtheris, in grete rowtis and ordoure  
 persewing ye chaisß, made na litill murthure apon Romanis.  
 In yis iournay Romanis war vincust mare be multitude (as  
 yai allege) than vassalage, and *with* ye remanent army fled  
 40 to Kent, leiffing ye provincis denude of gar[ni]soun, patent to  
 iniuris of inemyis barbaris. Than Dioneth, abilzete *with*  
 purpure in signe of soueranite, be glaidnes of ye armye praying  
 for his felicite was create king of Britan. Thareeftir Britan  
 be persute of Welchmen, Scottis and Pichtis gretelie was  
 molestit. Sic sorow daly increscit, and be audacite of ye  
 barbare pepill was augmentit. Schortlie herethrow apperit  
 yat Romanis suld loiß ye impire of all ye ile *without* sic  
 attemptatis haistelie war mett.

Fo. CXXIII.

How the legate Etius send Maximiane in Britane ; how King Fferguß, the king of Pichtis and Dioneth of Walis past in his meting ; of ye proposicioun made be King Ffergus to his armye ; how Maximiane in batell slew King Ffergus and ye king of Pichtis ; how Dioneth fled to Walis ; of the crudelite of Maximiane eftir the victory, and how beyond ye grete wall he debarrit Scottis and Pichtis.

M.L.T. 233b

Cap° vij°

In Britan this tyme was bot sobir power of garnyson ; quharethrow affrayit was Etius, maist valezeant Romane chiftane, for the tyme be command of ye Emprioure Valentyne reulling Gallia and, be requeist of Britouns favoring Romanis, fra Gallia to Albion send Maximiane, of grete blude 50 and cousing to the emprioure, *with* ane strang armye and werelie ordinance. Britouns of ye Romane opinioun occurrit in his meting, schewing yame glade yat he and his armye war prosperlie arrivit, praying God he suld haue gude fortune in Britane contrare Romane inemyis ; syne schew him ye nature of ye ile and attemptatis of Dioneth, quhilk stilit him king of Britan, promitting to pas *with* him with als gude hert as yai did *zeris* precedent with Victoryne contrare Scottis and Pichtis, perpetuall fays to the emprioure. Maximiane, 60 making to thame thankis, thocht ye rebelliou of Dioneth was mare dangerus yan ony vtheris, becaus he was of blude royall, and als knowing inhabitantis glaid of novaciouns, thocht he wald nocht delay bot spede him towart inemyis. Quharefore with ane walit armye throw Britane he movit to zork, fra thyne to Westmarland. Ane litill before yir premisß, the brute of his *cuming* to Britan rasit Scottis and Pichtis to ye weris and to mete Romanis quhare yai traistit yai suld first invade. To yame alsua come Dioneth, king, with 70 power of Icenis and Walis (quhilk of all Britouns alanerlie assistit to Dioneth), to debar Romanis fra yare boundis. At last thir armyis war *cumin* to Westmarland, and ye nycht preceding ye bargane, athir lugeit in sicht of vthir. In ye

dawing King Ffergus, having his batellis in gude ordoure, spak Fo. CXXIII.  
 yame in this sorte: "I desire, my hartlie freyndis, yat ze  
 stoutlie do zoure devoure in this iourney contrare oure maist  
 odioß inemyis and wyn yarethrow baith woureschip and  
 honoure. Ffor treulie will ze diligentlie perpend, I think, yat M.L.T. 234  
 80 sen ze haue bene lang distractit fra pece and rest, exercit  
 in continuall weris, and now ze se presentlie ye inemyis quham Fo. CXXV.  
 sa oftymes ze haue vincust, ze suld be erectit in hope of glorioß  
 victorie. Treulie it efferis wicht men euer haue esperance of  
 ye likliest, and gif aduersite occurris of suddantie, yai suld  
 baldlie sustene ye samyn. Naturalie all men of stout curage  
 ar inclinitt yareto be fortitude and constance of mynde,  
 becaus nane vpir vertwis be resoun can be callit bettir. This  
 vertew is mare appropriat to yame yat repellis yan movis  
 iniuris, ffor he yat is wranguislie provokit has esperance of  
 bettir, and ane prudent vailzeant man be his iuste actioun  
 10 actioun is to him self iniurioß and may haue na hope of  
 lawde nor honoure. Maximus, vmquhile Romane legate,  
 evir of subtile mynde, confederit with Pichtis, aganis quham  
 and Romanis oure antecessouris had ado for the tyme, to  
 draw yarethrow nocht alanerlie Scottis bot als wele Pichtis  
 to destructioun, as ye fyne previt. In batell he vincust and  
 slewe King Eugene, my gudeschir, with diuersß vtheris zoure  
 progenitouris, and be mony incommoditeis skurgeing the  
 pepill, fynalie expellit yame Albion, occupying onelie the  
 monarchie of all yis ile. Off yis prosperite nocht satisfyit,  
 bot as ane tresonabill tyran, aganis ye vertewe of his aith,  
 eftir he had afflictit Pichtis with incredibill iniuris, he thirllit  
 yame to vile seruitute, howbeit yai war for ye tyme frendis  
 and confederatis to Romanis. This dammage is ane document  
 how mekill skaith followis apou amyte and societe with yat  
 20 nacioun, full of dissate and fraude, without regarde to lawte  
 or kyndenes. Ffinalie quhen Pichtis, iustlie punyst for iniuris  
 done to ws, vnderstude, how beit oure late (as did ye Troianis),  
 and waryit yare awne dissate, be diuersß writingis and requeistis  
 solistit our returne to this kinrik, we come and, adionit to  
 yare pussance, lichtlie vincust Romanis, and put thame to

Fo. CXXV. grete pyne. Now, nochtwithstanding yai ar discumfist, yai  
 returne to mell *with* ws in bargane, led be Maximiane chiftane  
 (ffor Castius latelie was in batell slane), like as yare new  
 M.L.T. 234b chiftane mycht renew thare curage, lost be fere and drede  
 quhen thay war in plane batell oureset. Be heraldis thay  
 defend ws to ask Westmarland and Cumbirland, richtwislie  
 to ws pertenyng, as we war zit subiect to yare senezeorie.  
 To quham I think nocht alanerlie suld nocht be obtemperit,  
 bot with stout corage and greter attemptatis oure iuste 30  
 actioun to ye extreme suld be persewit. Quharefore, maist  
 valezeand Scottis, Pichtis and frendis of Britouns present,  
 raiß 3our corage and stoutlie drefß 3ow in 3oure armys, for  
 3e sall vnderstand grete pussance is nocht requirit to oursett  
 inemyis, supponyng yai salbe lichtlie vincust, quhilk latelie  
 with sic dishonoure be oure armye war defate. Latt ws  
 pas forthwart, memorative of oure liberte, auld iniuris and  
 recent victorie. Apoun this dispitefull nacioun lat ws conquess  
 glore, yat be oure exempill oure successioun may lere to  
 debate baldlie for yare richt." Eftir ye king had endit his  
 harrang to grete plesoure of ye armye, he chargit at blast  
 of trumpet yai suld ione ye feild. The remanent chiftanis,  
 vsing sic like exhortacioun to fecht, raissit yare folkis in 40  
 ferme esperance of victorie. Sone yareeftir on athir partie  
 scharplie was reconterit. At ye first rusche Romanis fechtng  
 in ye myddilwarde war nere oureset be schott of corß bow,  
 dart and arrow, sa thik yat the hevin and lift was obscurit.  
 Maximiane, aduerting ye danger, send haistelie ane legioun  
 fresche and vnfulezeit to yare succouris; be quham the  
 bargane was renewit with grevous strakis and woundis.  
 The Romane wyngis stoutlie supprisit inemyis, quharethrow  
 ye feild was equale mare be corage than fortitude. Scottis,  
 Pichtis and Britouns resistit certane tyme, quhil Romanis  
 in the wyngis fechtand, with vntelland slauchter sinderng  
 thare partie obiectit, terribly invadit ye myddilward. Nocht- 50  
 withstanding the confederate pepill war newlie affrayit,  
 on all partis inclosit be Romanis, zit yai stude cloiß togiddir  
 in rowtis and mycht nocht be sinderit. Sua quhen on athir  
 party thay war fechtng in cumpafß, certane Scottis off manlie

spirit and bald, togiddir in ane knott, thinking on yare fays to revenge thare dede, quhen vthir wayis thay mycht nocht evade, addressit *with* grete force to rusch throw the thickest preiſ. Howbeit nocht without felloun slauchter of Romanis nane of yat rout eschapid. Quhen fra all partis Romanis drewe to resist the irruptioun of Scottis, diuerſ of oure armye quhare inemyis war thyn, brak out and fled. Romanis following slew sa mony as mycht be apprehendit. Vtheris quhilk obstinatelie taryit in ye feild war strikkin doun. Ffra slauchter was nocht abstenit quhill ye sicht be myrknes was abstractit. In this myschevous iournay Fferguſ, king of Scottis, and Durst Thrid, king of Pichtis, with the maist parte of nobillis of athir realme, war slane. Dioneth, grevouslie woundit in myddis the bargane, borne be *servandis* fra ye feild to ye sey nere beside, in ane bote with fewe folkis passit to Walis. Eftir yis feild sa mekill terroure was in all regiouns of Scottis and Pichtis that ye pepill belevit athir kinrik suld be haistelie extermynate, and persaving na esperance of succouris yareeftir, becaus yare douchtiest men war fallin in feild, devisit fle in strange cuntreis. Maximiane, thinking he wald vse ye avantage of fortune, cruelly invadit Galloway, and throw ye samyn vsit all kynde of felony; syne in Anandale, Deer and Pichtland distroying all be fyre and swerde, salfit na persoun nor estate, zong nor auld, bot in his furie all war slane. Quhare ony fled to kirkis for refuge, thay war violentlie drawin yarefra and without mercy murdrist. The ciete of Camelodune was assegeit, takin be force and putt to sak, with vthir burrowis and cieteis of Scotland. This furie continewit diuerſ dayis, and ceissit nocht quhill all Scottis and Pichtis left vnslane war dispituously bannyst bezond ye wall, certane zeris afore foundit betuix Abircorne and Dunbritane to exclude inemyis fra ye Romane provincis; syne war constrenit to swere yai suld neuer returne to ye rowmes of Scottis and Pichtis bezond ye wall. Sum persuadit Maximiane distroy finalie or ellis fra Albion driffe Scottis and Pichtis, sen now yare pussance was brokin and ouresett, becaus yai war sa fraudulent yat with nychtboure pepill be na contractis, ligis nor grete aithis thay mycht fermelie at pece be contenit. Maximiane refusit,

FO. CXXV.  
M.L.T. 235

FO. CXXVI.

M.L.T. 235b

FO. CXXVI. allegeand wynter approchit, quhen he behufit stabill his armye in yare wynter schelis. Na victualis war in ye landis of Scottis nor Pichtis to sustene his cumpanye, and ye cald was sa 10 vehement in the intractibill montanis quhare yai war fled, yat na way mycht be providit to debar it fra ye armye. Best was yarefore tarye the cuming of somer and in yat sessoun do thingis maist expedient for ye Romane Impire. Attoure he allegeit it was necessare yat ye inhabitantis of Walis, rebelling for ye tyme, suld first be reduceit to ye Romane Impire, in aventure gif ye Romane provincis war left vnpecifijt, quhen he war occupiit in persute of ye barbaris, his power mycht tak mare harme yan proffitt. Herefore with his victorioss armye retering to zork and causing victualis be brocht fra all partis, he spendit ye wyntir with his armye at ye campe.

How Maximiane, tending to rebell, gaif pece to Britane and maryit Othila, heretare thareof; how Vrsula avowit religioun; how Eugene was crownit, and how he transferrit his faderis banys to Colmkil; how Maximiane take the purpoure, and causit Armorik be callit Britançe, and how Vrsula with hir virginis at Colane war slane. Cap° viij°

**I**n vere following he passit to Walis, tending to dant the 20 rebellioun of Dioneth, quham Britouns duelling forgane the Ireland sey callit king of Britouns. Quhen to this effect he was preparing ane armye throw the cuntre, he was certifyit be writingis of freyndis, how Affrik be ane tyran namyt Boniface was fra the Romane Impire bereft, Gallio and Mavorce, Romane chiftane, in yat cuntre war slane, ane pepill of Germanye namyt Ffrankis cumin oure the river of Ryne had invadit Gallia with mare ferocite than euer yai did afore, conquest ye land of Orleance and Paris, and chesing ane king of yare awne nacioun, had in yai partis fixit habitacioun; and haistely all Gallia (daly detesting the tyrannye of Romane chiftanis) apperit faleze fra ye Impire and obey

30 the Ffrankis. Maximiane vnderstanding how be fortune Fo. cxxvi.  
 aduersare sa mony rebellious atanis war walkynnit contrare  
 Romanis, he decernit rebell siclike as he before had consaut ;  
 and to remove all impediment in ye begynnyng, he addressit  
 to haue Britane pecifijt. Quharefore first, be consent of ye  
 Britane nobillis, he tuke in mariage the eldest dochter of  
 Dioneth, to quham he belevit the titill and richt of ye crowne  
 pertent ; ffor apoun the sister of King Ffergus he had twa  
 onelie dochteris, Othilia and Vrsula, and nane vthir men  
 childer. Syne yat Vrsula, ye zonger dochter, suld haue nane  
 esperance of successioun, he causit hir profesß religioun, to  
 40 obserue perpetuale virginite. It was honorabill amang Britouns  
 to haue virginis of grete blude depute to ye seruice of God,  
 and vnlefull to desire mariage eftir religioun avowit. Be  
 this affinite Dioneth and his pepill of Icenis and Walis, quhilk  
 had rebellit, to Maximiane war maist tendir and dere. Quhare-  
 throw Dioneth vnder Maximiane had ye hale authorite of  
 Britan. Quhill yir actis war done, the barouns of Scotland  
 ane litill or Ffergus had left yis liffe (xvj zeris he regnit in  
 Scotland), with honorabill tryne convoyit Eugene to Argile,  
 and in ye marbill chyare declarit him king, praying he suld  
 50 in felice regne. Quhen Eugene resaut ye goverment of  
 Scottis it was in ye zere of oure Saluacioun iij<sup>c</sup> and xxx, ffra  
 begynnyng of ye Scottis regne vij<sup>c</sup> lx, and of ye impire  
 of Valentiniane, empriour, ye ferd zere. Eugene eftir he was  
 salust souerane, thinking at deuocion and godlynes he wald  
 begyn his regne, causit tak ye banys of his fader fra ye place  
 quhare yai war beryit for fere of Romanis, and with funerall  
 tryumphe brocht yame to Colmkill, berying yame in sepulture  
 preparate tharefore, as King Ffergus in his liffe had devisit.  
 Eftir he was certane dayis occupyit in suffrage and deuote  
 60 ceremonis, he infetit ye religious persouns yare present with  
 rentis, landis and possessions of diuers ilis adiacent, to sustene  
 ye expensß of ye abbay, for ye tyme bot of sobir avail. Of  
 all Scottis princis the corps of Ffergus was ye first berijt in  
 Colmkill. Ffra thyne it was dedicate to ye sepulture of kingis,  
 quhill ye regne of Malcolme ye Thrid, for quantite of his  
 hede namyt Canmore, quhilk be persuasioun of his spouß,

- Fo. cxxvi. Sanct *Margarete*, decretit þat princis suld be beryit in þe abbay of Dounfermling, be riche possessiouns be him drowryit, as in tyme mare oportune salbe schewin. King Ewgene, desiring to recouer þe rowmes reft be Romanis fra Scottis and Pichtis, wrate all þe namys of his folkis betuix lx and xvj þeris throw euery towne and village. Quhen he knewe the pussance of his pepill nocht sufficient to accept sa hie interprise, he deferrit þe mater to tyme mare oportune, abstenyng fra molestacioun of þe Romane provincis fferder. Howbeit þe pussance of Scottis and Pichtis war febillit and brokin, Maximiane to thame grantit pece, lichtlie to releif þe Romane provincis fra þare harmys. And persaving þe Romane Impire patent to þe iniuris of euery nacioun, safer þat þareof ony vailþeand man be resoun of his faculte mycht conqueß als mekle as he plesit, thinkand him self of þe imperiall blude he devisit tak his awne parte amang vtheris. Quharefore, collecting power of Britouns quhilck war maist valeþeand, and taking þe purpoure, be favoure of þe weremen stilit emprioure and souerane, with ane navyn reddily preparit, [he] 80
- Fo. cxxvii. salit to Gallia, leiffing Dioneth king in Britan *with* ane onelie legioun of Romanis to governe þe kinrik. Schortlie Maximiane without surprise of his armye, be reif and all vthir outrage afflictit þe nobil province of Armorik. Quhen inhabitantis Armorik nowdir fra nychtbour Gallis nor fra þe Empriour
- M.L.T. 237 Valentiniane (at quhais opinion þai zit remanis) traistit succourß, and mycht nocht resist to þe feirß assaltis of Maximiane, disparing þare pussance, to him become randerit. Maximiane occupijt certane gude townis on þe sey coist and sum parte of vtheris elongate fra þe sey, syne assalezit þe maist populofs tovne of all þe province, callit *Rennys*, be garnisoun of þe chiftane, Sulpice Valentynyane, defendit; 10 quhare eftir he had vnchancelie assegeit the towne sa stranglie contrare him haldin, he reterit his armye to þe hereschip of landis adiacent, erare like brigantis þan honest weremen. The Armorikis, solistit be þromitt of þe legate Etius (quhilck for the tyme reulit Gallia, gretelie infestit be weris of Burgundianis), beleiffing Maximiane suld nocht conspir weill in his affaris, slew his garnisoun, wyunnyng townys and fortalicis



be game occupyit. Maximiane, herethrow provokit, be force taking Rennys and vthir gude townis in Armorik, deviding ye spuleze yareof amang his armye, slew all ye men he mycht fynd of Armorik blude, or ellis draif game fra ye cuntre,

20 sparing nowther women nor innocent childer, he was sa kyndillit contrare ye Armorik's for yare fidelite violate. In ye ilk tyme Burgundianis infesting Gallia, the legate Etius was constrenit send to Britan for ye Romane legioun quhilkis had falezeit fra Maximiane, and assistit to Valentyniane, empriour. Herethrow Albion denwd of ye Romane garnysoun, Scottis and Pichtis tuke occasioun to invaid haistelie Britouns, zit ferme at opinioun of ye emprioure. Fferder Maximiane, providing yat Armorik vincust be his armye and denwde of ye ald inhabitantis suld nocht be pray to ye Gallis, brocht fra Britane husband men to lauboure ye ground and defend it fra invasioun of inemyis. Sum

30 croniklis writis yat of Britouns ane hundreth thousand, at command of Maximiane, come to Armorik. Eftir yai war in Armorik stabillit, Maximiane maid king to game Conane, ane nobill of Britane, to Dioneth nere cousing; syne fra ye new inhabitantis gaif ye province Britane to name. In yis sorte the Armorikis tynt atanis yare name and kinrik. Maximiane syne was solistit be ye Burgundianis to supple game aganis Etius, quham to he passit with Romanis quhilk fra Britane come with him to Gallia. Conane, king, be counsell of his nobillis, that ye new kinrik suld nocht failze in tyme of

40 ane mannis age (ffor but wemen yai mycht haue na esperance of childer), desirit wemen be send fra Britan, quharefra yai procedit. Ambassiatouris send to perfurnis yis mater, at the heris of Britouns optenit yat of sa mony as war send to inhabit Armorik, the dochteris, sisteris, wyffis, necis and with game Vrsula (douchter of Dioneth latelie deceissit), quham Conane desirit in mariage, suld be send to Gallia. Vrsula, ye spouff of Criste, for hir devote life to every persoun venerabill, was be force extractit fra hir abbay quhare scho had avowit virginite, vaking to divine seruice, and was contrinit pas to schippis, yat the lynage of Dioneth suld nocht faleze; ffor Othilia ye vthir sister, spousit apoun Maximiane latelie without

M.L.T. 237b

Fo. CXXVII. successioun, was deceissit. And how beit this viage was  
 litill plesing to Britons, 3it to Vrsula and grete parte of hir 50  
 virginis it was nocht ingrate. Ffor quhen yai directit yare  
 courß to Armorik, be contrare wynd all ye navyn *with* extreme  
 dangere was drevin to ye mouth of Ryne, quhare the wemen  
 passing to land, nocht suffering ye violence of seyis, and  
 tending to pas be land iournayis to Armorik or to Rome (as  
 vyris writis), Vrsula ye happy spous of Criste, *with* grete  
 nowmer of virginis, detesting yis mariage, and declynyng  
 ye viage to Armorik becaus of hir avow, of ferme intencioun  
*with* all hir cumpanye to conserf inviolate hir virginite, was  
 slane at Culane be ye Hunnys, with yare chiftane Othila  
 terrible assailzeing Gallia for ye tyme. The fame of thir  
 haly virginis eftir certane 3eris was sa honorabill throw the  
 vniuersale warld, yat in yare remembrance Cristianis 60  
 solempnitlie sais divine seruice euery 3ere.

How King Eugene and Durst of Pichtis, knawing  
 ye departing of Romanis, contractit power to conquest  
 Britan; of the harrang made be Eugene to the  
 cumpanye; how, eftir Britouns war ourethrawin  
 be Scottis and Pichtis, thay war relevit be the  
 legate Gallio, and how he completit the grete wall  
 and departit. Cap° ix°

M.L.T. 238 **A**t brute hereof King Eugene, knawing how Britan was  
 left denwde of Romane garnisoun and spule3ete of native  
 inhabitantis, convenit at ane meting *with* Durst, king of  
 Pichtis. Eftir yai had *commonit* diuerß thingis twiching  
 ye state of athir realme, thay determyt move were contrare  
 Britouns with sa haisty expedicioun, yat yai suld nocht  
 be aduertist quhill yai war *present* with yare armye; allegiand  
 yai war nocht oblist to ye lyig contractit with Maximiane  
 bot sa lang as he remanit in Albion; chargeing syne yat all  
 Scottis and Pichtis, with victualis for xl dayis and vthir  
 necessaris for were, suld be *present* at day assignit. Athir 70  
 prince departing, na langar tary was made, bot fra all regions

foresaidis grete confluence at ye day appoyntit at Calidonewod FO. CXXVII.  
 convenit, quhare ye confederate princis seing ye multitude,  
 glaidelie vsit diuersþ persuasiouns to kindill thare curage to  
 bargane. In this sorte King Eugene made his exhortacioun :  
 “ Nocht ane of 3ow, maist douchty campions, quhilk diligentlie  
 perpendis the caifs of ws and inemyis, may mysknaw yat we  
 aucht *nocht* deferoure affaris langare. 3e se clerelie be how  
 mony harmes and myseryis, thir few 3eris birvn, *our* kinrik be  
 tyranny of Romanis has bene supprisit, quhen my fader, restorare  
 80 of yis realme, by infinite thowsandis of vtheris sorowis quhilk  
 we haue sufferit, was slane : Galloway, Carrik, Kile, Cunyng-  
 hame, *with* mony vthir regiouns of oure sene3eorie, to inemyis  
 war in pray. I think weill yat ye batell we straik contrare  
 Romanis, Britouns and yare chiftane Maximiane, was litill  
 plesing to ws, and to yame nocht vnskaithfull, and 3it be  
 evident signis I *coniecture* yis batell aduersare has nocht  
 aluterlie slakkit 3oure curage nor affrayit 3ow fra the weris,  
 bot erare provokit 3ow yareto. How mekle oure pussance  
 within yir few 3eris be ye Romane armye [has] bene afflictit, sa  
 10 mekil be fortune (drawand yame to fynale rewyne be haterent  
 and armyis of euery nacioun) yai ar supprisit. Ffor in all  
 partis of ye world Romane provincis ar pray to inemyis.  
 Vandalis brukis Affrik ; Visigothis of ye west has optenit  
 Spane3e ; Ffrankis and Burgundiouns clamys be conquest na  
 litill parte of Gallia ; Vngarie, Myse, Thrace, Macedone  
 and Illiric, to the Hunnys ar obeysant. All provincis of M.L.T. 238b  
 ye orient owdir ar randerit to ye contrare parte of Romanis,  
 or has abiectit ye 3oik of *seruitute* and recouerit liberte and  
 fredome. Rome, vmquhile cheif and souerane of ye world,  
 was twyifþ latelie takin be Gothis, twyifþ brocht to sak and  
 brynt. Schortlie the Romane estate is now cumin to yis  
 calamyte, yat of all ye grete Impire, yai ioifþ na thing by  
 20 be tyrannye of Maximiane. It is nowder stuffit with mwnicioun  
 nor garnisoun. Na Romane chiftane is present to raifþ ane  
 armye, nor of pussance to collect ye samyn in the province,  
 almaist of all substance evacuate, nor 3it may resist to ye  
 strenth of ws and Pichtis, nor schore oure distructioun as

Fo. CXXVIII. afore. The realme of Britan sittis now desolate and sad,  
 dispulejit of ordinance and garnison, and gif we invoid, it  
 sall be erare pray to ws yan impediment. Quharefore, maist  
 valezeand champions, I think mony wourdis nocht necessare  
 to schaw quhat we suld do in thir premisß. Nor I suppose  
 nocht ze myster exhortacioun to behaue zow stoutlie in thir  
 weris, sen zoure curage failzeis nocht bot erare haboundis.  
 Ane huge pray before zow is proponit and mare large yan  
 euer fortune schew to zoure eldaris. Occasioun, parent of  
 all mortall affaris, is reddily to zow offerit, persuading zow 30  
 to postpone all delay and exhorting to tak zoure tyme; in  
 aventure gif it be now throw zoure sleuth repudiat, it sall  
 in vane eftirwart be requirit. Fferder, ye pece and lyig maid  
 with Maximiane suld nocht affray zow fra yis honorabill  
 interprise. Ffor Romanis and Britouns, yare subditis, eftir  
 diuersß lygis contractit, be mony iniuris afflictit ws and oure  
 regiouns. And gif yir bandis of pece, sa solempnitlie maid,  
 mycht nocht preserve ws fra yare molestacioun, thay may  
 obliß ws na mare, bot we may rander yame equivalent. Here-  
 fore, maist valezeand champions, adreß zow in zoure armys  
 to accept this honest expedicioun and follow ye honorabill  
 vassalage of forebearis, providing all way yat ze mak na  
 delay, for haisty expedicioun is requirit. And sua gif ze will  
 M.L.T. 239 schaw zow stout and bald in weris as ze war euer accustomyt,  
 pas fordwart and ye victorie is ouris." Quhen yis was said, 40  
 the army promyst offer yame to all perrellis, to be vindicate  
 apoun ald iniuris of Britouns. The aduersite of ye Romane  
 Impire erectit Scottis in beleif yat all mycht be eselie done  
 as ye king had said. Quharethrow be clamoure and schowtis  
 the hoist desirit ye feild. Na langer tary was maid. Pichtis  
 siclike be exhortacioun of yare king war kindillit in grete  
 ferocite, schawing yame reddy to sustene stoutlie the weris.  
 Sua athir pepill, fortifyit be supple of vtheris, haistelie invadit  
 Britouns, be na litill skaith of all regiouns quhare yai passit  
 throw Pichtland, Deere, Berwik, Striuelingschire, Carrik, 50  
 Galloway, and with felloun slauchter driving Britouns yarefra,  
 contynewit yare iournay to Cumbirland, Westmarland,  
 Kendale, and fynalie to ye boundis of zork. The strenthis

of thir regiouns *with* cieteis and villagis vaking of garnisoun, FO. CXXVIII.  
 become sone randerit. Cieteis war spulezeit, inhabitantis  
 vnflod war slane, cornis brynt, bestiall drevin away, and  
 all vthir gudis for ye maist parte distroyit. Apperinglie all  
 Britan was to be heryit *without* ye crudelite of Scottis and  
 Pichtis be sum way war refrenit. Britouns, nocht suffering  
 thir hevy infestaciouns, send ambassiatouris to Rome to  
 promitt yare perpetuall subiectioun, gif yai wald supporte  
 60 yame contrare inemyis sa inhumane and cruell. Valentyniane,  
 emprioure, providing yat be sa cruell and lang contynewit  
 weris Romanis suld nocht loifß ye province of Britan, directit  
 in supple of Britouns the Romane legioun, quhilk at Parisß  
 was left in garnisoun be Etius, vnder reule of Gallio Revennaß,  
 the nobill and vailjeant chiftane. Scottis and Pichtis, knawing  
 yare *cuming* to Albion, declynand ye apperand batell, dis-  
 turssing the cuntreis heryit afore of inhabitantis and gudis,  
 subuerting mwniciouns, and in flamb of fire birnyng townys  
 and villagis, departit owder becaus yai wald nocht, or ellis  
 durst nocht, recounter Romanis, quhais fortitude yai had  
 oftymes in batell assayit to yare hurt and damage. Romanis,  
 following inemyis (quhilk departit like flearis), gidit be Britouns  
 70 expert of ye grund, persewit to ye Wattir of Fforth, quhare  
 be haisty skarmuschis na litill nowmer of Scottis and Pichtis  
 war slane. And becaus Gallia be sa mony tyranniyis was M.L.T. 239b  
 infestit, yat yai mycht na langer tary in Albioun, Gallio,  
 Romane chiftane, chargit yat the dike begunnyng betuix  
 Abircorne and ye mouth of Clyde apoun ye *commoun* and  
 private expensis be completit, werkmen suld be fra all partis  
 brocht that ye dike *mycht* saulf Britouns fra nyctboure  
 inemyis. Eftir the dike completit of stane and dovatis, of  
 viij cubitis in latitude and xij in altitude, thay fixt in ye hicht  
 of it scharp stakis, assignyng wachis in yare courß quhilk,  
 gif yai saw Scottis or Pichtis tend to ony invasioun, suld  
 mak bekynnys on ye nyct be ane bleiß of fyre, and on day  
 be ony hwmyd materialis raiß ane smoik, to warne ye inhabi-  
 80 tantis to anarme yame for defence. It was cryme of dede  
 gif at sicht of ye bekin yai come nocht in reddineß to ding FO. CXXIX.  
 inemyis fra ye wall. Sua Gallio beleiffit Britan was pecifyt

Fo. cxxix. and barbaris debarrit fra ye Romane boundis. Etius reterit to Gallia ye Romane armye, quham the sammyn chiftane Gallio convoyit to him at his plesere.

How the kingis of Scottis and Pichtis sloppit the strang dike and conquest all boundis to the river of Tyne; how Britouns requiring ye chiftane Etius with supple war refusit; how Conane persuadit Britouns to desire pece and yarefore was slane; how Gramysdike was distroyit; how ye wall of Adriane was subuertit, and how the boundis betuix the riveris of Tyne and Humbir be Scottis and Pichtis war lade waist.

Cap° x°

Scottis and Pichtis, knawing the departing of Romanis to Gallia, with mare ferocite yan afore tendit assaleze Britouns; and convenyng ane counsell, King Eugene be ire sum tyme sterit yame contrare inemyis, sum tyme be hope of spuleze and rewarde ascriving to yare possessioun all ye pray of ye province, and all vthir gudis brocht be Britouns quhen Gallio amang yame made residence, to plennyfß the cuntreis of Westmarland, Kendale, Pichtland and vthir 10 regions distursit. Nor the king of Pichtis abstenit nocht to exhort his folkis, decreting yat quha wald first ascend ye dyke suld be made provest of Camelodune, quhilk was ane office of honoure amang Pichtis and gevin bot to ye maist excellent of ye pepill. Britouns, knawing the intent of Scottis and Pichtis, sped yame bodin to defend ye dike (as was decrctit), and furnist the kirkellis with stark mwnicion and men of armys. The twa princis with ye armyis stude ane litill elongate fra ye dyke, and send the chiftane Grahame with power of Scottis and Pichtis, quhilk with schott of arrowis, ganezeis and corfß bowis denudit the dyke of inemyis. Syne werkmen, 20 vndirmynding with axis, pikkis, mattokis and vthir instrumentis, did yare besy cure. This lauboure was nocht difficill, becaus the wall was nocht laid with lyme, bot with mortare and stane. Quharefore pai straik it na sonare yan it fell, yat

be patent sloppis all the army passit apoun Pichtland. Sum Fo. cxxix.  
 parte of Britouns recounterit yame, fechtand ythandlie to  
 the dede. Vtheris, having experience of fortune, fled and  
 gaif yame place. The samyn tyme vthir chiftanis, at com-  
 mand of ye kingis, come be sey fra Fiffe to Pichtland, with  
 power of athir nacioun, ruschand mare haistelie with felloun  
 30 persute apoun inemyis than ye kingis and yare armyis. Quhen  
 yai war ionyt with ye kingis power, in all the cuntre was  
 nocht ellis bot rubery and murthure. Cieteis, villagis and  
 sum parte of castellis latelie plennyst, war brynt and inhabi-  
 tantis slane. Sa mony as war thiddir resortit at cuming of  
 Gallio fra ye remanent provincis of Britan, how beit yai war  
 of grete pussance, war astonyst be terroure of inemyis, and to  
 evaid yare ferocite, leiffing behun yame febill persouns with  
 all yare gudis, fled in oure the ryver of Tyne. Syne ye kingis  
 decretit yat all boundis interiacent betuix Twede and Tyne  
 suld be forrayit be ye hoist, quharthrow grete contencioun  
 and exempill of ire, auarice and invy was schewin. Ffra  
 40 ye est sey to ye west sey, als grete brulze and mysreule was  
 made, as the vndantit rage of ye weremen mycht move.  
 Quhill Scottis and Pichtis spendit mony dayis in sic depopula-  
 cioun and hereschip, Britouns with infinite laubouris renewit  
 ye stane wall biggit be the Emprioure Adriane for sic like  
 causis, (as sufficientlie before is expremyt), and with strang  
 trenschis and power of men garnyst the dyke. Scottis and  
 Pichtis, abstenyng fra the assalt thareof becaus wynter  
 approachit, quhen respondent to yare ald vse yare armye was  
 to be distribute in garnisoun, brocht fra hame yare wyiffis  
 and childer, and extendit ye marchis to ye flude of Tyne,  
 tending to mak habitacioun in ye boundis quhilk be lawis  
 of weris thay had amang yame devidit, as ye kingis had gevin  
 50 in charge. The confederate pepill eftir yir premisß, of this  
 recent prosperite glaid and ioyus, occupyit the wynter  
 following in strenthing with strang garnisoun the mwnicions  
 adiacent to ye wall of Adriane, and abstenit fra batell. Quhen  
 Britouns fering as it happynnyt yat in begynnyng of somer  
 inemyis suld returne, forray and dispuleze ye cuntre, with  
 sic rubry and felony as yai war accustomyt, thay send to

Fo. CXXIX. Etius, Romane chiftane in Gallia, with hevvy chere imploring  
 the fidelite and succourſ of ye Romane Impire. To thame  
 Etius promyst na supple, incertane gif he did of purpoiß,  
 becaus he luffit litill the Emprioure Valentyniane and had  
 devisit contrare him rebelloun, or gif he was sa distractit  
 be cure of ye scharp weris contrare Ffrankis, yat he mycht  
 mak na help. To Britane the ambassiatouris returnyng and 60  
 in *presens* of ye counsell at Londoun for ye tyme, schewing  
 the responß of Etius, thay consultit be diuersß opiniouns  
 be quhat way yai mycht best eschew the iniuris of dispitfull  
 inemyis. Sum devisit yat baith be sey and land yai suld  
 prepare yare ordinance contrare Scottis and Pichtis, and to  
 ye extreme, defend yare liberte, quhilk yai mycht eselie recovir,  
 sen yai war deliuerit of ye Romane armye. Nocht alanerlie  
 suld yai assemblill men, bot als weill wemen, zong and be  
 corporall fortitude abill for weris, to sustene ye samyn gladelie  
 for defence of ye *commoun* weill; and haistelie suld move thare  
 armye to the Wall of Adriane, and erare tak thare aventure  
 of ye werst mycht be, than be perpetuall rubry and hereschip 70  
 be sa ourethrawin yat fynalie yai behuffit appoynt *with*  
 inemyis pece be inhonest articlis and condiciouns. Than  
 Conane of Walis, descendit of ye ancient lynage of Octavianis,  
 M. L. T. 241 kingis of Britan, of na litill autorite amang Britouns: "It  
 is nedefull yat quhay desiris wyn senezeorie, or wald conserue  
 rowmes conquest, suld haue consideracioun baith of ye tyme  
 and of yare pussance. Ffor treulie sa lang as oure pussance  
 was sufficient to defend this oure kinrik contrare oure tyran  
 inemyis and drife yame fra oure boundis, it was *nocht* necessare  
 to mak menciou of pece *with* ye fraudulent naciouns of  
 Scottis and Pichtis. Bot now, allace, oure caiß standis all 80  
 Fo. CXXX. vthir wayis. Ffor be ouresettis of ye pridefull tyran Maximiane  
 (quhilk war sarare to ws yan ony inemye) quhen he iniustlie  
 covate ye senezeorie of all ye warld, oure pure realme was  
 patent to extreme danger. We ar now sa evacuate of pussance  
 yat gif we aventure to haue ado contrare inemyis, we may  
 haue na esperance of douchtines in oure handis. Nowder  
 be oure awne power nor succourſ of Romanis may we be  
 self, sen we lippin fra yame na supportacioun nor supple.



Oure inemyis ar cruell, inhumane and felloun, nowder brokin Fo. CXXX.  
 be hardnes of chevelrie, indegence, distreß nor ithand laubouris,  
 covetting abone mesure to be vindicate apoun ald iniuris,  
 nowder fering God, man, grevouß woundis, nor ye terribill  
 10 dede, sua yai may revenge the skaithis yai sufferit of lang  
 tyme be ws and ye Romane armye. Na difference of age nor  
 estate is amang yame considerit, bot rynnys euer in rage,  
 be *innative* furie *without* respect to clemence or meiknes,  
 and in place of fortitude, vsis furoure and tyrannye. Thay  
 bludy boucheouris ar reiosit *with* terribill swerd<sup>is</sup> or dartis  
 to slop the bodyis of febill, decreppit folkis, waik damosellis,  
 or innocent childer, eschamyng *nocht*, quhare yai slay yare  
 inemye, to lape ye hate blude, quhilk perpetualie yai thrist.  
 And to conclude mekill with fewe wourdis, thay glore in na  
 thing sa mekill as in rubry, thift, blude and slauchter. Quhare-  
 fore sen sua is (yat be oure destanye we ar contrinit), owder  
 we mon bind pece *with* thir vnmercifull, schrewit inemyis,  
 or suffir intollerabil chargis at yare plesere. *Nochtwithstanding*  
 20 yat I se clerelie how vnhonest and contemptibill yis pece  
 salbe to oure nacioun, zit I think bettir to suffir pacientlie,  
 than extremely dispare to haue oure kinrik restorit and loiß  
 oure landis, gudis, seynzorie and liberte *with* grete lak and M.L.T. 241b  
 dishonour. My lordis, be causß of ye *commoun* weill, fidelite,  
 lawte I aw to þow, lufe of yis cuntre and *nocht* ellis has con-  
 strenit me schaw thir premysß. Giff yai be trewe or *nocht*,  
 gif yai may conduce to ye *commoun* weill or hurt ye samyn,  
 ze salbe iugis." Quhen ye multitude present herd his intent,  
 in ire yai war *commovit*, and vehementlie detestit to bynd  
 pece *with* Scottis and Pichtis, contending yat he sade na  
 thing for ye weill of Britouns, and his colorit wourdis war  
 30 *nocht* to thame vnkend, how he tendit vsurp the crown of  
 Britan. Quhen ye barons certane tyme had kepit silence,  
 deploring amang yame self yare fortune, memorative how  
 caduke and ruynosß is al mortall estate, quhilki's incresß  
*nocht* sa haistelie as it failzeis, yai war vincust be inportunite  
 of ye pepill ofttymes inclynnyng to ye werst, *commonlie* con-  
 tempnyng sage and grave men geving gude counsell, and  
 concludit thay wald anarme yame for defence. Thay pro-

- Fo. CXXX. clamyt ane army suld be walit, without sparing of ony estate, zong or ald, abill for were, assignyng ane day of convencioun and place, quharefra yai suld with al thare force move fordwart apoun inemyis. At this decrete Conane murnyng and passing fra ye counsell, said: "I tak witnes of ye inmortal God yat for lufe of ye *commoun* weill I consent nocht to this decrete, bot detestis zoure furious desire to weris, quharethrow I se 40 clerelie (how beit I may *nocht* expreme it without displese) yat fortune is drawand this ancient and honorabill kinrik of Britouns, in thir oure dayis, to fynale rewyne." Sum parte of Britons, hering Conane speik in this sorte, vehementlie contrare him *commovit*, cryit *with* terribill schowtis: "Thy autorite salbe litill or nane, to mak impediment to thir weris," and with knyiffis inflicting mony grevouf woundis, stik kill him to dede. Throw yis suddand slauchter raif debate be diuerf, impreving this innocent murthure, with wapynnys tending persewe the *committaris*. The pepill in twa factions dividit; mony war slane on athir partie, and quhen this debate certane houris had lestit, to ye hurt of mony, skantlie be ye autorite of ye barouns *mycht* it be 50 stanchit. About the ilk tyme, be novellis of ye irrupcioun [of]
- M.L.T. 242 Scottis and Pichtis apoun the landis of Britan yai war certifyit in London, quharethrow terroure and fere was throw all the ciete. Ffor Graham, of quham before is rememberit, be the *kingis* for his vassalage create chiftane to ane grete parte of ye armye, (quhil Britouns be legaciouns and consultaciouns spendit the tyme), *with* walit men kest down and distroyit sua ye dyke, extendit betuix Abircorne and ye mouth of Clide, yat na thing yareof remanis to ye posterite except certane small signis and ruynis, to testify ye verite of yat grete werk, as may be sene in oure dayis. Quharefore this wall, fra Graham yat bet down ye samyn, is callit Gramys 60 Dike *commonlie* to this day. Ffra thyne dispulezeing all the cuntre to ye Wall of Adriane, fra the Ireland seyis to ye Almane seyis, he distroyit all castellis and strenthis salfit fra crudelite of Scottis ye zere preceding, and made yame equale *with* ye grund, yat Britouns suld haue na beleif to returne yareto in tyme *cuming*. The ilk tyme the confederate *kingis with*

pare armye assailzeit with all kinde of instrumentis (yat in Fo. CXXX.  
yat tyme mycht be excogitate) to subuert the Wall of Adriane,  
beleiffing it mycht be done *without* difficulte becaus ye new  
bigging, parte of grene lyme, parte myxt *with* mortare, was  
nocht zit hard nor solid. How sone ye wall was strikkin it  
70 fell, schewand patent entres to inemyis, and ye Britan wachis  
quhilkis resistit war haistelie smorit and dede. The inhabi-  
tantis concurring in reskewe of ye wachis, knewe nocht in  
quhat parte yai suld first mak supple, becaus all was full of  
clamoure and schoutis of slaaris, and men in extremys of  
dede; quharefore persaving sic felony and murthure, leiffing  
ye fecht, fled to sauf yare livis. Sua having Adrianis Wall  
brocht to erde, and ye oist passing oure ye dike apoun the  
Britan landis, the kingis commandit to sla men onelie abill  
for weris, and salf wemen and vtheris nocht abill. To yis  
charge in all partis was nocht obeyit, ffor ye pepill be ire and  
remembrance of ald iniuris, without discrecioun owthir of  
age or *vpir* kynde of estate, maid slauchter diuers dayis  
80 following. Scottis and Pichtis, *with* huge murthure forraying  
grete parte of Britan, brocht inhabitantis betuix the riveris  
of Tyne and Humbir to sic miserie, yat owder it was force be  
slane, drownit in ye nixt sey, swome ye flude, or be ony vthir  
way pas ye samyn, quhilk on neid yai behuffit do for ye *present*,  
fleying to vthir provincis be terroure of inemyis, and evadit  
sua yare ire.

Fo. CXXXI.  
M.L.T. 242b

How the Britan ambassiatoure directit to Scottis  
for pece was refusit; of the epistill writtin be  
Britouns to Etius, and of his deferring ansuere;  
off the strang ordinance of Scottis and Pichtis, and  
how thay discumfist Britouns. Cap<sup>o</sup> xj<sup>o</sup>

Nouellis hereof vehementlie kindillit ye barouns of Britane,  
zit at Londoun consulting for new remeid contrare  
attemptatis of inemyis. Quharefore eftir lang disputacioun  
10 and diuers opiniouns, finalie thay condiscendit yat twa  
ambassiatouris suld be directit, ane to ye kingis of Scottis and

Fo. cxxxvi. Pichtis, promitting to yame all landis beyond ye flude of  
 Humbir with grete sowmez of money, and gif yai wald abstene  
 fra slauchter of ye febill *commouns*, Britouns suld nocht  
 schaw yame in yare contrare; to Etius, Romane legate in  
 Gallia, ane vthir quhilk suld deplore the calamyteis of Britouns,  
 and present him yis epistill: "To Etius, thryifis consull,  
 the regret of Britouns. Quhen oure antecessouris first war  
 content obey ye Romane Impire thay knewe be honest docu-  
 mentis and notabill exemplis that ye Romane senatouris  
 war maist sikkir porte and refuge till all yat socht yame  
 with supple. Bot now we, yare posterite, be wikkit invencious  
 of ye legate Maximiane excogitate for oure destructioun, ar  
 dispulezit of pussance and gudis, and yarefore constitute in the 20  
 extreme partis of ye warld, and persewit be vnmercifull  
 inemyis in poynt of tinsell baith of life and kinrik (how beit  
 we implore succouris of ye Romane Impire), we ar neclectit,  
 bot erare alluterlie contempnit, and exponit as pray to ye  
 maist cruell barbare pepill. To ws this is ane evident argument  
 yat owther Romanis has interchangeit yare gude behavingis  
 M.L.T. 243 with evill, or ellis be wraith of Almychty God thare Impire,  
 sa opulent and large, is exponit in reif and pray to vthir  
 naciouns. Fferder, gif ye predestinate tyme approchis that  
 Britan suld be reft fra Romanis, and constrenit to be sub-  
 dewit to barbaris, we detest the senezeorie of nane nacioun  
 samekill as of ye dispitefull Scottis and Pichtis, of all mortall  
 creaturis maist inhumane and cruell. We haue now experience  
 of yare malice and tyrannye, and ar brocht to sic poynt yat,  
 of all oure gudis dispulezeit, we knaw nocht be quhat way 30  
 oure miserabill life may be salfit. Ffor yai haue bet down  
 ye strang wallis, fillit ye fowsyis yat debarrit fra ws yare felony,  
 and be all sorte of crudelite invadit ye Romane province,  
 heryng oure landis, birnyng cieteis and townys, subuerting  
 fortalicyis, slaying zong innocentis, tendir damosellis and agit  
 decrepitis, by all vthir murthure maid apoun vthir strenthy  
 men in euery parte. Fferder, we may nocht schaw oure myserie  
 for weping, ffor we yat ar left liffand ar supprisit, ourethrawin  
 and chaissit to ye sey, and fra the sammyn becaus we may  
 nocht haue passage, apoun yame agane ar drevin. Quhare-

throw we fynd twa sortis of dede, for owther we ar drownit Fo. cxxxii.  
 in the flude or murdris be oure terribill fais. Herefore gif  
 40 yov extemys the honoure of ye Romane maieste or zit our  
 fidelite sa lang continewit to ye Romane Impire, we require  
 and beseik thow suffir ws na langer be subiect to ye felony  
 of oure outrageous fayis, bot haistelie send to ws succourf  
 yat we be nocht mare cruelly betraissit be Romanis, yan  
 ourethrawin be barbaris, and be nocht exempill to vthir  
 naciouns yat yai beleif neuer in societe of Romanis in tyme  
 cuming." Of yis epistill writis the Dekin Paul, Venerabil  
 Bede, Galfred, Britan historiagraphoure, Veremwnd and  
 certane famous authouris of ye Late. Hereto ansuerit Etius,  
 he was sory for ye troubil of Britouns, and ye mare hevily  
 50 displeisit yat he had grete difficulte to defend Gallia and  
 Italie, becaus ye Romane Impire was sa cruelly invadit be  
 sa mony barbare naciouns, tending to bring it to rewynne: he  
 was sa occupyit in cure of mar dangerof weris, yat without  
 damage of ye commoun weill he mycht nocht send succourf M.L.T. 2436  
 to Britan; persuading herefore yai suld with all pussance  
 defend yame the best yai mycht, and tary quhill mare fortunate  
 tyme occurrit, and quhen ye Romane Impire was pecifyit,  
 the barbaris suld be iustlie punyst. The samyn tyme yis  
 ansuere was reportit to ye Britouns at London, the ambassia-  
 touris returnyng fra Scottis and Pichtis schew that yare  
 offeris plesit na thing to ye confederate kingis; yai wald  
 nocht abstene fra slauchter nor hereschip vnto ye tyme yai  
 60 had owder Britan expugnate, or to yare senezeorie obeysant.  
 Ffirst yis ansuere astonist sua ye barouns yat all yare con-  
 tenance and chere was changeit. Ffinalie, with new corage  
 yai chargit yare folkis to armoure, detesting yat throw yare  
 awne sleuth yai had gevin audacite to ye barbaris, and ye  
 victorie yai gat was becaus yai wilfully refusit to mak defence.  
 Scottis and Pichtis, be skurreouris knawing ye intent of  
 Britouns and quhat repulf yai had fra Etius, assembling  
 powere sonare yan ony beleiffit, with terribill ordinance  
 towart yame tranoyntit. In the vantgarde ordorit was  
 Galloway, Anandale, and ye Pichtis, callit Berwikis (incertane  
 for quhat cauf yai war sua namyt). Apoun yame followit

- Fo. cxxxI. grete power of Ergile, Athole and Pichtis duelling beside Calidone Wod and the ciete of Camelodune, togidder *with* Fiffe, Meirnyis and Anguſ. In myddis this power the kingis 70 and maist valezeand men, *with* baneris displayit, procedit. Eftir quham, come ye victualaris and cariage. Ffollowit apoun game the nobillis of athir pepill ordourlie with yare houshaldis and folkis maist expert in weris. In ye rereward followit ye *commwnite* and vulgare multitude, including all ye oist, as ye pepill vsit fra ye begynnyng. Britouns occurring in yare meting, knowing be skurreouris sa copiofs multitude moving towart game in sic ordoure, and persaving yare pussance insufficient with game to mell, improving ye counsalouris yat persuadit the batell erare or yai suld lauboure 80
- Fo. cxxxII. to thare awne distructioun, devisit to trete for pece. Ambassiatouris haistelie war send to the confederate princis, and couth nocht persuade pece, without Britouns with wyiffis, childer and substance to thame wald be randerit. Quhen this was to the barouns of Britane and throw the army divulgate, be dispare and ire yai war provokit, that changeing purpoifs thay offerit game to batell. Ffollowit ane feild maist scharpe and kene of ony vtheris, Britouns determyng to de in defence of yare kinrik and revenge yare dede; with mare ferocite yan ony beleiffit, at ye first counter bare downe grete nowmer of yare fays. Vtheris, occurring in yare reskewe, facht with sic obstinacioun, yat apperandlie yai ferit nocht the dede. 10
- M.L.T. 244 Gallowayis and Pichtis in the vantgarde war mekill fulezete. Syne the Ergilis, Atholis and vtheris in the kingis feild, togiddir with the ansenezeis and baneris, war nere ourthrawin be Britouns, quhen Graham, quhilk rewlit the maist parte of ye armye, seyng ye vantgarde supprisit, send ane power of ye Insulanis, depute to kepe ye cariage, chargeing yai suld leif ye samyn and spede game in reskewe of ye vantgarde, standing in waik and febill estate. Be yare cuming followit sic haisty change yat diuerfs Gallowayis, grevouslie woundit and reposing apoun yare speris, renewit ye bargane, and sa 20 mony as war fled, fechtand freschlie of newe, removit ye dishonoure yai contractit in fleing. Fferder, ye confederate pepill rusching fordwart on all partis, Britouns almaist ouresett

be yare multitude, and sustenyng na langare the batell, Fo. CXXXII.  
 disparing of victorie, to salf yare lyiffis fled to mosß and  
 marrefß, nocht fer fra ye place quhare the feild was gevin.  
 The cariage men, seand the flicht of Britouns, leiffing the  
 cariage, without armoure, tuke sic wapynnys as yai mycht  
 gett, and but mercye slewe douchty men be glar and slyke  
 impeschit. In yis batell to the nowmer of iiij<sup>m</sup> Scottis and  
 Pichtis war loist, and abone xv<sup>m</sup> Britouns, of quham maist  
 parte, traffillit in bog and slyke, deiectit in corage, without  
 30 succourß, war lichtlie slane.

How finalie Scottis and Pichtis grantit pece to Britons; of the condicions and artikillis thareof, and how thay thirllit Britouns to zeirlye tribute; of diuerß haly men lifland for the tyme, and of the bischoppis Pallady, Serf and Ternane; of vthir incidentis, and of Ffyn Makcoull. M.L.T. 244b  
 Cap<sup>o</sup> xij<sup>o</sup>

In this sorte foresaid this batell endit almaist to exterminacioun of ye Britan nacioun. The barouns that euadit slauchter, persaving the victouris had na impediment to occupy ye hale impire of Albion, and ye vincust Britouns had na esperance of refuge, concludit direct ambassiatouris to ye confederate princis, humelie desiring pece, promitting accept ony condicions thareof at yare plesure. Nocht alanerlie be mysfortune of Britouns bot als be yare awne caifß, movit war the kingis of Scottis and Pichtis, ffor in batell yai had loist diuerß maist valzeand of athir nacioun, and be certane condicions consentit to pece, of quhilk yir war the artikillis: In ye first, yat Britons suld nocht resaeue ye Romane armye nor legate yareeftir in Britane, nor suffir Romanis, Gallis, 40 Saxouns nor nane vthir inemyis of Scottis nor Pichtis haue passage throw yare boundis; gif yai attempt sic passage, Britouns suld invade yame as inemyis: *without command* of ye twa kingis yai suld nowthir confedir *with* nacioun nor ciete nor to yame infer weris; gif yai war to ye weris warnit be ye kingis contrare inemyis, yai suld prepare yare ordinance:

Fo. cxxxii. the landis bezond ye flude of Humbir suld be devodit of Britons  
 [with] gudis, wyiffis and childer, and deliuerit in fre possessioun  
 of Scottis and Pichtis: thay suld pay lx<sup>m</sup> pece of gold, to be  
 distribute amang ye confederate army, and suld to ye kingis  
 pay xx<sup>m</sup> pece be zere: alsua yai suld deliuer j<sup>e</sup> plegeis nocht  
 within xvij nor abone xxx<sup>tj</sup> z<sup>eris</sup>. Quhen yir condiciouns war  
 schewin to ye barouns of Britouns, in *presens* of ye multitude, 50  
 M.L.T. 245 be sum yai war refusit as vnresonabill, and be vtheris as  
 vn dishonest. Nocht the les thay persuadit to ye pepill yat, as  
 ye caiff of ye kinrik stude, yai ware necessare for ye tyme.  
 Quharefore be condiciouns foresaid making the lyig, the  
 ile yareeftir was in bettir pece. In yis maner Scottis and  
 Pichtis dispulezeing Romanis of ye superiorite in Britan,  
 made it to yame tributare eftir Iulius Cesare first had enterit  
 yarein, and thirllit it to tribute, iiij<sup>e</sup> xcvj z<sup>eris</sup>, of the Virginis  
 birth iiij<sup>e</sup> xxxvj. The sammyn zere was of King Ewgene the  
 vij, and j<sup>m</sup> v[j]<sup>e</sup> iij z<sup>eris</sup> eftir ye kinrik of Britan first be Brute  
 was foundit. Ffra thyne ye estate of Britons euer begouth 60  
 decreff. I knaw weill (sais ye authour) yat thir premisf  
 writtin of Maximus, Maximiane, Romane legatis in Britan,  
 Octavius and Dioneth, kyngis of Britons, schewin be ws afore,  
 and of ye cuming of Saxons in Albion and thare actis eftirwart  
 to be writtin, ar sum parte discrepant fra ye historijs of Galfrede  
 of ye Romane actis. Na man thareof suld amervell that the  
 Dekin Paule, Eutrope, Bede, Veremwnd and vtheris mare  
 recent authouris of grete erudicioun (quham we ensewe)  
 convenis nocht with Galfrede, nowder in calculacioun of datis,  
 nor narracion of ye historye, as clerelie may be sene. Quhare-  
 fore I think it na wrang bot erare conforme to resoun, yat 70  
 eftir my sympill engyne I follow ye historie extractit fra oure  
 ancient croniclis, quhare mony famouf authouris consentis,  
 na thing almaist variand fra the Romane writaris, aduerting  
 euer to ye date and compting of ye tyme, (like as we haue  
 begunnyng), erare yan onelie Galfred, singulere in his opinion.  
 Sic men as in the dayis of Kingis Ffergus and Ewgene, in  
 erudicioun, in haly liffe, war in this warld, thir war in speciall:  
 Eusebe of Cremon and Philip, discipillis of Sanct Ierome;  
 Hillary and Awreliatt, excellent in godlynes and doctryne;



80 amang oure nacioun the bischop Pallad, send fra Pape Celestine FO. CXXXII.  
 to Scottis to resist the Pelagiane heresy, quhilk had infekkit FO. CXXXI.  
 grete parte of ye Britan kinrik, and to the law of ewangell  
 reduce ye pepill, be continuell weris in sum parte remisß.  
 Pallade was ye first bischop create be ye Pape amang Scottis,  
 ffor before yat tyme bischoppis war chosin of religioß persons  
 and Culdeis, be votis of ye pepill. This Pallad be devote preich- M.L.T. 245b  
 ing and doctrine purgit Scottis and Pichtis fra sum parte  
 of supersticious ritis of Gentilite, nocht zit clenelie rescindit  
 eftir yai had left thare first idolatrie. Quharefore be the  
 posterite he was namyt ye Apostill of Scottis. Eftir mony  
 devote labouris and gude werkis imployit for ye saluacioun  
 of man, with ane blissit end he departit fra this life, in ane  
 10 village of ye Mernnys namyt Ffordune, quhare his haly relikis  
 ar haldin in grete honoure zit in oure dayis be confluence of  
 pepill yareto resorting. Williame Scheves, archibischop of  
 Sanctandros, of singulare erudicion, with solempnit processiou  
 and devote suffrage translatit yame out of sepulture in ane  
 siluer fertoure, in ye zere of oure Saluacion j<sup>m</sup> iiij<sup>c</sup> xciiii zeris.  
 Sanct Palladie create Serf bischop, and send him to Orknay  
 to instruct the rude pepill in the Cristin faith. Siclike he  
 maid Ternane, his godson, archibischop to ye Pichtis. Towart  
 20 ye ilk tyme, Patrik ye haly bischop, be Pape Celestine was  
 send in Ireland, obeysant yan ye Cristin faith, to defend it fra  
 ye Pelagiane heresy be doctrine and exemplare liffe. Be  
 diligent labouris of yir devote bischopis the thre kinrikis of  
 Scottis, Pichtis and Ireland war purgit of auld supersticious,  
 and institute in ye Catholic faith conforme to ye rite of ye sege  
 of Rome.

Before this iournay strikkin be Scottis and Pichtis, diuerß  
 ferlyis war sene in sindri partis of Albioun. The mone  
 opposit to ye son, was sene quarterly depart fra ye samyn.  
 Bludy schouris ranyt at zork. In diuerß partis, the treis  
 wallowit baith in leiffis and branchis, and ye streit of  
 30 Londoun with terribill riftis opynnyt. Grete nowmer of  
 lugeingis sank throw ye erde. Quhen yir prodigioß thingis  
 war divulgate throw the cuntre and war coniecturit to signify  
 the hevy damage of ye Britan kinrik, be interpretacion

Fo. CXXXIII. of kirkmen thare raddoure in sum parte was repressit.  
 Sum hald's yat Ffyn Makcoul, of huge stature, havynge sevin  
 M.L.T. 246 cubittis in hicht, was liffand about this tyme, of Scottis nacioun,  
 ane crafty huntare and to all man ferefull for ye strang quantite  
 of his persoun, of quham be gestouris and rymouris in ye  
 samyn sorte as of Arthure, king of Britouns, is frequent  
 mencion among the vulgare pepill, mare yan among apprisit  
 authouris. And becaus ye mervelloß actis reheirssit of this  
 man apperandlie varyis, and pertenis na thing to the verite  
 of ane trewe historie, we will in purpoiß supersede ye samyn,  
 and of King Eugeny prosew ye remanent actis.

40

Here followis the viij buke of the historijs of Scottis.

## APPENDIX.

## SIDE-NOTES IN A LATER HAND.\*

P. 35b. *Top of page on left-hand margin.*

The superscription of the marbell.

P. 55. *Right-hand margin.*

Line 12. Ffergusß, first king of Scotts, bult the castell of Beragon in Lowchaber att the west pairt of Albeon forgen the Ilis, so that to that pleac the ilandis and Albion Scottis might easelie conven, and in the tym in peac both with Pichtes and Bretons.

Line 21. Fferguesß is desayrit be the nobls of Irland to com to rem[ove] devison amongst them abow[t] the choysing a new king which they thought he mih[t] by his awthoratie and counsel do, and in his woyag thethervart was wpon the sea deviding betuixt Albeon and Irland by violent storm and vind pereshed wpon rockis wher the town of Craig Fergueß was bult and keeps that neam till this day.

P. 62b. *Left-hand margin.*

Line 11. Fferguß yowngest son Mayne to be king.

Line 25. the king satt judg ewry yeir and iustifiet transgressoris and crimmynall personis and a few yeiris affter it wes callit the kingis iustice, to whos autorite aperteens the punishment of open crymis : and his yeirly correction therof is at this tym the justic aire.

P. 100b. *Left-hand margin.*

Line 6. King EVENE mead lawis which war unlauffull, viz.— that ewry man might wede maniey wifs att plesowr. Som did weed vj and som ten acording to ther substanc, 2ly the wifs of comons showld be vsed be the nobls and 3ly the laird of the grund should heave carnell copulation with aniey maid for hir mariag.

Line 20. This law abolshed and in stead of copulation a golden penney was providit to the laird.

P. 102. *Right-hand margin.*

Line 1. Iesus Christ the Saviowr of mankynd is born.

Line 10. This holy birth was in the tent yeir of Metellanis king and of Augustus Cæsar the 42 yei[r], & cet.

\* P. 35b, &c., refer to the folio numbers of the original manuscript (which are given marginally).

*Printed by William Blackwood & Sons Ltd., Edinburgh*

# The Scottish Text Society.

*Founded in 1882 for the purpose of Printing and Editing Texts  
Illustrative of Scottish Language and Literature.*

---

## President.

Sir WILLIAM A. CRAIGIE, LL.D., D.Litt.

## Vice-Presidents.

WILLIAM ANGUS, LL.D.

WILLIAM GEDDIE, M.A.

H. W. MEIKLE, C.B.E., D.Litt.

## Council.

The Hon. LORD ST VIGEANS.

STAIR A. GILLON, Advocate.

JAMES CRAIGIE, M.A., Ph.D.

WALTER W. BLACKIE.

W. TOD RITCHIE, M.A.

JAS. A. M'CALLUM, LL.D., M.A.

MACKENZIE S. SHAW, W.S.

J. W. OLIVERR, D.Litt.

Miss BOOG WATSON.

JAS. ROSS.

JAMES H. BLACKWOOD.

Sir ROBERT BRUCE, LL.D.

Professor W. L. RENWICK.

THOMAS INNES of LEARNEY, Advocate, Court of the Lord Lyon,  
H.M. Register House, Edinburgh, *Hon. Secretary.*

RICHARD FERRAR PATTERSON, D.Litt., Graham's Dyke, Bearsden,  
Dunbartonshire, *General Editor.*

Sir FRANCIS J. GRANT, K.C.V.O., LL.D., W.S., 18 George Square,  
Edinburgh, *Treasurer.*

## LIST OF PUBLICATIONS.

## FIRST SERIES.

- 1883-84 { THE KINGIS QUAIR, together with A Ballad of Good Counsel. By King James I. Edited by the Rev. Professor W. W. Skeat, M.A., LL.D. pp. 113 and iv. (*Out of print.*) (Part I.) (1)
- 1883-84 { THE POEMS OF WILLIAM DUNBAR. Part I. Edited by John Small, M.A. pp. 160 and iv. (*Out of print.*) (2)
- 1883-84 { THE COURT OF VENUS. By Iohne Rolland, 1575. Edited by the Rev. Walter Gregor, M.A., LL.D. pp. 231 and xxxii. (3)
- 1884-85 { THE POEMS OF WILLIAM DUNBAR. Part II. Edited by John Small, M.A. pp. 169 and vi. (4)
- 1884-85 { LESLIE'S HISTORIE OF SCOTLAND. Part I. Translated into Scottish from the original Latin by Father James Dalrymple. Edited by the Rev. E. G. Cody, O.S.B. pp. 130 and iv. (5)
- 1884-85 { SCHIR WILLIAM WALLACE, Knight of Ellerslie. Part I. By Henry the Minstrel, commonly known as Blind Harry. Edited by James Moir, M.A. pp. 181. (6)
- 1885-86 { THE WALLACE. Part II. Edited by James Moir, M.A. pp. 198. (7)
- 1885-86 { SIR TRISTREM. With Introduction, Notes, and Glossary. Edited by G. P. M'Neill, M.A. pp. 148 and xlvi. (*Out of print.*) (8)
- 1885-86 { THE POEMS OF ALEXANDER MONTGOMERIE. Part I. Edited by James Cranstoun, M.A., LL.D. pp. 176 and vii. (9)
- 1886-87 { THE POEMS OF ALEXANDER MONTGOMERIE. Part II. Edited by James Cranstoun, M.A., LL.D. pp. 160 and iv. (10)
- 1886-87 { THE POEMS OF ALEXANDER MONTGOMERIE. Part III. Edited by James Cranstoun, M.A., LL.D. pp. 96 and lvii. (11)
- 1886-87 { GAU'S RICHT VAY TO THE KINGDOME OF HEUINE. Edited by the Rev. Professor Mitchell, D.D. pp. 130 and lviii. (12)
- 1887-88 { LEGENDS OF THE SAINTS (Fourteenth Century). Part I. Edited by the Rev. W. M. Metcalfe, M.A. pp. 224 and v. (13)
- 1887-88 { LESLIE'S HISTORIE OF SCOTLAND. Part II. Edited by the Rev. E. G. Cody, O.S.B. pp. 270 and xxvi. (14)
- 1887-88 { NINIANE WINJET'S WORKS. Vol. I. Edited by the Rev. J. King Hewison. pp. 140 and cxx. (15)
- 1888-89 { THE POEMS OF WILLIAM DUNBAR. Part III. Introduction. By Æ. J. G. Mackay, LL.D. pp. cclxxxiii. (*Out of print.*) (16)
- 1888-89 { THE WALLACE. Part III. Introduction, Notes, and Glossary. By James Moir, M.A. pp. 189 and liv. (*Out of print.*) (17)
- 1888-89 { LEGENDS OF THE SAINTS. Part II. Edited by the Rev. W. M. Metcalfe, M.A. pp. 386 and iii. (18)

- 1889-90 { LESLIE'S HISTORIE OF SCOTLAND. Part III. Edited by the Rev. E. G. Cody, O.S.B. pp. 262 and iii. (19)  
 SATIRICAL POEMS OF THE TIME OF THE REFORMATION. Part I. Edited by James Cranstoun, M.A., LL.D. pp. 220 and vi. (20)  
 THE POEMS OF WILLIAM DUNBAR. Part IV. Containing the first portion of the Notes. By the Rev. W. Gregor, LL.D. pp. 244. (21)
- 1890-91 { NINIANE WINJET'S WORKS. Vol. II. Notes and Glossary. By the Rev. J. King Hewison. pp. 203 and xxxiii. (22)  
 LEGENDS OF THE SAINTS. Part III. Edited by the Rev. W. M. Metcalfe, M.A. pp. 192 and iii. (23)  
 SATIRICAL POEMS OF THE TIME OF THE REFORMATION. Part II. Edited by James Cranstoun, M.A., LL.D. pp. 181 and lix. (24)
- 1891-92 { LEGENDS OF THE SAINTS. Part IV. Completing the Text. Edited by the Rev. W. M. Metcalfe, M.A. pp. 285 and iii. (25)  
 THE VERNACULAR WRITINGS OF GEORGE BUCHANAN. Edited by P. Hume Brown, M.A., LL.D. pp. 75 and xxxviii. (26)  
 SCOTTISH ALLITERATIVE POEMS IN RIMING STANZAS. Part I. Edited by F. J. Amours. pp. 187 and vi. (27)
- 1892-93 { SATIRICAL POEMS OF THE TIME OF THE REFORMATION. Part III. Containing first portion of Notes. By James Cranstoun, M.A., LL.D. pp. 188 and iii. (28)  
 THE POEMS OF WILLIAM DUNBAR. Part V. Completion of Notes and Glossary. By the Rev. W. Gregor, LL.D. And Appendix, by Æ. J. G. Mackay, LL.D. pp. 291. (*Out of print.*) (29)  
 SATIRICAL POEMS OF THE TIME OF THE REFORMATION. Part IV. Completion of Notes, Appendix, Glossary, and Index of Proper Names. By James Cranstoun, M.A., LL.D. pp. 186 and xii. (30)
- 1893-94 { BARBOUR'S BRUCE. Part I. Edited by the Rev. Professor Walter W. Skeat, M.A., LL.D. pp. 351 and iii. (*Out of print.*) (31)  
 BARBOUR'S BRUCE. Part II. Edited by the Rev. Professor Walter W. Skeat, M.A., LL.D. pp. 430 and viii. (32)
- 1894-95 { BARBOUR'S BRUCE. Part III. Introduction. By the Rev. Professor Walter W. Skeat, M.A., LL.D. pp. cxi. (*Out of print.*) (33)  
 LESLIE'S HISTORIE OF SCOTLAND. Edited by the Rev. E. G. Cody, O.S.B. Part IV. Completion of Text, with Notes, Glossary, &c. By William Murison, M.A. pp. 328 and vii. (34)  
 LEGENDS OF THE SAINTS. Part V. Notes (first portion). By the Rev. W. M. Metcalfe, D.D. pp. 256 and iv. (35)
- 1895-96 { THE POEMS OF ALEXANDER SCOTT. Edited by James Cranstoun, M.A., LL.D. pp. 218 and xxii. (*Out of print.*) (36)  
 LEGENDS OF THE SAINTS. Part VI. Completion of Notes and Glossary. By the Rev. W. M. Metcalfe, D.D. pp. 240 and l. (37)
- 1896-97 { SCOTTISH ALLITERATIVE POEMS IN RIMING STANZAS. Part II. Edited by F. J. Amours. pp. 294 and xc. (*Out of print.*) (38)  
 THE GUDE AND GODLIE BALLATIS. Edited by the Rev. Professor Mitchell, D.D. pp. 338 and cliv. (*Out of print.*) (39)
- 1897-98 { THE WORKS OF MURE OF ROWALLAN. Vol. I. Edited by William Tough, M.A. pp. 306 and xxvii. (40)  
 THE WORKS OF MURE OF ROWALLAN. Vol. II. Edited by William Tough, M.A. pp. 345 and iii. (41)

- 1898-99 { LINDESAY OF PITSCOTTIE'S HISTORIE AND CRONICLES. Vol. I.  
 Edited by Æneas J. G. Mackay, LL.D. pp. 414 and clx. (*Out of  
 print.*) (42)  
 LINDESAY OF PITSCOTTIE'S HISTORIE AND CRONICLES. Vol. II.  
 Edited by Æneas J. G. Mackay, LL.D. pp. 478 and xii. (*Out of  
 print.*) (43)
- 1899-  
 1900 { GILBERT OF THE HAYE'S PROSE MS. (1456). Vol. I. *The Buke of the  
 Law of Armyis, or Buke of Bataillis.* Edited by J. H. Stevenson.  
 pp. 303 and cvii. (44)  
 CATHOLIC TRACTATES OF THE SIXTEENTH CENTURY (1573-1600).  
 Edited by Thomas Graves Law, LL.D. pp. 308 and lxiii. (45)
- 1900-01 { THE NEW TESTAMENT IN SCOTS, being Purvey's Revision of Wycliffe's  
 Version, turned into Scots by Murdoch Nisbet (c. 1520). Edited by  
 Thomas Graves Law, LL.D. Vol. I. pp. 300 and xxxvii. (46)  
 LIVY'S HISTORY OF ROME: THE FIRST FIVE BOOKS. Translated into  
 Scots by John Bellenden (1533). Vol. I Edited by W. A. Craigie,  
 M. A. pp. 305 and xvii. (47)
- 1901-02 { THE POEMS OF ALEXANDER HUME (?1557-1609). Edited by the Rev.  
 Alexander Lawson, B.D. pp. 279 and lxxiii. (48)  
 THE NEW TESTAMENT IN SCOTS. Edited by Thomas Graves Law,  
 LL.D. Vol. II. pp. 367 and ix. (49)
- 1902-03 { THE ORIGINAL CHRONICLE OF ANDREW OF WYNTOUN (c. 1420).  
 Printed on Parallel Pages from the Cottonian and Wemyss MSS.,  
 with the Variants of the other Texts. Edited by F. J. Amours.  
 Vol. II. (Text, Vol. I.) pp. 351 and xix. (50)  
 LIVY'S HISTORY OF ROME: THE FIRST FIVE BOOKS. Completion of  
 Text, with Notes and Glossary. Edited by W. A. Craigie, M.A.  
 Vol. II. pp. 408. (51)
- 1903-04 { THE NEW TESTAMENT IN SCOTS. Edited by Thomas Graves Law,  
 LL.D. Vol. III. pp. 397 and xiii. (52)  
 THE ORIGINAL CHRONICLE OF ANDREW OF WYNTOUN. Edited by  
 F. J. Amours. Vol. III. (Text, Vol. II.) pp. 497 and xiv. (53)
- 1904-05 { THE ORIGINAL CHRONICLE OF ANDREW OF WYNTOUN. Edited by  
 F. J. Amours. Vol. IV. (Text, Vol. III.) pp. 435 and xi. (54)  
 THE POEMS OF ROBERT HENRYSON. Edited by Professor G. Gregory  
 Smith, M.A., LL.D. Vol. II. (Text, Vol. I.) pp. 327 and xxi. (55)
- 1905-06 { THE ORIGINAL CHRONICLE OF ANDREW OF WYNTOUN. Edited by  
 F. J. Amours. Vol. V. (Text, Vol. IV.) pp. 433 and xi. (56)  
 THE ORIGINAL CHRONICLE OF ANDREW OF WYNTOUN. Edited by  
 F. J. Amours. Vol. VI. (Text, Vol. V.) pp. 436 and xv. (*Out  
 of print.*) (57)
- 1906-07 { THE POEMS OF ROBERT HENRYSON. Edited by Professor G. Gregory  
 Smith, M.A., LL.D. Vol. III. (Text, Vol. II.) pp. 198 and xix. (58)  
 POEMS OF ALEXANDER MONTGOMERIE, and other Pieces from Laing  
 MS. No. 447. Supplementary Volume. Edited, with Introduction,  
 Appendices, Notes, and Glossary, by George Stevenson, M.A.  
 pp. 392 and lxx. (59)



- 1907-08 { LINDESAY OF PITSCOTTIE'S HISTORIE AND CRONICLES. Vol. III. Glossary and Index. Edited by Æneas J. G. Mackay, LL.D. pp. 195 and xii. (60)  
A BIBLIOGRAPHY OF MIDDLE SCOTS POETS. With an Introduction on the History of their Reputations. By William Geddie, M.A. pp. 364 and cix. (61)
- 1908-09 { GILBERT OF THE HAYE'S PROSE MS. (1456). Vol. II. *The Buke of the Ordre of Knychthede, and The Buke of the Governauce of Princis.* Edited by J. H. Stevenson. pp. 165 and lii. (62)  
THE ORIGINAL CHRONICLE OF ANDREW OF WYNTOUN. Edited by F. J. Amours. Vol. I. (Introduction, Notes, Glossary, and Index). pp. 238 and cv. (63)
- 1909-10 { THE POEMS OF ROBERT HENRYSON. Edited by Professor G. Gregory Smith, M.A., LL.D. Vol. I. (Introduction, Appendix, Notes, Index of Words and Glossary, and General Index). pp. 186 and clxiv. (64)  
PIECES FROM THE MAKULLOCH AND THE GRAY MSS., TOGETHER WITH THE CHEPMAN AND MYLLAR PRINTS. Edited by the late George Stevenson, M.A., B.Litt. With Preface, Introduction, and Notes. pp. 303 and xix. (65)

## SECOND SERIES.

- 1910-11 { THE KINGIS QUAIR, together with a Ballad of Good Counsel. By King James I. of Scotland. Edited by the Rev. Walter W. Skeat, Litt.D., LL.D., Ph.D., F.B.A. pp. 122 and lxiv. (*Out of print.*) (Part I.)  
LANCELOT OF THE LAIK. From Cambridge University Library MS. Edited by Margaret Muriel Grey, M.A. pp. 113 and xxxvi. (2)
- 1911-12 { THE POETICAL WORKS OF WILLIAM DRUMMOND OF HAWTHORNDEN. With 'A Cypress Grove.' Edited by L. E. Kastner, M.A. Vol. I. pp. 254 and cxix. (3)  
THE POETICAL WORKS OF WILLIAM DRUMMOND OF HAWTHORNDEN. With 'A Cypress Grove.' Edited by L. E. Kastner, M.A. Vol. II. pp. 434 and xviii. (4)
- 1912-13 { POEMS OF JOHN STEWART OF BALDYNNEIS. From the MS. in the Advocates' Library, Edinburgh. Edited by Thomas Crockett, M.A. Vol. II. (Text). pp. 268 and vii. (5)  
THE WORKS OF WILLIAM FOWLER. Edited by Henry W. Meikle. Vol. I. (Verse). pp. 399 and xi. (6)
- 1913-14 { THE MAITLAND FOLIO MANUSCRIPT. Containing Poems by Sir Richard Maitland, Dunbar, Douglas, Henryson, and others. Edited by W. A. Craigie, M.A., LL.D. Vol. I. pp. 454 and xviii. (7)
- 1914-15 { THE THREE PRESTIS OF PEBLIS. Edited from the Asloan and Charteris Texts, by T. D. Robb, M.A. pp. 99 and xlv. (8)  
THE MAITLAND QUARTO MANUSCRIPT. Containing Poems by Sir Richard Maitland, Arbuthnot, and others. Edited by W. A. Craigie, M.A., LL.D. pp. 306 and xix. (9)
- 1919-20 { HABAKKUK BISSET'S ROUMENT OF COURTIS. Edited by Sir Philip J. Hamilton-Grierson, LL.D. Vol. I. pp. 317 and xviii. (10)

- 1920-21 { THE POETICAL WORKS OF SIR WILLIAM ALEXANDER, EARL OF STIRLING. Edited by L. E. Kastner, M.A., and H. B. Charlton, M.A. Vol. I. *The Dramatic Works*, with an Introductory Essay on the Growth of the Senecan Tradition in Renaissance Tragedy. pp. 482 and ccxix. (11)
- 1920-21 { THE BUIK OF ALEXANDER. Edited by R. L. Græme Ritchie, D.Litt. Vol. II. Containing Part II. of the Buik of Alexander (namely, pp. 107-248) and Part I. of *Les Vœux du Paon*, now edited for the first time, from MS. Fr. 12565 of the Bibliothèque Nationale, and collated with numerous MSS. pp. 248 and cxvii. (12)
- 1921-22 { HABAKKUK BISSET'S ROLMENT OF COURTIS. Edited by Sir Philip J. Hamilton Grierson, LL.D. Vol. II. pp. 450 and ix. (13)
- 1922-23 { THE ASLOAN MANUSCRIPT. A Miscellany in Prose and Verse. Written by John Asloan in the reign of James the Fifth. Edited by W. A. Craigie, LL.D., D.Litt. Vol. I. pp. 337 and xv. (14)
- 1923-24 { FERGUSSON'S SCOTTISH PROVERBS. From the Original Print of 1641. Together with a larger Manuscript Collection of about the same period hitherto unpublished. Edited by Erskine Beveridge, LL.D. pp. 128 and xl. (15)
- 1923-24 { THE ASLOAN MANUSCRIPT. A Miscellany in Prose and Verse. Written by John Asloan in the reign of James the Fifth. Edited by W. A. Craigie, LL.D., D.Litt. Vol. II. pp. 284 and xi. (16)
- 1924-25 { THE BUIK OF ALEXANDER. Edited by R. L. Græme Ritchie, D.Litt. Vol. I. Containing Part I. of the Buik of Alexander (namely, pp. 1-106) and *Li Fuerres de Gadres*, edited from MS. 264 of Bodley's Library. pp. 210 and cclxxxiv. (17)
- 1925-26 { HABAKKUK BISSET'S ROLMENT OF COURTIS. Edited by Sir Philip J. Hamilton Grierson, LL.D. Vol. III. (Introduction, Notes, Glossary, and Index). pp. 312 and xii. (18)
- 1925-26 { THE MEROURE OF WYFDOME. Composed for the Use of James IV., King of Scots, A.D. 1490. By Johannes de Irlandia, Professor of Theology in the University of Paris. Edited by Charles Macpherson, M.C., M.A., Ph.D. Vol. I. pp. 233 and xlvii. (19)
- 1926-27 { THE MAITLAND FOLIO MANUSCRIPT. Containing Poems by Sir Richard Maitland, Dunbar, Douglas, Henryson, and others. Edited by W. A. Craigie, LL.D., D.Litt. Vol. II. pp. 187 and vii. (20)
- 1926-27 { THE BUIK OF ALEXANDER. Edited by R. L. Græme Ritchie, D.Litt. Vol. III. Containing Part III. of the Buik of Alexander (namely, pp. 248-352) and Part II. (1) of *Les Vœux du Paon*, now edited for the first time from MS. Fr. 12565 of the Bibliothèque Nationale, and collated with numerous MSS. pp. 208 and cviii. (21)
- 1927-28 { THE BANNATYNE MANUSCRIPT. Writtin in Tyme of Pest, 1568, by George Bannatyne. Edited by W. Tod Ritchie, M.A. Vol. II. pp. 354 and xx. (22)
- 1927-28 { THE BANNATYNE MANUSCRIPT. Writtin in Tyme of Pest, 1568, by George Bannatyne. Edited by W. Tod Ritchie, M.A. Vol. III. pp. 361 and xv. (23)

- 1928-29 { THE POETICAL WORKS OF SIR WILLIAM ALEXANDER, EARL OF STIRLING. Edited by L. E. Kastner, D.Litt., and H. B. Charlton, M.A. Vol. II. *The Non-Dramatic Works*. pp. 644 and liii. (24)  
 THE BUIK OF ALEXANDER. Edited by R. L. Græme Ritchie, D.Litt. Vol. IV. Containing Part IV. of the Buik of Alexander (namely, pp. 353-442) and Part II. (2) of Les Vœux du Paon, now edited for the first time from MS. Fr. 12565 of the Bibliothèque Nationale, and collated with numerous MSS. pp. 429 and xii. (25)
- 1929-30 { THE BANNATYNE MANUSCRIPT. Writtin in Tyme of Pest, 1568, by George Bannatyne. Edited by W. Tod Ritchie, M.A. Vol. IV. pp. 335 and xiv. (26)

## THIRD SERIES.

- 1929-30 { THE WORKS OF SIR DAVID LINDSAY OF THE MOUNT, 1490-1555. Edited by Douglas Hamer, M.C., M.A. Vol. I. Text of the Poems. pp. 405 and ix. (Part I.)
- 1930-31 { THE WORKS OF SIR DAVID LINDSAY OF THE MOUNT, 1490-1555. Edited by Douglas Hamer, M.C., M.A. Vol. II. Ane Satyre of the Thrie Estaitis. pp. 405 and xi. (2)  
 THE SEVIN SEAGES. Translatit out of prois in Scottis meter be Iohne Rolland in Dalkeith. Edited, with Introduction, Notes, and Glossary, by George F. Black, Ph.D. pp. 400 and xxxi. (3)
- 1931-32 { MISCELLANY VOLUME.  
 THE SCOTTISH TEXT SOCIETY. By W. B. Menzies, Hon. Sec.  
 THE SEA LAW OF SCOTLAND. Edited by T. Callander Wade, M.B.E., LL.B.  
 PHILOTUS. Edited by Miss A. J. Mill, Ph.D.  
 THE JOY OF TEARS (Sir William Mure). Edited by C. Davis.  
 ROBERT WEDDERBURN, NOTARY AND POET. By W. B. Menzies, Hon. Sec.  
 THE SQUARE OF JELUSY. Edited by Dr J. T. T. Brown. pp. 212 and v. (4)  
 THE BANNATYNE MANUSCRIPT. Writtin in Tyme of Pest. Vol. I. By George Bannatyne. Edited by W. Tod Ritchie, M.A. pp. 120 and xcxi. (5)
- 1932-33 { THE WORKS OF SIR DAVID LINDSAY OF THE MOUNT, 1490-1555. Edited by Douglas Hamer, M.C., M.A. Vol. III. Notes to the Poems. pp. 496 and vii. (6)  
 THE WORKS OF WILLIAM FOWLER. Edited by Henry W. Meikle. Vol. II. (Prose). pp. 195 and v. (7)
- 1933-34 { THE WORKS OF SIR DAVID LINDSAY OF THE MOUNT, 1490-1555. Edited by Douglas Hamer, M.C., M.A. Vol. IV. Introduction, Bibliography, Notes to Ane Satyre, Appendices and Indexes. Glossary. pp. 421 and lviii. (8)

- 1934-35 { THE SCOTTISH WORKS OF ALEXANDER ROSS, M.A., Schoolmaster at Lochlee. Consisting of *Helenore, or The Fortunate Shepherdess*; *Songs*; *The Fortunate Shepherd, or The Orphan*. Edited, with Notes, Glossary and Life, by Margaret Wattie, B.Litt. pp. 267 and lxiii. (9)
- 1935-36 { THE CHRONICLES OF SCOTLAND, COMPILED BY HECTOR BOECE. Translated into Scots by JOHN BELLENDEN, 1531. Vol. I. Edited, in continuation of the Work of the late Walter Seton, by R. W. Chambers and Edith C. Batho. pp. 419 and xv. Also Reproductions in colour and collotype of ten pages of original MS. in separate packet. (10)
- 1936-37 { RAVIS RAVING, AND OTHER EARLY SCOTS POEMS ON MORALS. Edited, with an Appendix of the Other Pieces from Cambridge University Library MS. Kk. I. 5, No. 6, by R. Girvan, M.A. With Introduction, Notes, Appendices, and Glossary. pp. 234 and lxxviii. (11)
- 1937-38 { THE ACTIS AND DEIDIS OF SCHIR WILLIAM WALLACE, 1570. Facsimiles and Fragments of the Early Edition. With Introduction by Sir William Craigie. (12)
- 1938-39 { THE WORKS OF WILLIAM FOWLER. Edited by Henry W. Meikle, M.A., D.Litt., James Craigie, M.A., and John Purves, M.A. Vol. III. (Introduction, Appendices, Notes, Glossary, and Index.) pp. 155 and clviii. (13)
- 1939-40 { THOMAS HUDSON'S HISTORIE OF JUDITH. Edited by James Craigie, M.A., Ph.D. With Introduction, Notes, Appendices, Glossary, and General Index. pp. 191 and ciii. (14)
- 1940-41 { THE CHRONICLES OF SCOTLAND, COMPILED BY HECTOR BOECE. Translated into Scots by JOHN BELLENDEN, 1531. Vol. II. Edited by Edith C. Batho and H. Winifred Husbands, with the co-operation of R. W. Chambers and the late Walter Seton. With Appendix by Dr E. A. Sheppard; and Glossary. pp. 478 and vii. (15)
- 1941-42 { THE BASILICON DORON OF KING JAMES VI. Edited by James Craigie, M.A., Ph.D. Vol. I. (Text). pp. 207 and xii. (16)
- 1942-43 { THE MAR LODGE TRANSLATION OF THE HISTORY OF SCOTLAND. By Hector Boece. Edited by George Watson, M.A. Vol. I. pp. 419 and x. (17)



